



THE WORKS  
OF  
WILLIAM SHAKESPEARE.



LONDON:  
PRINTED BY ROBINSON, LEVY, AND FRANKLIN,  
Great New Street and Fetter Lane.

THE WORKS

WILLIAM SHAKESPEARE.

THE TEXT REVISED

BY

THE REV. ALEXANDER DYCE.

IN SIX VOLUMES

VOL. IV.

LONDON:

EDWARD MOXON, DOVER STREET.

1857.



## CONTENTS OF VOL. IV.

	PAGE
THE FIRST PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH .	1
THE SECOND PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH .	97
THE THIRD PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH .	205
KING RICHARD THE THIRD . . . . .	303
KING HENRY THE EIGHTH . . . . .	427
TROILUS AND CRESSIDA . . . . .	533
CORIOLANUS . . . . .	651



# CONTENTS OF VOL. IV.

	PAGE
THE FIRST PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH	1
THE SECOND PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH	97
THE THIRD PART OF KING HENRY THE SIXTH.	205
KING RICHARD THE THURD . . . . .	303
KING HENRY THE EIGHTH . . . . .	427
TROILUS AND CRESSIDA . . . . .	533
CORIOLANUS . . . . .	651



THE FIRST PART OF  
KING HENRY THE SIXTH.



## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

---

KING HENRY the Sixth.

DUKE OF GLOSTER, uncle to the King, and Protector.

DUKE OF BEDFORD, uncle to the King, and Regent of France.

THOMAS BEAUFORT, Duke of Exeter, great-uncle to the King.

HENRY BEAUFORT, great-uncle to the King, Bishop of Winchester, and afterwards Cardinal.

JOHN BEAUFORT, Earl of Somerset, afterwards Duke.

RICHARD PLANTAGENET, eldest son of Richard late Earl of Cambridge, afterwards Duke of York.

EARL OF WARWICK.\*

EARL OF SALISBURY.

EARL OF SURREY.

LORD TAYLOR, afterwards Earl of Shrewsbury.

JOHN TAYLOR, his son.

EDMUND MORTIMER, Earl of March.

SIR JOHN FASTOLFE.

SIR WILLIAM LUCY.

SIR WILLIAM GLAUNDSLOPE.

SIR THOMAS GARGrave.

Mayor of London.

WOODVILLE, Lieutenant of the Tower.

VERNON, of the White-Rose or York faction.

BASSET, of the Red-Rose or Lancaster faction.

A LAWFYER.—Mortimer's Keepers.

CHARLES, Dauphin, and afterwards King, of France.

REIGNIER, Duke of Anjou, and titular King of Naples.

DUKE OF BURGUNDY.

DUKE OF ALANÇON.

BASTARD OF ORLÉANS.

Governor of Paris.

Master Gunner of Orleans, and his Son.

General of the French forces in Bourdeaux.

A French Sergeant. A Porter.

An old Shepherd, father to Joan la Pucelle.

MARGARET, daughter to Reignier, afterwards married to King Henry.

COUNTESS OF AUVERGNE.

JOAN LA PUCELLE, commonly called Joan of Arc.

Lords, Warders of the Tower, Heralds, Officers, Soldiers, Messengers, and several Attendants both on the English and French.

Friends appearing to La Pucelle.

SCENE—Partly in England, and partly in France.

\* There are properly two Earls of Warwick in this play, though perhaps the author did not intend to make any distinction between them,—the Warwick of the opening scene being the Warwick of the later scenes *Scylla*.

THE FIRST PART OF  
KING HENRY VI.

---

ACT I.

SCENE I. *Westminster Abbey.*

*Dead march. The corpse of King HENRY the Fifth, in state, is brought in, attended on by the Dukes of BEDFORD, GLOSTER, and EXETER, the Earl of WARWICK, the Bishop of WINCHESTER, Herald, &c.*

*Bed.* Hung be the heavens with black, yield day to night!  
Comets, importing change of times and states,  
Brandish your crystal tresses in the sky,  
And with them scourge the bad revolting stars,  
That have consented unto Henry's death!  
King Henry the Fifth, too famous to live long!  
England ne'er lost a king of so much worth.

*Glo.* England ne'er had a king until his time.  
Virtue he had, deserving to command:  
His brandish'd sword did blind men with his beams,  
His arms spread wider than a dragon's wings;  
His sparkling eyes, replete with wrathful fire,  
More dazzled and drove back his enemies  
Than mid-day sun fierce bent against their faces.  
What should I say? his deeds exceed all speech:  
He ne'er lift up his hand, but conquer'd.

*Exc.* We mourn in black: why mourn we not in blood?  
Henry is dead, and never shall revive:  
Upon a wooden coffin we attend;

And death's dishonourable victory  
 We with our stately presence glorify,  
 Like captives bound to a triumphant car.  
 What! shall we curse the planets of mishap,  
 That plotted thus our glory's overthrow?  
 Or shall we think the subtle-witted French  
 Conjurers and sorcerers, that, afraid of him,  
 By magic verses have contriv'd his end?

*Win.* He was a king bless'd of the King of kings.  
 Unto the French the dreadful judgment-day  
 So dreadful will not be as was his sight.  
 The battles of the Lord of hosts he fought:  
 The church's prayers made him so prosperous.

*Glo.* The church! where is it? Had not churchmen pray'd,  
 His thread of life had not so soon decay'd:  
 None do you like but an effeminate prince,  
 Whom, like a school-boy, you may over-awe.

*Win.* Gloster, whate'er we like, thou art protector,  
 And lookest to command the prince and realm.  
 Thy wife is proud; she holdeth thee in awe,  
 More than God or religious churchmen may.

*Glo.* Name not religion, for thou lov'st the flesh;  
 And ne'er throughout the year to church thou go'st,  
 Except it be to pray against thy foes.

*Bed.* Cease, cease these jays, and rest your minds in peace!  
 Let's to the altar:—heralds, wait on us:—  
 Instead of gold, we'll offer up our arms;  
 Since arms avail not, now that Henry's dead.—  
 Posterity, await for wretched years,  
 When at their mothers' moisten'd<sup>(1)</sup> eyes babes shall suck,  
 Our isle be made a marish<sup>(2)</sup> of salt tears,  
 And none but women left to wail the dead.—  
 Henry the Fifth! thy ghost I invoke;  
 Prosper this realm, keep it from civil broils!  
 Combat with adverse planets in the heavens!  
 A far more glorious star thy soul will make,  
 Than Julius Cæsar or bright ——<sup>(3)</sup>

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* My honourable lords, health to you all !  
Sad tidings bring I to you out of France,  
Of loss, of slaughter, and discomfiture :  
Guienne, Champagne, Rheims, Orleans,<sup>(1)</sup>  
Paris, Guysors, Poitiers, are all quite lost.

*Bed.* What say'st thou, man, before dead Henry's corse ?  
Speak softly ; or the loss of those great towns  
Will make him burst his lead, and rise from death.

*Glo.* Is Paris lost ? is Rouen yielded up ?  
If Henry were recall'd to life again,  
These news would cause him once more yield the ghost.

*Exe.* How were they lost ? what treachery was us'd ?

*Mess.* No treachery ; but want of men and money.  
Amongst the soldiers this is muttered,—  
That here you maintain several factions ;  
And, whilst a field should be dispatch'd and fought,  
You are disputing of your generals :  
One would have lingering wars, with little cost ;  
Another would fly swift, but wanteth wings ;  
A third<sup>(2)</sup> thinks, without expense at all,  
By guileful fair words peace may be obtain'd.  
Awake, awake, English nobility !  
Let not sloth dim your honours, new-begot :  
Cropped are the flower-de-luces in your arms ;  
Of England's coat one half is cut away.

*Exe.* Were our tears wanting to this funeral,  
These tidings would call forth her<sup>(3)</sup> flowing tides.

*Bed.* Me they concern ; regent I am of France.—  
Give me my steel'd coat ! I'll fight for France.  
Away with these disgraceful wailing robes !  
Wounds will I lend the French, instead of eyes,  
To weep their intermissive miseries.

*Enter a second Messenger.*

*Sec. Mess.* Lords, view these letters, full of bad mischance.  
France is revolted from the English quite,  
Except some petty towns of no import :  
The Dauphin Charles is crown'd king in Rheims ;

The Bastard of Orleans with him is join'd;  
 Reignier, Duke of Anjou, doth take his part;  
 The Duke of Alençon lieth to his side.

*Exe.* The Dauphin crownèd king! all fly to him!  
 O, whither shall we fly from this reproach?

*Glo.* We will not fly, but to our enemies' throats:—  
 Bedford, if thou be slack, I'll fight it out.

*Bed.* Gloster, why doubt'st thou of my forwardness?  
 An army have I muster'd in my thoughts,  
 Wherewith already France is overrun.

*Enter a third Messenger*

*Third Mess.* My gracious lords,—to add to your laments,  
 Wherewith you now bedew King Henry's hearse,—  
 I must inform you of a dismal fight  
 Betwixt the stout Lord Talbot and the French.

*Win.* What! wherein Talbot overcame? is't so?

*Third Mess.* O, no; wherein Lord Talbot was o'erthrown:  
 The circumstance I'll tell you more at large.  
 The tenth of August last, this dreadful lord,  
 Retiring from the siege of Orleans,  
 Having full scarce six thousand in his troop,  
 By three-and-twenty thousand of the French  
 Was round encompassèd and set upon.  
 No leisure had he to enrank his men;  
 He wanted pikes to set before his archers;  
 Instead whereof, sharp stakes, pluck'd out of hedges,  
 They pitchèd in the ground confusedly,  
 To keep the horsemen off from breaking in.  
 More than three hours the fight continuèd;  
 Where valiant Talbot, above human thought,  
 Performed wonders with his sword and lance:  
 Hundreds he sent to hell, and none durst stand him;  
 Here, there, and every where, enraged he flew: (?)  
 The French exclaim'd, the devil was in arms;  
 All the whole army stood amaz'd on him:  
 His soldiers, spying his undaunted spirit,  
 A Talbot! a Talbot! cried out amain,  
 And rush'd into the bowels of the battle.

Here had the conquest fully been seal'd up,  
If Sir John Fastolfe had not play'd the coward :  
He, being in the vaward,<sup>(8)</sup> (plac'd behind,  
With purpose to relieve and follow them,)  
Cowardly fled, not having struck one stroke.  
Hence grew the general wreck and massacre ;  
Enclosèd were they with their enemies :  
A base Walloon, to win the Dauphin's grace,  
Thrust Talbot with a spear into the back ;  
Whom all France, with their chief assembled strength,  
Durst not presume to look once in the face.

*Bed.* Is Talbot slain ? then I will slay myself,  
For living idly here in pomp and ease,  
Whilst such a worthy leader, wanting aid,  
Unto his dastard foemen is betray'd.

*Third Mess.* O no, he lives ; but is took prisoner,  
And Lord Scales with him, and Lord Hungerford :  
Most of the rest slaughter'd or took likewise.

*Bed.* His ransom there is none but I shall pay :  
I'll hale the Dauphin headlong from his throne,—  
His crown shall be the ransom of my friend ;  
Four of their lords I'll change for one of ours.—  
Farewell, my masters ; to my task will I ;  
Bonfires in France forthwith I am to make,  
To keep our great Saint George's feast withal :  
Ten thousand soldiers with me I will take,  
Whose bloody deeds shall make all Europe quake.

*Third Mess.* So you had need ; for Orleans is besieg'd ;  
The English army is grown weak and faint :  
The Earl of Salisbury craveth supply,  
And hardly keeps his men from mutiny,  
Since they, so few, watch such a multitude.

*Exe.* Remember, lords, your oaths to Henry sworn,  
Either to quell the Dauphin utterly,  
Or bring him in obedience to your yoke.

*Bed.* I do remember it ; and here take my leave,  
To go about my preparation. [Exit.

*Glo.* I'll to the Tower, with all the haste I can,  
To view the artillery and munition ;

And then I will proclaim young Henry king. [Exit.

*Exe.* To Eltham will I, where the young king is,  
Being ordain'd his special governor;  
And for his safety there I'll best devise. [Exit.

*Win.* Each hath his place and function to attend:  
I am left out; for me nothing remains.  
But long I will not be Jack-out-of-office:  
The king from Eltham I intend to steal,<sup>(9)</sup>  
And sit at chiefest stern of public weal.  
[Exit. Scene closes.

SCENE II. *France. Before Orleans.*

*Enter CHARLES, with his forces; ALENÇON, REIGNIER, and others.*

*Char.* Mars his true moving, even as in the heavens,  
So in the earth, to this day is not known:  
Late did he shine upon the English side;  
Now we are victors, upon us he smiles.  
What towns of any moment but we have?  
At pleasure here we lie, near Orleans;  
Otherwhiles, the famish'd English, like pale ghosts,  
Faintly besiege us one hour in a month.

*Alen.* They want their porridge and their fat bull-beeves:  
Either they must be dieted like mules,  
And have their provender tied to their mouths,  
Or piteous they will look, like drownèd mice.

*Reig.* Let's raise the siege: why live we idly here?  
Talbot is taken, whom we wont to fear:  
Remaineth none but mad-brain'd Salisbury;  
And he may well in fretting spend his gall,—  
Nor men nor money hath he to make war.

*Char.* Sound, sound alarum! we will rush on them.  
Now for the honour of the forlorn French!—  
Him I forgive my death, that killeth me,  
When he sees me go back one foot or flee.<sup>(10)</sup> [Exeunt.

*Alarums; excursions; afterwards a retreat. Re-enter CHARLES, ALENÇON, REIGNIER, and others.*

*Char.* Who ever saw the like? what men have I!—  
Dogs! cowards! dastards!—I would ne'er have fled,  
But that they left me midst my enemies.

*Reig.* Salisbury is a desperate homicide;  
He fighteth as one weary of his life.  
The other lords, like lions wanting food,  
Do rush upon us as their hungry prey.

*Alen.* Froissart, a countryman of ours, records,  
England all Olivers and Rowlands bred  
During the time Edward the third did reign.  
More truly now may this be verified;  
For none but Samsons and Goliasses  
It sendeth forth to skirmish. One to ten!  
Lean raw-bon'd rascals! who would e'er suppose  
They had such courage and audacity?

*Char.* Let's leave this town; for they are hare-brain'd slaves,  
And hunger will enforce them to<sup>(1)</sup> be more eager:  
Of old I know them; rather with their teeth  
The walls they'll tear down, than forsake the siege.

*Reig.* I think, by some odd gimmicks or device,  
Their arms are set, like clocks, still to strike on;  
Else ne'er could they hold out so as they do.  
By my consent, we'll even let them alone.

*Alen.* Be it so.

*Enter the Bastard of Orleans.*

*Bast.* Where's the Prince Dauphin? I have news for him.

*Char.* Bastard of Orleans, thrice welcome to us.

*Bast.* Methinks your looks are sad, your cheer appall'd:  
Hath the late overthrow wrought this offence?  
Be not dismay'd, for succour is at hand:  
A holy maid hither with me I bring,  
Which, by a vision sent to her from heaven,  
Ordained is to raise this tedious siege,  
And drive the English forth the bounds of France.  
The spirit of deep prophecy she hath,



Exceeding the nine sibyls of old Rome :  
 What's past and what's to come she can descry.  
 Speak, shall I call her in? Believe my words,  
 For they are certain and unfallible.

*Char.* Go, call her in. [*Exit Bastard.*] But first, to try  
 her skill,

Reignier, stand thou as Dauphin in my place :  
 Question her proudly; let thy looks be stern :  
 By this means shall we sound what skill she hath. [*Retires.*]

*Re-enter the Bastard of Orleans, with LA FUCILLE.*

*Reig.* Fair maid, is't thou wilt do these wondrous feats?

*Puc.* Reignier, is't thou that thinkest to beguile me?—

Where is the Dauphin?—Come, come from behind;

I know thee well, though never seen before.

Be not amaz'd, there's nothing hid from me :

In private will I talk with thee apart.—

Stand back, you lords, and give us leave awhile.

*Reig.* She takes upon her bravely at first dash.

*Puc.* Dauphin, I am by birth a shepherd's daughter,

My wit untrain'd in any kind of art.

Heaven and our Lady gracious hath it pleas'd

To shine on my contemptible estate :

Lo, whilst I waited on my tender lambs,

And to sun's parching heat display'd my cheeks,

God's mother deign'd to appear to me,

And, in a vision full of majesty,

Will'd me to leave my base vocation,

And free my country from calamity :

Her aid she promis'd, and assur'd success :

In complete glory she reveal'd herself ;

And, whereas I was black and swart before,

With those clear rays which she infus'd on me,

That beauty am I bless'd with, which you may<sup>(12)</sup> see.

Ask me what question thou canst possible,

And I will answer unpremeditated :

My courage try by combat, if thou dar'st,

And thou shalt find that I exceed my sex.

Resolve on this,—thou shalt be fortunate,

If thou receive me for thy warlike mate.

*Char.* Thou hast astonish'd me with thy high terms :  
Only this proof I'll of thy valour make,—  
In single combat thou shalt buckle with me ;  
And if thou vanquishest, thy words are true ;  
Otherwise I renounce all confidence.

*Puc.* I am prepar'd : here is my keen-edg'd sword,  
Deck'd with five<sup>(13)</sup> flower-de-luces on each side ;  
The which at Touraine, in Saint Katharine's churchyard,  
Out of a great deal of old iron I chose forth.<sup>(14)</sup>

*Char.* 'Then come, o' God's name ; I fear no woman.

*Puc.* And, while I live, I'll ne'er fly from a man.

*[They fight.]*

*Char.* Stay, stay thy hands ! thou art an Amazon,  
And fightest with the sword of Deborah.

*Puc.* Christ's mother helps me, else I were too weak.

*Char.* Whoe'er helps thee, 'tis thou that must help me :  
Impatiently I burn with thy desire ;  
My heart and hands thou hast at once subdu'd.  
Excellent Pucelle, if thy name be so,  
Let me thy servant, and not sovereign, be :  
'Tis the French Dauphin sueth to thee thus.

*Puc.* I must not yield to any rites of love,  
For my profession's sacred from above :  
When I have chasèd all thy foes from hence,  
Then will I think upon a recompense.

*Char.* Meantime look gracious on thy prostrate thrall.

*Reig.* My lord, methinks, is very long in talk.

*Alen.* Doubtless he shrives this woman to her smock ;  
Else ne'er could he so long protract his speech.

*Reig.* Shall we disturb him, since he keeps no mean ?

*Alen.* He may mean more than we poor men do know :  
These women are shrewd tempters with their tongues.

*Reig.* My lord, where are you ? what devise you on ?  
Shall we give over Orleans, or no ?

*Puc.* Why, no, I say, distrustful recreants !  
Fight till the last gasp ; I will be your guard.

*Char.* What she says, I'll confirm : we'll fight it out.

*Puc.* Assign'd am I to be the English scourge.  
 This night the siege assuredly I'll raise :  
 Expect Saint Martin's summer, halcyon days,  
 Since I have enter'd into these wars.  
 Glory is like a circle in the water,  
 Which never ceaseth to enlarge itself,  
 Till, by broad spreading, it disperse to naught.  
 With Henry's death the English circle ends ;  
 Dispers'd are the glories it included.  
 Now am I like that proud insulting ship  
 Which Cæsar and his fortune bare at once.

*Char.* Was Mahomet inspir'd with a dove ?  
 Thou with an eagle art inspir'd, then.  
 Helen, the mother of great Constantine,  
 Nor yet Saint Philip's daughters, were like thee.  
 Bright star of Venus, fall'n down on the earth,  
 How may I reverently worship thee enough ?

*Alen.* Leave off delays, and let us raise the siege.

*Reig.* Woman, do what thou canst to save our honours ;  
 Drive them from Orleans, and be immortaliz'd.

*Char.* Presently we'll try :—come, let's away about it :—  
 No prophet will I trust, if she prove false. [Exeunt.]

SCENE III. *London. Before the gates of the Tower.*

*Enter the Duke of GLOSTER, with his Serving-men in  
 blue coats.*(<sup>15</sup>)

*Glo.* I am come to survey the Tower this day :  
 Since Henry's death, I fear, there is conveyance.—  
 Where be these warders, that they wait not here ?  
 Open the gates ; 'tis Gloster that calls. [Servants knock.]

*First Warder* [within]. Who's there that knocks so im-  
 periously ?

*First Serv.* It is the noble Duke of Gloster.

*Second Warder* [within]. Whoe'er he be, you may not be  
 let in.

*First Serv.* Villains, answer you so the lord protector?

*First Warder [within].* The Lord protect him! so we answer him :

We do no otherwise than we are will'd.

*Glo.* Who will'd you? or whose will stands but mine?

There's none protector of the realm but I.—

Break up the gates, I'll be your warrantize :

Shall I be flouted thus by dunghill grooms?

*[Gloster's Serving-men rush at the Tower-gates.]*

*Woodville [within].* What noise is this? what traitors have we here?

*Glo.* Lieutenant, is it you whose voice I hear?

Open the gates; here's Gloster that would enter.

*Woodville [within].* Have patience, noble duke; I may not open;

The Cardinal of Winchester forbids :

From him I have express commandment<sup>(16)</sup>

That thou nor none of thine shall be let in.

*Glo.* Faint-hearted Woodville, prizest him 'fore me,—

Arrogant Winchester, that haughty prelate,

Whom Henry, our late sovereign, ne'er could brook?

Thou art no friend to God or to the king :

Open the gates, or I'll shut thee out shortly.

*Serving-men.* Open the gates unto the lord protector;

Or we'll burst them open, if that you come not quickly.

*[Gloster's Serving-men rush again at the Tower-gates.]*

*Enter WINCHESTER, with his Serving-men in tawny coats.*

*Win.* How now, ambitious Humphry! what means this?

*Glo.* Peel'd<sup>(17)</sup> priest, dost thou command me to be shut out?

*Win.* I do, thou most usurping proditor,  
And not protector, of the king or realm.

*Glo.* Stand back, thou manifest conspirator,  
Thou that contriv'dst to murder our dead lord;  
Thou that giv'st whores indulgences to sin:  
I'll canvass thee in thy broad cardinal's hat,  
If thou proceed in this thy insolence.

*Win.* Nay, stand thou back; I will not budge a foot:

This be Damascus, be thou cursèd Cain,  
To slay thy brother Abel, if thou wilt.

*Glo.* I will not slay thee, but I'll drive thee back :  
Thy scarlet robes as a child's bearing-cloth  
I'll use to carry thee out of this place.

*Win.* Do what thou dar'st; I heard thee to thy face.

*Glo.* What! am I dar'd, and bearded to my face?—  
Draw, men, for all this privileged place;  
Blue-coats to tawny-coats.—Priest, beware your beard;  
I mean to tug it, and to cuff you soundly :  
Under my feet I'll<sup>(18)</sup> stamp thy cardinal's hat;  
In spite of pope or dignities of church,  
Here by the cheeks I'll drag thee up and down.

*Win.* Gloster, thou wilt answer this before the pope.

*Glo.* Winchester goose! I cry, a rope! a rope!—  
Now beat them hence, why do you let them stay?—  
Thee I'll chase hence, thou wolf in sheep's array.—  
Out, tawny-coats!—out, scarlet hypocrite!

*Here GLOSTER and his Serving-men attack the other party, and enter  
in the hurry-hurry the Mayor of London and Officers.*

*May.* Kie, lords! that you, being supreme magistrates,  
Thus contumeliously should break the peace!

*Glo.* Peace, mayor! thou know'st little of my wrongs:  
Here's Beaufort, that regards nor God nor king,  
Hath here restrain'd the Tower to his use.

*Win.* Here's Gloster,<sup>(19)</sup> a foe to citizens;  
One that still motions war, and never peace,  
O'ercharging your free pulses with large fines;  
That seeks to overthrow religion,  
Because he is protector of the realm;  
And would have armour here out of the Tower,  
To crown himself king, and suppress the prince.

*Glo.* I will not answer thee with words, but blows.

*[Here they skirmish again.]*

*May.* Naught rests for me, in this tumultuous strife,  
But to make open proclamation:—

Come, officer; as loud as e'er thou canst.<sup>(20)</sup>

*Off.* *[reads.]* "All manner of men assembled here in arms this day

against God's peace and the king's, we charge and command you, in his highness' name, to repair to your several dwelling-places; and not to wear, handle, or use any sword, weapon, or dagger, henceforward, upon pain of death.'

*Glo.* Cardinal, I'll be no breaker of the law:  
But we shall meet, and break our minds at large.

*Win.* Gloster, we'll meet; to thy cost,<sup>(21)</sup> be sure:  
Thy heart-blood I will have for this day's work.

*May.* I'll call for clubs, if you will not away:—  
'This cardinal's more haughty than the devil.

*Glo.* Mayor, farewell: thou dost but what thou mayst.

*Win.* Abominable Gloster! guard thy head;  
For I intend to have it ere long.

*[Exeunt, severally, Gloster and Winchester with  
their Serving-men.]*

*May.* See the coast clear'd, and then we will depart.—  
Good God, these<sup>(22)</sup> nobles should such stomachs bear!  
I myself fight not once in forty year. *[Exeunt.]*

---

SCENE IV. *France. Before Orleans.*

*Enter, on the walls, the Master-Gunner and his Son.*

*M. Gun.* Sirrah, thou know'st how Orleans is besieg'd,  
And how the English have the suburbs won.

*Son.* Father, I know; and oft have shot at them,  
Howe'er, unfortunate, I miss'd my aim.

*M. Gun.* But now thou shalt not. Be thou rul'd by me:  
Chief master-gunner am I of this town;  
Something I must do to procure me grace.  
The prince's espials have informèd me  
How the English, in the suburbs close intrench'd,  
Wont,<sup>(23)</sup> through a secret grate of iron bars  
In yonder tower, to overpeer the city;  
And thence discover how with most advantage  
They may vex us with shot or with assault.  
To intercept this inconvenience,  
A piece of ordnance 'gainst it I have plac'd;  
And<sup>(24)</sup> even these three days have I watch'd, if I  
Could see them.

Now do thou watch, for I can stay no longer.

If thou spy'st any, run and bring me word;

And thou shalt find me at the governor's.

[*Exit.*]

*Son.* Father, I warrant you; take you no care;

I'll never trouble you, if I may spy them.

*Enter, in an upper chamber of a tower, the Lords SALISBURY and TALBOT, Sir WILLIAM GLANSDALE, Sir THOMAS GARGRAVE, and others.*

*Sal.* Talbot, my life, my joy, again return'd!

How wert thou handled being prisoner?

Or by what means gott'st thou to be releas'd?

Discourse, I prithee, on this turret's top.

*Tal.* The Duke<sup>(25)</sup> of Bedford had a prisoner  
Call'd the brave Lord Ponton de Santrailles;  
For him was I exchang'd and ransom'd.

But with a baser man of arms by far,

Once, in contempt, they would have barter'd me:

Which I, disdain'g, scorn'd; and crav'd death

Rather than I would be so vile-esteem'd.<sup>(26)</sup>

In fine, redeem'd I was as I desir'd.

But, O, the treacherous Fastolfe wounds my heart!

Whom with my bare fists I would execute,

If I now had him brought into my power.

*Sal.* Yet tell'st thou not how thou wert entertain'd.

*Tal.* With scoffs, and scorns, and contumelious taunts.  
In open market-place produc'd they me,  
To be a public spectacle to all:

Here, said they, is the terror of the French,

The scarecrow that affrights our children so,

Then broke I from the officers that led me,

And with my nails digg'd stones out of the ground,

To hurl at the beholders of my shame:

My grisly countenance made others fly;

None durst come near for fear of sudden death.

In iron walls they deem'd me not secure;

So great fear of my name 'mongst them was spread,

That they suppos'd I could rend bars of steel,

And spurn in pieces posts of adamant:

Wherefore a guard of chosen shot I had,  
That walk'd about me every minute-while;  
And if I did but stir out of my bed,  
Ready they were to shoot me to the heart.

*Sal.* I grieve to hear what torments you endur'd;  
But we will be reveng'd sufficiently.  
Now it is supper-time in Orleans:  
Here, through this grate, I count each one,<sup>(27)</sup>  
And view the Frenchmen how they fortify:  
Let us look in; the sight will much delight thee.—  
Sir Thomas Gargrave, and Sir William Glansdale,  
Let me have your express opinions  
Where is best place to make our battery next.

*Gar.* I think, at the north gate; for there stand lords.

*Glan.* And I, here, at the bulwark of the bridge.

*Tal.* For aught I see, this city must be famish'd,  
Or with light skirmishes enfeebled.

[*Shot from the town. Salisbury and Sir Thomas  
Gargrave fall.*]

*Sal.* O Lord, have mercy on us, wretched sinners!

*Gar.* O Lord, have mercy on me, woful man!

*Tal.* What chance is this that suddenly hath cross'd us?—  
Speak, Salisbury; at least, if thou canst speak:  
How far'st thou, mirror of all martial men?  
One of thy eyes and thy cheek's side struck off!—  
Accursèd tower! accursèd fatal hand  
That hath contriv'd this woful tragedy!  
In thirteen battles Salisbury o'ercame;  
Henry the fifth he first train'd to the wars;  
Whilst any trump did sound, or drum struck up,  
His sword did ne'er leave striking in the field.—  
Yet liv'st thou, Salisbury? though thy speech doth fail,  
One eye thou hast, to look to heaven for grace:  
The sun with one eye vieweth all the world.—  
Heaven, be thou gracious to none alive,  
If Salisbury wants mercy at thy hands!—  
Bear hence his body; I will help to bury it.—  
Sir Thomas Gargrave, hast thou any life?  
Speak unto Talbot; nay, look up to him.—



Salisbury, cheer thy spirit with this comfort;  
 Thou shalt not die whiles—  
 He beckons with his hand, and smiles on me,  
 As who should say, "When I am dead and gone,  
 Remember to avenge me on the French."—  
 Plantagenet, I will; and like thee, Nero,<sup>(28)</sup>  
 Play on the lute, beholding the towns burn:  
 Wretched shall France be only in my name.

[*Thunder heard; afterwards an alarum.*]

What stir is this? what tumult's in the heavens?  
 Whence cometh this alarum, and the noise?

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* My lord, my lord, the French have gather'd head:  
 The Dauphin, with one Joan la Pucelle join'd,—  
 A holy prophetess new risen up,—  
 Is come with a great power to raise the siege.

[*Salisbury lifts himself up and groans.*]

*Tal.* Hear, hear how dying Salisbury doth groan!  
 It irks his heart he cannot be reveng'd,—  
 Frenchmen, I'll be a Salisbury to you:—  
 Pucelle or puzzel, dolphin or dogfish,  
 Your hearts I'll stamp out with my horse's heels,  
 And make a quagmire of your mingled brains.—  
 Convey me Salisbury into his tent,  
 And then we'll try what these dastard Frenchmen dare.<sup>(29)</sup>  
 [*Exeunt, bearing out the bodies.*]

SCENE V. *The same. Before one of the gates of Orleans.*

*Alarum. Skirmishings. Enter TALBOT, pursuing the Dauphin, drives him in, and exit; then enter LA PUCELLE, driving Englishmen before her, and exit after them. then re-enter TALBOT.*

*Tal.* Where is my strength, my valour, and my force?  
 Our English troops retire, I cannot stay them;  
 A woman clad in armour chaseth them.  
 Here, here she comes.

*Re-enter LA PUCELLE.*

I'll have a bout with thee ;  
 Devil or devil's dam, I'll conjure thee :  
 Blood will I draw on thee,—thou art a witch,—  
 And straightway give thy soul to him thou serv'st.

*Puc.* Come, come, 'tis only I that must disgrace thee.

*[They fight.]*

*Tal.* Heavens, can you suffer hell so to prevail ?  
 My breast I'll burst with straining of my courage,  
 And from my shoulders crack my arms asunder,  
 But I will chastise this high-minded strumpet.

*[They fight again.]*

*Puc.* *[retiring.]* Talbot, farewell ; thy hour is not yet come :  
 I must go victual Orleans forthwith.  
 O'ertake me, if thou canst ; I scorn thy strength.  
 Go, go cheer up thy hunger-starvèd<sup>(50)</sup> men ;  
 Help Salisbury to make his testament :  
 This day is ours, as many more shall be.

*[La Pucelle enters the town with Soldiers.]*

*Tal.* My thoughts are whirlèd like a potter's wheel ;  
 I know not where I am, nor what I do :  
 A witch by fear, not force, like Hannibal,  
 Drives back our troops, and conquers as she lists :  
 So bees with smoke, and doves with noisome stench,  
 Are from their hives and houses driven away.  
 They call'd us, for our fierceness, English dogs ;  
 Now, like to whelps, we crying run away. *[A short alarum.]*  
 Hark, countymen ! either renew the fight,  
 Or tear the lions out of England's coat ;  
 Renounce your soil, give sheep in lions' stead :  
 Sheep run not half so timorous<sup>(51)</sup> from the wolf,  
 Or horse or oxen from the leopard,  
 As you fly from your oft-subduèd slaves.

*[Alarum. Another skirmish.]*

It will not be :—retire into your trenches :  
 You all consented unto Salisbury's death,  
 For none would strike a stroke in his revenge.—

Pucelle is enter'd into Orleans,  
 In spite of us or aught that we could do.  
 O, would I were to die with Salisbury!  
 The shame hercof will make me hide my head.  
*[Alarum; retreat. Exeunt Talbot and forces, &c.]*

*Flourish* Enter, on the walls, LA PUCELLE, CHARLES, REIGNIER,  
 ALENÇON, and Soldiers.

*Puc.* Advance our waving colours on the walls;  
 Rescu'd is Orleans from the English:—  
 Thus Joan la Pucelle hath perform'd her word.

*Char.* Divinest creature, Astræa's daughter,<sup>(32)</sup>  
 How shall I honour thee for this success?  
 Thy promises are like Adonis' gardens,  
 That one day bloom'd, and fruitful were the next.—  
 France, triumph in thy glorious prophetess!—  
 Recover'd is the town of Orleans:  
 More bless'd hap did ne'er befall our state.

*Reig.* Why ring not out the bells aloud throughout the  
 town?<sup>(33)</sup>

Dauphin, command the citizens make bonfires,  
 And feast and banquet in the open streets,  
 To celebrate the joy that God hath given us.

*Alen.* All France will be replete with mirth and joy,  
 When they shall hear how we have play'd the men.

*Char.* 'Tis Joan, not we, by whom the day is won;  
 For which I will divide my crown with her;  
 And all the priests and friars in my realm  
 Shall in procession sing her endless praise.  
 A statelier pyramid to her I'll rear  
 Than Rhodope's of<sup>(34)</sup> Memphis ever was:  
 In memory of her when she is dead,  
 Her ashes, in an urn more precious  
 Than the rich-jewell'd coffer of Darius,  
 Transported shall be at high festivals  
 Before the kings and queens of France.<sup>(35)</sup>  
 No longer on Saint Denis will we cry,  
 But Joan la Pucelle shall be France's saint.

Come in, and let us banquet royally,  
After this golden day of victory.

[*Flourish. Exeunt.*]

---

## ACT II.

### SCENE I. *Before Orleans.*

*Enter, to the gate, a French Sergeant and two Sentinels.*

*Serg.* Sirs, take your places, and be vigilant:  
If any noise or soldier you perceive  
Near to the walls, by some apparent sign  
Let us have knowledge at the court of guard.

*First Sent.* Sergeant, you shall. [*Exit Sergeant.*] Thus  
are poor servitors,  
(When others sleep upon their quiet beds,)  
Constrain'd to watch in darkness, rain, and cold.

*Enter TALBOT, BEDFORD, BURGUNDY, and forces, with scaling-ladders, their drums beating a dead march.*

*Tal.* Lord regent, and redoubted Burgundy,—  
By whose approach the regions of Artois,  
Walloon, and Picardy are friends to us,—  
This happy night the Frenchmen are secure,  
Having all day carous'd and banqueted:  
Embrace we, then, this opportunity,  
As fitting best to quittance their deceit,  
Contriv'd by art and baleful sorcery.

*Bed.* Coward of France!—how much he wrongs his fame,  
Despairing of his own arm's fortitude,  
To join with witches and the help of hell!

*Bur.* Traitors have never other company.—  
But what's that Pucelle, whom they term so pure?

*Tal.* A maid, they say.

*Bed.* A maid! and be so martial!

*Bur.* Pray God she prove not masculine ere long;  
If underneath the standard of the French  
She carry armour, as she hath begun.

*Tal.* Well, let them practise and converse with spirits :  
 God is our fortress, in whose conquering name  
 Let us resolve to scale their flinty bulwarks.

*Bed.* Ascend, brave Talbot; we will follow thee.

*Tal.* Not all together: better far, I guess,  
 That we do make our entrance several ways;  
 That, if it chance the one of us do fail,  
 The other yet may rise against their force.

*Bed.* Agreed: I'll to yond corner.

*Bur.*

And I to this.

*Tal.* And here will Talbot mount, or make his grave.—  
 Now, Salisbury, for thee, and for the right  
 Of English Henry, shall this night appear  
 How much in duty I am bound to both.

*[The English scale the walls, crying "St. George!  
 a Talbot!" and all enter the town.]*

*Sent.* Arm! arm! the enemy doth make assault!

*The French leap over the walls in their shirts. Enter, several ways,  
 the Bastard of Orleans, ALENÇON, and REIGNIER, half ready  
 and half unready.*

*Alen.* How now, my lords! what, all unready so?

*Bast.* Unready! ay, and glad we scap'd so well.

*Reig.* 'Twas time, I trow, to wake and leave our beds,  
 Hearing alarms at our chamber-doors.

*Alen.* Of all exploits since first I follow'd arms,  
 Ne'er heard I of a warlike enterprise  
 More venturous or desperate than this.

*Bast.* I think this Talbot be a fiend of hell.

*Reig.* If not of hell, the heavens, sure, favour him.

*Alen.* Here cometh Charles: I marvel how he sped.

*Bast.* Tut, holy Joan was his defensive guard.

*Enter CHARLES and LA PUCELLE.*

*Char.* Is this thy cunning, thou deceitful dame?  
 Didst thou at first, to flatter us withal,  
 Make us partakers of a little gain,  
 That now our loss might be ten times so much?

*Puc.* Wherefore is Charles impatient with his friend?

At all times will you have my power alike ?  
Sleeping or waking, must I still prevail,  
Or will you blame and lay the fault on me ?  
Improvident soldiers ! had your watch been good,  
This sudden mischief never could have fall'n.

*Char.* Duke of Alençon, this was your default,  
That, being captain of the watch to-night,  
Did look no better to that weighty charge.

*Alen.* Had all your quarters been as safely kept  
As that whereof I had the government,  
We had not been thus shamefully surpris'd.

*Bast.* Mine was secure.

*Reig.* And so was mine, my lord.

*Char.* And, for myself, most part of all this night,  
Within her quarter and mine own precinct  
I was employ'd in passing to and fro,  
About relieving of the sentinels :  
Then how or which way should they first break in ?

*Puc.* Question, my lords, no further of the case,  
How or which way : 'tis sure they found some place  
But weakly guarded, where the breach was made.  
And now there rests no other shift but this,—  
To gather our soldiers, scatter'd and dispers'd,  
And lay new platforms to endamage them.

*Alarum.* Enter an English Soldier, crying "A Talbot ! a Talbot !"   
*They fly, leaving their clothes behind.*

*Sold.* I'll be so bold to take what they have left.  
The cry of Talbot serves me for a sword ;  
For I have loaden me with many spoils,  
Using no other weapon but his name.

[*Exit.*

---

SCENE II. Orleans. Within the town.

*Enter TALBOT, BEDFORD, BURGUNDY, a Captain, and others.*

*Bed.* The day begins to break, and night is fled,  
Whose pitchy mantle over-veil'd the earth.

Here sound retreat, and cease our hot pursuit.

[Retreat sounded.]

*Tal.* Bring forth the body of old Salisbury,  
And here advance it in the market-place,  
The middle centre of this cursèd town.  
Now have I paid my vow unto his soul;  
For every drop of blood was drawn from him,  
There hath at least five Frenchmen died to-night.  
And that hereafter ages may behold  
What ruin happen'd in revenge of him,  
Within their chiefest temple I'll erect  
A tomb, wherein his corpse shall be interr'd:  
Upon the which, that every one may read,  
Shall be engrav'd the sack of Orleans,  
The treacherous manner of his mournful death,  
And what a terror he had been to France.  
But, lords, in all our bloody massacre,  
I muse we met not with the Dauphin's grace,  
His new-come champion, virtuous Joan of Arc,  
Nor any of his false confederates.

*Bed.* 'Tis thought, Lord Talbot, when the fight began,  
Rous'd on the sudden from their drowsy beds,  
They did, amongst the troops of armèd men,  
Leap o'er the walls for refuge in the field.

*Bur.* Myself (as far as I could well discern,  
For smoke and dusky vapours of the night,)  
Am sure I scar'd the Dauphin and his trull,  
When arm in arm they both came swiftly running,  
Like to a pair of loving turtle-doves,  
That could not live asunder day or night.  
After that things are set in order here,  
We'll follow them with all the power we have.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* All hail, my lords! Which of this princely train  
Call ye the warlike Talbot, for his acts  
So much applauded through the realm of France?

*Tal.* Here is the Talbot: who would speak with him?

*Mess.* The virtuous lady, Countess of Auvergne,

With modesty admiring thy renown,  
By me entreats, great lord, thou wouldst vouchsafe  
To visit her poor castle where she lies,  
That she may boast she hath beheld the man  
Whose glory fills the world with loud report.

*Bur.* Is it even so? Nay, then, I see our wars  
Will turn unto a peaceful comic sport,  
When ladies crave to be encounter'd with.—  
You may not, my lord, despise her gentle suit.

*Tal.* Ne'er trust me, then; for when a world of men  
Could not prevail with all their oratory,  
Yet hath a woman's kindness over-rul'd;—  
And therefore tell her I return great thanks,  
And in submission will attend on her.—  
Will not your honours bear me company?

*Bed.* No, truly; it is more than manners will:  
And I have heard it said, unbidden guests  
Are often welcomest when they are gone.

*Tal.* Well then, alone, since there's no remedy,  
I mean to prove this lady's courtesy.—  
Come hither, captain. [*Whispers.*] You perceive my mind?

*Capt.* I do, my lord, and mean accordingly. [*Exeunt.*]

---

SCENE III. *Auvergne. Court of the Castle.*

*Enter the Countess and her Porter.*

*Count.* Porter, remember what I gave in charge;  
And when you have done so, bring the keys to me.

*Port.* Madam, I will. [*Exit.*]

*Count.* The plot is laid: if all things fall out right,  
I shall as famous be by this exploit  
As Scythian Tomyris by Cyrus' death.  
Great is the rumour of this dreadful knight,  
And his achievements of no less account:  
Fain would mine eyes be witness with mine ears,  
To give their censure of these rare reports.



*Enter Messenger and TALBOT.*

*Mess.* Madam,  
According as your ladyship desir'd,  
By message ear'd, so is Lord Talbot come.  
*Count.* And he is welcome. What! is this the man?  
*Mess.* Madam, it is.

*Count.* Is this the scourge of France?  
Is this the Talbot, so much fear'd abroad,  
That with his name the mothers still their babes?  
I see report is fabulous and false:  
I thought I should have seen some Hercules,  
A second Hector, for his grim aspect,  
And large proportion of his strong-knit limbs.  
Alas, this is a child, a silly dwarf!  
It cannot be this weak and writhl'd shrimp  
Should strike such terror to his enemies.

*Tal.* Madam, I have been bold to trouble you;  
But since your ladyship is not at leisure,  
I'll sort some other time to visit you. *[Going.]*

*Count.* What means he now?—Go ask him whither he  
goes.

*Mess.* Stay, my Lord Talbot; for my lady craves  
To know the cause of your abrupt departure.

*Tal.* Marry, for that she's in a wrong belief,  
I go to certify her, Talbot's here.

*Re-enter Porter with keys.*

*Count.* If thou be he, then art thou prisoner.

*Tal.* Prisoner! to whom?

*Count.* To me, blood-thirsty lord;  
And for that cause I train'd thee to my house.  
Long time thy shadow hath been thrall to me,  
For in my gallery thy picture hangs:  
But now the substance shall endure the like;  
And I will chain these legs and arms of thine,  
That hast by tyranny, these many years,  
Wasted our country, slain our citizens,  
And sent our sons and husbands captive.

*Tal.* Ha, ha, ha!

*Count.* Laughest thou, wretch? thy mirth shall turn to moan.

*Tal.* I laugh to see your ladyship so fond  
To think that you have aught but Talbot's shadow  
Whereon to practise your severity.

*Count.* Why, art not thou the man?

*Tal.*

I am indeed.

*Count.* Then have I substance too.

*Tal.* No, no, I am but shadow of myself:  
You are deceiv'd, my substance is not here;  
For what you see is but the smallest part  
And least proportion of humanity:  
I tell you, madam, were the whole frame here,  
It is of such a spacious lofty pitch,  
Your roof were not sufficient to contain 't.

*Count.* This is a riddling merchant for the nonce;  
He will be here, and yet he is not here:  
How can these contrarieties agree?

*Tal.* That will I show you presently.

[*He winds a horn. Drums strike up; then a peal  
of ordnance. The gates being forc'd, enter  
Soldiers.*

How say you, madam? are you now persuaded  
That Talbot is but shadow of himself?  
These are his substance, sinews, arms, and strength,  
With which he yoketh your rebellious necks,  
Razeth your cities, and subverts your towns,  
And in a moment makes them desolate.

*Count.* Victorious Talbot! pardon my abuse:  
I find thou art no less than fame hath bruited,  
And more than may be gather'd by thy shape.  
Let my presumption not provoke thy wrath;  
For I am sorry that with reverence  
I did not entertain thee as thou art.

*Tal.* Be not dismay'd, fair lady; nor misconstrue <sup>(36)</sup>  
The mind of Talbot, as you did mistake  
The outward composition of his body.  
What you have done hath not offended me:

Nor other satisfaction do I crave,  
 But only (with your patience) that we may  
 Taste of your wine, and see what cates you have ;  
 For soldiers' stomachs always serve them well.

*Count.* With all my heart ; and think me honourèd  
 To feast so great a warrior in my house. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV. *London. The Temple-garden.*

*Enter the Earls of SOMERSET, SUFFOLK, and WARWICK ; RICHARD  
 PLANTAGENET, VERNON, and another Lawyer.*

*Plan.* Great lords and gentlemen, what means this silence ?  
 Dare no man answer in a case of truth ?

*Suf.* Within the Temple-hall we were too loud ;  
 The garden here is more convenient.

*Plan.* Then say at once if I maintain'd the truth ;  
 Or else was wrangling Somerset in the error ?

*Suf.* Faith, I have been a truant in the law,  
 And never yet could frame my will to it ;  
 And therefore frame the law unto my will.

*Som.* Judge you, my Lord of Warwick, then, between us.

*Har.* Between two hawks, which flies the higher pitch ;  
 Between two dogs, which hath the deeper mouth ;  
 Between two blades, which bears the better temper ;  
 Between two horses, which doth bear him best ;  
 Between two girls, which hath the merriest eye ;—  
 I have, perhaps, some shallow spirit of judgment :  
 But in these nice sharp quilllets of the law,  
 Good faith, I am no wiser than a daw.

*Plan.* Tut, tut, here is a mannerly forbearance :  
 The truth appears so naked on my side,  
 That any purblind eye may find it out.

*Som.* And on my side it is so well apparell'd,  
 So clear, so shining, and so evident,  
 That it will glimmer through a blind man's eye.

*Plan.* Since you are tongue-tied and so loth to speak,  
 In dumb significants proclaim your thoughts :

Let him that is a true-born gentleman,  
And stands upon the honour of his birth,  
If he suppose that I have pleaded truth,  
From off this brier pluck a white rose with me.

*Som.* Let him that is no coward nor no flatterer,  
But dare maintain the party of the truth,  
Pluck a red rose from off this thorn with me.

*War.* I love no colours; and, without all colour  
Of base insinuating flattery,  
I pluck this white rose with Plantagenet.

*Suf.* I pluck this red rose with young Somerset;  
And say withal, I think he held the right.

*Ver.* Stay, lords and gentlemen, and pluck no more,  
Till you conclude, that he, upon whose side  
The fewest roses are cropp'd from the tree,  
Shall yield the other in the right opinion.

*Som.* Good Master Vernon, it is well objected:  
If I have fewest, I subscribe in silence.

*Plan.* And I.

*Ver.* Then, for the truth and plainness of the case,  
I pluck this pale and maiden blossom here,  
Giving my verdict on the white rose side.

*Som.* Prick not your finger as you pluck it off,  
Lest, bleeding, you do paint the white rose red,  
And fall on my side so, against your will.

*Ver.* If I, my lord, for my opinion bleed,  
Opinion shall be surgeon to my hurt,  
And keep me on the side where still I am.

*Som.* Well, well, come on: who else?

*Law.* Unless my study and my books be false,  
The argument you held was wrong in you;     [*To Somerset.*  
In sign whereof I pluck a white rose too.

*Plan.* Now, Somerset, where is your argument?

*Som.* Here in my scabbard; meditating that  
Shall dye your white rose in a bloody red.

*Plan.* Meantime your cheeks do counterfeit our roses;  
For pale they look with fear, as witnessing  
The truth on our side.

*Som.*                                     No, Plantagenet,

'Tis not for fear, but anger that thy cheeks  
Blush for pure shame to counterfeit our roses,  
And yet thy tongue will not confess thy error.

*Plan.* Hath not thy rose a canker, Somerset?

*Som.* Hath not thy rose a thorn, Plantagenet?

*Plan.* Ay, sharp and piercing, to maintain his truth;  
Whiles thy consuming canker eats his falsehood.

*Som.* Well, I'll find friends to wear my bleeding roses,  
That shall maintain what I have said is true,  
Where false Plantagenet dare not be seen.

*Plan.* Now, by this maiden blossom in my hand,  
I scorn thee and thy faction,<sup>(37)</sup> peevish boy.

*Suf.* Turn not thy scorns this way, Plantagenet.

*Plan.* Proud Poole, I will; and scorn both him and thee.

*Suf.* I'll turn my part thereof into thy throat.

*Som.* Away, away, good William De-la-Poole!

We grace the yeoman by conversing with him.

*War.* Now, by God's will, thou wrong'st him, Somerset;  
His grandfather was Lionel Duke of Clarence,  
Third son to the third Edward King of England:  
Spring crestless yeomen from so deep a root?

*Plan.* He bears him on the place's privilege,  
Or durst not, for his craven heart, say thus.

*Som.* By him that made me, I'll maintain my words  
On any plot of ground in Christendom.

Was not thy father, Richard Earl of Cambridge,  
For treason executed in our late king's days?

And, by his treason, stand'st not thou attainted,  
Corrupted, and exempt from ancient gentry?

His trespass yet lives guilty in thy blood;

And, till thou be restor'd, thou art a yeoman.

*Plan.* My father was attach'd, not attainted;  
Condemn'd to die for treason, but no traitor;  
And that I'll prove on better men than Somerset,  
Were growing time once ripen'd to my will.  
For your partaker Poole, and you yourself,  
I'll note you in my book of memory,  
To scourge you for this apprehension:  
Look to it well, and say you are well warn'd.

*Som.* Ah, thou shalt find us ready for thee still;  
And know us, by these colours, for thy foes,—  
For these my friends, in spite of thee, shall wear.

*Plan.* And, by my soul, this pale and angry rose,  
As cognizance of my blood-drinking hate,  
Will I for ever, and my faction, wear,  
Until it wither with me to my grave,  
Or flourish to the height of my degree.

*Stuf.* Go forward, and be chok'd with thy ambition!  
And so, farewell, until I meet thee next. *[Exit.*

*Som.* Have with thee, Poole.—Farewell, ambitious Rich-  
ard. *[Exit.*

*Plan.* How I am brav'd, and must perforce endure it!

*War.* This blot, that they object against your house,  
Shall be wip'd out in the next parliament,  
Call'd for the truce of Winchester and Gloster:  
And if thou be not then created York,  
I will not live to be accounted Warwick.  
Meantime, in signal of my love to thee,  
Against proud Somerset and William Poole,  
Will I upon thy party wear this rose:  
And here I prophesy,—this brawl to-day,  
Grown to this faction, in the Temple-garden,  
Shall send, between the red rose and the white,  
A thousand souls to death and deadly night.

*Plan.* Good Master Vernon, I am bound to you,  
That you on my behalf would pluck a flower.

*Vern.* In your behalf still will I wear the same.

*Law.* And so will I.

*Plan.* Thanks, gentle sir.<sup>(38)</sup>

Come, let us four to dinner: I dare say  
This quarrel will drink blood another day. *[Exeunt.*

---

SCENE V. *The same. A room in the Tower.*

*Enter* MORTIMER, brought-in in a chair by two Keepers.

*Mor.* Kind keepers of my weak decaying age,  
Let dying Mortimer here rest himself.—

Even like a man new-halèd from the rack,  
 So fare my limbs with long imprisonment;  
 And these grey locks, the pursuivants of death,  
 Nestor-like aged, in an age of care,  
 Argue the end of Edmund Mortimer.  
 These eyes,—like lamps whose wasting oil is spent,—  
 Wax dim, as drawing to their exigent:  
 Weak shoulders, overborne with burdening grief;  
 And pithless arms, like to a wither'd vine  
 That droops his sapless branches to the ground:  
 Yet are these feet,—whose strengthless stay is numb,  
 Unable to support this lump of clay,—  
 Swift-wingèd with desire to get a grave,  
 As witting I no other comfort have.—  
 But tell me, keeper, will my nephew come?

*First Keep.* Richard Plantagenet, my lord, will come:  
 We sent unto the Temple, to<sup>(39)</sup> his chamber;  
 And answer was return'd, that he will come.

*Mor.* Enough: my soul shall then be satisfied.—  
 Poor gentleman! his wrong doth equal mine.  
 Since Henry Monmouth first began to reign  
 (Before whose glory I was great in arms),  
 This loathsome sequestration have I had;  
 And even since then hath Richard been obscur'd,  
 Depriv'd of honour and inheritance.  
 But now, the arbitrator of despairs,  
 Just death, kind umpire of men's miseries,  
 With sweet enlargement doth dismiss me hence:  
 I would his troubles likewise were expir'd,  
 That so he might recover what was lost.

*Enter RICHARD PLANTAGENET.*

*First Keep.* My lord, your loving nephew now is come.

*Mor.* Richard Plantagenet, my friend, is he come?

*Plan.* Ay, noble uncle, thus ignobly us'd,  
 Your nephew, late-despis'd Richard, comes.

*Mor.* Direct mine arms I may embrace his neck,  
 And in his bosom spend my latter gasp;  
 O, tell me when my lips do touch his cheeks,

That I may kindly give one fainting kiss.—  
And now declare, sweet stem from York's great stock,  
Why didst thou say, of late thou wert despis'd?

*Plan.* First, lean thine aged back against mine arm;  
And, in that ease, I'll tell thee my disease.

This day, in argument upon a case,  
Some words there grew 'twixt Somerset and me;  
Among which terms he us'd his lavish tongue,  
And did upbraid me with my father's death:  
Which obloquy set bars before my tongue,  
Else with the like I had requited him.

Therefore, good uncle, for my father's sake,  
In honour of a true Plantagenet,  
And for alliance' sake, declare the cause  
My father, Earl of Cambridge, lost his head.

*Mor.* That cause, fair nephew, that imprison'd me,  
And hath detain'd me, all my flowering youth,  
Within a loathsome dungeon, there to pine,  
Was cursèd instrument of his decease.

*Plan.* Discover more at large what cause that was;  
For I am ignorant, and cannot guess.

*Mor.* I will, if that my fading breath permit,  
And death approach not ere my tale be done.  
*Henry the fourth, grandfather to this king,*  
Depos'd his nephew Richard,—Edward's son,  
The first-begotten, and the lawful heir  
Of Edward king, the third of that descent:  
During whose reign, the Percies of the north,  
Finding his usurpation most unjust,  
Endeavour'd my advancement to the throne:  
The reason mov'd these warlike lords to this  
Was, for that (young King<sup>(40)</sup> Richard thus remov'd,  
Leaving no heir begotten of his body,)  
I was the next by birth and parentage;  
For by my mother I derivèd am  
From Lionel Duke of Clarence, the third son  
To King Edward the third; whereas he  
From John of Gaunt doth bring his pedigree,  
Being but fourth of that heroic line.



But mark : as, in this haughty great attempt,  
 They labour'd to plant the rightful heir,  
 I lost my liberty, and they their lives.  
 Long after this, when Henry the fifth,  
 Succeeding his father Bolingbroke, did reign,  
 Thy father, Earl of Cambridge, then deriv'd  
 From famous Edmund Langley, Duke of York,  
 Marrying my sister, that thy mother was,  
 Again, in pity of my hard distress,  
 Levied an army, weening to redeem  
 And have install'd me in the diadem :  
 But, as the rest, so fell that noble earl,  
 And was behended. Thus the Mortimers,  
 In whom the title rested, were suppress'd.

*Plan.* Of which, my lord, your honour is the last.

*Mor.* True ; and thou seest that I no issue have,  
 And that my fainting words do warrant death :  
 Thou art my heir ; the rest I wish thee gather :  
 But yet be wary in thy studious care.

*Plan.* Thy grave admonishments prevail with me :  
 But yet, methinks, my father's execution  
 Was nothing less than bloody tyranny.

*Mor.* With silence, nephew, be thou politic :  
 Strong-fix'd is the house of Lancaster,  
 And, like a mountain, not to be remov'd.  
 But now thy uncle is removing hence ;  
 As princes do their courts, when they are clay'd  
 With long continuance in a settled place.

*Plan.* O, uncle, would some part of my young years  
 Might but redeem the passage of your age !

*Mor.* Thou dost, then, wrong me,—as the slaughtereer doth  
 Which giveth many wounds when one will kill,  
 Mourn not, except thou sorrow for my good ;  
 Only, give order for my funeral :

And so, farewell ; and fair be all thy hopes,  
 And prosperous be thy life in peace and war !

*Plan.* And peace, no war, beful thy parting soul !  
 In prison hast thou spent a pilgrimage,  
 And like a hermit overpass'd thy days.—

[Dies.]

Well, I will lock his counsel in my breast;  
 And what I do imagine, let that rest.—  
 Keepers, convey him hence; and I myself  
 Will see his burial better than his life.

[*Exeunt Keepers, bearing out the body of Mortimer.*]

Here dies the dusky torch of Mortimer,  
 Chok'd with ambition of the meaner sort:—  
 And, for those wrongs, those bitter injuries,  
 Which Somerset hath offer'd to my house,  
 I doubt not but with honour to redress;  
 And therefore haste I to the parliament,  
 Either to be restor'd to my blood,  
 Or make my ill<sup>(4)</sup> the advantage of my good. [Exit.

### ACT III.

#### SCENE I. *London. The Parliament-house.*

*Flourish.* Enter KING HENRY, EXETER, GLOSTER, WARWICK,  
 SOMERSET, and SUFFOLK; the Bishop of WINCHESTER, RICH-  
 ARD PLANTAGENET, and others. GLOSTER offers to put up a  
 bill; Winchester snatches it, and tears it.

*Win.* Com'st thou with deep-premeditated lines,  
 With written pamphlets studiously devis'd,  
 Toumphrey of Gloster? If thou canst accuse,  
 Or aught intend'st to lay unto my charge,  
 Do it without invention, suddenly;  
 As I with sudden and extemporal speech  
 Purpose to answer what thou canst object.

*Glo.* Presumptuous priest! this place commands my  
 patience,

Or thou shouldst find thou hast dishonour'd me.  
 Think not, although in writing I prefer'd  
 The manner of thy vile outrageous crimes,  
 That therefore I have forg'd, or am not able  
*Verbatim* to rehearse the method of my pen:  
 No, prelate; such is thy audacious wickedness,

Thy lewd, pestiferous, and dissentious pranks,  
 As very infants prattle of thy pride.  
 Thou art a most pernicious usurer;  
 Froward by nature, enemy to peace;  
 Lascivious, wanton, more than well beseems  
 A man of thy profession and degree;  
 And for thy treachery, what's more manifest,—  
 In that thou laid'st a trap to take my life,  
 As well at London-bridge as at the Tower?  
 Beside, I fear me, if thy thoughts were sifted,  
 The king, thy sovereign, is not quite exempt  
 From envious malice of thy swelling heart.

*Win.* Gloster, I do defy thee.—Lords, vouchsafe  
 To give me hearing what I shall reply.  
 If I were covetous, ambitious, or perverse,  
 As he will have me, how am I so poor?  
 Or how haps it I seek not to advance  
 Or raise myself, but keep my wonted calling?  
 And for dissension, who preferreth peace  
 More than I do,—except I be provok'd?  
 No, my good lords, it is not that offends;  
 It is not that that hath incens'd the duke:  
 It is, because no one should sway but he;  
 No one but he should be about the king;  
 And that engenders thunder in his breast,  
 And makes him roar these accusations forth.  
 But he shall know I am as good—

*Glo.* As good!

Thou bastard of my grandfather!—

*Win.* Ay, lordly sir; for what are you, I pray,  
 But one imperious in another's throne?

*Glo.* Am I not (<sup>13</sup>) protector, saucy priest?

*Win.* And am not I a prelate of the church?

*Glo.* Yes, as an outlaw in a castle keeps,  
 And useth it to patronage his theft.

*Win.* Unreverent Gloster!

*Glo.* Thou art reverent  
 Touching thy spiritual function, not thy life.

*Win.* Rome shall remedy this.

*War.* Roam thither, then.<sup>(43)</sup>

*Som.* My lord, it were your duty to forbear.

*War.* Ay, see the bishop be not overborne.

*Som.* Methinks my lord should be religious,  
And know the office that belongs to such.

*War.* Methinks his lordship should be humbler;  
It fitteth not a prelate so to plead.

*Som.* Yes, when his holy state is touch'd so near.

*War.* State holy or unhallow'd, what of that?  
Is not his grace protector to the king?

*Plan.* Plantagenet, I see, must hold his tongue,  
Lest it be said, "Speak, sirrah, when you should;  
Must your bold verdict enter talk with lords?"  
Else would I have a sling at Winchester. [*Aside.*

*K. Hen.* Uncles of Gloster and of Winchester,  
The special watchmen of our English weal,  
I would prevail, if prayers might prevail,  
To join your hearts in love and amity.  
O, what a scandal is it to our crown,  
That two such noble peers as ye should jar!  
Believe me, lords, my tender years can tell  
Civil dissension is a viperous worm  
That gnaws the bowels of the commonwealth.  
[*A noise within, "Down with the tawny-coats!"*  
What tumult's this?

*War.* An uproar, I dare warrant,  
Begun through malice of the bishop's men.  
[*A noise again within, "Stones! stones!"*

*Enter the Mayor of London, attended.*

*May.* O, my good lords,—and virtuous Henry,—  
Pity the city of London, pity us!  
The bishop and the Duke of Gloster's men,  
Forbidden late to carry any weapon,  
Have fill'd their pockets full of pebble-stones,  
And, banding themselves in contrary parts,  
Do pelt so fast at one another's pate,  
That many have their giddy brains knock'd out:

Our windows are broke down in every street,  
And we, for fear, compell'd to shut our shops.

*Enter, skirmishing, the Serving-men of GLOSTER and WINCHESTER,  
with bloody pates.*

*K. Hen.* We charge you, on allegiance to ourself,  
To hold your slaughtering hands, and keep the peace.—  
Pray, uncle Gloster, mitigate this strife.

*First Serv.* Nay, if we be  
Forbidden stones, we'll fall to it with our teeth.

*Sec. Serv.* Do what ye dare, we are as resolute.

*[Skirmish again.]*

*Glo.* You of my household, leave this peevish broil,  
And set this unaccustom'd fight aside.

*Third Serv.* My lord, we know your grace to be a man  
Just and upright; and, for your royal birth,  
Inferior to none but to his majesty:  
And, ere that we will suffer such a prince,  
So kind a father of the commonweal,  
To be disgrac'd by an inkhorn mate,  
We, and our wives, and children, all will fight,  
And have our bodies slaughter'd by thy foes.

*First Serv.* Ay, and the very parings of our nails  
Shall pitch a field when we are dead. *[Skirmish again.]*

*Glo.* Stay, stay, I say!

An if you love me, as you say you do,  
~~Let me persuade you to forbear awhile.~~

*K. Hen.* O, how this discord doth afflict my soul!—  
Can you, my Lord of Winchester, behold  
My sighs and tears, and will not once relent?  
Who should be pitiful, if you be not?  
Or who should study to prefer a peace,  
If holy churchmen take delight in broils?

*War.* Yield, my lord protector;—yield, Winchester;—  
Except you mean, with obstinate repulse,  
To slay your sovereign, and destroy the realm.  
You see what mischief, and what murder too,  
Hath been enacted through your enmity;

Then be at peace, except ye thirst for blood.

*Win.* He shall submit, or I will never yield.

*Glo.* Compassion on the king commands me stoop ;  
Or I would see his heart out, ere the priest  
Should ever get that privilege of me.

*War.* Behold, my Lord of Winchester, the duke  
Hath banish'd moody discontented fury,  
As by his smoothèd brows it doth appear :  
Why look you still so stern and tragical ?

*Glo.* Here, Winchester, I offer thee my hand.

*K. Hen.* Fie, uncle Beaufort ! I have heard you preach  
That malice was a great and grievous sin ;  
And will not you maintain the thing you teach,  
But prove a chief offender in the same ?

*War.* Sweet king !—the bishop hath a kindly gird.—  
For shame, my Lord of Winchester, relent !  
What, shall a child instruct you what to do ?

*Win.* Well, Duke of Gloster, I will yield to thee ;  
Love for thy love, and hand for hand I give.

*Glo.* Ay, but, I fear me, with a hollow heart.—  
See here, my friends and loving countrymen ;  
This token serveth for a flag of truce  
Betwixt ourselves and all our followers :  
So help me God, as I dissemble not !

*Win.* So help me God, as I intend it not ! *[Aside.]*

*K. Hen.* O loving uncle, kind Duke of Gloster,  
How joyful am I made by this contràct !—  
Away, my masters ! trouble us no more ;  
But join in friendship, as your lords have done.

*First Serv.* Content : I'll to the surgeon's.

*Sec. Serv.*

And so will I.

*Third Serv.* And I will see what physie the tavern affords.

*[Exeunt Serving-men, Mayor, &c.]*

*War.* Accept this scroll, most gracious sovereign,  
Which in the right of Richard Plantagenet  
We do exhibit to your majesty.

*Glo.* Well urg'd, my Lord of Warwick :—for, sweet  
prince,  
An if your grace mark every circumstance,

You have great reason to do Richard right;  
Especially for those occasions  
At Eltham-place I told your majesty.

*K. Hen.* And those occasions, uncle, were of force :  
Therefore, my loving lords, our pleasure is,  
That Richard be restorèd to his blood.

*Har.* Let Richard be restorèd to his blood ;  
So shall his father's wrongs be recompens'd.

*Win.* As will the rest, so willeth Winchester.

*K. Hen.* If Richard will be true, not that alone,<sup>(41)</sup>  
But all the whole inheritance I give,  
That doth belong unto the house of York,  
From whence you spring by lineal descent.

*Plan.* Thy humble servant vows obedience  
And humble service till the point of death.<sup>(42)</sup>

*K. Hen.* Stoop, then, and set your knee against my foot ;  
And, in requerdon of that duty done,  
I girt thee with the valiant sword of York :  
Rise, Richard, like a true Plantagenet,  
And rise created princely Duke of York.

*Plan.* And so thrive Richard as thy foes may fall !  
And as my duty springs, so perish they  
That grudge one thought against your majesty !

*All.* Welcome, high prince, the mighty Duke of York !

*Som.* Perish, base prince, ignoble Duke of York ! [*Aside.*]

*Glo.* Now will it best avail your majesty  
To cross the seas, and to be crown'd in France :  
The presence of a king engenders love  
Amongst his subjects and his loyal friends,  
As it disanimates his enemies.

*K. Hen.* When Gloster says the word, King Henry goes ;  
For friendly counsel cuts off many foes.

*Glo.* Your ships already are in readiness.

[*Flourish.* *Exeunt all except Exeter.*]

*Exe.* Ay, we may march in England or in France,  
Not seeing what is likely to ensue.  
This late dissension grown betwixt the peers  
Burns under feignèd ashes of forg'd love,  
And will at last break out into a flame :

As fester'd members rot but by degree,  
Till bones and flesh and sinews fall away,  
So will this base and cnvious discord breed.  
And now I fear that fatal prophecy  
Which in the time of Henry nam'd the fifth  
Was in the mouth of every sucking babe,—  
That Henry born at Monmouth should win all,  
And Henry born at Windsor should <sup>(46)</sup>lose all :  
Which is so plain, that Exeter doth wish  
His days may finish ere that hapless time. [Exit.

---

SCENE II. *France. Before Rouen.*

*Enter LA PUCELLE disguised, and Soldiers dressed like Country-men, with sacks upon their backs.*

*Puc.* These are the city-gates, the gates of Rouen,  
Through which our policy must make a breach :  
Take heed, be wary how you place your words ;  
Talk like the vulgar sort of market-men  
That come to gather money for their corn.  
If we have entrance,—as I hope we shall,—  
And that we find the slothful watch but weak,  
I'll by a sign give notice to our friends,  
That Charles the Dauphin may encounter them.

*First Sol.* Our sacks shall be a mean to sack the city,  
And we be lords and rulers over Rouen ;  
Therefore we'll knock. [Knocks.

*Guard.* [within.] *Qui est là ?*

*Puc.* *Paysans, pauvres gens de France,—*  
Poor market-folks, that come to sell their corn.

*Guard* [opening the gates]. Enter, go in ; the market-bell  
is rung.

*Puc.* Now, Rouen, I'll shake thy bulwarks to the ground.  
[La Pucelle, &c. enter the town.

*Enter CHARLES, the Bastard of ORLEANS, ALENÇON, and forces.*

*Char.* Saint Denis bless this happy stratagem !  
And once again we'll sleep secure in Rouen.



*Bast.* Here enter'd Pucelle and her practisants;  
Now she is there, how will she specify  
Where<sup>(17)</sup> is the best and safest passage in?

*Allen.* By thrusting out a torch from yonder tower;  
Which, once discern'd, shows that her meaning is,—  
No way to that, for weakness, which she enter'd.

*Enter LA PUCELLE on a battlement, holding out a torch burning.*

*Puc.* Behold, this is the happy wedding-torch  
That joineth Rouen unto her countrymen,  
But burning fatal to the Talbotites!

*Bast.* See, noble Charles, the beacon of our friend;  
The burning torch in yonder turret stands.

*Char.* Now shine it like a comet of revenge,  
A prophet to the fall of all our foes!

*Allen.* Defer no time, delays have dangerous ends;  
Enter, and cry "The Dauphin!" presently,  
And then do execution on the watch.

*[They enter the town. Exit La Pucelle above.]*

*Alarum.* *Enter, from the town, TALBOT and English Soldiers.*

*Tal.* France, thou shalt rue this treason with thy tears,  
If Talbot but survive thy treachery.—  
Pucelle, that witch, that damnd'd sorceress,  
Hath wrought this hellish mischief unawares,  
That hardly we escap'd the pride of France.

*[Exeunt into the town.]*

*Alarum: Accursions.* *Enter, from the town, BEDFORD, brought-in sick in a chair, with TALBOT, BURGUNDY, and the English forces. Then enter on the walls LA PUCELLE, CHARLES, Bastard, ALEXANDER, and others.*

*Puc.* Good morrow, gallants! want ye corn for bread?  
I think the Duke of Burgundy will fast,  
Before he'll buy again at such a rate:  
'Twas full of daniel;—do you like the taste?

*Bar.* Scoff on, vile fiend and shameless courtesan!  
I trust ere long to choke thee with thine own,  
And make thee curse the harvest of that corn.

*Char.* Your grace may starve, perhaps, before that time.

*Bed.* O, let no words, but deeds, revenge this treason!

*Puc.* What will you do, good grey-beard? break a lance,  
And run a tilt at death within a chair?

*Tal.* Foul fiend of France, and hag of all despite,  
Encompass'd with thy lustful paramours!  
Becomes it thee to taunt his valiant age,  
And twit with cowardice a man half dead?  
Damsel, I'll have a bout with you again,  
Or else let Talbot perish with this shame.

*Puc.* Are ye so hot, sir?—yet, Pucelle, hold thy peace;  
If Talbot do but thunder, rain will follow.

[*Talbot and the rest consult together.*]

God speed the parliament! who shall be the speaker?

*Tal.* Dare ye come forth and meet us in the field?

*Puc.* Belike your lordship takes us, then, for fools,  
To try if that our own be ours or no.

*Tal.* I speak not to that railing Hecaté,  
But unto thee, Alençon, and the rest;  
Will ye, like soldiers, come and fight it out?

*Alen.* Signior, no.

*Tal.* Signior, hang!—base muleters of France!  
Like peasant foot-boys do they keep the walls,  
And dare not take up arms like gentlemen.

*Puc.* Away, captains! <sup>(48)</sup> let's get us from the walls;  
For Talbot means no goodness, by his looks.—  
God b' wi' you, my lord! we came but to tell you  
That we are here. [*Exeunt La Pucelle, &c. from the walls.*]

*Tal.* And there will we be too, ere it be long,  
Or else reproach be Talbot's greatest fame!—  
Vow, Burgundy, by honour of thy house  
(Prick'd on by public wrongs sustain'd in France),  
Either to get the town again or die;  
And I,—as sure as English Henry lives,  
And as his father here was conqueror;  
As sure as in this late-betray'd town  
Great Cœur-de-lion's heart was bury'd,—  
So sure I swear to get the town or die.

*Bur.* My vows are equal partners with thy vows.

*Tal.* But, ere we go, regard this dying prince,  
The valiant Duke of Bedford.—Come, my lord,

We will bestow you in some better place,  
Fitter for sickness and for crazy age.

*Bed.* Lord Talbot, do not so dishonour me :  
Here will I sit before the walls of Rouen,  
And will be partner of your weal or woe.

*Bur.* Courageous Bedford, let us now persuade you.

*Bed.* Not to be gone from hence ; for once I read,  
That stout Pendragon, in his litter, sick,  
Came to the field, and vanquishèd his foes ;  
Methinks I should revive the soldiers' hearts,  
Because I ever found them as myself.

*Tal.* Undaunted spirit in a dying breast !—  
Then be it so :—heavens keep old Bedford safe !—  
And now no more ado, brave Burgundy,  
But gather we our forces out of hand,  
And set upon our boasting enemy.

*[Exeunt, into the town, Burgundy, Talbot, and  
forces, leaving Bedford and others.]*

*Alarum : excursions, in one of which, enter Sir JOHN FASTOLFE  
and a Captain,*

*Cap.* Whither away, Sir John Fastolfe, in such haste ?

*Fast.* Whither away ! to save myself by flight :  
We are like to have the overthrow again.

*Cap.* What ! will you fly, and leave Lord Talbot ?

*Fast.*

*Ay,*

All the Talbots in the world, to save my life. *[Exit.]*

*Cap.* Cowardly knight ! all fortune follow thee !

*[Exit into the town.]*

*Retreat : excursions. Re-enter, from the town, LA PUCELLE,  
ALEXCON, CHARLES, &c. and exeunt flying.*

*Bed.* Now, quiet soul, depart when heaven please,  
For I have seen our enemies' overthrow.  
What is the trust or strength of foolish man ?  
They that of late were daring with their scoffs,  
Are glad and fain by flight to save themselves.

*[Dies, and is carried off in his chair.]*

*Alarum. Re-enter TALBOT, BURGUNDY, and others.*

*Tal.* Lost, and recover'd in a day again !

This is a double honour, Burgundy :  
Yet <sup>(49)</sup> heavens have glory for this victory !

*Bur.* Warlike and martial <sup>(50)</sup> Talbot, Burgundy  
Enshrines thee in his heart ; and there erects  
'Thy noble deeds, as valour's monuments.

*Tal.* Thanks, gentle duke. But where is Pucelle now ?  
I think her old familiar is asleep :

Now where's the Bastard's braves, and Charles his gleeke ?  
What, all a-mort ? Rouen hangs her head for grief,  
That such a valiant company are fled.

Now will we take some order in the town,  
Placing therein some expert officers ;  
And then depart to Paris to the king,  
For there young Henry with his nobles lie. <sup>(51)</sup>

*Bur.* What wills Lord Talbot pleaseth Burgundy.

*Tal.* But yet, before we go, let's not forget  
'The noble Duke of Bedford late deceas'd,  
But see his exequies fulfill'd in Rouen :  
A braver soldier never couchèd lance,  
A gentler heart did never sway in court ;  
But kings and mightiest potentates must die,  
For that's the end of human misery. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE III. *The plains near Rouen.*

*Enter CHARLES, the Bastard of Orleans, ALENÇON, LA PUCELLE,  
and forces.*

*Puc.* Dismay not, princes, at this accident,  
Nor grieve that Rouen is so recoverèd :  
Care is no cure, but rather corrosive,  
For things that are not to be remedied.  
Let frantic Talbot triumph for a while,  
And like a peacock sweep along his tail ;  
We'll pull his plumes, and take away his train,  
If Dauphin and the rest will be but rul'd.

*Char.* We have been guided by thee hitherto,  
And of thy cunning had no diffidence :  
One sudden foil shall never breed distrust.

*Bast.* Search out thy wit for secret policies,  
And we will make thee famous through the world.

*Alen.* We'll set thy statue in some holy place,  
And have thee reverenc'd like a blessèd saint:  
Employ thee, then, sweet virgin, for our good.

*Puc.* Then thus it must be; this doth Joan devise:  
By fair persuasions, mix'd with sugar'd words,  
We will entice the Duke of Burgundy  
To leave the Talbot and to follow us.

*Char.* Ay, marry, sweeting, if we could do that,  
France were no place for Henry's warriors;  
Nor should that nation boast it so with us,  
But be extirp'd from our provinces.

*Alen.* For ever should they be expuls'd from France,  
And not have title of an earldom here.

*Puc.* Your honours shall perceive how I will work  
To bring this matter to the wish'd end. [Drums heard.  
Hark! by the sound of drum you may perceive  
Their powers are marching unto Paris-wald.

*An English march. Enter, and pass over at a distance, TALBOT  
and his forces.*

There goes the Talbot, with his colours spread,  
And all the troops of English after him.

*A French march. Enter the Duke of BURGUNDY and his forces.*

Now in the rearward comes the duke and his:  
Fortune in favour makes him lag behind.  
Summon a parley; we will talk with him.

[Trumpets sound a parley.]

*Char.* A parley with the Duke of Burgundy!

*Bur.* Who craves a parley with the Burgundy?

*Puc.* The princely Charles of France, thy countryman.

*Bur.* What say'st thou, Charles? for I am marching  
hence.

*Char.* Speak, Pucelle, and enchant him with thy words.

*Puc.* Brave Burgundy, undoubted hope of France!  
Stay, let thy humble handmaid speak to thee.

*Bur.* Speak on; but be not over-tedious.

*Puc.* Look on thy country, look on fertile France,  
And see the cities and the towns defac'd  
By wasting ruin of the cruel foe!  
As looks the mother on her lovely<sup>(52)</sup> babe  
When death doth close his tender dying eyes,  
See, see the pining malady of France;  
Behold the wounds, the most unnatural wounds,  
Which thou thyself hast given her woful breast!  
O, turn thy edgèd sword another way;  
Strike those that hurt, and hurt not those that help!  
One drop of blood drawn from thy country's bosom  
Should grieve thee more than streams of foreign gore:  
Return thee, therefore, with a flood of tears,  
And wash away thy country's stainèd spots.

*Bur.* Either she hath bewitch'd me with her words,  
Or nature makes me suddenly relent.

*Puc.* Besides, all French and France exclaims on thee,  
Doubting thy birth and lawful progeny.  
Who join'st thou with, but with a lordly nation,  
That will not trust thee but for profit's sake?  
When Talbot hath set footing once in France,  
And fashion'd thee that instrument of ill,  
Who then but English Henry will be lord,  
And thou be thrust out like a fugitive?  
Call we to mind,—and mark but this for proof,—  
Was not the Duke of Orleans thy foe?  
And was he not in England prisoner?  
But when they heard he was thine enemy,  
They set him free, without his ransom paid,  
In spite of Burgundy and all his friends.  
See, then, thou fight'st against thy countrymen,  
And join'st with them will be thy slaughter-men.  
Come, come, return; return, thou wandering lord;  
Charles and the rest will take thee in their arms.

*Bur.* I am vanquishèd; these haughty words of hers  
Have batter'd me like roaring cannon-shot,  
And made me almost yield upon my knees.—  
Forgive me, country, and sweet countrymen!  
And, lords, accept this hearty kind embrace:

My forces and my power of men are yours :—  
So, farewell, Talbot; I'll no longer trust thee.

*Puc.* Done like a Frenchman,—turn, and turn again!

*Char.* Welcome, brave duke! thy friendship makes us  
fresh.

*Bast.* And doth beget new courage in our breasts.

*Allen.* Pucelle hath bravely play'd her part in this,  
And doth deserve a coronet of gold.

*Char.* Now let us on, my lords, and join our powers;  
And seek how we may prejudice the foe. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV. *Paris. A room in the palace.*

*Enter* KING HENRY, GLOSTER, and other Lords, VERNON, BASSET,  
&c. *To them* TALBOT and some of his Officers.

*Tal.* My gracious prince,—and honourable peers,—  
Hearing of your arrival in this realm,  
I have awhile given truce unto my wars,  
To do my duty to my sovereign:  
In sign whereof, this arm,—that hath reclaim'd  
To your obedience fifty fortresses,  
Twelve cities, and seven wall'd towns of strength,  
Beside five hundred prisoners of esteem,—  
Lets fall his sword before your highness' feet,  
And with submissive loyalty of heart  
Ascribes the glory of his conquest got  
First to my God, and next unto your grace.

*K. Hen.* Is this the Lord Talbot, uncle Gloster,  
That hath so long been resident in France?

*Glo.* Yes, if it please your majesty, my liege.

*K. Hen.* Welcome, brave captain and victorious lord!  
When I was young (as yet I am not old),  
I do remember how my father said  
A stunter champion never handled sword.  
Long since we were resolv'd of your truth,  
Your faithful service, and your toil in war;  
Yet never have you tasted our reward,  
Or been requerdon'd with so much as thanks,

Because till now we never saw your face :  
 Therefore, stand up ; and, for these good deserts,  
 We here create you Earl of Shrewsbury ;  
 And in our coronation take your place.

[*Flourish. Exeunt all except Vernon and Basset.*

*Ver.* Now, sir, to you, that were so hot at sea,  
 Disgracing of these colours that I wear  
 In honour of my noble Lord of York,—  
 Dar'st thou maintain the former words thou spak'st ?

*Bas.* Yes, sir ; as well as you dare patronage  
 The envious barking of your saucy tongue  
 Against my lord the Duke of Somerset.

*Ver.* Sirrah, thy lord I honour as he is.

*Bas.* Why, what is he ? as good a man as York.

*Ver.* Hark ye ; not so : in witness, take ye that.

[*Strikes him.*

*Bas.* Villain, thou know'st the law of arms is such,  
 That whoso draws a sword, 'tis present death,  
 Or else this blow should broach thy dearest blood.  
 But I'll unto his majesty, and crave  
 I may have liberty to venge this wrong ;  
 When thou shalt see I'll meet thee to thy cost.

*Ver.* Well, miscreant, I'll be there as soon as you ;  
 And, after, meet you sooner than you would. [*Exeunt.*

## ACT IV.

SCENE I. *Paris. A room of state.*

*Enter King HENRY, GLOSTER, EXETER, YORK, SUFFOLK, SOMERSET,  
 WINCHESTER, WARWICK, TALBOT, the Governor of Paris, and  
 others*

*Glo.* Lord bishop, set the crown upon his head.

*Win.* God save King Henry, of that name the sixth !

*Glo.* Now, governor of Paris, take your oath,—

[*Governor kneels.*

That you elect no other king but him ;



Esteem none friends but such as are his friends,  
 And none your foes but such as shall pretend  
 Malicious practices against his state :  
 'This shall ye do, so help you righteous God !

*[Exeunt Governor and his train.]*

*Enter Sir JOHN FASTOLEE.*

*Fast.* My gracious sovereign, as I rode from Calais,  
 To haste unto your coronation,  
 A letter was deliver'd to my hands,  
 Wit to your grace from the Duke of Burgundy.

*Tal.* Shame to the Duke of Burgundy and thee !  
 I vow'd, base knight, when I did meet thee next,  
 To tear the garter from thy craven's leg *[Plucking it off.]*  
 (Which I have done), because unworthily  
 Thou wast install'd in that high degree.—  
 Pardon me, princely Henry, and the rest :  
 This dastard, at the battle of Patay,<sup>(53)</sup>  
 When but in all I was six thousand strong,  
 And that the French were almost ten to one,—  
 Before we met, or that a stroke was given,  
 Like to a trusty squire, did run away :  
 In which assault we lost twelve hundred men ;  
 Myself, and divers gentlemen beside,  
 Were there surpris'd and taken prisoners.  
 Then judge, great lords, if I have done amiss ;  
 Or whether that such cowards ought to wear  
 This ornament of knighthood, yea or no.

*Glo.* To say the truth, this fact was infamous,  
 And ill beseeeming any common man,  
 Much more a knight, a captain, and a leader.

*Tal.* When first this order was ordain'd, my lords,  
 Knights of the garter were of noble birth,  
 Valiant and virtuous, full of haughty courage,  
 Such as were grown to credit by the wars ;  
 Not fearing death, nor shrinking for distress,  
 But always resolute in most extremes.<sup>(54)</sup>  
 He, then, that is not furnish'd in this sort  
 Doth but usurp the sacred name of knight,

Profaning this most honourable order,  
And should (if I were worthy to be judge)  
Be quite degraded, like a hedge-born swain  
That doth presume to boast of gentle blood.

*K. Hen.* Stain to thy countrymen, thou hear'st thy doom!  
Be packing, therefore, thou that wast a knight:  
Henceforth we banish thee, on pain of death.

[*Exit Fastolfe.*]

And now, my<sup>(55)</sup> lord protector, view the letter  
Sent from our uncle Duke of Burgundy.

*Glo.* What means his grace, that he hath chang'd his style?

[*Viewing the superscription.*]

No more but, plain and bluntly, "To the king?"

Hath he forgot he is his sovereign?

Or doth this churlish superscription

Pretend<sup>(56)</sup> some alteration in good will?

What's here?—"I have, upon especial cause,—

[*Reads*]

Mov'd with compassion of my country's wreck,

Together with the pitiful complaints

Of such as your oppression feeds upon,—

Forsaken your pernicious faction,

And join'd with Charles, the rightful King of France."

O monstrous treachery! can this be so,—

That in alliance, amity, and oaths,

There should be found such false dissembling guile?

*K. Hen.* What! doth my uncle Burgundy revolt?

*Glo.* He doth, my lord; and is become your foe.

*K. Hen.* Is that the worst this letter doth contain?

*Glo.* It is the worst, and all, my lord, he writes.

*K. Hen.* Why, then, Lord Talbot there shall talk with him,  
And give him chastisement for this abuse:—

How say you, my lord? are you not content?

*Tal.* Content, my liege! yes, but that I am prevented,  
I should have begg'd I might have been employ'd.

*K. Hen.* Then gather strength, and march unto him  
straight:

Let him perceive how ill we brook his treason,  
And what offence it is to flout his friends.

*Tal.* I go, my lord; in heart desiring still  
You may behold confusion of your foes.

[*Exit.*]

*Enter VERNON and DASSET.*

*Ver.* Grant me the combat, gracious sovereign!

*Bas.* And me, my lord, grant me the combat too!

*York.* This is my servant: hear him, noble prince!

*Som.* And this is mine: sweet Henry, favour him!

*K. Hen.* Be patient, lords; and give them leave to  
speak.—

Say, gentlemen, what makes you thus exclaim?

And wherefore crave you combat? or with whom?

*Ver.* With him, my lord; for he hath done me wrong.

*Bas.* And I with him; for he hath done me wrong.

*K. Hen.* What is that wrong whereof you both complain?  
First let me know, and then I'll answer you.

*Bas.* Crossing the sea from England into France,  
This fellow here, with envious carping tongue,  
Upbraided me about the rose I wear;  
Saying, the sanguine colour of the leaves  
Did represent my master's blushing cheeks,  
When stubbornly he did repugn the truth  
About a certain question in the law  
Argu'd betwixt the Duke of York and him;  
With other vile and ignominious terms:  
In confutation of which rude reproach,  
And in defence of my lord's worthiness,  
I crave the benefit of law of arms.

*Ver.* And that is my petition, noble lord:  
For though he seem with forgèd quaint conceit  
To set a gloss upon his bold intent,  
Yet know, my lord, I was provok'd by him;  
And he first took exceptions at this badge,  
Pronouncing that the paleness of this flower  
Bewray'd the faintness of my master's heart.

*York.* Will not this malice, Somerset, be left?

*Som.* Your private grudge, my Lord of York, will out,  
Though ne'er so cunningly you smother it.

*K. Hen.* Good Lord, what madness rules in brainsick men,

When for so slight and frivolous a cause  
Such factious emulations shall arise !—  
Good cousins both, of York and Somerset,  
Quiet yourselves, I pray, and be at peace.

*York.* Let this dissension first be tried by fight,  
And then your highness shall command a peace.

*Som.* The quarrel toucheth none but us alone ;  
Betwixt ourselves let us decide it, then.

*York.* There is my pledge ; accept it, Somerset.

*Ver.* Nay, let it rest where it began at first.

*Bas.* Confirm it so, mine honourable lord.

*Glo.* Confirm it so ! Confounded be your strife !

And perish ye, with your audacious prate !  
Presumptuous vassals, are you not asham'd  
With this immodest clamorous outrage  
To trouble and disturb the king and us ?—  
And you, my lords,—methinks you do not well  
To bear with their perverse objections ;  
Much less to take occasion from their mouths  
To raise a mutiny betwixt yourselves :  
Let me persuade you take a better course.

*Exe.* It grieves his highness :—good my lords, be friends.

*K. Hen.* Come hither, you that would be combatants :

Henceforth I charge you, as you love our favour,  
Quite to forget this quarrel and the cause.—  
And you, my lords, remember where we are ;  
In France, amongst a fickle wavering nation :  
If they perceive dissension in our looks,  
And that within ourselves we disagree,  
How will their grudging stomachs be provok'd  
To wilful disobedience, and rebel !  
Beside, what infamy will there arise,  
When foreign princes shall be certified  
That for a toy, a thing of no regard,  
King Henry's peers and chief nobility  
Destroy'd themselves, and lost the realm of France !  
O, think upon the conquest of my father ;

My tender years; and let us not forego  
 That for a trifle that was bought with blood!  
 Let me be umpire in this doubtful strife.  
 I see no reason, if I wear this rose,    *[Putting on a red rose.]*  
 That any one should therefore be suspicious  
 I more incline to Somerset than York:  
 Both are my kinsmen, and I love them both:  
 As well they may upbraid me with my crown,  
 Because, forsooth, the king of Scots is crown'd.  
 But your discretions better can persuade  
 Than I am able to instruct or teach:  
 And therefore, as we hither came in peace,  
 So let us still continue peace and love.—  
 Cousin of York, we institute your grace  
 To be our regent in these parts of France:—  
 And, good my Lord of Somerset, unite  
 Your troops of horsemen with his bands of foot;  
 And, like true subjects, sons of your progenitors,  
 Go cheerfully together, and digest  
 Your angry choler on your enemies.  
 Ourself, my lord protector, and the rest,  
 After some respite, will return to Calais;  
 From thence to England; where I hope ere long  
 To be presented, by your victories,  
 With Charles, Alençon, and that traitorous rout.

*[Flourish. Exeunt King Henry, Glouster, Somerset, Winchester, Suffolk, and Basset.]*

*War.* My Lord of York, I promise you, the king  
 Prettily, methought, did play the orator.

*York.* And so he did; but yet I like it not,  
 In that he wears the badge of Somerset.

*War.* Tush, that was but his fancy, blame him not;  
 I dare presume, sweet prince, he thought no harm.

*York.* An if I wist<sup>(57)</sup> he did,—but let it rest;  
 Other affairs must now be manag'd.

*[Exeunt York, Warwick, and Vernon.]*

*Exc.* Well didst thou, Richard, to suppress thy voice;  
 For, had the passions of thy heart burst out,  
 I fear we should have seen decipher'd there

More rancorous spite, more furious raging broils,  
Than yet can be imagin'd or suppos'd.  
But howsoe'er, no simple man that sees  
This jarring discord of nobility,  
This shouldering of each other in the court,  
This factious bandying of their favourites,  
But that it<sup>(59)</sup> doth presage some ill event.  
'Tis much when sceptres are in children's hands;  
But more when envy breeds unkind division;  
There comes the ruin, there begins confusion. [Exit.

---

SCENE II. *Before Bourdeaux.*

*Enter TALBOT, with his forces.*

*Tal.* Go to the gates of Bourdeaux, trumpeter;  
Summon their general unto the wall.

*Trumpet sounds a parley. Enter, on the walls, the General of the  
French forces, and others.*

English John Talbot, captains, calls you forth,  
Servant in arms to Harry King of England;  
And thus he would,—Open your city-gates;  
Be humble to us; call my sovereign yours,  
And do him homage as obedient subjects;  
And I'll withdraw me and my bloody power:  
But, if you frown upon this proffer'd peace,  
You tempt the fury of my three attendants,  
Lean famine, quartering steel, and climbing fire;  
Who, in a moment, even with the earth  
Shall lay your stately and air-braving towers,  
If you forsake the offer of their love.

*Gen.* Thou ominous and fearful owl of death,  
Our nation's terror, and their bloody scourge!  
The period of thy tyranny approacheth.  
On us thou canst not enter but by death;  
For, I protest, we are well fortified,  
And strong enough to issue out and fight:  
If thou retire, the Dauphin, well appointed,

Stands with the snares of war to tangle thee :  
 On either hand thee there are squadrons pitch'd,  
 To wall thee from the liberty of flight ;  
 And no way canst thou turn thee for redress,  
 But death doth front thee with apparent spoil,  
 And pale destruction meets thee in the face.  
 Ten thousand French have ta'en the sacrament,  
 To rive their dangerous artillery  
 Upon no Christian soul but English Talbot.  
 Lo, there thou stand'st, a breathing valiant man,  
 Of an invincible unconquer'd spirit !  
 This is the latest glory of thy praise  
 That I, thy enemy, due thee withal ;  
 For ere the glass, that now begins to run,  
 Finish the process of his sandy hour,  
 These eyes, that see thee now well-colour'd,  
 Shall see thee wither'd, bloody, pale, and dead.

[*Drum afar off.*]

Hark ! hark ! the Dauphin's drum, a warning bell,  
 Sings heavy music to thy timorous soul ;  
 And mine shall ring thy dire departure out.

[*Exeunt General, &c. from the walls.*]

Tal. He fables not ; I hear the enemy :—  
 Out, some light horsemen, and peruse their wings.—  
 O, negligent and heedless discipline !  
 How are we park'd and bounded in a pale,—  
 A little herd of England's timorous deer,  
 Maz'd with a yelping kennel of French curs !  
 If we be English deer, be, then, in blood ;  
 Not rascal-like, to fall down with a pinch,  
 But rather, moody-mad and desperate stags,  
 Turn on the bloody hounds with heads of steel,  
 And make the cowards stand aloof at bay :  
 Sell every man his life as dear as mine,  
 And they shall find dear deer of us, my friends.—  
 God and Saint George, Talbot and England's right,  
 Prosper our colours in this dangerous fight !

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. *Plains in Gascony.*

*Enter YORK, with forces ; to him a Messenger.*

*York.* Are not the speedy scouts return'd again,  
That dogg'd the mighty army of the Dauphin ?

*Mess.* They are return'd, my lord ; and give it out  
That he is march'd to Bourdeaux with his power,  
'To fight with Talbot : as he march'd along,  
By your espials were discover'd  
Two mightier troops than that the Dauphin led ;  
Which join'd with him, and made their march for Bourdeaux.

*York.* A plague upon that villain Somerset,  
That thus delays my promis'd supply  
Of horsemen, that were levied for this siege !  
Renown'd Talbot doth expect my aid ;  
And I am louted by a traitor villain,  
And cannot help the noble chevalier :  
God comfort him in this necessity !  
If he miscarry, farewell wars in France.

*Enter Sir WILLIAM LUOY.*

*Lucy.* Thou princely leader of our English strength,  
Never so needful on the earth of France,  
Spur to the rescue of the noble Talbot,  
Who now is girdled with a waist of iron,  
And hemm'd about with grim destruction :  
To Bourdeaux, warlike duke ! to Bourdeaux, York !  
Else, farewell Talbot, France, and England's honour.

*York.* O God, that Somerset,—who in proud heart  
Doth stop my cornets,—were in Talbot's place !  
So should we save a valiant gentleman  
By forfeiting a traitor and a coward.  
Mad ire and wrathful fury makes me weep,  
That thus we die, while remiss traitors sleep.

*Lucy.* O, send some succour to the distress'd lord !

*York.* He dies, we lose ; I break my warlike word ;  
We mourn, France smiles ; we lose, they daily get ;  
All long of this vile traitor Somerset.



*Lucy.* Then God take mercy on brave Talbot's soul;  
And on his son young John, who two hours since  
I met in travel toward his warlike father!  
This seven years did not Talbot see his son;  
And now they meet where both their lives are done.

*York.* Alas, what joy shall noble Talbot have  
To bid his young son welcome to his grave?  
Away! vexation almost stops my breath,  
That sunder'd friends greet in the hour of death.—  
Lucy, farewell: no more my fortune can,  
But curse the cause I cannot aid the man.—  
Maine, Blois, Poitiers, and Tours, are won away,  
Long all of Somerset and his delay. *[Exit with forces.]*

*Lucy.* Thus, while the vulture of sedition  
Feeds in the bosom of such great commanders,  
Sleeping neglectation doth betray to loss  
The conquest of our scarce-cold conqueror,  
That ever-living man of memory,  
Henry the fifth:—whiles they each other cross,  
Lives, honours, lands, and all, hurry to loss. *[Exit.]*

SCENE IV. *Other plains of Gascony.*

*Enter SOMERSET, with his forces; an Officer of TALBOT's with him.*

*Som.* It is too late; I cannot send them now:  
This expedition was by York and Talbot  
Too rashly plotted; all our general force  
Might with a sally of the very town  
Be buckled with: the over-daring Talbot  
Hath sullied all his gloss of former honour  
By this unheedful, desperate, wild adventure:  
York set him on to fight and die in shame,  
That, Talbot dead, great York might bear the name.

*Off.* Here is Sir William Lucy, who with me  
Set from our o'er-match'd forces forth for aid.

*Enter SIR WILLIAM LUCY.*

*Som.* How now, Sir William! whither were you sent?

*Lucy.* Whither,<sup>(59)</sup> my lord ! from bought and sold Lord  
Talbot ;

Who, ring'd about with bold adversity,  
Cries out for noble York and Somerset,  
To beat assailing death from his weak legions : <sup>(60)</sup>  
And whiles the honourable captain there  
Drops bloody sweat from his war-wearied limbs,  
And, in advantage lingering, looks for rescue,  
You, his false hopes, the trust of England's honour,  
Keep off aloof with worthless emulation.  
Let not your private discord keep away  
The levied succours that should lend him aid,  
While he, renown'd noble gentleman,  
Yields up his life unto a world of odds :  
Orleans the Bastard, Charles, Burgundy,<sup>(61)</sup>  
Alençon, Reignier, compass him about,  
And Talbot perisheth by your default.

*Som.* York set him on, York should have sent him aid.

*Lucy.* And York as fast upon your grace exclaims ;  
Swearing that you withhold his levied horse,<sup>(62)</sup>  
Collected for this expedition.

*Som.* York lies ; he might have sent and had the horse :  
I owe him little duty, and less love ;  
And take foul scorn to fawn on him by sending.

*Lucy.* The fraud of England, not the force of France,  
Hath now entrapp'd the noble-minded Talbot :  
Never to England shall he bear his life ;  
But dies, betray'd to fortune by your strife.

*Som.* Come, go ; I will dispatch the horsemen straight :  
Within six hours they will be at his aid.

*Lucy.* Too late comes rescue ; he is ta'en or slain :  
For fly he could not, if he would have fled ;  
And fly would Talbot never, though he might.

*Som.* If he be dead, brave Talbot, then, adieu !

*Lucy.* His fame lives in the world, his shame in you.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE V. *The English camp near Bourdeaux.**Enter TALBOT and JOHN his son.*

*Tal.* O young John Talbot! I did send for thee  
To tutor thee in stratagems of war,  
That Talbot's name might be in thee reviv'd  
When sapless age and weak unable limbs  
Should bring thy father to his drooping chair.  
But,—O malignant and ill-boding stars!—  
Now thou art come unto a feast of death,  
A terrible and unavoided danger:  
Therefore, dear boy, mount on my swiftest horse;  
And I'll direct thee how thou shalt escape  
By sudden flight: come, dally not, be gone.

*John.* Is my name Talbot? and am I your son?  
And shall I fly? O, if you love my mother,  
Dishonour not her honourable name,  
To make a bastard and a slave of me!  
The world will say, he is not Talbot's blood,  
That basely fled when noble Talbot stood.

*Tal.* Fly, to revenge my death, if I be slain.

*John.* He that flies so will ne'er return again.

*Tal.* If we both stay, we both are sure to die.

*John.* Then let me stay; and, father, do you fly:  
Your loss is great, so your regard should be;  
My worth unknown, no loss is known in me.  
Upon my death the French can little boast;  
In yours they will, in you all hopes are lost.  
Flight cannot stain the honour you have won;  
But mine it will, that no exploit have done:  
You fled for vantage, every one will swear;  
But, if I bow,<sup>(c3)</sup> they'll say it was for fear.  
There is no hope that ever I will stay,  
If, the first hour, I shrink and run away.  
Here, on my knee, I beg mortality,  
Rather than life preserv'd with infamy.

*Tal.* Shall all thy mother's hopes lie in one tomb?

*John.* Ay, rather than I'll shame my mother's womb.

*Tal.* Upon my blessing, I command thee go.

*John.* To fight I will, but not to fly the foe.

*Tal.* Part of thy father may be sav'd in thee.

*John.* No part of him but will be shame in me.

*Tal.* Thou never hadst renown, nor canst not lose it.

*John.* Yes, your renown'd name: shall flight abuse it?

*Tal.* Thy father's charge shall clear thee from that stain.

*John.* You cannot witness for me, being slain.

If death be so apparent, then both fly.

*Tal.* And leave my followers here, to fight and die?

My age was never tainted with such shame.

*John.* And shall my youth be guilty of such blame?

No more can I be sever'd from your side,

That can yourself yourself in twain divide:

Stay, go, do what you will, the like do I;

For live I will not, if my father die.

*Tal.* Then here I take my leave of thee, fair son,

Born to eclipse thy life this afternoon.

Come, side by side together live and die;

And soul with soul from France to heaven fly. [Exeunt.

SCENE VI. *A field of battle.*

*Alarum: excursions, wherein TALBOT'S SON is hemmed about,  
and TALBOT rescues him.*

*Tal.* Saint George and victory! fight, soldiers, fight:

The regent hath with Talbot broke his word,

And left us to the rage of France his sword.

Where is John Talbot?—pause, and take thy breath;

I gave thee life, and rescu'd thee from death.

*John.* O, twice my father, twice am I thy son!

The life thou gav'st me first was lost and done,

Till with thy warlike sword, despite of fate,

To my determin'd time thou gav'st new date.

*Tal.* When from the Dauphin's crest thy sword struck fire,

It warm'd thy father's heart with proud desire

Of bold-fac'd victory. Then leaden age,

Quicken'd with youthful spleen and warlike rage,

Beat down Alençon, Orleans, Burgundy,  
 And from the pride of Gallia rescu'd thee.  
 The ireful bastard Orleans,—that drew blood  
 From thee, my boy, and had the maidenhood  
 Of thy first fight,—I soon encounter'd,  
 And, interchanging blows, I quickly shed  
 Some of his bastard blood; and, in disgrace,  
 Bespoke him thus,—“Contaminated, base,  
 And misbegotten blood I spill of thine,  
 Mean and right poor, for that pure blood of mine  
 Which thou didst force from Talbot, my brave boy :”—  
 Here, purposing the Bastard to destroy,  
 Came in strong rescue. Speak, thy father's care,—  
 Art thou not weary, John? how dost thou fare?  
 Wilt thou yet leave the battle, boy, and fly,  
 Now thou art seal'd the son of chivalry?  
 Fly, to revenge my death when I am dead:  
 The help of one stands me in little stead.  
 O, too much folly is it, well I wot,  
 To hazard all our lives in one small boat!  
 If I to-day die not with Frenchmen's rage,  
 To-morrow I shall die with mickle age:  
 By me they nothing gain an if I stay,—  
 'Tis but the shortening of my life one day:  
 In thee thy mother dies, our household's name,  
 My death's revenge, thy youth, and England's fame:  
 All these, and more, we hazard by thy stay;  
 All these are sav'd, if thou wilt fly away.

*John.* The sword of Orleans hath not made me smart;  
 These words of yours draw life-blood from my heart:  
 On that advantage, bought with such a shame  
 (To save a paltry life, and slay bright fame),  
 Before young Talbot from old Talbot fly,  
 The coward horse that bears me fall and die!  
 And like me to the peasant boys of France;  
 To be shame's scorn, and subject of mischance!  
 Surely, by all the glory you have won,  
 An if I fly, I am not Talbot's son:  
 Then talk no more of flight, it is no boot;

If son to Talbot, die at 'Talbot's foot.

*Tal.* Then follow thou thy desperate sire of Crete,  
Thou Icarus; thy life to me is sweet:  
If thou wilt fight, fight by thy father's side;  
And, commendable prov'd, let's die in pride. [*Eacunt.*]

---

SCENE VII. *Another part of the same.*

*Alarum: excursions. Enter TALBOT wounded, supported  
by a Servant.*

*Tal.* Where is my other life?—mine own is gone;—  
O, where's young Talbot? where is valiant John?—  
Triumphant death, smear'd<sup>(64)</sup> with captivity,  
Young Talbot's valour makes me smile at thee:—  
When he perceiv'd me shrink and on my knee,  
His bloody sword he brandish'd over me,  
And, like a hungry lion, did commence  
Rough deeds of rage and stern impatience;  
But when my angry guardant stood alone,  
Tendering my ruin, and assail'd of none,  
Dizzy-ey'd fury and great rage of heart  
Suddenly made him from my side to start  
Into the clustering battle of the French;  
And in that sea of blood my boy did drench  
His overmounting spirit; and there died  
My Icarus, my blossom, in his pride.

*Serv.* O my dear lord, lo, where your son is borne!

*Enter Soldiers, bearing the body of JOHN TALBOT.*

*Tal.* Thou antic death, which laugh'st us here to scorn,  
Anon, from thy insulting tyranny,  
Coupled in bonds of perpetuity,  
Two Talbots, wingèd through the lither sky,  
In thy despite, shall scape mortality.—  
O thou whose wounds become hard-favour'd death,  
Speak to thy father, ere thou yield thy breath!  
Brave death by speaking, whether he will or no;  
Imagine him a Frenchman and thy foe.—  
Poor boy! he smiles, methinks, as who should say,

Had death been French, then death had died to-day.—  
 Come, come, and lay him in his father's arms:  
 My spirit can no longer bear these harms.  
 Soldiers, adieu! I have what I would have,  
 Now my old arms are young John Talbot's grave. [Dies.]

*Alarums. Exeunt Soldiers and Servant, leaving the two bodies.*  
*Enter CHARLES, ALEXON, BURGUNDY, Bastard, LA PUCELLE,*  
*and forces.*

*Char.* Had York and Somerset brought rescue in,  
 We should have found a bloody day of this.

*Bast.* How the young whelp of Talbot's, raging-wood,  
 Did flesh his puny sword in Frenchmen's blood!

*Puc.* Once I encounter'd him, and thus I said,  
 "Thou maiden youth, be vanquish'd by a maid:"  
 But, with a proud majestic high scorn,  
 He answer'd thus,—"Young Talbot was not born  
 To be the pillage of a giglot wench:"  
 So, rushing in the bowels of the French,  
 He left me proudly, as unworthy fight.

*Bur.* Doubtless he would have made a noble knight:—  
 See, where he lies inhearsed in the arms  
 Of the most bloody nuser of his harms!

*Bast.* Hew them to pieces, hack their bones asunder,  
 Whose life was England's glory, Gallia's wonder.

*Char.* O, no, forbear! for that which we have fled  
 During the life, let us not wrong it dead.

*Enter Sir WILLIAM LUCY, attended, a French Herald preceding*

*Lucy.* Herald,  
 Conduct me to the Dauphin's tent, to know<sup>(63)</sup>  
 Who hath obtain'd the glory of the day.

*Char.* On what submissive message art thou sent?

*Lucy.* Submission, Dauphin! 'tis a mere French word;  
 We English warriors wot not what it means.  
 I come to know what prisoners thou hast ta'en,  
 And to survey the bodies of the dead.

*Char.* For prisoners ask'st thou? hell our prison is.  
 But tell me whom thou seek'st.

*Lucy.* But where's<sup>(66)</sup> the great Alcides of the field,  
 Valiant Lord Talbot, Earl of Shrewsbury,—  
 Created, for his rare success in arms,  
 Great Earl of Washford, Waterford, and Valence;  
 Lord Talbot of Goodrig and Uichinfield,  
 Lord Strange of Blackmere, Lord Verdun of Alton,  
 Lord Cromwell of Wingfield, Lord Furnival of Sheffield,  
 The thrice-victorious Lord of Falconbridge;  
 Knight of the noble order of Saint George,  
 Worthy Saint Michael, and the Golden Fleece;  
 Great Marshal to Henry the sixth,<sup>(67)</sup>  
 Of all his wars within the realm of France?

*Puc.* Here is a silly-stately style indeed!  
 The Turk, that two-and-fifty kingdoms hath,  
 Writes not so tedious a style as this.—  
 Him that thou magnifiest with all these titles,  
 Stinking and fly-blown, lies here at our feet.

*Lucy.* Is Talbot slain,—the Frenchmen's only scourge,  
 Your kingdom's terror and black Nemesis?  
 O, were mine eye-balls into bullets turn'd,  
 That I, in rage, might shoot them at your faces!  
 O, that I could but call these dead to life!  
 It were enough to fright the realm of France:  
 Were but his picture left amongst you here,  
 It would amaze the proudest of you all.  
 Give me their bodies, that I may bear them hence,  
 And give them burial as beseems their worth.

*Puc.* I think this upstart is old Talbot's ghost,  
 He speaks with such a proud commanding spirit.  
 For God's sake, let him have 'em;<sup>(68)</sup> to keep them here,  
 They would but stink, and putrefy the air.

*Char.* Go, take their bodies hence.

*Lucy.* I'll bear them hence:

But from their ashes shall be rear'd<sup>(69)</sup>  
 A phoenix that shall make all France afraid.

*Char.* So we be rid of them, do with 'em<sup>(70)</sup> what thou  
 wilt.—

And now to Paris, in this conquering vein:  
 All will be ours, now bloody Talbot's slain.

[*Exeunt.*



## ACT V.

SCENE I. *London. A room in the palace.*

*Enter* King HENRY, GLOSTER, and EXETER.

*K. Hen.* Have you perus'd the letters from the pope,  
The emperor, and the Earl of Armagnac?

*Glo.* I have, my lord; and their intent is this,—  
They humbly sue unto your excellence  
To have a godly peate concluded of  
Between the realms of England and of France.

*K. Hen.* How doth your grace affect their motion?

*Glo.* Well, my good lord; and as the only means  
To stop effusion of our Christian blood,  
And stablsh quietness on every side.

*K. Hen.* Ay, marry, uncle; for I always thought  
It was both impious and unnatural  
That such immanity and bloody strife  
Should reign among professors of one faith.

*Glo.* Beside, my lord, the sooner to effect  
And surer bind this knot of amity,  
The Earl of Armagnac,—near kin<sup>(1)</sup> to Charles,  
A man of great authority in France,—  
Proffers his only daughter to your grace  
In marriage, with a large and sumptuous dowry.

*K. Hen.* Marriage, uncle? alas, my years are young!  
And fitter is my study and my books  
Than wanton dalliance with a paramour.  
Yet, call the ambassadors; and, as you please,  
So let them have their answers every one:  
I shall be well content with any choice  
Tends to God's glory and my country's weal.

*Enter* a Legate and two Ambassadors, with WINCHESTER, now  
Cardinal BEVOROT, and habited accordingly.

*Elee.* What! is my Lord of Winchester install'd,  
And call'd unto a cardinal's degree?

Then I perceive that will be verified  
Henry the fifth did sometime prophesy,—  
“ If once he come to be a cardinal,  
He'll make his cap co-equal with the crown.”

*K. Hen.* My lords ambassadors, your several suits  
Have been consider'd and debated on.  
Your purpose is both good and reasonable;  
And therefore are we certainly resolv'd  
To draw conditions of a friendly peace;  
Which by my Lord of Winchester we mean  
Shall be transported presently to France.

*Glo.* And for the proffer of my lord your master,  
I have inform'd his highness so at large,  
As, liking of the lady's virtuous gifts,  
Her beauty, and the value of her dower,  
He doth intend she shall be England's queen.

*K. Hen.* In argument and proof of which contráct,  
Bear her this jewel [*to the Amb.*], pledge of my affection.—  
And so, my lord protector, see them guarded,  
And safely brought to Dover; where, inshipp'd,  
Commit them to the fortune of the sea.

[*Exeunt King Henry, Gloster, Exeter, and  
Ambassadors.*]

*Car.* Stay, my lord legate: you shall first receive  
The sum of money which I promisèd  
Should be deliver'd to his holiness  
For clothing me in these grave ornaments.

*Leg.* I will attend upon your lordship's leisure. [*Exit.*]

*Car.* Now Winchester will not submit, I trow,  
Or be inferior to the proudest peer.  
Humphrey of Gloster, thou shalt well perceive  
That, neither in birth or for authority,  
The bishop will be overborne by thee:  
I'll either make thee stoop and bend thy knee,  
Or sack this country with a mutiny. [*Exit.*]

SCENE II. *France. Plains in Anjou.*

*Enter CHARLES, BURGUNDY, AMENÇON, LA PUCELLE, and Forces, marching.*

*Char.* These news, my lords, may cheer our drooping spirits:

'Tis said the stout Parisians do revolt,  
And turn again unto the warlike French.

*Hen.* Then march to Paris, royal Charles of France,  
And keep not back your powers in dalliance.

*Puc.* Peace be amongst them, if they turn to us;  
Else, ruin combat with their palaces!

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* Success unto our valiant general,  
And happiness to his accomplices!

*Char.* What tidings send our scouts? I prithee, speak.

*Mess.* The English army, that divided was  
Into two parties, is now conjoin'd in one,  
And means to give you battle presently.

*Char.* Somewhat too sudden, sirs, the warning is;  
But we will presently provide for them.

*Bur.* I trust the ghost of Talbot is not there;  
Now he is gone, my lord, you need not fear.

*Puc.* Of all base passions, fear is most accurs'd:—  
Command the conquest, Charles, it shall be thine;  
Let Henry fret, and all the world repine.

*Char.* Then on, my lords; and France be fortunate!

*[Exeunt.]*

SCENE III. *Before Angiers.*

*Alarm. &ursions. Enter LA PUCELLE.*

*Puc.* The regent conquers, and the Frenchmen fly.—  
Now help, ye charming spells and periapts;  
And ye choice spirits that admonish me,  
And give me signs of future accidents,—  
You speedy helpers, that are substitutes

Under the lordly monarch of the north,  
Appear, and aid me in this enterprise!

[*Thunder.*

*Enter Fiends.*

This speedy and quick appearance argues proof  
Of your accustom'd diligence to me.  
Now, ye familiar spirits, that are cull'd  
Out of the powerful legions<sup>(72)</sup> under earth,  
Help me this once, that France may get the field.

[*They walk about, and speak not.*

O, hold me not with silence over-long!  
Where I was wont to feed you with my blood,  
I'll lop a member off, and give it you,  
In earnest of a further benefit,  
So you do condescend to help me now.

[*They hang their heads.*

No hope to have redress?—My body shall  
Pay recompense, if you will grant my suit.

[*They shake their heads.*

Cannot my body nor blood-sacrifice  
Entreat you to your wonted furtherance?  
Then take my soul,—my body, soul, and all,  
Before that England give the French the foil. [*They depart.*  
See, they forsake me! Now the time is come,  
That France must veil her lofty-plumèd crest,  
And let her head fall into England's lap.  
My ancient incantations are too weak,  
And hell too strong for me to buckle with:  
Now, France, thy glory droopeth to the dust. [*Exit.*

*Enter French and English, fighting. LA PUCELLE<sup>(73)</sup> and YORK  
fight hand to hand: LA PUCELLE is taken. The French fly*

*York.* Damsel of France, I think I have you fast:  
Unchain your spirits now with spelling charms,  
And try if they can gain your liberty.—  
A goodly prize, fit for the devil's grace!  
See, how the ugly witch doth bend her brows,  
As if, with Circe, she would change my shape!

*Puc.* Chaug'd to a worser shape thou canst not be.

*York.* O, Charles the Dauphin is a proper man;  
No shape but his can please your dainty eye.

*Puc.* A plaguing mischief light on Charles and thee!  
And may ye both be suddenly surpris'd

By bloody hands, in sleeping on your beds!

*York.* Fell banning hag, enchantress, hold thy tongue!

*Puc.* I prithee, give me leave to curse awhile.

*York.* Curse, miscreant, when thou comest to the stake.

[*Exeunt.*]

*Alarum.* Enter SUFFOLK, leading in MARGARET

*Suf.* Be what thou wilt, thou art my prisoner.

[*Gazes on her.*]

O fairest beauty, do not fear nor fly!

For I will touch thee but with reverent hands,

And lay them gently on thy tender side.<sup>(74)</sup>

I kiss these fingers for eternal peace. [*Kissing her hand.*]

Who art thou? say, that I may honour thee.

*Mar.* Margaret my name, and daughter to a king,

The King of Naples,—whoso'er thou art.

*Suf.* An earl I am, and Suffolk am I call'd.

Be not offended, nature's miracle,

Thou art allotted to be ta'en by me:

So doth the swan her downy cygnets save,

Keeping them prisoners underneath her<sup>(75)</sup> wings.

Yet, if this servile usage once offend,

Go, and be free again as Suffolk's friend.

[*She turns away as going.*]

O, stay!—I have no power to let her pass;<sup>(76)</sup>

My hand would free her, but my heart says no.

As plays the sun upon the glassy streams,

Twinkling another counterfeited beam,

So seems this gorgeous beauty to mine eyes.

Fain would I woo her, yet I dare not speak:

I'll call for pen and ink, and write my mind;—

Fie, De-la-Poole! disable not thyself;

Hast not a tongue? is she not here thy prisoner?<sup>(77)</sup>

Wilt thou be daunted at a woman's sight?  
Ay, beauty's princely majesty is such,  
Confounds the tongue, and makes the senses rough.<sup>(78)</sup>

*Mar.* Say, Earl of Suffolk,—if thy name be so,—  
What ransom must I pay before I pass?  
For I perceive I am thy prisoner.

*Suf.* How canst thou tell she will deny thy suit  
Before thou make a trial of her love? [*Aside.*

*Mar.* Why speak'st thou not? what ransom must I pay?

*Suf.* She's beautiful, and therefore to be woo'd;  
She is a woman, therefore to be won. [*Aside.*

*Mar.* Wilt thou accept of ransom—yea or no?

*Suf.* Fond man, remember that thou hast a wife;  
Then how can Margaret be thy paramour? [*Aside.*

*Mar.* I were best to leave him, for he will not hear.

*Suf.* There all is marr'd; there lies a cooling-card. [*Aside.*

*Mar.* He talks at random;<sup>(79)</sup> sure, the man is mad.

*Suf.* And yet a dispensation may be had. [*Aside.*

*Mar.* And yet I would that you would answer me.

*Suf.* I'll win this Lady Margaret. For whom?  
Why, for my king: tush, that's a wooden thing! [*Aside.*

*Mar.* He talks of wood: it is some carpenter.

*Suf.* Yet so my fancy may be satisfied,  
And peace establishèd between these realms.  
But there remains a scruple in that too;  
For though her father be the King of Naples,  
Duke of Anjou and Maine, yet is he poor,  
And our nobility will scorn the match. [*Aside.*

*Mar.* Hear ye, captain,—are you not at leisure?

*Suf.* It shall be so, disdain they ne'er so much:  
Henry is youthful, and will quickly yield.— [*Aside.*  
Madam, I have a secret to reveal.

*Mar.* What though I be enthrall'd? he seems a knight,  
And will not any way dishonour me. [*Aside.*

*Suf.* Lady, vouchsafe to listen what I say.

*Mar.* Perhaps I shall be rescu'd by the French;  
And then I need not crave his courtesy. [*Aside.*

*Suf.* Sweet madam, give me hearing in a cause—

*Mar.* Tush, women have been captivate ere now. [*Aside.*

*Suf.* Lady, wherefore talk you so?

*Mar.* I cry you mercy, 'tis but *quid* for *quo*.

*Suf.* Say, gentle princess, would you not suppose  
Your bondage happy, to be made a queen?

*Mar.* To be a queen in bondage is more vile  
Than is a slave in base servility;  
For princes should be free.

*Suf.* And so shall you,  
If happy England's royal king be free.

*Mar.* Why, what concerns his freedom unto me?

*Suf.* I'll undertake to make thee Henry's queen;  
To put a golden sceptre in thy hand,  
And set a precious crown upon thy head,  
If thou wilt condescend to be my—<sup>(80)</sup>

*Mar.* What?

*Suf.* His love.

*Mar.* I am unworthy to be Henry's wife.

*Suf.* No, gentle madam; I unworthy am  
To woo so fair a dame to be his wife,  
And have no portion in the choice myself.  
How say you, madam,—are you so content?

*Mar.* An if my father please, I am content.

*Suf.* Then call our captains and our colours forth!—

[*Troops come forward.*

And, madam, at your father's castle-walls  
We'll crave a parley, to confer with him.

*A parley sounded Enter REIGNIER on the walls.*

See, Reignier, see, thy daughter prisoner!

*Reig.* To whom?

*Suf.* To me.

*Reig.* Suffolk, what remedy?

I am a soldier, and unapt to weep  
Or to exclaim on fortune's fickleness.

*Suf.* Yes, there is remedy enough, my lord:  
Consent (and, for thy honour, give consent)  
Thy daughter shall be wedded to my king;

Whom I with pain have woo'd and won thereto;  
 And this her easy-held imprisonment  
 Hath gain'd thy daughter princely liberty.

*Reig.* Speaks Suffolk as he thinks?

*Suf.* Fair Margaret knows  
 That Suffolk doth not flatter, face, or feign.

*Reig.* Upon thy princely warrant, I descend  
 To give thee answer of thy just demand.

*Suf.* And here I will expect thy coming.

[*Exit Reignier from the walls.*]

*Trumpets sound. Enter REIGNIER, below.*

*Reig.* Welcome, brave earl, into our territories:  
 Command in Anjou what your honour pleases.

*Suf.* Thanks, Reignier, happy for so sweet a child,  
 Fit to be made companion with a king:  
 What answer makes your grace unto my suit?

*Reig.* Since thou dost deign to woo her little worth  
 To be the princely bride of such a lord;  
 Upon condition I may quietly

Enjoy mine own, the county<sup>(81)</sup> Maine and Anjou,  
 Free from oppression or the stroke of war,  
 My daughter shall be Henry's, if he please.

*Suf.* That is her ransom,—I deliver her;  
 And those two counties I will undertake  
 Your grace shall well and quietly enjoy.

*Reig.* And I again, in Henry's royal name,  
 As deputy unto that gracious king,  
 Give thee her hand, for sign of plighted faith.

*Suf.* Reignier of France, I give thee kingly thanks,  
 Because this is in traffic of a king:—

And yet, methinks, I could be well content [Aside.  
 To be mine own attorney in this case.—

I'll over, then, to England with this news,  
 And make this marriage to be solemniz'd.  
 So, farewell, Reignier: set this diamond safe  
 In golden palaces, as it becomes.

*Reig.* I do embrace thee, as I would embrace  
 The Christian prince, King Henry, were he here.



*Mar.* Farewell, my lord: good wishes, praise, and prayers  
Shall Suffolk ever have of Margaret. [Going.]

*Suf.* Farewell, sweet madam: but hark you, Margaret,—  
No princely commendations to my king?

*Mar.* Such commendations as become a maid,  
A virgin, and his servant, say to him.

*Suf.* Words sweetly plac'd and modestly directed.  
But, madam, I must trouble you again,—  
No loving token to his majesty?

*Mar.* Yes, my good lord,—a pure unspotted heart,  
Never yet taint with love, I send the king.

*Suf.* And this withal. [Kisses her.]

*Mar.* That for thyself:—I will not so presume  
To send such peevish tokens to a king.

[Exeunt Reignier and Margaret.]

*Suf.* O, wert thou for myself!—But, Suffolk, stay;  
Thou mayst not wander in that labyrinth;  
There Minotaurs and ugly treasons lurk.  
Solicit Henry with her wondrous praise:  
Bethink thee on her virtues that surmount,  
And <sup>(\*)</sup> natural graces that extinguish art;  
Repeat their semblance often on the seas,  
That, when thou com'st to kneel at Henry's feet,  
Thou mayst bereave him of his wits with wonder. [Exit.]

SCENE IV. *Camp of the Duke of York in Anjou.*

*Enter YORK, WARWICK, and others.*

*York.* Bring forth that sorceress, condemn'd to burn.

*Enter LA PUCELLE, guarded, and a Shepherd.*

*Shep.* Ah, Joan, this kills thy father's heart outright!  
Have I sought every country far and near,  
And, now it is my chance to find thee out,  
Must I behold thy timeless cruel death?  
Ah, Joan, sweet daughter Joan, I'll die with thee!

*Puc.* Decrepit miser! base ignoble wretch!

I am descended of a gentler blood :  
Thou art no father nor no friend of mine.

*Shep.* Out, out!—My lords, an please you, 'tis not so;  
I did beget her, all the parish knows :  
Her mother liveth yet, can testify  
She was the first fruit of my bachelorship.

*War.* Graceless! wilt thou deny thy parentage?

*York.* This argues what her kind of life hath been,—  
Wicked and vile; and so her death concludes.

*Shep.* Fie, Joan, that thou wilt be so obstacle!  
God knows thou art a collop of my flesh;  
And for thy sake have I shed many a tear:  
Deny me not, I prithee, gentle Joan.

*Puc.* Peasant, avaunt!—You have suborn'd this man,  
Of purpose to obscure my noble birth.

*Shep.* 'Tis true, I gave a noble to the priest  
The morn that I was wedded to her mother.—  
Kneel down and take my blessing, good my girl.  
Wilt thou not stoop? Now cursèd be the time  
Of thy nativity! I would the milk  
Thy mother gave thee when thou suck'dst her breast,  
Had been a little ratsbane for thy sake!  
Or else, when thou didst keep my lambs a-field,  
I wish some ravenous wolf had eaten thee!  
Dost thou deny thy father, cursèd drab?  
O, burn her, burn her! hanging is too good. [Exit.

*York.* Take her away; for she hath liv'd too long,  
To fill the world with vicious qualities.

*Puc.* First, let me tell you whom you have condemn'd :  
Not me begotten of a shepherd swain,  
But issu'd from the progeny of kings;  
Virtuous, and holy; chosen from above,  
By inspiration of celestial grace,  
To work exceeding miracles on earth.  
I never had to do with wicked spirits:  
But you,—that are polluted with your lusts,  
Stain'd with the guiltless blood of innocents,  
Corrupt and tainted with a thousand vices,—  
Because you want the grace that others have,

You judge it straight a thing impossible  
 To compass wonders but by help of devils.  
 No, misconceived! (<sup>3</sup>) Joan of Arc hath been  
 A virgin from her tender infancy,  
 Chaste and immaculate in very thought;  
 Whose maiden blood, thus rigorously effus'd,  
 Will cry for vengeance at the gates of heaven.

*York.* Ay, ay:—away with her to execution!

*War.* And hark ye, sirs; because she is a maid,  
 Spare for no fagots, let there be enow:  
 Place barrels of pitch upon the fatal stake,  
 That so her torture may be shortenèd.

*Puc.* Will nothing turn your unrelenting hearts?—  
 Then, Joan, discover thine infirmity,  
 That warranteth by law to be thy privilege.—  
 I am with child, ye bloody homicides:  
 Murder not, then, the fruit within my womb,  
 Although ye hale me to a violent death.

*York.* Now heaven forfend! the holy maid with child!

*War.* The greatest miracle that e'er ye wrought:  
 Is all your strict preciseness come to this?

*York.* She and the Dauphin have been juggling:  
 I did imagine what would be her refuge.

*War.* Well, go to; we will have no bastards live;  
 Especially since Charles must father it.

*Puc.* You are deceiv'd; my child is none of his:  
 It was Alençon that enjoy'd my love.

*York.* Alençon! that notorious Machiavel!  
 It dies, an if it had a thousand lives.

*Puc.* O, give me leave, I have deluded you:  
 'Twas neither Charles, nor yet the duke I nam'd,  
 But Reignier, king of Naples, that prevail'd.

*War.* A married man! that's most intolerable.

*York.* Why, here's a girl! I think she knows not well,  
 There were so many, whom she may accuse.

*War.* It's sign she hath been liberal and free.

*York.* And yet, forsooth, she is a virgin pure.—  
 Stumpet, thy words condemn thy brat and thee:  
 Use no entreaty, for it is in vain.

*Puc.* Then lead me hence ;—with whom I leave my curse :  
May never glorious sun reflex his beams  
Upon the country where you make abode ;  
But darkness and the gloomy shade of death  
Environ you, till mischief and despair  
Drive you to break your necks or hang yourselves !

*[Exit, guarded.]*

*York.* Break thou in pieces, and consume to ashes,  
Thou foul accursèd minister of hell !

*Enter Cardinal BEAUFORT, attended.*

*Car.* Lord regent, I do greet your excellence  
With letters of commission from the king.  
For know, my lords, the states of Christendom,  
Mov'd with remorse of these outrageous broils,  
Have earnestly implor'd a general peace  
Betwixt our nation and the aspiring French ;  
And here at hand the Dauphin and his train  
Approacheth, to confer about some matter.

*York.* Is all our travail turn'd to this effect ?  
After the slaughter of so many peers,  
So many captains, gentlemen, and soldiers,  
That in this quarrel have been overthrown,  
And sold their bodies for their country's benefit,  
Shall we at last conclude effeminate peace ?  
Have we not lost most part of all the towns,  
By treason, falsehood, and by treachery,  
Our great progenitors had conquer'd ?—  
O, Warwick, Warwick ! I foresee with grief  
The utter loss of all the realm of France.

*War.* Be patient, York : if we conclude a peace,  
It shall be with such strict and severe covenants,  
As little shall the Frenchmen gain thereby.

*Enter CHARLES, attended, ALENÇON, Bastard, REIGNIER, and  
others.*

*Char.* Since, lords of England, it is thus agreed  
That peaceful truce shall be proclaim'd in France,

We come to be informèd by yourselves  
What the conditions of that league must be.

*York.* Speak, Winchester; for boiling choler chokes  
The hollow passage of my prison'd<sup>(\*)</sup> voice,  
By sight of these our baleful enemies.

*Car.* Charles, and the rest, it is enacted thus:  
That, in regard King Hemy gives consent,  
Of mere compassion and of lenity,  
To ease your country of distressful war,  
And suffer you to breathe in fruitful peace,—  
You shall become true liegemen to his crown:  
And, Charles, upon condition thou wilt swear  
To pay him tribute, and submit thyself,  
Thou shalt be plac'd as viceroy under him,  
And still enjoy thy regal dignity.

*Alen.* Must he be, then, as shadow of himself?  
Adorn his temples with a coronet,  
And yet, in substance and authority,  
Retain but privilege of a private man?  
This proffer is absurd and reasonless.

*Char.* 'Tis known already that I am possess'd  
With more than half the Gallian territories,  
And therein reverenc'd for their lawful king:  
Shall I, for lucre of the rest unvanquish'd,  
Detract so much from that prerogative,  
As to be call'd but viceroy of the whole?  
No, lord ambassador; I'll rather keep  
That which I have, than, coveting for more,  
Be cast from possibility of all.

*York.* Insulting Charles! hast thou by secret means  
Us'd intercession to obtain a league,  
And, now the matter grows to compromise,  
Stand'st thou aloof upon comparison?  
Either accept the title thou usurp'st,  
Of benefit proceeding from our king,  
And not of any challenge of desert,  
Or we will plague thee with incessant wars.

*Reig.* My lord, you do not well in obstinacy

To cavil in the course of this contract :  
If once it be neglected, ten to one  
We shall not find like opportunity.

*Alen.* To say the truth, it is your policy,  
To save your subjects from such massacre  
And ruthless slaughters as are daily seen  
By our proceeding in hostility ;  
And therefore take this compact of a truce,  
Although you break it when your pleasure serves.

[*Aside to Charles.*

*War.* How say'st thou, Charles? shall our condition stand?

*Char.* It shall ;

Only reserv'd, you claim no interest  
In any of our towns of garrison.

*York.* Then swear allegiance to his majesty ;  
As thou art knight, never to disobey  
Nor be rebellious to the crown of England,—  
Thou, nor thy nobles, to the crown of England.

[*Charles and the rest give tokens of fealty.*

So, now dismiss your army when ye please ;  
Hang up your ensigns, let your drums be still,  
For here we entertain a solemn peace.

[*Exeunt.*

---

SCENE V. *London. A room in the palace.*

*Enter King HENRY, in conference with SUFFOLK; GLOSTER and  
EXETER following.*

*K. Hen.* Your wondrous rare description, noble earl,  
Of beauteous Margaret hath astonish'd me :  
Her virtues, gracèd with external gifts,  
Do breed love's settled passions in my heart :  
And like as rigour of tempestuous gusts  
Provokes the mightiest hulk against the tide,  
So am I driven, by breath of her renown,  
Either to suffer shipwreck, or arrive  
Where I may have fruition of her love.

*Suf.* Tush, my good lord,—this superficial tale

Is but a preface of her worthy praise ;  
The chief perfections of that lovely dame  
(Had I sufficient skill to utter them,)  
Would make a volume of enticing lines,  
Able to ravish any dull conceit :  
And, which is more, she is not so divine,  
So full-replete with choice of all delights,  
But, with as humble lowliness of mind,  
She is content to be at your command ;  
Command, I mean, of virtuous chaste intents,  
'To love and honour Henry as her lord.

*K. Hen.* And otherwise will Henry ne'er presume.  
Therefore, my lord protector, give consent  
That Margaret may be England's royal queen.

*Glo.* So should I give consent to flatter sin.  
You know, my lord, your highness is betroth'd  
Unto another lady of esteem :  
How shall we, then, dispense with that contract,  
And not deface your honour with reproach ?

*Suf.* As doth a ruler with unlawful oaths ;  
Or one that, at a triumph having vow'd  
To try his strength, forsaketh yet the lists  
By reason of his adversary's odds :  
A poor earl's daughter is unequal odds,  
And therefore may be broke without offence.

*Glo.* Why, what, I pray, is Margaret more than that ?  
Her father is no better than an earl,  
Although in glorious titles he excel.

*Suf.* Yes, my lord,<sup>(25)</sup> her father is a king,  
The King of Naples and Jerusalem ;  
And of such great authority in France,  
As his alliance will confirm our peace,  
And keep the Frenchmen in allegiance.

*Glo.* And so the Earl of Armagnac may do,  
Because he is near kinsman unto Charles.

*Exe.* Beside, his wealth doth warrant a<sup>(26)</sup> liberal dower,  
Where Reignier sooner will receive than give.

*Suf.* A dower, my lords ! disgrace not so your king,  
That he should be so abject, base, and poor,

To choose for wealth, and not for perfect love.  
 Henry is able to enrich his queen,  
 And not to seek a queen to make him rich :  
 So worthless peasants bargain for their wives,  
 As market-men for oxen, sheep, or horse.  
 Marriage is a matter of more worth  
 Than to be dealt in by attorneyship ;  
 Not whom we will, but whom his grace affects,  
 Must be companion of his nuptial bed :  
 And therefore, lords, since he affects her most,  
 It<sup>(83)</sup> most of all these reasons bindeth us,  
 In our opinions she should be preferr'd.  
 For what is wedlock forc'd but a hell,  
 An age of discord and continual strife ?  
 Whereas the contrary bringeth bliss,  
 And is a pattern of celestial peace.  
 Whom should we match with Henry, being a king,  
 But Margaret, that is daughter to a king ?  
 Her peerless feature, join'd with her birth,  
 Approves her fit for none but for a king :  
 Her valiant courage and undaunted spirit  
 (More than in women commonly is seen)  
 Will answer our hope in issue of a king ;  
 For Henry, son unto a conqueror,  
 Is likely to beget more conquerors,  
 If with a lady of so high resolve  
 As is fair Margaret he be link'd in love.  
 Then yield, my lords ; and here conclude with me  
 That Margaret shall be queen, and none but she.  
*K. Hen.* Whether it be through force of your report,  
 My noble Lord of Suffolk, or for that  
 My tender youth was never yet attam'd  
 With any passion of inflaming love,  
 I cannot tell ; but this I am assur'd,  
 I feel such sharp dissension in my breast,  
 Such fierce alarms both of hope and fear,  
 As I am sick with working of my thoughts.  
 Take, therefore, shipping ; post, my lord, to France ;  
 Agree to any covenants ; and procure



That Lady Margaret do vouchsafe to come  
To cross the seas to England, and be crown'd  
King Henry's faithful and anointed queen :  
For your expenses and sufficient charge,  
Among the people gather up a tenth.  
Be gone, I say ; for, till you do return,  
I rest perplex'd with a thousand cares.—  
And you, good uncle, banish all offence :  
If you do censure me by what you were,  
Not what you are, I know it will excuse  
This sudden execution of my will,  
And so, conduct me where, from company,  
I may revolve and ruminate my grief.

[*Exit.*]

*Glo.* Ay, grief, I fear me, both at first and last.

[*Exeunt Gloster and Exeter.*]

*Suf.* Thus Suffolk hath prevail'd ; and thus he goes,  
As did the youthful Paris once to Greece,  
With hope to find the like event in love,  
But prosper better than the Trojan did.  
Margaret shall now be queen, and rule the king ;  
But I will rule both her, the king, and realm.

[*Exit.*]

P. 4. (1)

"When at their mothers' moisten'd eyes babes shall suck"

The editor of the second folio cures the redundancy of this line by altering "moisten'd" to "moist"

P. 4. (2) "Our isle be made a marsh of salt tears," &c.

So Pope, and (as Warburton remarks) very judiciously.—The folio has "— a Nourish of salt *Tures*," &c.,—a flagrant error (in support of which, however, an example of the substantive "nourish," i. e. nourice, nurse, has been adduced from *Lyulgate 11*) —Hic Ritson appositely quotes Kyd's *Spanish Tragedy*;

"Made mountains marsh with spring-tides of my tears."

Compare, too, Smith's *Hector of Germanie*, 1615,—

"The long Ile set them free, or make the soyle,  
That holds them prisoners, a *Marsh-ground* for blood,"

Sig. C 4

P. 4. (3) "Than Julius Caesar or bright —"

Johnson would fill up the blank with "Berence;" Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector with "Cassiope."

P. 5. (4) "*Guienne, Champagne, Rhems, Orleans*," &c.

Capell, with an eye to Gloucester's next speech, prints "*Guienne, Champaigne, Rhems, Roan [the old spelling of Rouen], Orleans*," &c

P. 5. (5) "*A third thinks, without expense at all*," &c

The editor of the second folio gives, for the metre, "*A third man thinks*," &c.,—which is far from satisfactory.

P. 5. (6) "*her flowing tides*."

"i. e." says Pope, "*England's flowing tides*." But qy. was not Theobald right in printing "*their flowing tides*"?

P. 6. (1) "*Here, there, and every where, enrag'd he flew*."

The folio has "— *enrag'd he flew*."—Malone "suspects" (as he well might) "that the author wrote '*flew*.'"—if he had taken the trouble to examine Rowe's sec. edition, or Pope's edition, or Theobald's, &c. he would have found that correction.

P. 7. (8) "*He, being in the vaward (plac'd behind,  
With purpose to relieve and follow them)*," &c.

This has been altered to "*He, being in the rearward,*" &c., and I will not say, unnecessarily; for to me at least the interpretations of the old text by Steevens and Mason (not to mention the very extraordinary one by Mr. Collier) are far from convincing.

P. 8. (9) "*The king from Eltham I intend to steal,  
And sit at chiefest stern of public weal*"

The folio has "*— I intend to send,*"—an error occasioned by the transcriber's or printer's eye having caught the preceding "*intend,*"—Mason saw that "*steal*" was the true reading; and so, long before him, did Mr. Collier's Mr. Corrector.

P. 8. (10) "*that killeth me,  
When he sees me go back one foot or fyer.*"

The folio has "*— one foot or fye.*"

P. 9. (11) "*And hunger will enforce them to be more eager.*"

"The preposition *to* should be omitted, as injurious to the measure, and unnecessary in the old elliptical mode of writing. The error pointed out occurs again in p. 13, '*Peel'd priest, dost thou command me to be shut out?*'" STEEVENS.

P. 10. (12) "*That levity am I bless'd with, which you may see.*"

The editor of the second folio prints "*— which you see.*"

P. 11. (13) "*Dick'd with five flower-de-luces,*" &c.

Here the folio, by mistake, has "*fine*" instead of "*five*."

P. 11. (14) "*Out of a great deal of old iron I chose forth.*"

Editors have variously altered this line,—some by omitting "*great,*" others by rejecting "*forth;*" and Steevens proposes, "*Out a deal of old iron I chose forth.*"

P. 12. (15) "*in blue coats.*"

This is a modern addition: but the folio presently, in marking the entrance of Winchester's Servants, has "*in tawny coats,*" p. 13, and Gloucester, p. 14, exclaims, "*Blue-coats to tawny-coats.*"

P. 13. (16) "*From him I have express commandment,*" &c.

In this line "*commandment*" is to be pronounced as a quadrisyllable, and indeed here the folio has "*commandment*,"—but concerning that spelling I would particularly refer the reader to my note (22) on *The Merchant of Venice*, vol. II. 328.

P. 13. (17)

*"Peel'd priest, dost thou command me to be shut out?"*

See note (11).—The spelling in the folio is "*Piel'd Priest*," &c. (Here Mr. Collier prints "*Pill'd*," because "we have had it before in *Measure for Measure* [act 1. sc. 2]," but there the play on words forbid, any other spelling than "*piled*"—"as be *piled* as thou art *piled*," &c.; and Mr. Collier in *The Merchant of Venice*, act 1. sc. 3, prints "*The skilful shephead peel'd* [old eds. pil'd] me certain wands," &c.)

P. 14. (18)

*"Priest, beware your beard;  
I mean to tug it, and to cuff you soundly  
Under my feet I'll stamp thy cardinal's hat;  
Here by the cheeks I'll drag thee up and down."*

In the third line the folio has "*Under my feet I stampe*," &c.; and so the more recent editors. But the second folio rightly gives "*— He stampe*," &c.—Gloster threatening to stamp on the cardinal's hat, just as he threatens to tug his beard, and to drag him by the cheeks.

P. 14. (19)

*"Here's Gloster, a foe to citizens," &c.*

The modern editors print, with the second folio, "*Here's Gloster too, a foe*," &c.; but, as Sydney Walker (*Shakespeare's Fecundation*, &c. p. 236) observes on the passage, "Malè, Folio 2,"—"Gloster" in this line being equivalent to "Gloucester," a trisyllable. so at p. 12,

*"It is the noble Duke of Gloster [= Gloucester];"*

and in *Richard the Third*, act iii. sc. 1,

*"Where is my lord the Duke of Gloster [= Gloucester]?"*

P. 14. (20)

*"Come, officer; as loud as e'er thou canst,"*

The folio has "*— as e're thou canst, cry*,"—the colon after "*cry*" showing that word to be a stage-direction. Besides, the folio has no prefix to "*All manner of men*," &c.

P. 15. (21)

*"Gloster, we'll meet, to thy cost, be sure."*

The second folio has "*— to thy deave cost*," &c.

P. 15 (22)

*"Good God, these nobles should such stomachs bear!"*

ie Good God, *that* these nobles, &c.—Rowe unnecessarily substituted "*Good God, that nobles*," &c.

P. 15. (23)

*"Wont, through a secret grate," &c.*

Tyrwhitt's correction.—The folio has "*Went through a*," &c.

P. 15. (4) "And even these three days," &c

A corrupted passage. It stands thus in the folio,

"And even these three dayes have I watcht,  
If I could see them Now doe thou watch,  
For I can stay no longer."

The editor of the second folio rectified it thus;

"And fully even these three dayes have I watcht,  
If I could see them. Now Boy doe thou watch,  
For I can stay no longer."

P. 16. (2) "The Duke of Bedford had a prisoner  
Called the brave Lord Ponton de Santrailles,"

The folio has "*The Earle of Bedford*," &c.—I am not sure about the metre of the second line; the folio has "*Call'd the brave*," &c.,—and see Walker's *Shakespeare's Versification*, &c. p. 35

P. 16 (5) "so vile-esteem'd."

The folio has "*so vil'd esteem'd*,"—evidently a mistake for "*so vile esteem'd*," (with its usual inconsistency in spelling, the folio has in some places "*vild*," in others, "*vile*")

P. 17 (7) "Here, through this grate, I count each one," &c

A mutilated line,—which the editor of the second folio thus restored to at least its proper dimensions,—"*Here, through this grate, I can count every one*," &c. but his corrections are, of course, merely arbitrary, and the alteration of "*I count*" [i.e. I am in the habit of counting] to "*I can count*," is a more than doubtful change. Malone and some other editors have fancied that all is set right by printing "*Here through this grate I count each one*," &c. (Qy. "*Here through this secret grate I count each one*"? Compare, in p. 16, "*Went, through a secret grate of iron bars*," &c.)

P. 18. (25) "and like thee, Nero," &c

The word "*Nero*" is wanting in the folio,—having perhaps dropped out at press.

P. 18. (26)

"And then we'll try what these dastard Frenchmen dare"

Here Pope threw out "*these*," Stevens proposes either to omit that word, or "*And*"

P. 19 (12) "thy hunger-starv'd men."

The folio has "*thy hungry-starv'd men*," (As the compound "*hunger-starv'd*" occurs in *The Third Part of Henry VI.* act i. sc. 4, it is, in all probability, the

true reading here.—Mr. Collier remarks that "if 'hungry, starved men,' as Boswell would have printed it, had been intended, and not a compound word, the hyphen in the old copy would have been omitted " but that by no means follows, for afterwards in this play, p. 47, the folio has "his *tender-lying* eyes," —p. 61, "his *puny-sword*." and see note (42), vol. iii. 263.)

P. 19. (31)

"*Sheep run not half so timorous from the wolf;*" &c.

Pope's correction —The folio has "*Sheepe run not half so treacherous from;*" &c. (Mr Knight, and the Rev. J. Mitford (*Gent Magazine* for Nov. 1844, p. 457), conjecture, "Sheep run not half so from the *treacherous* wolf;" &c.: but surely the adjective is not to be separated from "so.")

P. 20. (32) "*Rescu'd is Orleans from the English. —*

*Divinest creature, Astræa's daughter;*" &c.

The editor of the second folio chose to print,—

"*Rescu'd is Orleans from the English wolves: —*

*Divinest Creature, bright Astræa's Daughter;*" &c.,

and so, among others, the two latest editors, Mr. Collier and Mr. Knight — "The word 'wolves,'" says Mr. Collier, "seems necessary, though Malone contends that '*English*' ought to be pronounced as a trisyllable;"—and Malone was right; compare a line in *Richard II.* act iv. sc. 1,

"Than Bolingbroke's return to *England*,"

and see Walker's *Shakespeare's Versification*, &c., p. 7.—"Malone," continues Mr. Collier, "goes the length of contending that '*Astræa*' ought to be pronounced *Asteræa*,"—in which Malone was mistaken; for here "*creature*" (see Walker *ubi supra*, p. 85), is to be read as a trisyllable.

P. 20. (33)

"*Why ring not out the bells aloud throughout the town?*"

Pope shortened the line by omitting "*aloud*." Steevens proposes "Why ring not bells aloud," &c.

P. 20. (34) "*Than Rhodope's of Memphis ever was*"

The folio has "*Then Rhodophe's or Memphis,*" &c.—Concerning the fable of Rhodope (or, properly, Rhodopis) see Strabo, xvii. p. 808, and Ælian, *Var. Hist.* xiii. 33, and compare Herodotus, ii. 134, seqq.

P. 20. (35) "*Before the kings and queens of France.*"

Qy. "— *queens and peers of France*?"

P. 27. (3<sup>o</sup>) "misconstrue," &c.

Here the folio has the spelling "misconster,"—inconsistently. see note (10), vol. ii. 324.

P. 30. (37) "I scorn thee and thy faction, peevish boy."

The folio has "I scorn thee and thy fashion," &c.—The correction of Theobald, "faction," is fully confirmed by subsequent speeches in this scene,—

"Will I for ever, and my faction, wear."

"Grown to this faction, in the Temple-garden," &c.

P. 31. (3<sup>o</sup>) "Thanks, gentle sir"

Here the editor of the second folio added the "sir,"—"which yet," as Malone observes, "does not complete the metric."

P. 32 (13) "—— the Temple, to his chamber"

The folio has "—— the Temple, unto his Chamber." (The second folio "—— the Temple, his Chamber.")

P. 33. (10)

"Was, for that (young King Richard thus remov'd)

From Lionel Duke of Clarence, the third son," &c

Here I have inserted, from the second folio, "King," in the first line, and (more hesitatingly) "the" in the second line.

P. 35. (11) "Or make my ill the advantage of my good."

Theobald's amendment.—The folio has "Or make my will the," &c.

P. 36. (12) "Am I not protector, saucy priest?"

Has been altered to "Am not I, then, protector," &c., to "And am I not protector," &c, and to "Am I not the protector," &c

P. 37. (13) "War Room thither, then.

Som. My lord, it were," &c.

So Theobald distributed the dialogue.—The folio has;

"Warw Roome thither then

My Lord, it were your dutie to forbear

Som I see the Bishop be not overborne

Me thinkes my Lord should," &c.

P. 40 (11) "not that alone," &c

So the second folio —The first folio has "not that all alone," &c.

P. 40. (45) "*Thy humble servant vows obedience  
And humble service till the point of death.*"

In the second line Pope printed "*And faithful service,*" &c.—In the first line Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector substitutes "*Thy honour'd servant,*" &c

P. 41. (46)  
"*That Henry born at Monmouth should win all,  
And Henry born at Windsor should lose all.*"

So the second folio—The first folio has "*— borne at Windsor, loose all,*"—which can only be right on the supposition that here "*Windsor*" is (as we sometimes find it used by early poets) a trisyllable, but the repetition of "*should*" seems necessary to give emphasis to the prophecy.

P. 42. (47) "*Where is the best,*" &c.

The folio has "*Here is the best,*" &c.

P. 43. (48)  
"*Away, captains !*

*God b' wi' you, my lord ! we came but to tell you,*" &c.

On "*Away, captains !*" Mr. Collier remarks, "Malone and Steevens (as a supposed improvement of Shakespeare's verse, perhaps) invented these words, and read, '*Captains, away,*' without any authority." But the transposition was made long before the time of Malone and Steevens; and, for my own part, I am not prepared to defend as uncorrupted any of the limping lines throughout this play.—The editor of the second folio printed (according to Steevens, judiciously) "*— we came sir but to tell you,*" &c.

P. 45. (49) "*Yet heavens have glory for this victory !*"

In my *Remarks on Mr. Collier's and Mr. Knight's eds. of Shakespeare*, p. 125, I queried—"Is not the right reading '*Let heavens,*'" &c ?

P. 45. (50) "*Warlike and martial Talbot,*" &c.

Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector substitutes "*Warlike and matchless Talbot,*" &c., and Mr. Collier says, that, "the old text being mere tautology, we may gladly welcome his striking improvement." On the contrary, we must reject it; for the present passage is far from being the only tautological one in this very un-Shakespearian drama. c g ;—

"*In private will I talk with thee apart,*" p. 10.

"*Or will you blume and lay the fault on me ?*" p. 23.

"*To gather our soldiers, scatter'd and dispers'd,*" &c. p. 23.



"I see report is *fabulous and false*," p. 26.

"So clear, so shining, and so evident," &c. p. 28.

"Than I am able to *instruct or teach*" p. 54

P. 45. (31) "For *there* going Henry with his nobles lie "

The modern editors print "— Henry with his nobles lies " but, the old text (nor did the editor of the second folio make any change here) is, I believe, what the author wrote. (Mr. Robson observes to me that a similar construction is sometimes found in Latin;—"atque ipse dux cum aliquot principibus capuntur," *Livy*, xxi. 60, where see Rupert's note )

P. 47. (32) "As looks the mother on her lovely babe," &c.

So Warburton (and Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector) —The folio has "— her lowly babe," &c.—According to Mr. Singer (*Shakespeare Vindicated*, &c. p. 141.) Warburton's emendation "was rejected with good reason by Johnson " but the fact is, Johnson's note proves that he had great doubts about "lowly," and his explanation of it is ridiculously forced;—he calls Warburton's reading "easy and probable, but," he adds, "reminds the poet by *lowly babe* no ant the *babe lying low* in death"—Capell, too, patronizes the old lection,—"the image is fitted from some *rustic mother*, and her *rustic* or *lowly babe* " what a strange fancy!

P. 50. (33) "at the battle of Patay," &c.

The folio has "at the battell of Poitiers," &c.—The necessary correction was made by STEEVENS.

P. 50 (34) "in most extremes."

"i.e. in *greatest* extremities " STEEVENS.—Mr. Singer (*Shakespeare Vindicated*, &c. p. 142) remarks, "The substitution of '*worst* extremes' [by Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector], although specious, is doubtful."—he might have said "is unquestionably wrong "

P. 51. (35)

"And now, my lord protector, view the letter," &c.

So the second folio.—The first folio omits "*my*." (Compare elsewhere in Henry's speeches,—"*Ourself*, my lord protector," &c. p. 51, "*And so*, my lord protector," &c. p. 67; "*Therefore*, my lord protector," &c. p. 80.)

P. 51. (36)

"O! doth this clownish vpercription

Pretend some alteration in good will?"

"To *pretend* seems to be here used in its Latin sense, i.e. to *hold out*, to *stretch forward*. It may mean, however, as in other places, to *design*. Modern editors read—*portend*." STEEVENS.—(Can it be that "*pretend*" is used here as

equivalent to *portend*,—the original author of this play having found the word not unfrequently so employed by earlier writers? See my note on Skelton's *Works*, vol. II, 286.)

P. 54. (37) "An if I wist he did,—" &c.

The folio has "And if I wish he did," &c.

P. 55. (46) "But that it doth presage some ill event."

Rowe printed "*But that he doth*," &c.—Malone understands the old text to mean—"But that it doth presage to him that sees this discord, &c. that some ill event will happen."

P. 59. (69)

"Whither, my lord! from bought and sold Lord Talbot," &c.

Hanmer printed, "Hither, my lord; from bought," &c.; and, as Capell remarks, "the folio punctuation favours his reading, for the interrogation [or exclamation] belongs to the moderns," but, he continues, "is not an implied answer, in this case, better than a direct one? Haste and warmth are expressed by it; and we readily infer from its spirit,—Is't possible, you can ask? to you, to be sure."

P. 59. (69) "To beat assailing death from his weak legions."

The folio has "— his weake Regions."

P. 59. (61) "Orleans the Bastard, Charles, Burgundy," &c.

Mr. Collier prints "— Charles, and Burgundy," &c. and observes, "the conjunction is from the folio, 1632, and the line can scarcely be read metrically without it." But see S. Walker's *Shakespeare's Versification*, &c. p. 15.

P. 59. (69) "And York as fast upon your grace exclaims;  
Sweating that you withhold his leuied horse,  
Collected for this expedition."

The folio has "— withhold his leuied Hoast," &c.—Here Hanmer altered "Hoast" to "horse," and a more certain emendation was never made, though Malone and the succeeding editors neglect even to mention it!—Compare not only the next speech,—"York lies; he might have sent and had the horse,"—but also York's speeches at p. 57,—

"A plague upon that villin Somerset,  
That thus delays my promised supply  
Of horsemen, that were leuied for this siege!"

"O God, that Somerset,—who in proud heart  
Doth stop my cornets," &c.

P. 60. (11) "*But, if I bow, they'll say it was for fear*"

Mr. Collier, Mr. Corriector reads, "*But, if I fly, they'll say,*" &c., in utter disregard of the *dictus litterarum*; while Mr. Singer's Mr. Corriector (*Shakespeare Variorum*, &c. p. 113) substitutes "*But if I flew, they'd say,*" &c.,—making young Talbot a bird—I cannot see why the old text should be disturbed "*bow,*" i. e. bend,—give way.

P. 63. (41) "*Triumphant death, smear'd with captivity,  
Young Talbot's valour makes me smile at thee*"

Mr. W. N. Lettson informs me that the late Mr. Sydney Walker has noted on this passage,—"Can any good sense be made out of '*smear'd with captivity*'?"—I was once strongly inclined to consider "*smear'd*" as a misprint: but I now believe that it is really the author's word. See Johnson and Malone *ad l.*

P. 64. (65) "*Lucey, Herald,  
Conduct me to the Dauphin's tent, to know  
Who hath obtain'd the glory of the day.*"

"Lucey's message implied that he knew who had obtained the victory: therefore Sir T. Hamner reads,

'Herald, conduct me to the Dauphin's tent,  
Who hath,' &c" JOHNSON.

P. 65. (69) "*But tell me when thou seest'st.  
Lucey, But where's the great Alcides of the field,*" &c.

Rowe printed "*Lucey. Where is the great Alcides,*" &c.; and Malone, who adopts his alteration, observes that "the compositor probably caught the word *but* from the preceding line." Perhaps so: but may we not suspect, from the incomplete measure, that there is some omission?

P. 65. (67) "*Great Marshal to Henry the sixth,*" &c.

Here the more recent editors alter "*marshal*" to "*mareshal*," for the sake of the metre, which, however, remains imperfect, to the eye at least, even with that alteration.—Both "*marshal*" and "*Henry*" are to be read (not written) as trisyllables. (The editor of the second folio printed

"*Great Marshall to our King Henry the sixth,*" &c.)

P. 65. (61) "*have 'em,*" &c.

The folio has "*have him,*" &c.

P. 65. (72) "*But from then ashes shall be rear'd,*" &c.  
Pope printed,

"But from their ashes, Dauphin, shall be rear'd," &c.

Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector reads "—— their very ashes shall," &c.

P. 65. (70)

"So we be rid of them, do with 'em what thou wilt,"

The folio has "—— do with him," &c.—This line has been variously altered, —one editor omitting "of them," another throwing out "with 'em."

P. 66 (71) "And surer bind this knot of amity,

The Earl of Armagnac,—near kin to Charles," &c.

So Pope (and Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector).—The folio has "—— neere knit to Charles," &c., a mistake evidently occasioned by the word "knot" just above. (Compare, at p. 80,

"And so the Earl of Armagnac may do,  
Because he is near kinsman unto Charles.")

P. 69. (72)

"Now, ye familiar spirits, that are cull'd  
Out of the powerful legions under earth," &c.

The folio has "Out of the powerfull Regions under earth," &c.:—and Steevens informs us that "'the regions under earth' are 'the infernal regions;'" but, as he has not told us what are "the powerful regions under earth," and how fiends can be said to be "cull'd out of regions," he, in fact, has offered nothing in support of the old text. Nor is it to be defended by a line in *Cymbeline*, act v. sc. 4, where Jupiter addresses the Ghosts,—

"No more, you petty spirits of region low," &c.—

Warburton saw that the true reading here was "powerful legions,"—Malone observes; "In a former passage [of the present play] 'regions' seems to have been printed instead of 'legions;' at least all the editors from the time of Mr. Rowe have there substituted the latter word instead of the former." [See p. 59,—the folio having,—

"To bente assaying death from his weake Regions,"

which is indubitably a mistake for "—— his weak legions."] "The word 'cull'd,' and the epithet 'powerful,' which is applicable to the fiends themselves, but not to their place of residence, show that it has an equal title to a place in the text here. So in *The Tempest*, [act iii. sc. 3],

"But one fiend at a time,

I'll fight their legions o'er"

Malone might also have cited from *Macbeth*, act iv. sc. 3,

"Not in the legions

Of horrid hell can come a devil more damn'd," &c.:—

Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector lets the corruption, "powerful regions," stand; but alters "—— that are cull'd," &c., to "—— that are call'd," &c., though

the third line of this speech might have shown him that his alteration was quite wrong,—

“And yet choice spirits that admonish me,” &c.

P. 69. (71) “ [L. Incelle and York fight hand to hand.] ”

The folio has, “*Burgundie and Yorke fight hand to hand.*”

P. 70. (71) “*And lay them gently on thy tender side.  
I kiss these fingers for eternal peace*”

In the folio these two lines are by mistake transposed. Capell first arranged them rightly.

P. 70. (75) “*Keeping them prisoners underneath her wings,*”

The folio has “*— prisoner underneath his wings.*”

P. 70. (75)

.	.	.	.	<i>let her pass,</i>
.	.	.	.	<i>says no.</i>
.	.	.	.	<i>streams,</i>
.	.	.	.	<i>beam,” &amp;c.</i>

In the first line Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector substitutes “go” for “*pass*,” nor can we well doubt that such was the original author's reading, as also, in the third line, “*stream.*” but is it not equally certain that here, as occasionally elsewhere, the rhymes were purposely done away with when the play underwent those alterations (perhaps by Shakespeare) with which it is exhibited in the folio? (Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector is not always fortunate in restoring a rhyme at p. 72, where the common lection is,—

“For princes should be free.

*Suf.*

And so shall you,

If happy England's royal king be free.

*Mar.* Why, what concerns his freedom unto me?”

he makes Suffolk say “If happy England's royal king be *true*,”—without any regard to what immediately follows.)

P. 70. (77) “*is she not here thy prisoner?*”

The words “*thy prisoner*” were added in the second folio.

P. 71. (78) “*Alas, beauty's princely majesty is such,  
Confounds the tongue, and makes the senses rough.*”

A perplexing passage!—Hammer reads, “*— and makes the senses crouch,*”—which at least affords a good meaning, and suits the context (compare a modern poet,

“how every sense

*Bowes to your beauties,” &c.*

Byron's *Island*, c. ii.).—

Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector substitutes “*— and mocks the sense of touch,*”

—which is bad enough, while Mr. Singer's Ms. Corrector (*Shakespeare Vindicated*, &c. p. 145) gives "—— and wakes the sense's touch,"—which is little, if at all, better.

P. 71. (79) "at random."

Here the folio has "*at random*" (a not unusual form with early writers), but in *The Two Gent. of Verona*, act ii. sc. 1, it has "I writ at *randome*,"

P. 72. (80) "If thou wilt condescend to be my—"

"I have little doubt that the words *be my* are an interpolation" STEEVENS

P. 73. (81) "the county Maine and Angou."

The folio has "*the Country Maine*," &c. Qy. "*the counties, Maine*," &c.? compare in the next speech, "*those two counties*," &c.

P. 74. (82) "And natural graces," &c

So Mason.—The folio has "*Mad naturall Graces*," &c.

P. 76. (83) "No, misconceiv'd I"

"i.e. No, ye misconceivers, ye who mistake me and my qualities." STEEVENS. Mr. Collier, like some of the earlier editors, prints, "No, misconceiv'd Joan," &c.—wrongly (and against the punctuation of the folio, which is "No misconceyued, Ione," &c.).

P. 78. (84) "Speak, Winchester; for boiling choler chokes  
The hollow passage of my prison'd voice,  
By sight of these our baleful enemies."

The folio has "—— of my poyson'd voyce,"—which, says Johnson, "agrees well enough with *baleful enemies*, or with *baleful*, if it can be used in the same sense. The modern editors read *prison'd voice*:" and, in consequence of Johnson's note, Malone, Mr. Collier, and Mr. Knight accept "*poison'd voice*" as the genuine reading! (I almost wonder that in *Love's Labour's lost*, act iv. sc. 3, they did not print with the old copies,—

"Why, vnnuersall plodding poysons vp  
The nimble spirits in the arteries," &c.)

P. 80. (85) "Yes, my lord," &c.

The second folio has "*Yes, my good lord*," &c.

P. 80. (86) "warrant a blerial dower."

The second folio omits "*a*."

P. 81. (87) "It most of all," &c.

Here Rowe added "It."



THE SECOND PART OF  
KING HENRY THE SIXTH.



## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

---

KING HENRY the Sixth.

HUMPHREY, Duke of Gloster, his uncle.

CARDINAL BEAUFORT, Bishop of Winchester, great-uncle to the King.

RICHARD PLANTAGENET, Duke of York.

EDWARD and RICHARD, his sons.

DUKE OF SOMERSET.

DUKE OF SUFFOLK.

DUKE OF BUCKINGHAM.

LORD CLIFFORD.

YOUNG CLIFFORD, his son.

CARL OF SALISBURY.

CARL OF WARWICK.

LORD SCALPS, governor of the Tower.

LORD SAY.

SIR HUMPHREY STAFFORD, and WILLIAM STAFFORD, his brother.

SIR JOHN SEANLEY.

A Sea-captain, Master, and Master's-Mate, and WALTER WHITMORE.

Two Gentlemen, prisoners with Suffolk.

VAUX.

HUME and SOMERVELL, two priests.

IAN INDOCKY, a conjurer.

THOMAS HOENSTON, an armorer. PETER, his man.

Clerk of Chatham. Mayor of Saint Alban's.

SIMPEOX, an impostor. Two Murderers.

JACK CADE, a rebel.

GEORGE, JOHN, DICK, SMITH the weaver, MICHAEL, &c, his followers.

ALEXANDER IDEN, a Kentish gentleman.

MARGARET, Queen to King Henry.

ELIZABETH, Duchess of Gloster.

MARGARET JOLDFATN, a witch.

Wife to Simpeox.

Lords, Ladies, and Attendants, Petitioners, Aldermen, a Herald, a Beadle,  
Sheriff, and Officers, Citizens, Apprentices, Falconers, Guards, Soldiers, Mes-  
senger, &c.

A Spirit.

SCENE—In various parts of England.

THE SECOND PART OF  
KING HENRY VI.

---

ACT I.

SCENE I. *London. A room of state in the palace.*

*Flourish of trumpets: then hautboys Enter, on one side, King HENRY, Duke of GLOSTER, SALISBURY, WARWICK, and Cardinal BEAUFORT; on the other, Queen MARGARET, led in by SUFFOLK, YORK, SOMERSET, BUCKINGHAM, and others, following.*

*Suf.* As by your high imperial majesty  
I had in charge at my depart for France,  
As procurator to your excellence,  
To marry Princess Margaret for your grace;  
So, in the famous ancient city Tours,  
In presence of the Kings of France and Sicil,  
The Dukes of Orleans, Calaber, Bretagne, and Alençon,<sup>(1)</sup>  
Seven earls, twelve barons, and twenty reverend bishops,  
I have perform'd my task, and was espous'd:  
And humbly now, upon my bended knee,  
In sight of England and her lordly peers,  
Deliver up my title in the queen  
To your most gracious hands, that are the substance  
Of that great shadow I did represent;  
The happiest gift that ever marquess gave,  
The fairest queen that ever king receiv'd.

*K. Hen.* Suffolk, arise.—Welcome, Queen Margaret:  
I can express no kinder sign of love  
Than this kind kiss.—O Lord, that lends me life,  
Lend me a heart replete with thankfulness!  
For thou hast given me, in this beauteous face,

A world of earthly blessings to my soul,  
If sympathy of love unite our thoughts.

*Q. Mar.* Great King of England, and my gracious lord,—  
The mutual conference that my mind hath had,  
By day, by night, waking and in my dreams,  
In courtly company or at my beads,  
With you, mine alder-liest sovereign,  
Makes me the bolder to salute my king  
With ruder terms, such as my wit affords  
And over-joy of heart doth minister.

*K. Hen.* Her sight did ravish; but her grace in speech,  
Her words y-clad with wisdom's majesty,  
Makes me from wondering fall to weeping joys;  
Such is the fulness of my heart's content.—  
Lords, with one cheerful voice welcome my love.

*All [kneeling].* Long live Queen Margaret, England's  
happiness!

*Q. Mar.* We thank you all. *[Flourish.]*

*Suff.* My lord protector, so it please your grace,  
Here are the articles of contracted peace  
Between our sovereign and the French king Charles,  
For eighteen months concluded by consent.

*Glo. [reads]* "Imprimis, It is agreed between the French  
king Charles, and William de la Poole, Marquess of Suffolk, am-  
bassador for Henry King of England,—that the said Henry shall  
espouse the Lady Margaret, daughter unto Reignier King of Naples,  
Sicilia, and Jerusalem, and crown her Queen of England ere the  
thirtieth of May next ensuing Item,<sup>(2)</sup> that the duchy of Anjou and  
the county of Maine shall be released and delivered to the king her  
father"—

*K. Hen.* Uncle, how now!

*Glo.* Pardon me, gracious lord;  
Some sudden qualm hath struck me at the heart,  
And dimm'd mine eyes, that I can read no further.

*K. Hen.* Uncle of Winchester, I pray, read on.

*Cur. [reads]* "Item, It is further agreed between them, that the  
duchies of Anjou and Maine shall be released and delivered over to  
the king her father; and she sent over of the King of England's own  
proper cost and charges, without having any dowry."

*K. Hen.* They please us well.—Lord marquess, kneel down :

We here create thee the first Duke of Suffolk,  
And girt thee with the sword.—Cousin of York,  
We here discharge your grace from being regent  
O' the parts of France, till term of eighteen months  
Be full expir'd.—Thanks, uncle Winchester,  
Gloster, York, Buckingham, Somerset,  
Salisbury, and Warwick ;  
We thank you all for this great favour done,  
In entertainment to my princely queen.  
Come, let us in ; and with all speed provide  
To see her coronation be perform'd.

[*Exeunt King, Queen, and Suffolk.*]

*Glo.* Brave peers of England, pillars of the state,  
To you Duke Humphrey must unload his grief,—  
Your grief, the common grief of all the land.  
What ! did my brother Henry spend his youth,  
His valour, coin, and people, in the wars ?  
Did he so often lodge in open field,  
In winter's cold and summer's parching heat,  
To conquer France, his true inheritance ?  
And did my brother Bedford toil his wits,  
To keep by policy what Henry got ?  
Have you yourselves, Somerset, Buckingham,  
Brave York, Salisbury, and victorious Warwick,  
Receiv'd deep scars in France and Normandy ?  
Or hath mine uncle Beaufort and myself,  
With all the learn'd council of the realm,  
Studied so long, sat in the council-house  
Early and late, debating to and fro  
How France and Frenchmen might be kept in awe ?  
And hath his highness in his infancy  
Been<sup>(3)</sup> crown'd in Paris, in despite of foes ?  
And shall these labours and these honours die ?  
Shall Henry's conquest, Bedford's vigilance,  
Your deeds of war, and all our counsel die ?  
O peers of England, shameful is this league !  
Fatal this marriage ! cancelling your fame,

Blotting your names from books of memory,  
 Razing the characters of your renown,  
 Defacing monuments of conquer'd France,  
 Undoing all, as all had never been !

*Car.* Nephew, what means this passionate discourse,  
 This peroration with such circumstance ?  
 For France, 'tis ours ; and we will keep it still.

*Glo.* Ay, uncle, we will keep it, if we can ;  
 But now it is impossible we should :  
 Suffolk, the new-made duke that rules the roast,  
 Hath given the duchy<sup>(1)</sup> of Anjou and Maine  
 Unto the poor King Reignier, whose large style  
 Agrees not with the leanness of his purse.

*Sal.* Now, by the death of Him that died for all,  
 These counties were the keys of Normandy :—  
 But wherefore weeps Warwick, my valiant son ?

*War.* For grief that they are past recovery :  
 For, were there hope to conquer them again,  
 My sword should shed hot blood, mine eyes no tears.  
 Anjou and Maine ! myself did win them both ;  
 Those provinces these arms of mine did conquer :  
 And are the cities, that I got with wounds,  
 Deliver'd up again with peaceful words ?  
*Mort Dieu !*

*York.* For Suffolk's duke, may he be suffocate,  
 That dims the honour of this wailike isle !  
 France should have torn and rent my very heart,  
 Before I would have yielded to this league.  
 I never read but England's kings have had  
 Large sums of gold and dowries with their wives ;  
 And our King Henry gives away his own,  
 To match with her that brings no vantages.

*Glo.* A proper jest, and never heard before,  
 That Suffolk should demand a whole fifteenth  
 For costs and charges in transporting her !  
 She should have stay'd in France, and starv'd in France,  
 Before—

*Car.* My Lord of Gloster, now ye grow too hot :  
 It was the pleasure of my lord the king.

*Glo.* My Lord of Winchester, I know your mind;  
'Tis not my speeches that you do mislike,  
But 'tis my presence that doth trouble ye.  
Rancour will out: proud prelate, in thy face  
I see thy fury: if I longer stay,  
We shall begin our ancient bickerings.—  
Lordings, farewell; and say, when I am gone,  
I prophesied France will be lost ere long. [Exit.

*Car.* So, there goes our protector in a rage.  
'Tis known to you he is mine enemy;  
Nay, more, an enemy unto you all;  
And no great friend, I fear me, to the king.  
Consider, lords, he is the next of blood,  
And heir-apparent to the English crown:  
Had Henry got an empire by his marriage,  
And all the wealthy kingdoms of the west,  
There's reason he should be displeas'd at it.  
Look to it, lords; let not his smoothing words  
Bewitch your hearts; be wise and circumspect.  
What though the common people favour him,  
Calling him "Humphrey, the good Duke of Gloster;"  
Clapping their hands, and crying with loud voice,  
"Jesu maintain your royal excellence!"  
With "God preserve the good Duke Humphrey!"  
I fear me, lords, for all this flattering gloss,  
He will be found a dangerous protector.

*Buck.* Why should he, then, protect our sovereign,  
He being of age to govern of himself?—  
Cousin of Somerset, join you with me,  
And all together, with the Duke of Suffolk,  
We'll quickly hoise Duke Humphrey from his seat.

*Car.* This weighty business will not brook delay;  
I'll to the Duke of Suffolk presently. [Exit.

*Som.* Cousin of Buckingham, though Humphrey's pride  
And greatness of his place be grief to us,  
Yet let us watch the haughty cardinal:  
His insolence is more intolerable  
Than all the princes in the land beside:  
If Gloster be displac'd, he'll be protector.

*Buck.* Or thou or I, Somerset, will be protector,<sup>(5)</sup>  
 Despite Duke Humphrey or the cardinal.

[*Exeunt Buckingham and Somerset.*]

*Sal.* Pride went before, ambition follows him.  
 While these do labour for their own preferment,  
 Behoves it us to labour for the realm.  
 I never saw but Humphrey Duke of Gloster  
 Did bear him like a noble gentleman.  
 Oft have I seen the haughty cardinal,—  
 More like a soldier than a man o' the church,  
 As stout and proud as he were lord of all,—  
 Swear like a ruffian, and demean himself  
 Unlike the ruler of a commonweal.—  
 Warwick, my son, the comfort of my age!  
 Thy deeds, thy plainness, and thy housekeeping,  
 Hath won the greatest favour of the commons,  
 Excepting none but good Duke Humphrey:—  
 And, brother York, thy acts in Ireland,  
 In bringing them to civil discipline;  
 Thy late exploits done in the heart of France,  
 When thou wert regent for our sovereign,  
 Have made thee fear'd and honour'd of the people:—  
 Join we together, for the public good,  
 In what we can, to bridle and suppress  
 The pride of Suffolk and the cardinal,  
 With Somerset's and Buckingham's ambition;  
 And, as we may, cherish Duke Humphrey's deeds,  
 While they do tend the profit of the land.

*War.* So God help Warwick, as he loves the land,  
 And common profit of his country!

*York.* And so says York, for he hath greatest cause.

*Sal.* Then let's make haste away, and look unto the  
 main.<sup>(6)</sup>

*War.* Unto the main! O father, Maine is lost,—  
 That Maine which by main force Warwick did win,  
 And would have kept so long as breath did last!  
 Main chance, father, you meant; but I meant Maine,—  
 Which I will win from France, or else be slain.

[*Exeunt Warwick and Salisbury.*]

York. Anjou and Maine are given to the French;  
Paris is lost; the state of Normandy  
Stands on a tickle point, now they are gone:  
Suffolk concluded on the articles;  
The peers agreed; and Henry was well pleas'd  
To change two dukedoms for a duke's fair daughter.  
I cannot blame them all: what is't to them?  
'Tis thine they give away, and not their own.  
Pirates may make cheap pennyworths of their pillage,  
And purchase friends, and give to courtizans,  
Still revelling, like lords, till all be gone;  
While as the silly owner of the goods  
Weeps over them, and wrings his hapless hands,  
And shakes his head, and trembling stands aloof,  
While all is shai'd, and all is borne away,  
Ready to starve, and dare not touch his own:  
So York must sit, and fret, and bite his tongue,  
While his own lands are bargain'd for and sold.  
Methinks the realms of England, France, and Ireland  
Bear that proportion to my flesh and blood  
As did the fatal brand Althæa burn'd  
Unto the prince's heart of Calydon.  
Anjou and Maine, both given unto the French!  
Cold news for me; for I had hope of France,  
Even as I have of fertile England's soil.  
A day will come when York shall claim his own;  
And therefore I will take the Nevils' parts,  
And make a show of love to proud Duke Humphrey,  
And, when I spy advantage, claim the crown,  
For that's the golden mark I seek to hit:  
Nor shall proud Lancaster usurp my right,  
Nor hold the sceptre in his childish fist,  
Nor wear the diadem upon his head,  
Whose church-like humours fit not for a crown.  
Then, York, be still awhile, till time do serve:  
Watch thou and wake, when others be asleep,  
To pry into the secrets of the state;  
Till Henry, surfeiting in joys of love,  
With his new bride and England's dear-bought queen,



And Humphrey with the pees be fall'n at jars :  
Then will I raise aloft the milk-white rose,  
With whose sweet smell the air shall be perfum'd ;  
And in my standard bear the arms of York,  
To grapple with the house of Lancaster ;  
And, force perforce, I'll make him yield the crown,  
Whose bookish rule hath pull'd fair England down. [Exit.]

- - - -

SCENE II. *The same. A room in the Duke of GLOSTER's house.*

*Enter GLOSTER and the Duchess.*

*Duch.* Why droops my lord, like over-ripen'd corn,  
Hanging the head at Ceres' plenteous load ?  
Why doth the great Duke Humphrey knit his brows,  
As frowning at the favours of the world ?  
Why are thine eyes fix'd to the sullen earth,  
Gazing on that which seems to dim thy sight ?  
What seest thou there ? King Henry's diadem,  
Enchas'd with all the honours of the world ?  
If so, gaze on, and grovel on thy face,  
Until thy head be circled with the same.  
Put forth thy hand, reach at the glorious gold :—  
What, is't too short ? I'll lengthen it with mine ;  
And, having both together heav'd it up,  
We'll both together lift our heads to heaven ;  
And never more abase our sight so low  
As to vouchsafe one glance unto the ground.

*Glo.* O Nell, sweet Nell, if thou dost love thy lord,  
Banish the canker of ambitious thoughts !  
And may that thought, when I imagine ill  
Against my king and nephew, virtuous Henry,  
Be my last breathing in this mortal world !  
My troublous dream<sup>(7)</sup> this night doth make me sad.

*Duch.* What dream'd my lord ? tell me, and I'll requite it  
With sweet rehearsal of my morning's dream.

*Glo.* Methought this staff, mine office-badge in court,

Was broke in twain ; by whom I have forgot,  
But, as I think, it was by the cardinal ;  
And on the pieces of the broken wand  
Were plac'd the heads of Edmund Duke of Somerset,  
And William de la Poole, first Duke of Suffolk.  
This was my dream : what it doth bode, God knows.

*Duch.* Tut, this was nothing but an argument  
That he that breaks a stick of Gloster's grove  
Shall lose his head for his presumption.  
But list to me, my Humphrey, my sweet duke :  
Methought I sat in seat of majesty  
In the cathedral church of Westminster,  
And in that chair where kings and queens are<sup>(s)</sup> crown'd ;  
Where Henry and Dame Margaret kneel'd to me,  
And on my head did set the diadem.

*Glo.* Nay, Eleanor, then must I chide outright :  
Presumptuous dame, ill-nurtur'd Eleanor !  
Art thou not second woman in the realm,  
And the protector's wife, belov'd of him ?  
Hast thou not worldly pleasure at command,  
Above the reach or compass of thy thought ?  
And wilt thou still be hammering treachery,  
To tumble down thy husband and thyself  
From top of honour to disgrace's feet ?  
Away from me, and let me hear no more !

*Duch.* What, what, my lord ! are you so choleric  
With Eleanor, for telling but her dream ?  
Next time I'll keep my dreams unto myself,  
And not be check'd.

*Glo.* Nay, be not angry, I am pleas'd again.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* My lord protector, 'tis his highness' pleasure  
You do prepare to ride unto Saint Alban's,  
Whereas the king and queen do mean to hawk.

*Glo.* I go.—Come, Nell,—thou wilt ride with us ?

*Duch.* Yes, my good lord, I'll follow presently.

*[Exeunt Gloster and Messenger.]*

Follow I must ; I cannot go before,

While Gloster bears this base and humble mind.  
 Were I a man, a duke, and next of blood,  
 I would remove these tedious stumbling-blocks,  
 And smooth my way upon their headless necks:  
 And, being a woman, I will not be slack  
 To play my part in Fortune's pageant.—  
 Where are you there, Sir John? nay, fear not, man,  
 We are alone; here's none but thee and I.

*Enter HUME.*

*Hume.* Jesus preserve your royal majesty!

*Duch.* What say'st thou? majesty! I am but grace.

*Hume.* But, by the grace of God, and Hume's advice,  
 Your grace's title shall be multiplied.

*Duch.* What say'st thou, man? hast thou as yet conferr'd  
 With Margery Jourdain, the cunning witch,  
 With Roger Bolingbroke, the conjurer?  
 And will they undertake to do me good?

*Hume.* This they have promis'd,—to show your highness  
 A spirit rais'd from depth of under-ground,  
 That shall make answer to such questions  
 As by your grace shall be propounded him.

*Duch.* It is enough; I'll think upon the questions:  
 When from Saint Alban's we do make return,  
 We'll see these things effected to the full.  
 Here, Hume, take this reward; make merry, man,  
 With thy confederates in this weighty cause. *[Exit.]*

*Hume.* Hume must make merry with the duchess' gold;  
 Marry, and shall. But, how now, Sir John Hume!  
 Seal up your lips, and give no words but num:  
 The business asketh silent secrecy.  
 Dame Eleanor gives gold to bring the witch:  
 Gold cannot come amiss, were she a devil.  
 Yet have I gold flies from another coast:—  
 I dare not say, from the rich cardinal,  
 And from the great and new-made Duke of Suffolk;  
 Yet I do find it so: for, to be plain,  
 They, knowing Dame Eleanor's aspiring humour,  
 Have lin'd me to undermine the duchess,

And buzz these conjurations in her brain.  
 They say,—A crafty knave does need no broker;  
 Yet am I Suffolk and the cardinal's broker.  
 Hume, if you take not heed, you shall go near  
 To call them both a pair of crafty knaves.  
 Well, so it stands; and thus, I fear, at last  
 Hume's knavery will be the duchess' wreck,  
 And her attainure will be Humphrey's fall:  
 Sort how it will, I shall have gold for all. [*Exit.*

SCENE III. *The same. A room in the palace.*

*Enter PETER, and other Petitioners.*

*First Petit.* My masters, let's stand close: my lord protector will come this way by and by, and then we may deliver our supplications in the quill.<sup>(9)</sup>

*Sec. Petit.* Marry, the Lord protect him, for he's a good man! Jesu bless him!

*First Petit.* Here 'a comes, methinks, and the queen with him. I'll be the first, sure.

*Enter SUFFOLK and Queen MARGARET.*

*Sec. Petit.* Come back, fool; this is the Duke of Suffolk, and not my lord protector.

*Suf.* How now, fellow! wouldst any thing with me?

*First Petit.* I pray, my lord, pardon me; I took ye for my lord protector.

*Q. Mar.* [*glancing at the superscriptions*] "To<sup>(10)</sup> my Lord Protector!" Are your supplications to his lordship? Let me see them:—what is thine?

*First Petit.* Mine is, an't please your grace, against John Goodman, my lord cardinal's man, for keeping my house, and lands, and wife and all, from me.

*Suf.* Thy wife too! that's some wrong, indeed.—What's yours?—What's here! [*Reads*] "Against the Duke of Suffolk, for enclosing the commons of Melford."—How now, sir knave!

*Sec. Petit.* Alas, sir, I am but a poor petitioner of our whole township.

*Peter* [*presenting his petition*]. Against my master, Thomas Horner, for saying that the Duke of York was rightful heir to the crown.

*Q. Mar.* What say'st thou? did the Duke of York say he was rightful heir to the crown?

*Peter.* That my master<sup>(11)</sup> was? no, forsooth: my master said that he was; and that the king was an usurper.

*Suf.* Who is there? [*Enter Servants.*]—Take this fellow in, and send for his master with a pursuivant presently:—we'll hear more of your matter before the king.

[*Exeunt Servants with Peter.*]

*Q. Mar.* And as for you, that love to be protected Under the wings of our protector's grace, Begin your suits anew, and sue to him.

[*Tears the petitions.*]

Away, base cullions!—Suffolk, let them go.

*All.* Come, let's be gone. [*Exeunt Petitioners.*]

*Q. Mar.* My Lord of Suffolk, say, is this the guise, Is this the fashion<sup>(12)</sup> in the court of England?

Is this the government of Britain's isle,

And this the royalty of Albion's king?

What, shall King Henry be a pupil still,

Under the sully Gloster's governance?

Am I a queen in title and in style,

And must be made a subject to a duke?

I tell thee, Poole, when in the city Tours

Thou rann'st a tilt in honour of my love,

And stol'st away the ladies' hearts of France,

I thought King Henry had resembled thee

In courage, courtship, and proportion:

But all his mind is bent to holiness,

To number *Ave-Maries* on his beads:

His champions are, the prophets and apostles;

His weapons, holy saws of sacred writ;

His study is his tilt-yard, and his loves

Are brazen images of canoniz'd saints,

I would the college of the cardinals

Would choose him pope, and carry him to Rome,  
And set the triple crown upon his head :—  
That were a state fit for his holiness.

*Suf.* Madam, be patient : as I was cause  
Your highness came to England, so will I  
In England work your grace's full content.

*Q. Mar.* Beside the haughty<sup>(13)</sup> protector, have we Beaufort  
The imperious churchman, Somerset, Buckingham,  
And grumbling York ; and not the least of these  
But can do more in England than the king.

*Suf.* And he of these that can do most of all  
Cannot do more in England than the Nevils :  
Salisbury and Warwick are no simple peers.

*Q. Mar.* Not all these lords do vex me half so much  
As that proud dame, the lord protector's wife.  
She sweeps it through the court with troops of ladies,  
More like an empress than Duke Humphrey's wife :  
Strangers in court do take her for the queen :  
She bears a duke's revenues on her back,  
And in her heart she scorns our poverty :  
Shall I not live to be aveng'd on her ?  
Contemptuous base-born callet as she is,  
She vaunted 'mongst her minions t'other day,  
The very train of her worst wearing-gown  
Was better worth than all my father's lands,  
Till Suffolk gave two dukedoms for his daughter.

*Suf.* Madam, myself have lim'd a bush for her,  
And plac'd a quire of such enticing birds,  
That she will light to listen to the lays,  
And never mount to trouble you again.  
So, let her rest : and, madam, list to me ;  
For I am bold to counsel you in this.  
Although we fancy not the cardinal,  
Yet must we join with him and with the lords,  
Till we have brought Duke Humphrey in disgrace.  
As for the Duke of York,— this late complaint  
Will make but little for his benefit.  
So, one by one, we'll weed them all at last,  
And you yourself shall steer the happy helm.

*Enter King HENRY, YORK, and SOMERSET, Duke and Duchess of GLOSTER, Cardinal BEAUFORT, BUCKINGHAM, SALISBURY, and WARWICK.*

*K. Hen.* For my part, noble lords, I care not which;  
Or Somerset or York, all's one to me.

*York.* If York have ill demean'd himself in France,  
Then let him be deny'd the regentship.

*Som.* If Somerset be unworthy of the place,  
Let York be regent; I will yield to him.

*War.* Whether your grace be worthy, yea or no,  
Dispute not that: York is the worthier.

*Car.* Ambitious Warwick, let thy betters speak.

*War.* The cardinal's not my better in the field.

*Buck.* All in this presence are thy betters, Warwick.

*War.* Warwick may live to be the best of all.

*Sal.* Peace, son!—and show some reason, Buckingham,  
Why Somerset should be prefer'd in this.

*Q. Mar.* Because the king, forsooth, will have it so.

*Glo.* Madam, the king is old enough himself  
To give his censure: these are no women's matters.

*Q. Mar.* If he be old enough, what needs your grace  
To be protector of his excellence?

*Glo.* Madam, I am protector of the realm;  
And, at his pleasure, will resign my place.

*Syf.* Resign it, then, and leave thine insolence.

Since thou wert king, (as who is king but thou?)

The commonwealth hath daily run to wreck;

The Dauphin hath prevail'd beyond the seas;

And all the peers and nobles of the realm

Have been as bondmen to thy sovereignty.

*Car.* The commons hast thou rack'd; the clergy's bags  
Are lank and lean with thy extortions.

*Som.* Thy sumptuous buildings, and thy wife's attire,  
Have cost a mass of public treasury.

*Buck.* Thy cruelty in execution  
Upon offenders hath exceeded law,  
And left thee to the mercy of the law.

*Q. Mar.* Thy sale of offices and towns in France,—

If they were known, as the suspect is great,—  
Would make thee quickly hop without thy head.

[*Exit Gloster. The Queen drops her fan.*

Give me my fan: what, minion! can ye not?

[*Gives the Duchess a box on the ear.*

I cry you mercy, madam; was it you?

*Duch.* Was't I! yea, I it was, proud Frenchwoman:

Could I come near your beauty with my nails,

I'd<sup>(14)</sup> set my ten commandments in your face.

*K. Hen.* Sweet aunt, be quiet; 'twas against her will.

*Duch.* Against her will! good king, look to't in time;

She'll hamper thee, and dandle thee like a baby:

Though in this place most master wear no breeches,

She shall not strike Dame Eleanor unreveng'd.

[*Exit.*

*Buck.* Lord cardinal, I will follow Eleanor,

And listen after Humphrey, how he proceeds:

She's tickled now; her fume needs<sup>(15)</sup> no spurs,

She'll gallop fast<sup>(16)</sup> enough to her destruction.

[*Exit.*

*Re-enter GLOSTER.*

*Glo.* Now, lords, my choler being over-blown

With walking once about the quadrangle,

I come to talk of commonwealth affairs.

As for your spiteful false objections,

Prove them, and I lie open to the law:

But God in mercy so deal with my soul,

As I in duty love my king and country!

But, to the matter that we have in hand:—

I say, my sovereign, York is meetest man

To be your regent in the realm of France.

*Suf.* Before we make election, give me leave

To show some reason, of no little force,

That York is most unmeet of any man.

*York.* I'll tell thee, Suffolk, why I am unmeet:

First, for I cannot flatter thee in pride;

Next, if I be appointed for the place,

My Lord of Somerset will keep me here,

Without discharge, money, or furniture,

Till France be won into the Dauphin's hands:



Last time, I danc'd attendance on his will  
'Till Paris was besieg'd, famish'd, and lost.

*War.* That can I witness; and a fouler fact  
Did never traitor in the land commit.

*Suf.* Peace, headstrong Warwick!

*War.* Image of pride, why should I hold my peace?

*Enter Servants of SUFFOLK, bringing in HORNER and PETER.*

*Suf.* Because here is a man accus'd of treason:

Pray God the Duke of York excuse himself!

*York.* Doth any one accuse York for a traitor?

*K. Hen.* What mean'st thou, Suffolk? tell me, what are  
these?

*Suf.* Please it your majesty, this is the man  
That doth accuse his master of high treason:  
His words were these,—that Richard Duke of York  
Was rightful heir unto the English crown,  
And that your majesty was an usurper.

*K. Hen.* Say, man, were these thy words?

*Hor.* An't shall please your majesty, I never said nor  
thought any such matter: God is my witness, I am falsely  
accused by the villain.

*Pet.* By these ten bones, my lords [*holding up his hands*],  
he did speak them to me in the garret one night, as we were  
scouring my Lord of York's armour.

*York.* Base dunghill villain and mechanical,  
I'll have thy head for this thy traitor's speech.—  
I do beseech your royal majesty,  
Let him have all the rigour of the law.

*Hor.* Alas, my lord, hang me, if ever I spake the words.  
My accuser is my prentice; and when I did correct him for  
his fault the other day, he did vow upon his knees he would  
be even with me: I have good witness of this; therefore I  
beseech your majesty, do not cast away an honest man for a  
villain's accusation.

*K. Hen.* Uncle, what shall we say to this in law?

*Glo.* This doom, my lord, if I may judge:  
Let Somerset be regent o'er the French,  
Because in York this breeds suspicion;

And let these have a day appointed them  
For single combat in convenient place,  
For he hath witness of his servant's malice :  
This is the law, and this Duke Humphrey's doom.

*K. Hen.* Then be it so.—My Lord of Somerset,  
We make your grace regent over the French.<sup>(17)</sup>

*Som.* I humbly thank your royal majesty.

*Hor.* And I accept the combat willingly.

*Pet.* Alas, my lord, I cannot fight; for God's sake, pity  
my case! the spite of man prevaieth against me. O Lord,  
have mercy upon me! I shall never be able to fight a blow :  
O Lord, my heart!

*Glo.* Sirrah, or you must fight, or else be hang'd.

*K. Hen.* Away with them to prison; and the day  
Of combat shall be the last of the next month.—  
Come, Somerset, we'll see thee sent away. [*Flourish. Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV. *The same. The Duke of GLOSTER's garden.*

*Enter MARGERY JOURDAIN, HUME, SOUTHWELL, and BOLING-  
BROKE.*

*Hume.* Come, my masters; the duchess, I tell you, ex-  
pects performance of your promises.

*Boling.* Master Hume, we are therefore provided; will  
her ladyship behold and hear our exorcisms?

*Hume.* Ay, what else? fear you not her courage.

*Boling.* I have heard her reported to be a woman of an  
invincible spirit: but it shall be convenient, Master Hume,  
that you be by her aloft, while we be busy below; and so, I  
pray you, go in God's name, and leave us. [*Exit Hume.*]  
Mother Jourdain, be you prostrate, and grovel on the earth;  
—John Southwell, read you;—and let us to our work.

*Enter Duchess above; and presently HUME.*

*Duch.* Well said, my masters; and welcome all. 'To this  
gear,—the sooner the better.

*Boling.* Patience, good lady; wizards know their times :  
Deep night, dark night, the silent of the night,

The time of night when Troy was set on fire;  
 The time when screech-owls cry, and ban-dogs howl,  
 And spirits walk, and ghosts break up their graves,—  
 That time best fits the work we have in hand.  
 Madam, sit you, and fear not: whom we raise,  
 We will make fast within a hallow'd verge.

*[Here they perform the ceremonies appertaining, and  
 make the circle; Bolingbroke or Southwell reads,  
 Conjuro te, &c. It thunders and lightens terri-  
 bly; then the Spirit riseth.]*

*Spir. Adsum.*

*M. Jourd. Asuath,*

By the eternal God, whose name and power  
 Thou tremblest at, answer that I shall ask;  
 For, till thou speak, thou shalt not pass from hence.

*Spir.* Ask what thou wilt:—that I had said and done!

*Boling.* "First of the king: what shall of him become?"

*[Reading out of a paper. (18)]*

*Spir.* The duke yet lives that Henry shall depose;  
 But him outlive, and die a violent death.

*[As the Spirit speaks, Southwell writes the answers.]*

*Boling.* "What fates await the Duke of Suffolk?"

*Spir.* By water shall he die, and take his end.

*Boling.* "What shall befall the Duke of Somerset?"

*Spir.* Let him shun castles;

Safer shall he be upon the sandy plains

Than where castles mounted stand.—

Have done, for more I hardly can endure,

*Boling.* Descend to darkness and the burning lake!

False fiend, avoid! *[Thunder and lightning. Spirit descends.]*

*Enter YORK and BUCKINGHAM, hastily, with their Guards and  
 others.*

*York.* Lay hands upon these traitors and their trash.—  
 Beldam, I think we watch'd you at an inch.—  
 What, madam, are you there? the king and commonweal  
 Are deeply indebted for this piece of pains:  
 My lord protector will, I doubt it not,  
 See you well guerdon'd for these good deserts.

*Duch.* Not half so bad as thine to England's king,  
Injurious duke, that threatest where's no cause.

*Buck.* True, madam, none at all:—what call you this?—  
[*Showing her the papers.*]

Away with them! let them be clapp'd up close,  
And kept asunder.—You, madam, shall with us.—  
Stafford, take her to thee.—

We'll see your trinkets here all forthcoming.—  
All,<sup>(19)</sup> away! [*Exeunt, above, Duchess and Hume, guarded.*  
*Exeunt, below, Southwell, Bolingbroke, &c., guarded.*]

*York.* Lord Buckingham, methinks, you watch'd her well:  
A pretty plot, well chosen to build upon!  
Now, pray, my lord, let's see the devil's writ.  
What have we here? [*Reads.*]

"The duke yet lives, that Henry shall depose;  
But him outlive, and die a violent death."

Why, this is just,  
*Aio te, Æacida, Romanos vincere posse.*

Well, to the rest:

"Tell me what fate awaits the Duke of Suffolk <sup>(20)</sup>  
By water shall he die, and take his end—  
What shall betide the Duke of Somerset?  
Let him shun castles;  
Safer shall he be upon the sandy plains  
Than where castles mounted stand."

Come, come, my lords;  
These oracles are hardly attain'd,  
And hardly understood.

The king is now in progress towards Saint Albans,  
With him the husband of this lovely lady:  
Thither go these news, as fast as horse can carry them,—  
A sorry breakfast for my lord protector.

*Buck.* Your grace shall give me leave, my Lord of York,  
To be the post, in hope of his reward.

*York.* At your pleasure, my good lord.—Who's within  
there, ho!

*Enter a Servant.*

Invite my Lords of Salisbury and Warwick  
To sup with me to-morrow night.—Away!

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

SCENE I. *Saint Albans.*

*Enter King HENRY, Queen MARGARET, GLOSTER, Cardinal,  
and SUFFOLK, with Falconers hollaing.*

*Q. Mar.* Believe me, lords, for flying at the brook,  
I saw not better sport these seven years' day :  
Yet, by your leave, the wind was very high ;  
And, ten to one, old Joan had not gone out.

*K. Hen.* But what a point, my lord, your falcon made,  
And what a pitch she flew above the rest !—  
To see how God in all his creatures works !  
Yea, man and birds are fain of climbing high.

*Suf.* No marvel, an it like your majesty,  
My lord protector's hawks do tower so well ;  
'They know their master loves to be aloft,  
And bears his thoughts above his falcon's pitch.

*Glo.* My lord, 'tis but a base ignoble mind  
That mounts no higher than a bird can soar.

*Car.* I thought as much ; he would be above the clouds.

*Glo.* Ay, my lord cardinal,—how think you by that ?  
Were it not good your grace could fly to heaven ?

*K. Hen.* The treasury of everlasting joy !

*Car.* Thy heaven is on earth ; thine eyes and thoughts  
Beat on a crown, the treasure of thy heart ;  
Pernicious protector, dangerous peer,  
That smooth'st it so with king and commonweal !

*Glo.* What, cardinal, is your priesthood grown peremp-  
tory ?

*Tantæne animis cœlestibus iræ ?*

Churchmen so hot ? good uncle, hide such malice ;  
With such holiness can you do it ?<sup>(21)</sup>

*Suf.* No malice, sir ; no more than well becomes  
So good a quarrel and so bad a peer.

*Glo.* As who, my lord ?

*Suf.* Why, as you, my lord,  
An't like your lordly lord-protectorship.

*Glo.* Why, Suffolk, England knows thine insolence.

*Q. Mar.* And thy ambition, Gloster.

*K. Hen.* I prithee, peace,  
Good queen, and whet not on these furious peers;  
For blessèd are the peacemakers on earth.

*Car.* Let me be blessèd for the peace I make,  
Against this proud protector, with my sword!

*Glo.* Faith, holy uncle, would 'twere come to that!

*Car.* Marry, when thou dar'st. [*Aside to Car.*

*Glo.* Make up no factious numbers for the matter;  
In thine own person answer thy abuse. [*Aside to Car.*

*Car.* Ay, where thou dar'st not peep: an if thou dar'st,  
This evening on the east side of the grove. [*Aside to Glo.*

*K. Hen.* How now, my lords!

*Car.* Believe me, cousin Gloster,  
Had not your man put up the fowl so suddenly,  
We had had more sport.—Come with thy two-hand sword.

[*Aside to Glo.*

*Glo.* True, uncle.<sup>(2)</sup>

*Car.* Are ye advis'd?—the east side of the grove?

[*Aside to Glo.*

*Glo.* Cardinal, I am with you. [*Aside to Car.*

*K. Hen.* Why, how now, uncle Gloster!

*Glo.* Talking of hawking; nothing else, my lord.—  
Now, by God's mother, priest, I'll shave your crown for this,  
Or all my fence shall fail. [*Aside to Car.*

*Car.* *Medice teipsum;*  
Protector, see to't well, protect yourself. [*Aside to Glo.*

*K. Hen.* The winds grow high; so do your stomachs, lords.  
How irksome is this music to my heart!  
When such strings jar, what hope of harmony?  
I pray, my lords, let me compound this strife.

*Enter a Townsman of Saint Albans, crying "A miracle!"*

*Glo.* What means this noise?

Fellow, what miracle dost thou proclaim?

*Towns.* A miracle! a miracle!

*Suf.* Come to the king, and tell him what miracle.

*Towns.* Forsooth, a blind man at Saint Alban's shrine,

Within this half-hour, hath receiv'd his sight;  
A man that ne'er saw in his life before.

*K. Hen.* Now, God be prais'd, that to believing souls  
Gives light in darkness, comfort in despair!

*Enter the Mayor of Saint Albans and his brethren; and SIMPCOX,  
borne between two persons in a chair, his Wife and a multitude  
following.*

*Car.* Here come the townsmen on procession,  
To present your highness with the man.

*K. Hen.* Great is his comfort in this earthly vale,  
Although by his sight his sin be multiplied.

*Glo.* Stand by, my masters:—bring him near the king;  
His highness' pleasure is to talk with him.

*K. Hen.* Good fellow, tell us here the circumstance,  
That we for thee may glorify the Lord.

What, hast thou been long blind, and now restor'd?

*Simp.* Born blind, an't please your grace.

*Wife.* Ay, indeed, was he.

*Suf.* What woman is this?

*Wife.* His wife, an't like your worship.

*Glo.* Hadst thou been his mother, thou couldst have bet-  
ter told.

*K. Hen.* Where wert thou born?

*Simp.* At Berwick in the north, an't like your grace.

*K. Hen.* Poor soul, God's goodness hath been great to thee:  
Let never day nor night unhallow'd pass,  
But still remember what the Lord hath done.

*Q. Mar.* Tell me, good fellow, cam'st thou here by chance,  
Or of devotion, to this holy shrine?

*Simp.* God knows, of pure devotion; being call'd  
A hundred times and oftener, in my sleep,  
By good Saint Alban; who said, "Simpcox,<sup>(23)</sup> come,—  
Come, offer at my shrine, and I will help thee."

*Wife.* Most true, forsooth; and many time and oft  
Myself have heard a voice to call him so.

*Car.* What, art thou lame?

*Simp.* Ay, God Almighty help me!

*Suf.* How cam'st thou so?

*Simp.* A fall off of a tree.

*Wife.* A plum-tree, master.

*Glo.* How long hast thou been blind?

*Simp.* O, born so, master.

*Glo.* What, and wouldst climb a tree?

*Simp.* But that in all my life, when I was a youth.

*Wife.* Too true; and bought his climbing very dear.

*Glo.* Mass, thou lov'dst plums well, that wouldst venture so.

*Simp.* Alas, good master, my wife desir'd some damsons,  
And made me climb, with danger of my life.

*Glo.* A subtle knave! but yet it shall not serve.—

Let me see thine eyes:—wink now;—now open them:—  
In my opinion yet thou see'st not well.

*Simp.* Yes, master, clear as day, I thank God and Saint Alban.

*Glo.* Say'st thou me so? What colour is this cloak of?

*Simp.* Red, master; red as blood.

*Glo.* Why, that's well said. What colour is my gown of?

*Simp.* Black, forsooth; coal-black as jet.

*K. Hen.* Why, then, thou know'st what colour jet is of?

*Suf.* And yet, I think, jet did he never see.

*Glo.* But cloaks and gowns, before this day, a many.

*Wife.* Never, before this day, in all his life.

*Glo.* Tell me, sirrah, what's my name?

*Simp.* Alas, master, I know not.

*Glo.* What's his name?

*Simp.* I know not.

*Glo.* Nor his?

*Simp.* No, indeed, master.

*Glo.* What's thine own name?

*Simp.* Saunder Simpcox, an if it please you, master.

*Glo.* Then, Saunder, sit there, the lyingest knave in Christendom. If thou hadst been born blind, thou mightst as well have known all our names as thus to name the several colours we do wear. Sight may distinguish of colours; but suddenly to nominate them all, it is impossible.—My lords, Saint Alban here hath done a miracle; and would ye not think his<sup>(24)</sup> cunning to be great, that could restore this cripple to his legs again?



*Simp.* O master, that you could!

*Glo.* My masters of Saint Albans, have you not beadles in your town, and things called whips?

*May.* Yes, my lord, if it please your grace.

*Glo.* Then send for one presently.

*May.* Sirrah, go fetch the beadle hither straight.

[*Exit an Attendant.*]

*Glo.* Now fetch me a stool hither by and by. [*A stool brought out.*] Now, sirrah, if you mean to save yourself from whipping, leap me over this stool and run away.

*Simp.* Alas, master, I am not able to stand alone:  
You go about to torture me in vain.

*Re-enter Attendant, with the Beadle.*

*Glo.* Well, sir, we must have you find your legs.—Sirrah beadle, whip him till he leap over that same stool.

*Bead.* I will, my lord.—Come on, sirrah; off with your doublet quickly.

*Simp.* Alas, master, what shall I do? I am not able to stand.

[*After the Beadle has hit him once, he leaps over the stool and runs away, and the people follow and cry, "A miracle!"*]

*K. Hen.* O God, seest thou this, and bear'st so long?

*Q. Mar.* It made me laugh to see the villain run.

*Glo.* Follow the knave; and take this drab away.

*Wife.* Alas, sir, we did it for pure need.

*Glo.* Let them be whipped through every market-town, till they come to Berwick, from whence they came.

[*Exeunt Mayor, Beadle, Wife, &c.*]

*Car.* Duke Humphrey has done a miracle to-day.

*Suf.* True; made the lame to leap and fly away.

*Glo.* But you have done more miracles than I;  
You made in a day, my lord, whole towns to fly.

*Enter BUCKINGHAM.*

*K. Hen.* What tidings with our cousin Buckingham?

*Buck.* Such as my heart doth tremble to unfold.

A sort of naughty persons, lewdly bent,—  
Under the countenance and confederacy

Of Lady Eleanor, the protector's wife,  
The ringleader and head of all this rout,—  
Have practis'd dangerously against your state,  
Dealing with witches and with conjurers :  
Whom we have apprehended in the fact ;  
Raising up wicked spirits from under ground,  
Demanding of King Henry's life and death,  
And other of your highness' privy-council,  
As more at large your grace shall understand.

*Car.* And so, my lord protector, by this means  
Your lady is forthcoming yet at London.  
This news, I think, hath turn'd your weapon's edge ;  
'Tis like, my lord, you will not keep your hour.

[*Aside to Gloster.*

*Glo.* Ambitious churchman, leave to afflict my heart :  
Sorrow and grief have vanquish'd all my powers ;  
And, vanquish'd as I am, I yield to thee,  
Or to the meanest groom.

*K. Hen.* O God, what mischiefs work the wicked ones,  
Heaping confusion on their own heads thereby !

*Q. Mar.* Gloster, see here the tainture of thy nest ;  
And look thyself be faultless, thou wert best.

*Glo.* Madam, for myself, to heaven I do appeal,  
How I have lov'd my king and commonweal :  
And, for my wife, I know not how it stands ;  
Sorry I am to hear what I have heard :  
Noble she is ; but if she have forgot  
Honour and virtue, and convers'd with such  
As, like to pitch, defile nobility,  
I banish her my bed and company,  
And give her, as a prey, to law and shame,  
That hath dishonour'd Gloster's honest name.

*K. Hen.* Well, for this night we will repose us here :  
To-morrow toward London back again,  
To look into this business thoroughly,  
And call these foul offenders to their answers ;  
And poise the cause in justice' equal scales,  
Whose beam stands sure, whose rightful cause prevails.

[*Flourish. Exeunt.*

SCENE II. *London. The Duke of York's garden.*

*Enter YORK, SALISBURY, and WARWICK.*

*York.* Now, my good Lords of Salisbury and Warwick,  
Our simple supper ended, give me leave,  
In this close walk, to satisfy myself,  
In craving your opinion of my title,  
Which is infallible, to England's crown.

*Sal.* My lord, I long to hear it at full.

*War.* Sweet York, begin : and if thy claim be good,  
The Nevils are thy subjects to command.

*York.* Then thus :—

Edward the Third, my lords, had seven sons :  
The first, Edward the Black Prince, Prince of Wales ;  
The second, William of Hatfield ; and the third,  
Lionel Duke of Clarence ; next to whom  
Was John of Gaunt, the Duke of Lancaster ;  
The fifth was Edmund Langley, Duke of York ;  
The sixth was Thomas of Woodstock, Duke of Gloster ;  
William of Windsor was the seventh and last.  
Edward the Black Prince died before his father ;  
And left behind him Richard, his only son,  
Who, after Edward the third's death, reign'd as king ;  
Till Henry Bolingbroke, Duke of Lancaster,  
The eldest son and heir of John of Gaunt,  
Crown'd by the name of Henry the fourth,  
Seized on the realm, depos'd the rightful king,  
Sent his poor queen to France, from whence she came,  
And him to Pomfret,—where, as all you know,  
Harmless Richard was murder'd traitorously.

*War.* Father, the duke hath told the truth ;  
Thus got the house of Lancaster the crown.

*York.* Which now they hold by force, and not by right ;  
For Richard, the first son's heir, being dead,  
The issue of the next son should have reign'd.

*Sal.* But William of Hatfield died without an heir.

*York.* The third son, Duke of Clarence (from whose line  
I claim the crown), had issue, Philippe, a daughter,

Who married Edmund Mortimer, Earl of March :  
Edmund had issue, Roger Earl of March ;  
Roger had issue, Edmund, Anne, and Eleanor.

*Sal.* This Edmund, in the reign of Bolingbroke,  
As I have read, laid claim unto the crown ;  
And, but for Owen Glendower, had been king,  
Who kept him in captivity till he died.  
But, to the rest.

*York.* His eldest sister, Anne,  
My mother, being heir unto the crown,  
Married Richard Earl of Cambridge ; who was son  
To Edmund Langley, Edward the third's fifth son.<sup>(25)</sup>  
By her I claim the kingdom : she was heir  
To Roger Earl of March ; who was the son  
Of Edmund Mortimer ; who married Philippe,  
Sole daughter unto Lionel Duke of Clarence :  
So, if the issue of the elder son  
Succeed before the younger, I am king.

*War.* What plain proceeding is<sup>(26)</sup> more plain than this ?  
Henry doth claim the crown from John of Gaunt,  
The fourth son ; York claims it from the third.  
Till Lionel's issue fails, his should not reign :  
It fails not yet, but flourishes in thee,  
And in thy sons, fair slips of such a stock.—  
Then, father Salisbury, kneel we together ;  
And, in this private plot, be we the first  
That shall salute our rightful sovereign  
With honour of his birthright to the crown.

*Both.* Long live our sovereign Richard, England's king !

*York.* We thank you, lords. But I am not your king  
Till I be crown'd, and that my sword be stain'd  
With heart-blood of the house of Lancaster ;  
And that's not suddenly to be perform'd,  
But with advice and silent secrecy.  
Do you as I do in these dangerous days :  
Wink at the Duke of Suffolk's insolence,  
At Beaufort's pride, at Somerset's ambition,  
At Buckingham, and all the crew of them,  
Till they have snar'd the shepherd of the flock,

That virtuous prince, the good Duke Humphrey :  
 'Tis that they seek ; and they, in seeking that,  
 Shall find their deaths, if York can prophesy.

*Sal.* My lord, break we off ; we know your mind at full.

*War.* My heart assures me that the Earl of Warwick  
 Shall one day make the Duke of York a king.

*York.* And, Nevil, this I do assure myself,—  
 Richard shall live to make the Earl of Warwick  
 The greatest man in England but the king. [Exeunt.]

SCENE III. *The same. A hall of justice.*

*Trumpets sounded. Enter King HENRY, Queen MARGARET, GLOSTER, YORK, SUFFOLK, and SALISBURY ; the Duchess of GLOSTER, MARGERY JOURDAIN, SOUTHWELL, HUME, and BOLINGBROKE, under guard.*

*K. Hen.* Stand forth, Dame Eleanor Cobham, Gloster's wife :

In sight of God and us, your guilt is great :  
 Receive the sentence of the law, for sins<sup>(27)</sup>  
 Such as by God's book are adjudg'd to death.—  
 You four, from hence to prison back again ; [*To Jourdain, &c.*  
 From thence unto the place of execution :  
 The witch in Smithfield shall be burn'd to ashes,  
 And you three shall be strangled on the gallows.—  
 You, madam, for you are more nobly born,  
 Despoil'd of your honour in your life,  
 Shall, after three days' open penance done,  
 Live in your country here, in banishment,  
 With Sir John Stanley, in the Isle of Man.

*Duch.* Welcome is banishment ; welcome were my death.

*Glo.* Eleanor, the law, thou seest, hath judg'd thee :  
 I cannot justify whom the law condemns.—

[Exeunt the Duchess and the other prisoners, guarded.]

Mine eyes are full of tears, my heart of grief.  
 Ah, Humphrey, this dishonour in thine age  
 Will bring thy head with sorrow to the ground !—  
 I beseech your majesty, give me leave to go ;

Sorrow would solace, and mine age would ease.

*K. Hen.* Stay, Humphrey Duke of Gloster: ere thou go,  
Give up thy staff: Henry will to himself  
Protector be; and God shall be my hope,  
My stay, my guide, and lantern to my feet:  
And go in peace, Humphrey,—no less belov'd  
Than when thou wert protector to thy king.

*Q. Mar.* I see no reason why a king of years  
Should be to be protected like a child.—  
God and King Henry govern England's helm!—<sup>(28)</sup>  
Give up your staff, sir, and the king his realm.

*Glo.* My staff! here, noble Henry, is my staff:<sup>(29)</sup>  
As willingly do I the same resign  
As e'er thy father Henry made it mine;  
And even as willingly at thy feet I leave it  
As others would ambitiously receive it.  
Farewell, good king: when I am dead and gone,  
May honourable peace attend thy throne! [*Exit.*]

*Q. Mar.* Why, now is Henry king, and Margaret queen;  
And Humphrey Duke of Gloster scarce himself,  
That bears so shrewd a maim; two pulls at once,—  
His lady banish'd, and a limb lopp'd off:  
'This staff of honour raught, there let it stand  
Where it best fits to be,—in Henry's hand.

*Suf.* Thus droops this lofty pine, and hangs his sprays;  
Thus Eleanor's pride dies in her youngest<sup>(30)</sup> days.

*York.* Lords, let him go.—Please it your majesty,  
'Tis is the day appointed for the combat;  
And ready are the appellant and defendant,  
The armorer and his man, to enter the lists,  
So please your highness to behold the fight.

*Q. Mar.* Ay, good my lord; for purposely therefore  
Left I the court, to see this quarrel tried.

*K. Hen.* O' God's name, see the lists and all things fit:  
Here let them end it; and God defend the right!

*York.* I never saw a fellow worse hested,  
Or more afraid to fight, than is the appellant,  
The servant of this armorer, my lords.

*Enter, on one side, HORNER, and his Neighbours, drinking to him so much that he is drunk; and he enters beating his staff with a small-bag fastened to it; a drum before him: on the other side, PETER, with a drum and a similar staff, accompanied by Prentices drinking to him.*

*First Neigh.* Here, neighbour Horner, I drink to you in a cup of sack: and fear not, neighbour, you shall do well enough.

*Sec. Neigh.* And here, neighbour, here's a cup of char-neco.

*Third Neigh.* And here's a pot of good double-beer, neighbour: drink, and fear not your man.

*Hor.* Let it come, i' faith, and I'll pledge you all; and a fig for Peter!

*First Pren.* Here, Peter, I drink to thee: and be not afraid.

*Sec. Pren.* Be merry, Peter, and fear not thy master: fight for credit of the prentices.

*Peter.* I thank you all: drink, and pray for me, I pray you; for I think I have taken my last draught in this world.—Here, Robin, an if I die, I give thee my apron:—and, Will, thou shalt have my hammer:—and here, Tom, take all the money that I have.—O Lord bless me, I pray God! for I am never able to deal with my master, he hath learnt so much fence already.

*Sal.* Come, leave your drinking, and fall to blows.—Sirrah, what's thy name?

*Peter.* Peter, forsooth.

*Sal.* Peter! what more?

*Peter.* Thump.

*Sal.* Thump! then see thou thump thy master well.

*Hor.* Masters, I am come hither, as it were, upon my man's instigation, to prove him a knave, and myself an honest man: and touching the Duke of York, I will take my death, I never meant him any ill, nor the king, nor the queen: and therefore, Peter, have at thee with a downright blow!

*York.* Dispatch:—this knave's tongue begins to double.—

Sound, trumpets, alarum to the combatants!

[*Alarum. They fight, and Peter strikes down Horner.*

*Hor.* Hold, Peter, hold! I confess, I confess treason.

[*Dies.*

*York.* Take away his weapon.—Fellow, thank God, and the good wine in thy master's way.

*Peter.* O God, have I overcome mine enemy<sup>(31)</sup> in this presence? O Peter, thou hast prevailed in right!

*K. Hen.* Go, take hence that traitor from our sight;  
For by his death we do perceive his guilt:  
And God in justice hath reveal'd to us  
The truth and innocence of this poor fellow,  
Which he had thought to have murder'd wrongfully.—  
Come, fellow, follow us for thy reward. [Exeunt.

SCENE IV. *The same. A street.*

*Enter GLOSTER and Servants, in mourning cloaks.*

*Glo.* Thus sometimes bath the brightest day a cloud;  
And after summer evermore succeeds  
Barren winter, with his wrathful nipping cold:  
So cares and joys abound, as seasons fleet.—  
Sirs, what's o' clock?

*Serv.* Ten, my lord.

*Glo.* Ten is the hour that was appointed me  
To watch the coming of my punish'd duchess:  
Uneath may she endure the flinty streets,  
To tread them with her tender-feeling feet.  
Sweet Nell, ill can thy noble mind abrook  
The abject people gazing on thy face,  
With envious looks,<sup>(32)</sup> laughing at thy shame,  
That erst did follow thy proud chariot-wheels  
When thou didst ride in triumph through the streets.  
But, soft! I think she comes; and I'll prepare  
My tear-stain'd eyes to see her miseries.



*Enter the Duchess of GLOSTER in a white sheet, with papers pinned upon her back, her feet bare, and a taper burning in her hand; Sir John STANLEY, a Sheriff, and Officers.*

*Serv.* So please your grace, we'll take her from the sheriff.

*Glo.* No, stir not, for your lives; let her pass by.

*Duch.* Come you, my lord, to see my open shame?

Now thou dost penance too. Look how they gaze!

See how the giddy multitude do point,

And nod their heads, and throw their eyes on thee!

Ah, Gloster, hide thee from their hateful looks,

And, in thy closet pent up, rue my shame,

And ban thine enemies, both mine and thine!

*Glo.* Be patient, gentle Nell; forget this grief.

*Duch.* Ah, Gloster, teach me to forget myself!

For, whilst I think I am thy married wife,

And thou a prince, protector of this land,

Methinks I should not thus be led along,

Mail'd up in shame, with papers on my back,

And follow'd with a rabble, that rejoice

To see my tears and hear my deep-fet groans.

The ruthless flint doth cut my tender feet;

And when I start, the envious people laugh,

And bid me be advis'd how I tread.

Ah, Humphrey, can I bear this shameful yoke?

Trow'st thou that e'er I'll look upon the world,

Or count them happy that enjoy the sun?

No; dark shall be my light, and night my day;

To think upon my pomp shall be my hell.

Sometime I'll say, I am Duke Humphrey's wife;

And he a prince, and ruler of the land:

Yet so he rul'd, and such a prince he was,

As he stood by, whilst I, his forlorn duchess,

Was made a wonder and a pointing-stock

To every idle rascal follower.

But be thou mild, and blush not at my shame;

Nor stir at nothing, till the axe of death

Hang over thee, as, sure, it shortly will;

For Suffolk,—he that can do all in all

With her that hateth thee and hates us all,—  
And York, and impious Beaufort, that false priest,  
Have all lim'd bushes to betray thy wings,  
And, fly thou how thou canst, they'll tangle thee :  
But fear not thou, until thy foot be snar'd,  
Nor never seek prevention of thy foes.

*Glo.* Ah, Nell, forbear ! thou aimest all awry ;  
I must offend before I be attainted :  
And had I twenty times so many foes,  
And each of them had twenty times their power,  
All these could not procure me any scathe,  
So long as I am loyal, true, and crimeless.  
Wouldst have me rescue thee from this reproach ?  
Why, yet thy scandal were not wip'd away,  
But I in danger for the breach of law.  
Thy greatest help is quiet, gentle Nell :  
I pray thee, sort thy heart to patience ;  
These few days' wonder will be quickly worn.

*Enter a Herald.*

*Her.* I summon your grace to his majesty's parliament,  
holden at Bury the first of this next month.

*Glo.* And my consent ne'er ask'd herein before !  
This is close dealing.—Well, I will be there. [*Exit Herald.*]  
My Nell, I take my leave :—and, master sheriff,  
Let not her penance exceed the king's commission.

*Sher.* An't please your grace, here my commission stays ;  
And Sir John Stanley is appointed now  
To take her with him to the Isle of Man.

*Glo.* Must you, Sir John, protect my lady here ?

*Stan.* So am I given in charge, may't please your grace.

*Glo.* Entreat her not the worse, in that I pray  
You use her well : the world may laugh again ;  
And I may live to do you kindness, if  
You do it her : and so, Sir John, farewell.

*Duch.* What, gone, my lord, and bid me not farewell !

*Glo.* Witness my tears, I cannot stay to speak.

[*Exeunt Gloster and Servants.*]

*Duch.* Art thou gone too ? all comfort go with thee !

For none abides with me : my joy is death,—  
Death, at whose name I oft have been afraid,  
Because I wish'd this world's eternity.—  
Stanley, I prithee, go, and take me hence ;  
I care not whither, for I beg no favour,  
Only convey me where thou art commanded.

*Stan.* Why, madam, that is to the Isle of Man ;  
There to be us'd according to your state.

*Duch.* That's bad enough, for I am but reproach,—  
And shall I, then, be us'd reproachfully ?

*Stan.* Like to a duchess, and Duke Humphrey's lady ;  
According to that state you shall be us'd.

*Duch.* Sheriff, farewell, and better than I fare,—  
Although thou hast been conduct of my shame.

*Sher.* It is my office ; and, madam, pardon me.

*Duch.* Ay, ay, farewell ; thy office is discharg'd.—  
Come, Stanley, shall we go ?

*Stan.* Madam, your penance done, throw off this sheet,  
And go we to attire you for our journey.

*Duch.* My shame will not be shifted with my sheet :  
No, it will hang upon my richest robes,  
And show itself, attire me how I can.

Go, lead the way ; I long to see my prison. [ *Exeunt.* ]

---

### ACT III.

#### SCENE I. *The Abbey at Bury.*

*Sennet. Enter, to the Parliament, King HENRY, Queen MARGARET,  
Cardinal BEAUFORT, SUFFOLK, YORK, BUCKINGHAM, and others.*

*K. Hen.* I muse my Lord of Gloster is not come :  
'Tis not his wont to be the hindmost man,  
Whate'er occasion keeps him from us now.

*Q. Mar.* Can you not see ? or will ye not observe  
The strangeness of his alter'd countenance ?  
With what a majesty he bears himself ;  
How insolent of late he is become,

How proud, how peremptory, and unlike himself?  
We know the time since he was mild and affable;  
And, if we did but glance a far-off look,  
Immediately he was upon his knee,  
That all the court admir'd him for submission:  
But meet him now, and, be it in the morn,  
When every one will give the time of day,  
He knits his brow, and shows an angry eye,  
And passeth by with stiff unbowed knee,  
Disdaining duty that to us belongs.  
Small curs are not regarded when they grin;  
But great men tremble when the lion roars,—  
And Humphrey is no little man in England.  
First note, that he is near you in descent;  
And, should you fall, he as the next will mount.  
Me seemeth, then, it is no policy,—  
Respecting what a rancorous mind he bears,  
And his advantage following your decease,—  
That he should come about your royal person,  
Or be admitted to your highness' council.  
By flattery hath he won the commons' hearts;  
And when he please to make commotion,  
'Tis to be fear'd they all will follow him.  
Now 'tis the spring, and weeds are shallow-rooted;  
Suffer them now, and they'll o'ergrow the garden,  
And choke the herbs for want of husbandry.  
The reverent care I bear unto my lord  
Made me collect these dangers in the duke.  
If it be fond, call it a woman's fear;  
Which fear if better reasons can supplant,  
I will subscribe, and say I wrong'd the duke.  
My Lord of Suffolk,—Buckingham,—and York,—  
Reprove my allegation, if you can;  
Or else conclude my words effectual.

*Suf.* Well hath your highness seen into this duke;  
And, had I first been put to speak my mind,  
I think I should have told your grace's tale.  
The duchess, by his subornation,  
Upon my life, began her devilish practices:

Or, if he were not privy to those faults,  
 Yet, by reputing of his high descent,—  
 As, next the king, he was successive heir,  
 And such high vaunts of his nobility,—  
 Did instigate the bedlam bram-sick duchess  
 By wicked means to frame our sovereign's fall.  
 Smooth runs the water where the brook is deep;  
 And in his simple show he harbours treason.  
 The fox barks not when he would steal the lamb.  
 No, no, my sovereign; Gloster is a man  
 Unsounded yet, and full of deep deceit.

*Cur.* Did he not, contrary to form of law,  
 Devise strange deaths for small offences done?

*York.* And did he not, in his protectorship,  
 Levy great sums of money through the realm  
 For soldiers' pay in France, and never sent it?  
 By means whereof the towns each day revolted.

*Buck.* Tut, these are petty faults to faults unknown,  
 Which time will bring to light in smooth Duke Humphrey.

*K. Hen.* My lords, at once:—the care you have of us,  
 To mow down thorns that would annoy our foot,  
 Is worthy praise: but shall I speak my conscience?  
 Our kinsman Gloster is as innocent  
 From meaning treason to our royal person  
 As is the sucking lamb or harmless dove:  
 The duke is virtuous, mild, and too well given  
 To dream on evil, or to work my downfall.

*Q. Mar.* Ah, what's more dangerous than this fond affi-  
 ance!  
 Seems he a dove? his feathers are but borrow'd,  
 For he's dispos'd as the hateful raven:  
 Is he a lamb? his skin is surely lent him,  
 For he's inclin'd as is the ravenous wolf.<sup>(33)</sup>  
 Who cannot steal a shape that means deceit?  
 Take heed, my lord; the welfare of us all  
 Hangs on the cutting short that fraudulent man.

*Enter SOMERSET*

*Sum.* All health unto my gracious sovereign!

*K. Hen.* Welcome, Lord Somerset. What news from France?

*Som.* That all your interest in those territories  
Is utterly bereft you; all is lost.

*K. Hen.* Cold news, Lord Somerset: but God's will be done!

*York.* Cold news for me; for I had hope of France  
As firmly as I hope for fertile England.  
Thus are my blossoms blasted in the bud,  
And caterpillars eat my leaves away:  
But I will remedy this gear ere long,  
Or sell my title for a glorious grave.

[*Aside.*

*Enter GLOSTER.*

*Glo.* All happiness unto my lord the king!  
Pardon, my liege, that I have stay'd so long.

*Suf.* Nay, Gloster, know that thou art come too soon,  
Unless thou wert more loyal than thou art:  
I do arrest thee of high treason here.

*Glo.* Well, Suffolk,<sup>(34)</sup> thou shalt not see me blush  
Nor change my countenance for this arrest:  
A heart unspotted is not easily daunted.  
The purest spring is not so free from mud  
As I am clear from treason to my sovereign:  
Who can accuse me? wherein am I guilty?

*York.* 'Tis thought, my lord, that you took bribes of  
France,

And, being protector, stay'd the soldiers' pay;  
By means whereof his highness hath lost France.

*Glo.* Is it but thought so? what are they that think it?  
I never robb'd the soldiers of their pay,  
Nor ever had one penny bribe from France.  
So help me God, as I have watch'd the night,—  
Ay, night by night,—in studying good for England!  
That do it that e'er I wrested from the king,  
Or any groat I hoarded to my use,  
Be brought against me at my trial-day!  
No; many a pound of mine own proper store,  
Because I would not tax the needy commons,  
Have I dispursed to the garrisons,

And never ask'd for restitution.

*Car.* It serves you well, my lord, to say so much.

*Glo.* I say no more than truth, so help me God !

*York.* In your protectorship you did devise  
Strange tortures for offenders, never heard of,  
That England was defam'd by tyranny.

*Glo.* Why, 'tis well known that, whiles I was protector,  
Pity was all the fault that was in me ;  
For I should melt at an offender's tears,  
And lowly words were ransom for their fault.  
Unless it were a bloody murderer,  
Or foul felonious thief that fleec'd poor passengers,  
I never gave them condign punishment :  
Murder, indeed, that bloody sin, I tortur'd  
Above the felon or what trespass else.

*Suf.* My lord, these faults are easy, quickly answer'd :  
But mightier crimes are laid unto your charge,  
Whereof you cannot easily purge yourself.  
I do arrest you in his highness' name ;  
And here commit you to my lord cardinal  
To keep, until your further time of trial.

*K. Hen.* My Lord of Gloster, 'tis my special hope  
That you will clear yourself from all suspect :<sup>(35)</sup>  
My conscience tells me you are innocent.

*Glo.* Ah, gracious lord, these days are dangerous !  
Virtue is chok'd with foul ambition,  
And clarity chas'd hence by rancour's hand ,  
Foul subornation is predominant,  
And equity exil'd your highness' land.  
I know their complot is to have my life ;  
And, if my death might make this island happy,  
And prove the period of their tyranny,  
I would expend it with all willingness :  
But mine is made the prologue to their play ;  
For thousands more, that yet suspect no peril,  
Will not conclude their plotted tragedy.  
Beaufort's red sparkling eyes blab his heart's malice,  
And Suffolk's cloudy brow his stormy hate ;  
Sharp Buckingham unburdens with his tongue

The envious load that lies upon his heart;  
And doggèd York, that reaches at the moon,  
Whose overweening arm I have pluck'd back,  
By false accuse doth level at my life:—  
And you, my sovereign lady, with the rest,  
Causeless have laid disgraces on my head,  
And with your best endeavour have stirr'd up  
My liefest liege to be mine enemy:—  
Ay, all of you have laid your heads together  
(Myself had notice of your conventicles);  
And all to make away my guiltless life.  
I shall not want false witness to condemn me,  
Nor store of treasons to augment my guilt;  
The ancient proverb will be well effected,—<sup>(35)</sup>  
A staff is quickly found to beat a dog.

*Car.* My liege, his railing is intolerable:  
If those that care to keep your royal person  
From treason's secret knife and traitors' rage  
Be thus upbraided, chid, and rated at,  
And the offender granted scope of speech,  
'Twill make them cool in zeal unto your grace.

*Suf.* Hath he not twit our sovereign lady here  
With ignominious words, though clerkly couch'd,  
As if she had suborn'd some to swear  
False allegations to o'erthrow his state?

*Q. Mar.* But I can give the loser leave to chide.

*Glo.* Far truer spoke than meant: I lose, indeed;—  
Beshrew the winners, for they play'd me false!  
And well such losers may have leave to speak.

*Buck.* He'll wrest the sense, and hold us here all day:—  
Lord cardinal, he is your prisoner.

*Car.* Sirs, take away the duke, and guard him sure.

*Glo.* Ah, thus King Henry throws away his crutch,  
Before his legs be firm to bear his body!  
Thus is the shepherd beaten from thy side,  
And wolves are gnawing who shall gnaw thee first.  
Ah, that my fear were false! ah, that it were!  
For, good King Henry, thy decay I fear.

[*Exeunt Attendants with Gloster.*]



*K. Hen.* My lords, what to your wisdoms seemeth best,  
Do or undo, as if ourself were here.

*Q. Mar.* What, will your highness leave the parliament?

*K. Hen.* Ay, Margaret; my heart is drown'd with grief,  
Whose flood begins to flow within mine eyes;  
My body round engirt with misery,—  
For what's more miserable than discontent?—  
Ah, uncle Humphrey, in thy face I see  
The map of honour, truth, and loyalty!  
And yet, good Humphrey, is the hour to come  
That e'er I prov'd thee false, or fear'd thy faith.  
What lowering star now envies thy estate,  
That these great lords, and Margaret our queen,  
Do seek subversion of thy harmless life?  
Thou never didst them wrong, nor no man wrong:  
And as the butcher takes away the calf,  
And binds the wretch, and beats it when it strays,  
Bearing it to the bloody slaughter-house;  
Even so, remorseless, have they borne him hence:  
And as the dam runs lowing up and down,  
Looking the way her harmless young one went,  
And can do naught but wail her darling's loss;  
Even so myself bewails good Gloster's case  
With sad unhelpful tears; and with dimm'd eyes  
Look after him, and cannot do him good,—  
So mighty are his row'd enemies.

His fortunes I will weep; and, 'twixt each groan,  
Say, "Who's a traitor, Gloster he is none."

[*Exit.*]

*Q. Mar.* Free<sup>(37)</sup> lords, cold snow melts with the sun's hot  
beams.

Henry my lord is cold in great affairs,  
Too full of foolish pity: and Gloster's show  
Beguiles him, as the mournful crocodile  
With sorrow snares relenting passengers;  
Or as the snake, roll'd in a flowering bank,  
With shining checker'd slough, doth sting a chuld,  
That for the beauty thinks it excellent.  
Believe me, lords, were none more wise than I  
(And yet herein I judge mine own wit good),

This Gloster should be quickly rid the world,  
To rid us from the fear we have of him.

*Car.* That he should die is worthy policy ;  
But yet we want a colour for his death :  
'Tis meet he be condemn'd by course of law.

*Suf.* But, in my mind, that were no policy :  
The king will labour still to save his life ;  
The commons haply rise to save his life ;  
And yet we have but trivial argument,  
More than mistrust, that shows him worthy death.

*York.* So that, by this, you would not have him die.

*Suf.* Ah, York, no man alive so fain as I !

*York.* 'Tis York that hath more reason for his death.—  
But, my lord cardinal, and you, my Lord of Suffolk,—  
Say as you think, and speak it from your souls,—  
Were't not all one, an empty eagle were set  
To guard the chicken from a hungry kite,  
As place Duke Humphrey for the king's protector ?

*Q. Mar.* So the poor chicken should be sure of death.

*Suf.* Madam, 'tis true ; and were't not madness, then,  
To make the fox surveyor of the fold ?  
Who being accus'd a crafty murderer,  
His guilt should be but idly posted over,  
Because his purpose is not executed.  
No ; let him die, in that he is a fox,  
By nature prov'd an enemy to the flock,  
Before his chaps be stain'd with crimson blood,—  
As Humphrey, (<sup>38</sup>) prov'd by reasons, to my liege.  
And do not stand on quilllets how to slay him :  
Be it by gins, by snares, by subtlety,  
Sleeping or waking, 'tis no matter how,  
So he be dead ; for that is good deceit  
Which mates him first that first intends deceit.

*Q. Mar.* Thrice-noble Suffolk, 'tis resolutely spoke.

*Suf.* Not resolute, except so much were done ;  
For things are often spoke, and seldom meant :  
But, that my heart accordeth with my tongue,—  
Secing the deed is meritorious,  
And to preserve my sovereign from his foe,—

Say but the word, and I will be his priest.

*Car.* But I would have him dead, my Lord of Suffolk,  
Ere you can take due orders for a priest :  
Say you consent, and censure well the deed,  
And I'll provide his executioner,—  
I tender so the safety of my liege.

*Suf.* Here is my hand, the deed is worthy doing.

*Q. Mar.* And so say I.

*York.* And I: and now we three have spoke it,  
It skills not greatly who impugns our doom.

*Enter a Messenger*

*Mess.* Great lords, from Ireland am I come amain,  
To signify that rebels there are up,  
And put the Englishmen unto the sword :  
Send succours, lords, and stop the rage betime,  
Before the wound do grow uncurable ;  
For, being green, there is great hope of help.

*Car.* A breach that craves a quick expedient stop !  
What counsel give you in this weighty cause ?

*York.* That Somerset be sent as regent thither :  
'Tis meet that lucky ruler be employ'd ;  
Witness the fortune he hath had in France.

*Som.* If York, with all his far-fet policy,  
Had been the regent there instead of me,  
He never would have stay'd in France so long.

*York.* No, not to lose it all, as thou hast done :  
I rather would have lost my life betimes,  
Than bring a burden of dishonour home,  
By staying there so long, till all were lost.  
Show me one scar character'd on thy skin :  
Men's flesh preserv'd so whole do seldom win.

*Q. Mar.* Nay, then, this spark will prove a raging fire,  
If wind and fuel be brought to feed it with :—  
No more, good York ;—sweet Somerset, be still ;—  
Thy fortune, York, hadst thou been regent there,  
Might happily have prov'd far worse than his.

*York.* What, worse than naught ? nay, then, a shame take  
all !

*Som.* And, in the number, thee that wishest shame!

*Car.* My Lord of York, try what your fortune is.

The uncivil kerns of Ireland are in arms,  
And temper clay with blood of Englishmen :  
To Ireland will you lead a band of men,  
Collected choicely, from each county some,  
And try your hap against the Irishmen ?

*York.* I will, my lord, so please his majesty.

*Suf.* Why, our authority is his consent ;  
And what we do establish he confirms :  
Then, noble York, take thou this task in hand.

*York.* I am content : provide me soldiers, lords,  
Whiles I take order for mine own affairs.

*Suf.* A charge, Lord York, that I will see perform'd.  
But now return we to the false Duke Humphrey.

*Car.* No more of him ; for I will deal with him,  
That henceforth he shall trouble us no more.  
And so break off ; the day is almost spent :  
Lord Suffolk, you and I must talk of that event.

*York.* My Lord of Suffolk, within fourteen days  
At Bristol I expect my soldiers ;  
For there I'll ship them all for Ireland.

*Suf.* I'll see it truly done, my Lord of York.

*[Exeunt all except York.]*

*York.* Now, York, or never, steel thy fearful thoughts,  
And change misdoubt to resolution :  
Be that thou hop'st to be ; or what thou art  
Resign to death,—it is not worth the enjoying :  
Let pale-fac'd fear keep with the mean-born man,  
And find no harbour in a royal heart.  
Faster than spring-time showers comes thought on thought ;  
And not a thought but thinks on dignity.  
My brain, more busy than the labouring spider,  
Weaves tedious snares to trap mine enemies.  
Well, nobles, well, 'tis politicly done,  
'To send me packing with an host of men :  
I fear me you but warm the starv'd snake,  
Who, cherish'd in your breasts, will sting your hearts.  
'Twas men I lack'd, and you will give them me :

I take it kindly; yet be well assur'd  
You put sharp weapons in a madman's hands.  
Whiles I in Ireland nourish <sup>(39)</sup> a mighty band,  
I will stir up in England some black storm,  
Shall blow ten thousand souls to heaven or hell;  
And this fell tempest shall not cease to rage  
Until the golden circuit on my head,  
Like to the glorious sun's transparent beams,  
Do calm the fury of this mad-bred flaw.  
And, for a minister of my intent,  
I have seduc'd a headstrong Kentishman,  
John Cade of Ashford,  
To make commotion, as full well he can,  
Under the title of John Mortimer.  
In Ireland have I seen this stubborn Cade  
Oppose himself against a troop of kerns,  
And fought so long, till that his thighs with darts  
Were almost like a sharp-quill'd porpentine;  
And, in the end being rescu'd, I have seen  
Him caper upright like a wild Morisco,  
Shaking the bloody darts as he his bells.  
Full often, like a shag-hair'd crafty kern,  
Hath he conversèd with the enemy,  
And, undiscover'd, come to me again,  
And given me notice of their villanies.  
This devil here shall be my substitute;  
For that John Mortimer, which now is dead,  
In face, in gait, in speech, he doth resemble:  
By this I shall perceive the commons' mind,  
How they affect the house and claim of York.  
Say he be taken, rack'd, and torturèd,  
I know no pain they can inflict upon him  
Will make him say I mov'd him to those arms.<sup>(40)</sup>  
Say that he thrive (as 'tis great like he will),  
Why, then from Ireland come I with my strength,  
And reap the harvest which that rascal sow'd;  
For, Humphrey being dead, as he shall be,  
And Henry put apart, the next for me.

[Exit.]

SCENE II. *Bury. A room in the palace.**Enter certain Murderers, hastily.**First Mur.* Run to my Lord of Suffolk; let him know  
We have dispatch'd the duke, as he commanded.*Sec. Mur.* O that it were to do!—What have we  
done?

Didst ever hear a man so penitent?

*First Mur.* Here comes my lord.*Enter SUFFOLK.**Suf.* Now, sirs, have you dispatch'd this thing?*First Mur.* Ay, my good lord, he's dead.*Suf.* Why, that's well said. Go, get you to my house;  
I will reward you for this venturous deed.

The king and all the peers are here at hand:—

Have you laid fair the bed? are all things well,

According as I gave directions?

*First Mur.* 'Tis, my good lord.*Suf.* Away! be gone.[*Exeunt Murderers.*]*Trumpets sounded. Enter King HENRY, Queen MARGARET, Cardinal  
BEAUFORT, SOMERSET, Lords, and others.**K. Hen.* Go, call our uncle to our presence straight;  
Say we intend to try his grace to-day,  
If he be guilty, as 'tis publish'd.*Suf.* I'll call him presently, my noble lord. [Exit.]*K. Hen.* Lords, take your places; and, I pray you all,  
Proceed no straiter 'gainst our uncle Gloster  
Than from true evidence, of good esteem,  
He be approv'd in practice culpable.*Q. Mar.* God forbid any malice should prevail,  
That faultless may condemn a nobleman!  
Pray God he may acquit him of suspicion!*K. Hen.* I thank thee, Margaret; (<sup>11</sup>) these words content  
me much.*Re-enter SUFFOLK.*

How now! why look'st thou pale? why tremblest thou?

Where is our uncle? what's the matter, Suffolk?

*Suf.* Dead in his bed, my lord; Gloster is dead.

*Q. Mar.* Marry, God forbid!

*Car.* God's secret judgment:—I did dream to-night

The duke was dumb, and could not speak a word.

[*The King swoons.*]

*Q. Mar.* How fares my lord?—Help, lords! the king is dead.

*Som.* Rear up his body; wring him by the nose.

*Q. Mar.* Run, go, help, help!—O Henry, ope thine eyes!

*Suf.* He doth revive again:—madam, be patient.

*K. Hen.* O heavenly God!

*Q. Mar.* How fares my gracious lord?

*Suf.* Comfort, my sovereign! gracious Henry, comfort!

*K. Hen.* What, doth my Lord of Suffolk comfort me?

Came he right now to sing a raven's note,  
Whose dismal tune bereft my vital powers;  
And thinks he that the chirping of a wren,  
By crying comfort from a hollow breast,  
Can chase away the first-conceiv'd sound?

Hide not thy poison with such sugar'd words;

Lay not thy hands on me; forbear, I say;

Their touch affrights me, as a serpent's sting.

Thou baleful messenger, out of my sight!

Upon thy eye-balls murderous tyranny

Sits in grim majesty, to fright the world.

Look not upon me, for thine eyes are wounding:—

Yet do not go away:—come, basilisk,

And kill the innocent gazer with thy sight;

For in the shade of death I shall find joy,—

In life but double death, now Gloster's dead.

*Q. Mar.* Why do you rate my Lord of Suffolk thus?

Although the duke was enemy to him,

Yet he, most Christian-like, laments his death:

And for myself,—foe as he was to me,—

Might liquid tears, or heart-offending groans,

Or blood-consuming sighs recall his life,

I would be blind with weeping, sick with groans,

Look pale as primrose with blood-drinking sighs,

And all to have the noble duke alive.  
 What know I how the world may deem of me?  
 For it is known we were but hollow friends;  
 It may be judg'd I made the duke away;  
 So shall my name with slander's tongue be wounded,  
 And princes' courts be fill'd with my reproach.  
 This get I by his death: ay me, unhappy!  
 To be a queen, and crown'd with infamy!

*K. Hen.* Ah, woe is me for Gloster, wretched man!

*Q. Mar.* Be woe for me, more wretched than he is.  
 What, dost thou turn away, and hide thy face?  
 I am no loathsome leper,—look on me.  
 What, art thou, like the adder, waxen deaf?  
 Be poisonous too, and kill thy forlorn queen.  
 Is all thy comfort shut in Gloster's tomb?  
 Why, then, Dame Margaret<sup>(43)</sup> was ne'er thy joy:  
 Erect his statua,<sup>(43)</sup> and worship it,  
 And make my image but an alehouse sign.  
 Was I for this nigh wreck'd upon the sea,  
 And twice by awkward wind from England's bank  
 Drove back again unto my native clime?  
 What boded this but well-forewarning wind  
 Did seem to say,—Seek not a scorpion's nest,  
 Nor set no footing on this unkind shore?  
 What did I then but curs'd the gentle<sup>(44)</sup> gusts,  
 And he that loos'd them forth their brazen caves;  
 And bid them blow towards England's bless'd shore,  
 Or turn our stern upon a dreadful rock?  
 Yet Æolus would not be a murderer,  
 But left that hateful office unto thee:  
 The pretty-vaulting sea refus'd to drown me;  
 Knowing that thou wouldst have me drown'd on shore,  
 With tears as salt as sea, through thy unkindness:  
 The splitting rocks cower'd in the sinking sands,  
 And would not dash me with their ragged sides;  
 Because thy flinty heart, more hard than they,  
 Might in thy palace perish Margaret.<sup>(45)</sup>  
 As far as I could ken thy chalky cliffs,  
 When from thy shore the tempest beat us back,



I stood upon the hatches in the storm ;  
 And when the dusky sky began to rob  
 My earnest-gaping sight of thy land's view,  
 I took a costly jewel from my neck,—  
 A heart it was, bound in with diamonds,—  
 And threw it towards thy land :—the sea receiv'd it ;  
 And so I wish'd thy body might my heart :  
 And even with this I lost fair England's view,  
 And bid mine eyes be packing with my heart,  
 And call'd them blind and dusky spectacles,  
 For losing ken of Albion's wish'd coast.  
 How often have I tempted Suffolk's tongue  
 (The agent of thy foul inconstancy)  
 To sit and witch<sup>(46)</sup> me, as Ascanius did,  
 When he to madding Dido would unfold  
 His father's acts, commenc'd in burning Troy !  
 Am I not witch'd like her ? or thou not false like him ?  
 Ay me, I can no more ! die, Margaret !<sup>(47)</sup>  
 For Henry weeps that thou dost live so long.

*Noise within. Enter WARWICK and SALISBURY. The Commons  
 press to the door.*

*War.* It is reported, mighty sovereign,  
 That good Duke Humphrey traitorously is murder'd  
 By Suffolk and the Cardinal Beaufort's means,  
 The commons, like an angry hive of bees  
 That want their leader, scatter up and down,  
 And care not who they sting in his revenge.  
 Myself have calm'd their spleenful mutiny,  
 Until they hear the order of his death.

*K. Hen.* That he is dead, good Warwick, 'tis too true ;  
 But how he died God knows, not Henry :  
 Enter his chamber, view his breathless corpse,  
 And comment then upon his sudden death.

*War.* That shall I do, my liege.—Stay, Salisbury,  
 With the rude multitude till I return.

*[Warwick goes into an inner chamber.—Salisbury  
 retires to the Commons at the door.]*<sup>(48)</sup>

*K. Hen.* O Thou that judgest all things, stay my thoughts,—

My thoughts, that labour to persuade my soul  
 Some violent hands were laid on Humphrey's life !  
 If my suspect be false, forgive me, God ;  
 For judgment only doth belong to thee.  
 Fain would I go to chafe his paly lips  
 With twenty thousand kisses, and to drain<sup>(49)</sup>  
 Upon his face an ocean of salt tears ;  
 To tell my love unto his dumb deaf trunk,  
 And with my fingers feel his hand unfeeling :  
 But all in vain are these mean obsequies ;  
 And to survey his dead and earthy image,  
 What were it but to make my sorrow greater ?

*[The folding-doors of an inner chamber are  
 thrown open, and Gloster is discovered  
 dead in his bed ; Warwick and others  
 standing by it.]*<sup>(50)</sup>

*War.* Come hither, gracious sovereign, view this body.

*K. Hen.* That is to see how deep my grave is made ;  
 For with his soul fled all my worldly solace,  
 For<sup>(51)</sup> seeing him, I see my life in death.

*War.* As surely as my soul intends to live  
 With that dread King that took our state upon him  
 To free us from his Father's wrathful curse,  
 I do believe that violent hands were laid  
 Upon the life of this thrice-fam'd duke,

*Suf.* A dreadful oath, sworn with a solemn tongue !  
 What instance gives Lord Warwick for his vow ?

*War.* See how the blood is settled in his face !  
 Oft have I seen a timely-parted ghost,  
 Of ashy semblance, meagre, pale, and bloodless,  
 Being all descended to the labouring heart ;  
 Who, in the conflict that it holds with death,  
 Attracts the same for aidance 'gainst the enemy ;  
 Which with the heart there cools, and ne'er returneth  
 To blush and beautify the cheek again.  
 But see, his face is black and full of blood ;  
 His eye-balls further out than when he liv'd,  
 Staring full ghastly like a strangled man ;  
 His hair uprear'd, his nostrils stretch'd with struggling ;

His hands abroad display'd, as one that grasp'd  
 And tugg'd for life, and was by strength subdu'd :  
 Look on the sheets, his hair, you see, is sticking ;  
 His well-proportion'd beard made rough and rugged,  
 Like to the summer's corn by tempest lodg'd.  
 It cannot be but he was murder'd here ;  
 The least of all these signs were probable.

*Suf.* Why, Warwick, who should do the duke to death ?  
 Myself and Beaufort had him in protection ;  
 And we, I hope, sir, are no murderers.

*War.* But both of you were vow'd Duke Humphrey's foes,  
 And you, forsooth, had the good duke to keep :  
 'Tis like you would not feast him like a friend ;  
 And 'tis well seen he found an enemy.

*Q. Mar.* Then you, belike, suspect these noblemen  
 As guilty of Duke Humphrey's timeless death.

*War.* Who finds the heifer dead and bleeding flesh,  
 And sees fast by a butcher with an axe,  
 But will suspect 'twas he that made the slaughter ?  
 Who finds the partridge in the puttock's nest,  
 But may imagine how the bird was dead,  
 Although the kite soar with unbloodied beak ?  
 Even so suspicious is this tragedy.

*Q. Mar.* Are you the butcher, Suffolk ?—where's your  
 knife ?

Is Beaufort term'd a kite ?—where are his talons ?

*Suf.* I wear no knife to slaughter sleeping men ;  
 But here's a vengeful sword, rusted with ease,  
 That shall be scour'd in his rancorous heart  
 That slanders me with murder's crimson badge :—  
 Say, if thou dar'st, proud Lord of Warwickshire,  
 That I am faulty in Duke Humphrey's death.

*[Exeunt Cardinal, Somerset, and others.]*

*War.* What dares not Warwick, if false Suffolk dare  
 him ?

*Q. Mar.* He dares not calm his contumelious spirit,  
 Nor cease to be an arrogant controller,  
 Though Suffolk dare him twenty thousand times.

*War.* Madam, be still,—with reverence may I say ;

For every word you speak in his behalf  
Is slander to your royal dignity.

*Suf.* Blunt-witted lord, ignoble in demeanour!  
If ever lady wrong'd her lord so much,  
Thy mother took into her blameful bed  
Some stern untutor'd churl, and noble stock  
Was graft with crab-tree shp; whose fruit thou art,  
And never of the Nevils' noble race.

*War.* But that the guilt of murder bucklers thee,  
And I should rob the deathsman of his fee,  
Quitting thee thereby of ten thousand shames,  
And that my sovereign's presence makes me mild,  
I would, false murderous coward, on thy knee  
Make thee beg pardon for thy passèd speech,  
And say it was thy mother that thou meant'st,—  
That thou thyself wast born in bastardy;  
And, after all this fearful homage done,  
Give thee thy hire, and send thy soul to hell,  
Pernicious blood-sucker of sleeping men!

*Suf.* Thou shalt be waking while I shed thy blood,  
If from this presence thou dar'st go with me.

*War.* Away even now, or I will drag thee hence:  
Unworthy though thou art, I'll cope with thee,  
And do some service to Duke Humphrey's ghost.

[*Exeunt Suffolk and Warwick.*]

*K. Hen.* What stronger breastplate than a heart untainted!  
Thrice is he arm'd that hath his quarrel just;  
And he but naked, though lock'd up in steel,  
Whose conscience with injustice is corrupted.

[*A noise within.*]

*Q. Mar.* What noise is this?

*Re-enter SUFFOLK and WARWICK, with their weapons drawn.*

*K. Hen.* Why, how now, lords! your wrathful weapons  
drawn

Here in our presence! dare you be so bold?—  
Why, what tumultuous clamour have we here?

*Suf.* The traitorous Warwick, with the men of Bury,  
Set all upon me, mighty sovereign.

*Sal.* [*to the Commons at the door*] Sirs, stand apart; the king shall know your mind.—

[*He comes forward.*]

Dread lord, the commons send you word by me,  
 Unless false<sup>(52)</sup> Suffolk straight be done to death,  
 Or banish'd fair England's territories,  
 They will by violence tear him from your palace,  
 And torture him with grievous lingering death.  
 They say, by him the good Duke Humphrey died;  
 They say, in him they fear your highness' death;  
 And mere instinct of love and loyalty,—  
 Free from a stubborn opposite intent,  
 As being thought to contradict your liking,—  
 Makes them thus forward in his banishment.  
 They say, in care of your most royal person,  
 That if your highness should intend to sleep,  
 And charge that no man should disturb your rest,  
 In pain of your dislike, or pain of death;  
 Yet, notwithstanding such a strait edict,  
 Were there a serpent seen, with fork'd tongue,  
 That slyly glided towards your majesty,  
 It were but necessary you were wak'd;  
 Lest, being suffer'd in that harmful slumber,  
 The mortal worm might make the sleep eternal:  
 And therefore do they cry, though you forbid,  
 That they will guard you, whêr you will or no,  
 From such fell serpents as false Suffolk is;  
 With whose envenom'd and fatal sting,  
 Your loving uncle, twenty times his worth,  
 They say, is shamefully bereft of life.

*Commons* [*within*]. An answer from the king, my Lord of Salisbury!

*Suf.* 'Tis like the commons, rude unpolish'd hinds,  
 Could send such message to their sovereign:  
 But you, my lord, were glad to be employ'd,  
 To show how quaint an orator you are:  
 But all the honour Salisbury hath won  
 Is, that he was the lord ambassador  
 Sent from a sort of tinkers to the king.

*Commons [within].* An answer from the king, or we will all break in!

*K. Hen.* Go, Salisbury, and tell them all from me,  
I thank them for their tender loving care;  
And had I not been cited so by them,  
Yet did I purpose as they do entreat;  
For, sure, my thoughts do hourly prophesy  
Mischance unto my state by Suffolk's means:  
And therefore,—by His majesty I swear,  
Whose far unworthy deputy I am,—  
He shall not breathe infection in this air  
But three days longer, on the pain of death.

*[Exit Salisbury.]*

*Q. Mar.* O Henry, let me plead for gentle Suffolk!

*K. Hen.* Ungentle queen, to call him gentle Suffolk!  
No more, I say; if thou dost plead for him,  
Thou wilt but add increase unto my wraith.  
Had I but said, I would have kept my word;  
But when I swear, it is irrevocable.—  
If, after three days' space, thou here be'st found  
On any ground that I am ruler of,  
The world shall not be ransom for thy life.—  
Come, Warwick, come, good Warwick, go with me;  
I have great matters to impart to thee.

*[Exeunt King Henry, Warwick, Lords, &c.]*

*Q. Mar.* Mischance and sorrow go along with you!  
Heart's discontent and sour affliction  
Be playfellows to keep you company!  
There's two of you; the devil make a third!  
And threefold vengeance tend upon your steps!

*Suf.* Cease, gentle queen, these execrations,  
And let thy Suffolk take his heavy leave.

*Q. Mar.* Fie, coward woman, and soft-hearted wretch!  
Hast thou not spirit to curse thine enemies?<sup>(53)</sup>

*Suf.* A plague upon them! wherefore should I curse  
them?

Would curses kill, as doth the mandrake's groan,  
I would invent as bitter-searching terms,  
As curst, as harsh, and horrible to hear,

Deliver'd strongly through my fix'd teeth,  
 With full as many signs of deadly hate,  
 As lean-fac'd Envy in her loathsome cave :  
 My tongue should stumble in mine earnest words ;  
 Mine eyes should sparkle like the beaten flint ;  
 Mine hair be fix'd on end, as one distract ;  
 Ay, every joint should seem to curse and ban :  
 And even now my burden'd heart would break,  
 Should I not curse them. Poison be their drink !  
 Gall, worse than gall, the daintiest that they taste !  
 Their sweetest shade a grove of cypress-trees !  
 Their chiefest prospect murdering basilisks !  
 Their softest touch as smart as lizards' stings !  
 Their music frightful as the serpent's hiss ;  
 And boding screech-owls make the consort full !  
 All the foul terrors in dark-scated hell—

*Q. Mar.* Enough, sweet Suffolk ; thou torment'st thyself ;

And these dread curses,—like the sun 'gainst glass,  
 Or like an overcharg'd gun,—recoil,  
 And turn the force of them upon thyself.

*Suf.* You bade me ban, and will you bid me leave ?  
 Now, by the ground that I am banish'd from,  
 Well could I curse away a winter's night,  
 Though standing naked on a mountain-top,  
 Where biting cold would never let grass grow,  
 And think it but a minute spent in sport.

*Q. Mar.* O, let me entreat thee, cease ! Give me thy hand,  
 That I may dew it with my mournful tears ;  
 Nor let the rain of heaven wet this place,  
 To wash away my woful monuments.  
 O, could this kiss be printed in thy hand, [*Kisses his hand.*]  
 That thou mightst think upon these by the seal,  
 Through whom a thousand sighs are breath'd for thee !  
 So, get thee gone, that I may know my grief ;  
 'Tis but surmis'd whiles thou art standing by,  
 As one that surfeits thinking on a want.  
 I will repeal thee, or, be well assur'd,

Adventure to be banishèd myself:  
 And banishèd I am, if but from thee.  
 Go; speak not to me; even now be gone.—  
 O, go not yet!—Even thus two friends condemn'd  
 Embrace, and kiss, and take ten thousand leaves,  
 Lothier a hundred times to part than die.  
 Yet now farewell; and farewell life with thee!

*Suf.* Thus is poor Suffolk ten times banishèd,—  
 Once by the king, and three times thrice by thee.  
 'Tis not the land I care for, wert thou hence; <sup>(54)</sup>  
 A wilderness is populous enough,  
 So Suffolk had thy heavenly company:  
 For where thou art, there is the world itself,  
 With every several pleasure in the world;  
 And where thou art not, desolation.  
 I can no more:—live thou to joy thy life;  
 Myself to <sup>(55)</sup> joy in naught but that thou liv'st.

*Enter VAUX.*

*Q. Mar.* Whither goes Vaux so fast? what news, I prithee?

*Vaux.* To signify unto his majesty  
 That Cardinal Beaufort is at point of death;  
 For suddenly a grievous sickness took him,  
 That makes him gasp, and stare, and catch the air,  
 Blaspheming God, and cursing men on earth.  
 Sometime he talks as if Duke Humphrey's ghost  
 Were by his side; sometime he calls the king,  
 And whispers to his pillow, as to him,  
 The secrets of his overchargèd soul:  
 And I am sent to tell his majesty  
 That even now he cries aloud for him.

*Q. Mar.* Go tell this heavy message to the king.

*[Exit Vaux.]*

Ay me! what is this world! what news are these!  
 But wherefore grieve I at an hour's poor loss,  
 Omitting Suffolk's exile, my soul's treasure?  
 Why only, Suffolk, mourn I not for thee,  
 And with the southern clouds contend in tears,—  
 Theirs for the earth's increase, mine for my sorrows?



Now get thee hence: the king, thou know'st, is coming;—  
If thou be found by me, thou art but dead.

*Suf.* If I depart from thee, I cannot live;  
And in thy sight to die, what were it else  
But like a pleasant slumber in thy lap?  
Here could I breathe my soul into the air,  
As mild and gentle as the cradle-babe  
Dying with mother's dug between its lips:  
Where, from thy sight, I should be raging mad,  
And cry out for thee to close up mine eyes,  
To have thee with thy lips to stop my mouth;  
So shouldst thou either turn my flying soul,  
Or I should breathe it so into thy body,  
And then it liv'd in sweet Elysium.  
To die by thee were but to die in jest;  
From thee to die were torture more than death:  
O, let me stay, befall what may befall!

*Q. Mar.* Away! though parting be a fretful corrosive,  
It is apply'd to a deathful wound.  
To France, sweet Suffolk: let me hear from thee;  
For wheresoe'er thou art in this world's globe,  
I'll have an Iris that shall find thee out.

*Suf.* I go.

*Q. Mar.* And take my heart with thee.

*Suf.* A jewel, lock'd into the wofull'st cask  
That ever did contain a thing of worth.  
Even as a splitted bark, so sunder we:  
This way fall I to death.

*Q. Mar.*

This way for me.

[*Exeunt severally.*]

SCENE III. *London.* Cardinal BEAUFORT's bedchamber.

*Enter* King HENRY, SALISBURY, WARWICK, and others *The Cardinal*  
*in bed; Attendants with him.*

*K. Hen.* How fares my lord? speak, Beaufort, to thy  
sovereign,

*Car.* If thou be'st death, I'll give thee England's treasure,

Enough to purchase such another island,  
So thou wilt let me live, and feel no pain.

*K. Hen.* Ah, what a sign it is of evil life,  
Where death's approach is seen so terrible!

*War.* Beaufort, it is thy sovereign speaks to thee.

*Car.* Bring me unto my trial when you will.  
Died he not in his bed? where should he die?  
Can I make men live, whêr they will or no?  
O, torture me no more! I will confess.—  
Alive again? then show me where he is:  
I'll give a thousand pound to look upon him.—  
He hath no eyes, the dust hath blinded them.—  
Comb down his hair; look, look! it stands upright,  
Like lime-twigs set to catch my wingèd soul!—  
Give me some drink; and bid the apothecary  
Bring the strong poison that I bought of him.

*K. Hen.* O thou eternal Mover of the heavens,  
Look with a gentle eye upon this wretch!  
O, beat away the busy meddling fiend  
That lays strong siege unto this wretch's soul,  
And from his bosom purge this black despair!

*War.* See how the pangs of death do make him grin!

*Sal.* Disturb him not, let him pass peaceably.

*K. Hen.* Peace to his soul, if God's good pleasure be!—  
Lord cardinal, if thou think'st on heaven's bliss,  
Hold up thy hand, make signal of thy hope.—  
He dies, and makes no sign:—O God, forgive him!

*War.* So bad a death argues a monstrous life.

*K. Hen.* Forbear to judge, for we are sinners all.—  
Close up his eyes, and draw the curtain close;  
And let us all to meditation.

[*Exeunt.*

## ACT IV.

SCENE I. *Kent. The Sea-shore near Dover.*

*Firing heard at sea. Then enter, from a boat, a Captain, a Master, a Master's-Mate, WALTER WHITMORE, and others; with them SUFFOLK disguised, and other Gentlemen, prisoners.*

*Cap.* The gaudy, blabbing, and remorseful day  
Is crept into the bosom of the sea;  
And now loud-howling wolves arouse the jades  
That drag the tragic melancholy night;  
Who, with their drowsy, slow, and flagging wings,  
Clip dead men's graves, and from their misty jaws  
Breathe foul contagious darkness in the air.  
Therefore bring forth the soldiers of our prize;  
For, whilst our pinnace anchors in the Downs,  
Here shall they make their ransom on the sand,  
Or with their blood stain this discolour'd shore.—  
Master, this prisoner freely give I thee;—  
And thou that art his mate, make boot of this;—  
The other [*pointing to Suffolk*], Walter Whitmore, is thy  
share.

*First Gent.* What is my ransom, master? let me know.

*Mast.* A thousand crowns, or else lay down your head.

*Mate.* And so much shall you give, or off goes yours.

*Cap.* What, think you much to pay two thousand crowns,  
And bear the name and port of gentlemen?—  
Cut both the villains' throats;—for die you shall:—  
'The lives of those which we have lost in fight  
Be counterpois'd with such a petty sum? (<sup>50</sup>)

*First Gent.* I'll give it, sir; and therefore spare my life.

*Sec. Gent.* And so will I, and write home for it straight.

*Whit.* I lost mine eye in laying the prize aboard,  
And therefore, to revenge it, shalt thou die; [*To Suf.*  
And so should these, if I might have my will.

*Cap.* Be not so rash; take ransom, let him live.

*Suf.* Look on my George,—I am a gentleman;  
Rate me at what thou wilt, thou shalt be paid.

*Whit.* And so am I; my name is Walter Whitmore.  
How now! why start'st thou? what, doth death affright?

*Suf.* Thy name affrights me, in whose sound is death.  
A cunning man did calculate my birth,  
And told me that by *water* I should die:  
Yet let not this make thee be bloody-minded;  
Thy name is *Gaultier*, being rightly sounded.

*Whit.* *Gaultier* or *Walter*, which it is, I care not:  
Never yet did base dishonour blur our name,  
But with our sword we wip'd away the blot;  
Therefore, when merchant-like I sell revenge,  
Broke be my sword, my arms torn and defac'd,  
And I proclaim'd a coward through the world!

[*Lays hold on Suffolk.*]

*Suf.* Stay, Whitmore; for thy prisoner is a prince,  
The Duke of Suffolk, William de la Poole.

*Whit.* The Duke of Suffolk muffled up in rags!

*Suf.* Ay, but these rags are no part of the duke:  
Jove sometime went disguis'd, and why not I?<sup>(57)</sup>

*Cap.* But Jove was never slain, as thou shalt be.

*Suf.* Obscure and lowly swain, King Henry's blood,<sup>(58)</sup>  
The honourable blood of Lancaster,  
Must not be shed by such a jaded groom.  
Hast thou not kiss'd thy hand, and held my stirrup?  
Bare-headed plodded by my foot-cloth mule,  
And thought thee happy when I shook my head?  
How often hast thou waited at my cup,  
Fed from my trencher, kneel'd down at the board,  
When I have feasted with Queen Margaret?  
Remember it, and let it make thee crest-fall'n;  
Ay, and allay this thy abortive pride:  
How in our voiding-lobby hast thou stood,  
And duly waited for my coming forth?  
This hand of mine hath writ in thy behalf,  
And therefore shall it charm thy riotous tongue.

*Whit.* Speak, captain, shall I stab the forlorn swain?

*Cap.* First let my words stab him, as he hath me.

*Suf.* Base slave, thy words are blunt, and so art thou.

*Cap.* Convey him hence, and on our long-boat's side  
Strike off his head.

*Suf.* Thou dar'st not, for thy own.

*Cap.* Yes, Poole.

*Suf.* Poole! (<sup>59</sup>)

*Cap.* Poole! Sir Poole! lord!

Ay, kennel, puddle, sink; whose filth and dirt  
Trouble the silver spring where England drinks.  
Now will I dam up this thy yawning mouth  
For swallowing the treasure of the realm:  
Thy lips, that kiss'd the queen, shall sweep the ground;  
And thou, that smil'dst at good Duke Humphrey's death,  
Against the senseless winds shall grin in vain,  
Who, in contempt, shall hiss at thee again:  
And wedded be thou to the bags of hell,  
For daring to affy a mighty lord  
Unto the daughter of a worthless king,  
Having neither subject, wealth, nor diadem.  
By devilish policy art thou grown great,  
And, like ambitious Sylla, overgorg'd  
With gobbets of thy mother's bleeding heart.  
By thee Anjou and Maine were sold to France;  
The false revolting Normans thorough thee  
Disdain to call us lord; and Picardy  
Hath slain their governors, surpris'd our forts,  
And sent the ragged soldiers wounded home.  
The princely Warwick, and the Nevils all,—  
Whose dreadful swords were never drawn in vain,—  
As hating thee, are (<sup>60</sup>) rising up in arms:  
And now the house of York,—thrust from the crown  
By shameful murder of a guiltless king  
And lofty proud encroaching tyranny,—  
Burns with revenging fire; whose hopeful colours  
Advance our half-fac'd sun, striving to shine,  
Under the which is writ *Invidis nubibus*.  
The commons here in Kent are up in arms:  
And, to conclude, reproach and beggary  
Is crept into the palace of our king,  
And all by thee.—Away! convey him hence.

*Suf.* O that I were a god, to shoot forth thunder  
Upon these paltry, servile, abject drudges!  
Small things make base men proud: this villain here,  
Being captain of a pinnace, threatens more  
Than Bargulus<sup>(a)</sup> the strong Illyrian pirate.  
Drones suck not eagles' blood, but rob bee-hives:  
It is impossible that I should die  
By such a lowly vassal as thyself.  
Thy words move rage and not remorse in me:  
I go of message from the queen to France;  
I charge thee waft me safely cross the Channel.

*Cap.* Walter,—

*Whit.* Come, Suffolk, I must waft thee to thy death.

*Suf.* *Gelidus timor occupat artus:*<sup>(b)</sup>—it is thee I fear.

*Whit.* Thou shalt have cause to fear before I leave thee.

What, are ye daunted now? now will ye stoop?

*First Gent.* My gracious lord, entreat him, speak him  
fair.

*Suf.* Suffolk's imperial tongue is stern and rough,  
Us'd to command, untaught to plead for favour.  
Far be it we should honour such as these  
With humble suit: no, rather let my head  
Stoop to the block, than these knees bow to any,  
Save to the God of heaven and to my king;  
And sooner dance upon a bloody pole,  
Than stand uncover'd to the vulgar groom.  
True nobility is exempt from fear:—  
More can I bear than you dare execute.

*Cap.* Hail him away, and let him talk no more.

*Suf.* Come, soldiers, show what cruelty ye can,<sup>(c)</sup>  
That this my death may never be forgot!—  
Great men oft die by vile bezonians:  
A Roman sworder and banditto slave  
Murder'd sweet Tully; Brutus' bastard hand  
Stabb'd Julius Cæsar; savage islanders  
Pompey the Great; and Suffolk dies by pirates.

[*Exit Suffolk with Whitmore and others.*]

*Cap.* And as for these whose ransom we have set,  
It is our pleasure one of them depart:—

Therefore come you with us, and let him go.

*[Exit all except the First Gentleman.]*

*Re-enter WHITMORE with SURFOLK's body.*

*Whit.* There let his head and lifeless body lie,  
Until the queen his mistress bury it. *[Exit.]*

*First Gent.* O barbarous and bloody spectacle!  
His body will I bear unto the king:  
If he revenge it not, yet will his friends;  
So will the queen, that living held him dear.  
*[Exit with the body.]*

## SCENE II. *Blackheath.*

*Enter GEORGE BEVIS and JOHN HOLLAND.*

*Geo.* Come, and get thee a sword, though made of a lath:  
they have been up these two days.

*John.* They have the more need to sleep now, then.

*Geo.* I tell thee, Jack Cade the clothier means to dress the  
commonwealth, and turn it, and set a new nap upon it.

*John.* So he had need, for 'tis threadbare. Well, I say it  
was never merry world in England since gentlemen came up.

*Geo.* O miserable age! virtue is not regarded in handi-  
crafts-men.

*John.* The nobility think scorn to go in leather aprons.

*Geo.* Nay, more, the king's council are no good workmen.

*John.* True; and yet it is said,—labour in thy vocation;  
which is as much to say as,—let the magistrates be labouring  
men; and therefore should we be magistrates.

*Geo.* Thou hast hit it; for there's no better sign of a  
brave mind than a hard hand.

*John.* I see them! I see them! There's Best's son, the  
tanner of Wingham,—

*Geo.* He shall have the skins of our enemies, to make  
dog's-leather of.

*John.* And Dick the butcher,—

*Geo.* Then is sin struck down like an ox, and iniquity's  
throat cut like a calf.

*John.* And Smith<sup>(64)</sup> the weaver,—

*Geo. Argo,* their thread of life is spun.

*John.* Come, come, let's fall in with them.

*Drum.* Enter CADE, DICK the Butcher, SMITH the Weaver, and  
others in great number.

*Cade.* We John Cade, so termed of our supposed father,—

*Dick.* Or rather, of stealing a cade of herrings. [*Aside.*

*Cade.* For our enemies shall fall<sup>(65)</sup> before us,—inspired  
with the spirit of putting down kings and princes,—Com-  
mand silence.

*Dick.* Silence!

*Cade.* My father was a Mortimer,—

*Dick.* He was an honest man, and a good bricklayer.

[*Aside.*

*Cade.* My mother a Plantagenet,—

*Dick.* I knew her well; she was a midwife. [*Aside.*

*Cade.* My wife descended of the Lacies,—

*Dick.* She was, indeed, a pedler's daughter, and sold many  
laces. [*Aside.*

*Smith.* But now of late, not able to travel with her furred  
pack, she washes bucks here at home. [*Aside.*

*Cade.* Therefore am I of an honourable house.

*Dick.* Ay, by my faith, the field is honourable; and there  
was he born, under a hedge,—for his father had never a house  
but the cage. [*Aside.*

*Cade.* Valiant I am.

*Smith.* 'A must needs; for beggary is valiant. [*Aside.*

*Cade.* I am able to endure much.

*Dick.* No question of that; for I have seen him whipped  
three market-days together. [*Aside.*

*Cade.* I fear neither sword nor fire.

*Smith.* He need not fear the sword; for his coat is of proof.  
[*Aside.*

*Dick.* But methinks he should stand in fear of fire, being  
burnt i' the hand for stealing of sheep. [*Aside.*

*Cade.* Be brave, then; for your captain is brave, and vows  
reformation. There shall be in England seven halfpenny  
loaves sold for a penny: the three-hooped pot shall have ten



hoops; and I will make it felony to drink small beer: all the realm shall be in common; and in Cheapside shall my palfrey go to grass: and when I am king,—as king I will be,—

*All.* God save your majesty!

*Cade.* I thank you, good people:—there shall be no money; all shall eat and drink on my score; and I will apparel them all in one livery, that they may agree like brothers, and worship me their lord.

*Dick.* The first thing we do, let's kill all the lawyers.

*Cade.* Nay, that I mean to do. Is not this a lamentable thing, that of the skin of an innocent lamb should be made parchment? that parchment, being scribbled o'er, should undo a man? Some say the bee stings: but I say, 'tis the bee's wax; for I did but seal once to a thing, and I was never mine own man since.—How now! who's there?

*Enter some, bringing in the Clerk of Chatham.*

*Smith.* The clerk of Chatham: he can write and read and cast account.

*Cade.* O monstrous!

*Smith.* We took him setting of boys' copies.

*Cade.* Here's a villain!

*Smith.* Has a book in his pocket with red letters in't.

*Cade.* Nay, then, he is a conjuror.

*Dick.* Nay, he can make obligations, and write court-hand.

*Cade.* I am sorry for't: the man is a proper man, of mine honour; unless I find him guilty, he shall not die.—Come hither, sirrah, I must examine thee: what is thy name?

*Clerk.* Emmanuel.

*Dick.* They use to write it on the top of letters:—'twill go hard with you.

*Cade.* Let me alone.—Dost thou use to write thy name? or hast thou a mark to thyself, like an honest plain-dealing man?

*Clerk.* Sir, I thank God, I have been so well brought up that I can write my name.

*All.* He hath confessed; away with him! he's a villain and a traitor.

*Cade.* Away with him, I say! hang him with his pen and ink-horn about his neck. [*Exeunt some with the Clerk.*]

*Enter MICHAEL.*

*Mich.* Where's our general?

*Cade.* Here I am, thou particular fellow.

*Mich.* Fly, fly, fly! Sir Humphrey Stafford and his brother are hard by, with the king's forces.

*Cade.* Stand, villain, stand, or I'll fell thee down. He shall be encountered with a man as good as himself; he is but a knight, is 'a?

*Mich.* No.

*Cade.* To equal him, I will make myself a knight presently. [*Kneels.*] Rise up Sir John Mortimer. [*Rises.*] Now have at him!

*Enter Sir HUMPHREY STAFFORD and WILLIAM his brother, with drum and forces.*

*Staf.* Rebellious hinds, the filth and scum of Kent,  
Mark'd for the gallows, lay your weapons down;  
Home to your cottages, forsake this groom:—  
The king is merciful, if you revolt.

*W. Staf.* But angry, wrathful, and inclin'd to blood,  
If you go forward; therefore yield, or die.

*Cade.* As for these silken-coated slaves, I pass not:  
It is to you, good people, that I speak,  
Over whom, in time to come, I hope to reign;  
For I am rightful heir unto the crown.

*Staf.* Villain, thy father was a plasterer;  
And thou thyself a shearman,—art thou not?

*Cade.* And Adam was a gardener.

*W. Staf.* And what of that?

*Cade.* Marry, this:—Edmund Mortimer, Earl of March,  
Married the Duke of Clarence' daughter,—did he not?

*Staf.* Ay, sir.

*Cade.* By her he had two children at one birth.

*W. Staf.* That's false.

*Cade.* Ay, there's the question; but I say, 'tis true.  
The elder of them, being put to nurse,  
Was by a beggar-woman stol'n away,

And, ignorant of his birth and parentage,  
Became a bricklayer when he came to age;  
His son am I; deny it, if you can.

*Dick.* Nay, 'tis too true; therefore he shall be king.

*Smith.* Sir, he made a chimney in my father's house, and  
the bricks are alive at this day to testify it; therefore deny  
it not.

*Staf.* And will you credit this base drudge's words,  
That speaks he knows not what?

*All.* Ay, marry, will we; therefore get ye gone.

*W. Staf.* Jack Cade, the Duke of York hath taught you  
this.

*Cade.* He lies, for I invented it myself. [*Aside.*  
Go to, sirrah, tell the king from me, that, for his father's  
sake, Henry the fifth, in whose time boys went to span-  
counter for French crowns, I am content he shall reign; but  
I'll be protector over him.

*Dick.* And furthermore, we'll have the Lord Say's head  
for selling the dukedom of Maine.

*Cade.* And good reason; for thereby is England maimed,<sup>(66)</sup>  
and fain to go with a staff, but that my puissance holds it up.  
Fellow kings, I tell you that that Lord Say hath gelded the  
commonwealth, and made it an eunuch: and more than that,  
he can speak French; and therefore he is a traitor.

*Staf.* O gross and miserable ignorance!

*Cade.* Nay, answer, if you can:—the Frenchmen are our  
enemies; go to, then, I ask but this,—can he that speaks  
with the tongue of an enemy be a good counsellor, or no?

*All.* No, no, and therefore we'll have his head.

*W. Staf.* Well, seeing gentle words will not prevail,  
Assail them with the army of the king.

*Staf.* Herald, away; and throughout every town  
Proclaim them traitors that are up with Cade;  
That those which fly before the battle ends  
May, even in their wives' and children's sight,  
Be hang'd up for example at their doors:—  
And you that be the king's friends, follow me.

[*Exeunt the two Staffords, and Forces.*]

*Cade.* And you that love the commons, follow me.

Now show yourselves men; 'tis for liberty.  
We will not leave one lord, one gentleman;  
Spare none but such as go in clouted shoon;  
For they are thrifty honest men, and such  
As would (but that they dare not) take our parts.

*Dick.* They are all in order, and march toward us.

*Cade.* But then are we in order when we are most out of order. Come, march forward! [*Exeunt.*]

---

SCENE III. *Another part of Blackheath.*

*Alarums.* *The two parties enter and fight, and both the STAFFORDS are slain*

*Cade.* Where's Dick, the butcher of Ashford?

*Dick.* Here, sir.

*Cade.* They fell before thee like sheep and oxen, and thou behavedst thyself as if thou hadst been in thine own slaughter-house; therefore thus will I reward thee,—the Lent shall be as long again as it is; and thou shalt have a license to kill for a hundred lacking one, a week.<sup>(67)</sup>

*Dick.* I desire no more.

*Cade.* And, to speak truth, thou deservest no less. This monument of the victory will I bear [*putting on part of Sir H. Stafford's armour*]; and the bodies shall be dragged at my horse's heels till I do come to London, where we will have the mayor's sword borne before us.

*Dick.* If we mean to thrive and do good, break open the gaols, and let out the prisoners.

*Cade.* Fear not that, I warrant thee.—Come, let's march towards London. [*Exeunt.*]

---

SCENE IV. *London. A room in the palace.*

*Enter* King HENRY, *reading a supplication*; *the Duke of BUCKINGHAM and Lord SAY with him*: *at a distance, Queen MARGARET, mourning over SUFFOLK's head.*

*Q. Mar.* Oft have I heard that grief softens the mind,  
And makes it fearful and degenerate;

Think therefore on revenge, and cease to weep.  
 But who can cease to weep, and look on this?  
 Here may his head be on my throbbing breast;  
 But where's the body that I should embrace?

*Buck.* What answer makes your grace to the rebels' supplication?

*K. Hen.* I'll send some holy bishop to entreat;  
 For God forbid so many simple souls  
 Should perish by the sword! And I myself,  
 Rather than bloody war shall cut them short,  
 Will parley with Jack Cade their general:—  
 But stay, I'll read it over once again.

*Q. Mar.* Ah, barbarous villains! hath this lovely face  
 Rud d, like a wandering planet, over me,  
 And could it not enforce them to relent,  
 That were unworthy to behold the same?

*K. Hen.* Lord Say, Jack Cade hath sworn to have thy head.

*Say.* Ay, but I hope your highness shall have his.

*K. Hen.* How now, madam!  
 Still lamenting and mourning for Suffolk's death?<sup>(68)</sup>  
 I fear me, love,<sup>(69)</sup> if that I had been dead,  
 Thou wouldest not have mourn'd so much for me.

*Q. Mar.* No, my love, I should not mourn, but die for thee.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*K. Hen.* How now! what news? why com'st thou in such haste?

*Mess.* The rebels are in Southwark; fly, my lord!  
 Jack Cade proclaims himself Lord Mortimer,  
 Descended from the Duke of Clarence' house;  
 And calls your grace usurper openly,  
 And vows to crown himself in Westminster.  
 His army is a ragged multitude  
 Of hinds and peasants, rude and merciless:  
 Sir Humphrey Stafford and his brother's death  
 Hath given them heart and courage to proceed:  
 All scholars, lawyers, courtiers, gentlemen,  
 They call false caterpillars, and intend their death.

*K. Hen.* O graceless men! they know not what they do.

*Buck.* My gracious lord, retire to Killingworth,  
Until a power be rais'd to put them down.

*Q. Mar.* Ah, were the Duke of Suffolk now alive,  
These Kentish rebels would be soon appeas'd!

*K. Hen.* Lord Say, the traitors hate thee;<sup>(50)</sup>  
Therefore away with us to Killingworth.

*Say.* So might your grace's person be in danger;  
The sight of me is odious in their eyes:  
And therefore in this city will I stay,  
And live alone as secret as I may.

*Enter a second Messenger.*

*Sec. Mess.* Jack Cade hath gotten London-bridge;  
The citizens fly<sup>(71)</sup> and forsake their houses:  
The rascal people, thirsting after prey,  
Join with the traitor; and they jointly swear  
To spoil the city and your royal court.

*Buck.* Then linger not, my lord; away, take horse.

*K. Hen.* Come, Margaret; God, our hope, will succour us.

*Q. Mar.* My hope is gone, now Suffolk is deceas'd.

*K. Hen.* Farewell, my lord [*to Lord Say*]: trust not the  
Kentish rebels.

*Buck.* Trust nobody, for fear you be betray'd.

*Say.* The trust I have is in mine innocence,  
And therefore am I bold and resolute. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE V. *The same. The Tower.*

*Enter Lord Scales, and others, on the walls. Then enter certain  
Citizens, below.*

*Scales.* How now! is Jack Cade slain?

*First Cit.* No, my lord, nor likely to be slain; for they  
have won the bridge, killing all those that withstand them:  
the lord mayor craves aid of your honour from the Tower, to  
defend the city from the rebels.

*Scales.* Such aid as I can spare, you shall command;

But I am troubled here with them myself,—  
 The rebels have assay'd to win the Tower.  
 But get you to Smithfield, and gather head,  
 And thither I will send you Matthew Gough :  
 Fight for your king, your country, and your lives ;  
 And so, farewell, for I must hence again. [Exeunt.]

— — —

SCENE VI. *The same. Cannon-street.*

*Enter JACK CADE and his followers. He strikes his staff on  
 London-stone*

*Cade.* Now is Mortimer lord of this city. And here, sitting upon London-stone, I charge and command, that, of the city's cost, the pissing-conduit run nothing but claret wine this first year of our reign. And now henceforward it shall be treason for any that calls me other than Lord Mortimer.

*Enter a Soldier, running.*

*Sold.* Jack Cade ! Jack Cade !

*Cade.* Knock him down there. [They kill him.]

*Smith.* If this fellow be wise, he'll never call ye Jack Cade more : I think he hath a very fair warning.

*Dick.* My lord, there's an army gathered together in Smithfield.

*Cade.* Come, then, let's go fight with them : but first, go and set London-bridge on fire ; and, if you can, burn down the Tower too. Come, let's away. [Exeunt.]

— — —

SCENE VII. *The same. Smithfield.*

*Alarums. Enter, on one side, CADE and his company ; on the other, Citizens, and the King's forces, headed by MATTHEW GOUGH. They fight ; the Citizens are routed, and MATTHEW GOUGH is slain.*

*Cade.* So, sirs :—now go some and pull down the Savoy ; others to the inns of court ; down with them all.

*Dick.* I have a suit unto your lordship.

*Cade.* Be it a lordship, thou shalt have it for that word.

*Dick.* Only, that the laws of England may come out of your mouth.

*John.* Mass, 'twill be sore law, then; for he was thrust in the mouth with a spear, and 'tis not whole yet. [*Aside.*]

*Smith.* Nay, John, it will be stinking law; for his breath stinks with eating toasted cheese. [*Aside.*]

*Cade.* I have thought upon it, it shall be so. Away, burn all the records of the realm: my mouth shall be the parliament of England.

*John.* Then we are like to have biting statutes, unless his teeth be pulled out. [*Aside.*]

*Cade.* And henceforward all things shall be in common.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* My lord, a prize, a prize! here's the Lord Say, which sold the towns in France; he that made us pay one-and-twenty fifteens, and one shilling to the pound, the last subsidy.

*Enter GEORGE BEVIS, with the Lord SAY.*

*Cade.* Well, he shall be beheaded for it ten times.—Ah, thou say, thou serge, nay, thou buckram lord! now art thou within point-blank of our jurisdiction regal. What canst thou answer to my majesty for giving up of Normandy unto Monsieur Basimecu, the dauphin of France? Be it known unto thee by these presence, even the presence of Lord Mortimer, that I am the besom that must sweep the court clean of such filth as thou art. Thou hast most traitorously corrupted the youth of the realm in erecting a grammar-school: and whereas, before, our forefathers had no other books but the score and the tally, thou hast caused printing to be used; and, contrary to the king, his crown, and dignity, thou hast built a paper-mill. It will be proved to thy face that thou hast men about thee that usually talk of a noun and a verb, and such abominable words as no Christian ear can endure to hear. Thou hast appointed justices of peace, to call poor men before them about matters they were not able to answer. Moreover, thou hast put them in prison; and because they could not read, thou hast hanged them; when, indeed, only



for that cause they have been most worthy to live. Thou dost hide in<sup>(72)</sup> a foot-cloth, dost thou not?

*Say.* What of that?

*Cade.* Marry, thou oughtest not to let thy horse wear a cloak, when honest men than thou go in their hose and doublets.

*Dick.* And work in their shirt too; as myself, for example, that am a butcher.

*Say.* You men of Kent,—

*Dick.* What say you of Kent?

*Say.* Nothing but this,—'tis *bona terra, mala gens*.

*Cade.* Away with him, away with him! he speaks Latin.

*Say.* Hear me but speak, and bear me where you will.

Kent, in the Commentaries Caesar writ,  
Is term'd the civill'st place of all this isle;  
Sweet is the country, because full of riches;  
The people liberal, valiant, active, wealthy;  
Which makes me hope you are not void of pity.  
I sold not Maine, I lost not Normandy;  
Yet, to recover them, would lose my life.  
Justice with favour have I always done;  
Prayers and tears have mov'd me, gifts could never.  
When have I aught exacted at your hands,  
But<sup>(73)</sup> to maintain the king, the realm, and you?  
Large gifts have I bestow'd on learn'd clerks,  
Because my book prefer'd me to the king,  
And seeing ignorance is the curse of God,  
Knowledge the wing wherewith we fly to heaven.  
Unless you be possess'd with devilish spirits,  
You cannot but forbear to murder me;  
This tongue hath pailey'd unto foreign kings  
For your behoof,—

*Cade.* Tut, when struckest thou one blow in the field?

*Say.* Great men have reaching hands: oft have I struck  
Those that I never saw, and struck them dead.

*Geo.* O monstrous coward! what, to come behind folks?

*Say.* These cheeks are pale for watching for your good.

*Cade.* Give him a box o' the ear, and that will make 'em red again.

*Say.* Long sitting to determine poor men's causes  
Hath made me full of sickness and diseases.

*Cade.* Ye shall have a hempen caudle, then, and the help  
of hatchet.<sup>(74)</sup>

*Dick.* Why dost thou quiver, man?

*Say.* The palsy, and not fear, provokes<sup>(75)</sup> me.

*Cade.* Nay, he nods at us, as who should say, I'll be even  
with you: I'll see if his head will stand steadier on a pole,  
or no. Take him away, and behead him.

*Say.* Tell me wherein have I offended most?  
Have I affected wealth or honour,—speak?  
Are my chests fill'd up with extorted gold?  
Is my apparel sumptuous to behold?  
Whom have I injur'd, that ye seek my death?  
'These hands are free from guiltless blood-shedding,  
'This breast from harbouring foul deceitful thoughts.  
O, let me live!

*Cade.* I feel remorse in myself with his words; but I'll  
bridle it: he shall die, and it be but for pleading so well for  
his life [*aside*].—Away with him! he has a familiar under his  
tongue; he speaks not o' God's name. Go, take him away, I  
say, and strike off his head presently; and then break into  
his son-in-law's house, Sir James Cromer, and strike off his  
head, and bring them both upon two poles hither.

*All.* It shall be done.

*Say.* Ah, countrymen! if when you make your prayers,  
God should be so obdurate as yourselves,  
How would it fare with your departed souls?  
And therefore yet relent, and save my life.

*Cade.* Away with him! and do as I command ye.

[*Exeunt some with Lord Say.*]

'The proudest peer in the realm shall not wear a head on his  
shoulders, unless he pay me tribute; there shall not a maid  
be married, but she shall pay to me her maidenhead ere they  
have it: men shall hold of me *in capite*; and we charge and  
command that their wives be as free as heart can wish or  
tongue can tell.

*Dick.* My lord, when shall we go to Cheapside, and take  
up commodities upon our bills?

*Cade.* Marry, presently.

*All.* O, brave!

*Re-enter Rebels, with the heads of Lord SAY and his Son-in-law.*

*Cade.* But is not this braver?—Let them kiss one another, for they loved well when they were alive. Now part them again, lest they consult about the giving-up of some more towns in France. Soldiers, defer the spoil of the city until night: for with these borne before us, instead of maces, will we ride through the streets; and at every corner have them kiss.—Away! [*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE VIII. *Southwark.*

*Alarm.* *Enter CADE and all his Rabblement.*

*Cade.* Up Fish-street! down Saint Magnus'-corner! kill and knock down! throw them into 'Thames!—[*A parley sounded, then a retreat.*] What noise is this I hear? Dare any be so bold to sound retreat or parley, when I command them kill?

*Enter BUCKINGHAM and old CLIFFORD, with forces.*

*Buck.* Ay, here they be that dare and will disturb thee: Know, Cade, we come ambassadors from the king Unto the commons whom thou hast misled; And here pronounce free pardon to them all That will forsake thee and go home in peace.

*Clif.* What say ye, countrymen? will ye relent, And yield to mercy whilst 'tis offer'd you; Or let a rebel<sup>(70)</sup> lead you to your deaths? Who loves the king, and will embrace his pardon, Fling up his cap, and say, God save his majesty! Who hateth him, and honours not his father, Henry the fifth, that made all France to quake, Shake he his weapon at us, and pass by.

*All.* God save the king! God save the king!

*Cade.* What, Buckingham and Clifford, are ye so brave?—And you, base peasants, do ye believe him? will you needs

be hanged with your pardons about your necks? Hath my sword therefore broke through London gates, that you should leave me at the White Hart in Southwark? I thought ye would never have given out these arms till you had recovered your ancient freedom: but you are all recreants and dastards, and delight to live in slavery to the nobility. Let them break your backs with burdens, take your houses over your heads, ravish your wives and daughters before your faces: for me, I will make shift for one; and so, God's curse light upon you all!

*All.* We'll follow Cade, we'll follow Cade!

*Clif.* Is Cade the son of Henry the fifth,  
That thus you do exclaim you'll go with him?  
Will he conduct you through the heart of France,  
And make the meanest of you earls and dukes?  
Alas, he hath no home, no place to fly to;  
Nor knows he how to live, but by the spoil,  
Unless by robbing of your friends and us.  
Were't not a shame, that whilst you live at jar,  
The fearful French, whom you late vanquishèd,  
Should make a start o'er seas, and vanquish you?  
Methinks already in this civil broil  
I see them lording it in London streets,  
Crying "Viliaco!"<sup>(77)</sup> unto all they meet.  
Better ten thousand base-born Cades miscarry  
Than you should stoop unto a Frenchman's mercy.  
To France, to France, and get what you have lost;  
Spare England, for it is your native coast:  
Henry hath money, you are strong and manly;  
God on our side, doubt not of victory.

*All.* A Clifford! a Clifford! we'll follow the king and Clifford.

*Cade.* Was ever feather so lightly blown to and fro as this multitude? the name of Henry the fifth hailes them to an hundred mischiefs, and makes them leave me desolate. I see them lay their heads together to surprise me: my sword make way for me, for here is no staying [*aside*].—In despite of the devils and hell, have through the very midst of you! and heavens and honour be witness, that no want of

resolution in me, but only my followers' base and ignominious treasons, makes me betake me to my heels. *[Exit.]*

*Back.* What, is he fled? Go some, and follow him;  
And he that brings his head unto the king  
Shall have a thousand crowns for his reward.—

*[Exeunt some of them.]*

Follow me, soldiers; we'll devise a mean  
To reconcile you all unto the king.

*[Exeunt.]*

— — —

### SCENE IX. *Killingworth Castle.*

*Trumpets sounded. Enter King HENRY, Queen MARGARET, and SOMERSET, on the terrace of the castle.*

*K. Hen.* Was ever king that joy'd an earthly throne,  
And could command no more content than I?  
No sooner was I crept out of my cradle  
But I was made a king, at nine months old:  
Was never subject long'd to be a king  
As I do long and wish to be a subject.

*Enter, BUCKINGHAM and old CLIFFORD.*

*Buck.* Health and glad tidings to your majesty!

*K. Hen.* Why, Buckingham, is the traitor Cade surpris'd?

Or is he but retir'd to make him strong?

*Enter, below, a number of CADE'S followers, with halters about their necks.*

*Clif.* He is fled, my lord, and all his powers do yield;  
And humbly thus, with halters on their necks,  
Expect your highness' doom, of life or death.

*K. Hen.* Then, heaven, set ope thy everlasting gates,  
To entertain my vows of thanks and praise!—  
Soldiers, this day have you redeem'd your lives,  
And show'd how well you love your prince and country:  
Continue still in this so good a mind,  
And Henry, though he be infortunate,  
Assume yourselves, will never be unkind:

And so, with thanks and pardon to you all,  
I do dismiss you to your several countries.

*All.* God save the king! God save the king!

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* Please it your grace to be advèrtisèd  
The Duke of York is newly come from Ireland;  
And with a puissant and a mighty power  
Of gallowglasses and stout kerns<sup>(73)</sup>  
Is marching hitherward in proud array;  
And still proclaimeth, as he comes along,  
His arms<sup>(74)</sup> are only to remove from thee  
The Duke of Somerset, whom he terms a traitor.

*K. Hen.* Thus stands my state, 'twixt Cade and York  
distress'd;

Like to a ship that, having scap'd a tempest,  
Is straightway calm'd,<sup>(80)</sup> and boarded with a pirate:  
But now is Cade driven back, his men dispers'd;  
And now is York in arms to second him.—  
I pray thee, Buckingham, go and meet him;<sup>(81)</sup>  
And ask him what's the reason of these arms.  
'Tell him I'll send Duke Edmund to the Tower;—  
And, Somerset, we will commit thee thither,  
Until his army be dismiss'd from him.

*Som.* My lord,  
I'll yield myself to prison willingly,  
Or unto death, to do my country good.

*K. Hen.* In any case, be not too rough in terms;  
For he is fierce, and cannot brook hard language.

*Buck.* I will, my lord; and doubt not so to deal  
As all things shall redound unto your good.

*K. Hen.* Come, wife, let's in, and learn to govern better;  
For yet may England curse my wretched reign. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE X. *Kent. Iden's garden.*

*Enter CADE.*

*Cade.* Fie on ambition!<sup>(82)</sup> fie on myself, that have a sword,  
and yet am ready to famish! These five days have I hid me

in these woods; and durst not peep out, for all the country is laid for me; but now am I so hungry, that if I might have a lease of my life for a thousand years, I could stay no longer. Wherefore, on a brick-wall have I climbed into this garden, to see if I can eat grass, or pick a sallet another while, which is not amiss to cool a man's stomach this hot weather. And I think this word "sallet" was born to do me good: for many a time, but for a sallet, my brain-pan had been cleft with a brown bill; and many a time, when I have been dry, and bravely murching, it hath served me instead of a quart-pot to drink in; and now the word "sallet" must serve me to feed on.

*Enter IMEN, with Servants behind* <sup>(84)</sup>

*Iden.* Lord, who would live turmoiled in the court,  
And may enjoy such quiet walks as these?  
This small inheritance my father left me  
Contenteth me, and <sup>(84)</sup> worth a monarchy.  
I seek not to wax great by others' waning; <sup>(85)</sup>  
Or gather wealth, I care not with what envy:  
Sufficeth that I have maintains my state,  
And sends the poor well pleasèd from my gate.

*Cade.* Here's the lord of the soil come to seize me for a stray, for entering his fee-simple without leave [*aside*].—Ah, villain, thou wilt betray me, and get a thousand crowns of the king by carrying my head to him! but I'll make thee eat iron like an ostrich, and swallow my sword like a great pin, ere thou and I part.

*Iden.* Why, rude companion, whatsoe'er thou be,  
I know thee not; why, then, should I betray thee?  
Is't not enough to break into my garden,  
And, like a thief, to come to rob my grounds,  
Climbing my walls in spite of me the owner,  
But thou wilt brave me with these saucy terms?

*Cade.* Brave thee! ay, by the best blood that ever was broached, and beard thee too. Look on me well: I have eat no meat these five days; yet, come thou and thy five men, and if I do not leave you all as dead as a door-nail, I pray God I may never eat grass more.

*Iden.* Nay, it shall ne'er be said, while England stands,

That Alexander Iden, an esquire of Kent,  
Took odds to combat a poor famish'd man.  
Oppose thy steadfast-gazing eyes to mine,  
See if thou canst outface me with thy looks:  
Set limb to limb, and thou art far the lesser;  
Thy hand is but a finger to my fist;  
Thy leg a stick comparèd with this truncheon;  
My foot shall fight with all the strength thou hast;  
And if mine arm be heavèd in the air,  
Thy grave is digg'd already in the earth.  
As for words, whose greatness answers words,  
Let this my sword report what speech forbears.

*Cade.* By my valour, the most complete champion that ever I heard.—Steel, if thou turn the edge, or cut not out the burly-boned clown in chins of beef ere thou sleep in thy sheath, I beseech Jove,<sup>(86)</sup> on my knees, thou mayest be turned to hobnails. [*They fight. Cade falls.*] O, I am slain! famine and no other hath slain me: let ten thousand devils come against me, and give me but the ten meals I have lost, and I'd defy them all. Wither, garden; and be henceforth a burying-place to all that do dwell in this house, because the unconquered soul of Cade is fled.

*Iden.* Is't Cade that I have slain, that monstrous traitor? Sword, I will hallow thee for this thy deed,  
And hang thee o'er my tomb when I am dead:  
Ne'er shall this blood be wipèd from thy point;  
But thou shalt wear it as a herald's coat,  
To emblaze the honour that thy master got.

*Cade.* Iden, farewell; and be proud of thy victory. Tell Kent from me, she hath lost her best man; and exhort all the world to be cowards,—for I, that never feared any, am vanquished by famine, not by valour. [*Dies.*]

*Iden.* How much thou wrong'st me, heaven be my judge.  
Die, damnèd wretch, the curse of her that bare thee!  
And as I thrust thy body in with my sword,  
So wish I, I might thrust thy soul to hell.  
Hence will I drag thee headlong by the heels  
Unto a dunghill, which shall be thy grave,  
And there cut off thy most ungracious head;



Which I will bear in triumph to the king,  
Leaving thy trunk for crows to feed upon.  
[*Exeunt, Iden dragging out the body, and Servants.*]

---

## ACT V.

SCENE I. *Fields between Dartford and Blackheath.*

*The King's camp on one side. On the other, enter YORK attended, with drum and colours; his forces at some distance.*

YORK. From Ireland thus comes York to claim his right,  
And pluck the crown from feeble Henry's head:  
Ring, bells, aloud; burn, bonfires, clear and bright;  
'To entertain great England's lawful king.  
Ah, *sancta majestas!* who would not buy thee dear?  
Let them obey that know not how to rule;  
'This hand was made to handle naught but gold.  
I cannot give due action to my words,  
Except a sword or sceptre balance it:  
A sceptre shall it have,—have I a soul,—  
On which I'll toss the flower-de-luce of France.

*Enter BUCKINGHAM.*

Whom have we here? Buckingham, to disturb me?  
The king hath sent him, sure: I must dissemble. [*Aside.*]

Buck. York, if thou meancst well, I greet thee well.

YORK. Humphrey of Buckingham, I accept thy greeting.  
Art thou a messenger, or come of pleasure?

Buck. A messenger from Henry, our dread liege,  
To know the reason of these arms in peace;  
Or why thou, being a subject as I am,  
Against thy oath and true allegiance sworn,  
Shouldst raise so great a power without his leave,  
(Or dare to bring thy force so near the court,

YORK. Scarce can I speak, my choler is so great:  
O, I could hew up rocks, and fight with flint,

I am so angry at these abject terms ;  
And now, like Ajax Telamonius,  
On sheep or oxen could I spend my fury !  
I am far better born than is the king ;  
More like a king, more kingly in my thoughts :  
But I must make fair weather yet awhile,  
Till Henry be more weak, and I more strong.— [Aside.  
Buckingham,<sup>(87)</sup> I prithee, pardon me,  
That I have given no answer all this while ;  
My mind was troubled with deep melancholy.  
The cause why I have brought this army hither  
Is, to remove proud Somerset from the king,  
Seditious to his grace and to the state.

*Buck.* That is too much presumption on thy part .  
But if thy arms be to no other end,  
The king hath yielded unto thy demand ;  
The Duke of Somerset is in the Tower.

*York.* Upon thine honour, is he prisoner ?

*Buck.* Upon mine honour, he is prisoner.

*York.* Then, Buckingham, I do dismiss my powers.—  
Soldiers, I thank you all, disperse yourselves ;  
Meet me to-morrow in Saint George's field,  
You shall have pay and every thing you wish.—  
And let my sovereign, virtuous Henry,  
Command my eldest son, nay, all my sons,  
As pledges of my fealty and love ;  
I'll send them all as willing as I live :  
Lands, goods, horse, armour, any thing I have,  
Is his to use, so Somerset may die.

*Buck.* York, I commend this kind submission :  
We twain will go into his highness' tent.

*Enter King HENRY, attended.*

*K. Hen.* Buckingham, doth York intend no harm to us,  
That thus he marcheth with thee arm in arm ?

*York.* In all submission and humility,  
York doth present himself unto your highness.

*K. Hen.* Then what intend these forces thou dost bring ?

*York.* To leave the traitor Somerset from hence ;

And fight against that monstrous rebel Cade,  
Who since I heard to be discomfited.

*Enter IDEN, with CADE's head.*

*Iden.* If one so rude and of so mean condition  
May pass into the presence of a king,  
Lo, I present your grace a traitor's head,  
The head of Cade, whom I in combat slew.

*K. Hen.* The head of Cade!—Great God, how just art  
thou!—

O, let me view his visage, being dead,  
That living wrought me such exceeding trouble.—  
Tell me, my friend, art thou the man that slew him?

*Iden.* I was, an't like your majesty.

*K. Hen.* How art thou call'd? and what is thy degree?

*Iden.* Alexander Iden, that's my name;

A poor esquire of Kent, that loves his king.

*Buck.* So please it you, my lord, 'twere not amiss  
He were created knight for his good service.

*K. Hen.* Iden, kneel down. [*He kneels.*] Rise up a  
knight.

We give thee for reward a thousand marks;  
And will that thou henceforth attend on us.

*Iden.* May Iden live to merit such a bounty,  
And never live but true unto his liege!

*K. Hen.* See, Buckingham! Somerset comes with the  
queen:

Go, bid her hide him quickly from the duke.

*Enter Queen MARGARET and SOMERSET.*

*Q. Mar.* For thousand Yorks he shall not hide his head,  
But boldly stand, and front him to his face.

*York.* How now! is Somerset at liberty?  
Then, York, unloose thy long-imprison'd thoughts,  
And let thy tongue be equal with thy heart.  
Shall I endure the sight of Somerset?—  
False king! why hast thou broken faith with me,  
Knowing how hardly I can brook abuse?  
King did I call thee? no, thou art not king;

Not fit to govern and rule multitudes,  
Which dar'st not, no, nor canst not rule a traitor.  
That head of thine doth not become a crown;  
Thy hand is made to grasp a palmer's staff,  
And not to grace an awful princely sceptre.  
That gold must round engirt these brows of mine;  
Whose smile and frown, like to Achilles' spear,  
Is able with the change to kill and cure.  
Here is a hand to hold a sceptre up,  
And with the same to act controlling laws.  
Give place: by heaven, thou shalt rule no more  
O'er him whom heaven created for thy ruler.

*Som.* O monstrous traitor!—I arrest thee, York,  
Of capital treason 'gainst the king and crown:  
Obey, audacious traitor; kneel for grace.

*York.* Wouldst have me kneel? first let me ask of these,<sup>(88)</sup>  
If they can brook I bow a knee to man.—  
*Sirrah,* call in my sons to be my bail: [*Exit an Attendant.*]  
I know, ere they will have me go to ward,  
They'll pawn their swords for<sup>(89)</sup> my enfranchisement.

*Q. Mar.* Call hither Clifford; bid him come amain,  
To say if that the bastard boys of York  
Shall be the surety for their traitor father. [*Exit an Attendant.*]

*York.* O blood-bespotted Neapolitan,  
Outcast of Naples, England's bloody scourge!  
The sons of York, thy betters in their birth,  
Shall be their father's bail; and bane to those  
That for my surety will refuse the boys!  
Sec where they come: I'll warrant they'll make it good.

*Q. Mar.* And here comes Clifford to deny their bail.

*Enter, on one side, EDWARD and RICHARD PLANTAGENET, with forces;  
on the other, old CLIFFORD and his Son, with forces also.*

*Clif.* Health and all happiness to my lord the king!  
[*Kneels.*]

*York.* I thank thee, Clifford: say, what news with thee?  
Nay, do not fright us with an angry look:  
We are thy sovereign, Clifford, kneel again;  
For thy mistaking so, we pardon thee.

*Clif.* This is my king, York, I do not mistake;  
But thou mistak'st me much to think I do:—  
To Bedlam with him! is the man grown mad?

*K. Hen.* Ay, Clifford; a bedlam and ambitious humour  
Makes him oppose himself against his king.

*Clif.* He is a traitor; let him to the Tower,  
And chop away that factious pate of his.

*Q. Mar.* He is arrested, but will not obey;  
His sons, he says, shall give their words for him.

*York.* Will you not, sons?

*Edw.* Ay, noble father, if our words will serve.

*Rich.* And if words will not, then our weapons shall.

*Clif.* Why, what a brood of traitors have we here!

*York.* Look in a glass, and call thy image so:

I am thy king, and thou a false-heart traitor.—

Call hither to the stake my two brave bears,

That with the very shaking of their chains

They may astonish these fell-lurking<sup>(60)</sup> curs:

Bid Salisbury and Warwick come to me.

*Drums.* Enter WARWICK and SALISBURY, with forces.

*Clif.* Are these thy bears? we'll bait thy bears to death,  
And manacle the bear-ward in their chains,  
If thou dar'st bring them to the baiting-place.

*Rich.* Oft have I seen a hot o'erweening cur  
Run back and bite, because he was withheld;  
Who, being<sup>(61)</sup> suffer'd with the bear's fell paw,  
Hath clapp'd his tail between his legs and cried:  
And such a piece of service will you do,  
If you oppose yourselves to match Lord Warwick.

*Clif.* Hence, heap of wrath, foul indigested lump,  
As crookèd in thy manners as thy shape!

*York.* Nay, we shall heat you thoroughly anon.

*Clif.* Take heed, lest by your heat you burn yourselves.

*K. Hen.* Why, Warwick, hath thy knee forgot to bow?—  
Old Salisbury,—shame to thy silver hair,  
Thou mad misleader of thy brain-sick son!—  
What, wilt thou on thy death-bed play the ruffian,  
And seek for sorrow with thy spectacles?—

O, where is faith? O, where is loyalty?  
If it be banish'd from the frosty head,  
Where shall it find a harbour in the earth?—  
Wilt thou go dig a grave to find out war,  
And shame thine honourable age with blood?  
Why art thou old, and want'st experience?  
Or wherefore dost abuse it, if thou hast it?  
For shame! in duty bend thy knee to me,  
That bows unto the grave with mickle age.

*Sal.* My lord, I have consider'd with myself  
The title of this most renown'd duke;  
And in my conscience do repute his grace  
The rightful heir to England's royal seat.

*K. Hen.* Hast thou not sworn allegiance unto me?

*Sal.* I have.

*K. Hen.* Canst thou dispense with heaven for such an  
oath?

*Sal.* It is great sin to swear unto a sin;  
But greater sin to keep a sinful oath.  
Who can be bound by any solemn vow  
To do a murderous deed, to rob a man,  
To force a spotless virgin's chastity,  
To reave the orphan of his patrimony,  
To wing the widow from her custom'd right;  
And have no other reason for this wrong,  
But that he was bound by a solemn oath?

*Q. Mar.* A subtle traitor needs no sophister.

*K. Hen.* Call Buckingham, and bid him arm himself.

*York.* Call Buckingham, and all the friends thou hast,  
I am resolv'd for death or <sup>(82)</sup> dignity.

*Clif.* 'The first I warrant thee, if dreams prove true.

*War.* You were best to go to bed and dream again,  
To keep thee from the tempest of the field.

*Clif.* I am resolv'd to bear a greater storm  
Than any thou canst conjure up to-day;  
And that I'll write upon thy burgonet,  
Might I but know thee by thy household<sup>(83)</sup> badge.

*War.* Now, by my father's badge, old Nevil's crest,  
The rampant bear chain'd to the ragged staff,

This day I'll wear aloft my burgonet  
 (As on a mountain-top the cedar shows,  
 That keeps his leaves in spite of any storm),  
 Even to affright thee with the view thereof.

*Clif.* And from thy burgonet I'll rend thy bear,  
 And tread it under foot with all contempt,  
 Despite the bear-ward that protects the bear.

*Y. Clif.* And so to arms, victorious<sup>(91)</sup> father,  
 To quell the rebels and their complices.

*Rich.* Fie! charity, for shame! speak not in spite,  
 For you shall sup with Jesu Christ to-night.

*Y. Clif.* Foul stigmatic, that's more than thou canst tell.

*Rich.* If not in heaven, you'll surely sup in hell.

[*Exeunt severally.*]

## SCENE II. *Saint Albans.*

*Alarums: excursions. Enter WARWICK.*

*War.* Clifford of Cumberland, 'tis Warwick calls!  
 And if thou dost not hide thee from the bear,  
 Now,—when the angry trumpet sounds alarum,  
 And dead men's cries do fill the empty air,—  
 Clifford, I say, come forth and fight with me!  
 Proud northern lord, Clifford of Cumberland,  
 Warwick is hoarse with calling thee to arms,

*Enter YORK*

How now, my noble lord! what, all a-foot?

*York.* The deadly-handed Clifford slew my steed;  
 But match to match I have encounter'd him,  
 And made a prey for carrion kites and crows  
 Even of the bonny beast he lov'd so well.

*Enter old CLIFFORD.*

*War.* Of one or both of us the time is come.

*York.* Hold, Warwick, seek thee out some other chase,  
 For I myself must hunt this deer to death.

*War.* Then, nobly, York; 'tis for a crown thou fight'st,—  
 As I intend, Clifford, to thrive to-day,

It grieves my soul to leave thee unassail'd. [Exit.

*Clif.* What seest thou in me, York? why dost thou pause?

*York.* With thy brave bearing should I be in love,  
But that thou art so fast mine enemy.

*Clif.* Nor should thy prowess want praise and esteem,  
But that 'tis shown ignobly and in treason.

*York.* So let it help me now against thy sword,  
As I in justice and true right express it!

*Clif.* My soul and body on the action both!

*York.* A dreadful lay!—address thee instantly.

*Clif.* *La fin couronne les œuvres.*

[*They fight, and Clifford falls and dies.*

*York.* Thus war hath given thee peace, for thou art still.  
Peace with his soul, heaven, if it be thy will! [Exit.

*Enter young CLIFFORD.*

*Y. Clif.* Shame and confusion! all is on the rout;  
Fear frames disorder, and disorder wounds  
Where it should guard. O war, thou son of hell,  
Whom angry heavens do make their minister,  
Throw in the frozen bosoms of our part  
Hot coals of vengeance!—Let no soldier fly:  
He that is truly dedicate to war  
Hath no self-love; nor he that loves himself  
Hath not essentially, but by circumstance,  
The name of valour.—O, let the vile world end,  
[*Seeing his father's body.*

And the premised flames of the last day  
Knit earth and heaven together!  
Now let the general trumpet blow his blast,  
Particularities and petty sounds  
To cease!—Wast thou ordain'd, dear father,  
To lose thy youth in peace, and to achieve  
The silver livery of advisèd age,  
And, in thy reverence and thy chair-days, thus  
To die in ruffian battle?—Even at this sight  
My heart is turn'd to stone; and while 'tis mine,  
It shall be stony. York not our old men spares;  
No more will I their babes: tears virginal



Shall be to me even as the dew to fire ;  
 And beauty, that the tyrant oft reclaims,  
 Shall to my flaming wrath be oil and flax.  
 Henceforth I will not have to do with pity :  
 Meet I an infant of the house of York,  
 Into as many gobbets will I cut it,  
 As wild Medea young Absyrtus did :  
 In cruelty will I seek out my fame.—  
 Come, thou new ruin of old Clifford's house :

[*Taking up the body.*]

As did Æneas old Anchises bear,  
 So bear I thee upon my manly shoulders ;  
 But then Æneas bare a living load,  
 Nothing so heavy as these woes of mine.

[*Exit.*]

*Enter RICHARD PLANTAGENET and SOMERSET, fighting, and  
 SOMERSET is killed.*

*Rich.* So, lie thou there ;—  
 For underneath an alehouse' paltry sign,  
 The Castle in Saint Albans, Somerset  
 Hath made the wizard famous in his death.—  
 Sword, hold thy temper ; heart, be wrathful still :  
 Priests pray for enemies, but princes kill.

[*Exit.*]

*Alarums . excursions . Enter King HENRY, Queen MARGARET,  
 and others, retreating.*

*Q. Mar.* Away, my lord ! you are slow ; for shame, away !

*K. Hen.* Can we outrun the heavens ? good Margaret,  
 stay.

*Q. Mar.* What are you made of ? you'll nor fight nor fly :  
 Now is it manhood, wisdom, and defence,  
 To give the enemy way ; and to secure us  
 By what we can, which can no more but fly.

[*Alarum afar off.*]

If you be ta'en, we then should see the bottom  
 Of all our fortunes : but if we haply scape  
 (As well we may, if not through your neglect),  
 We shall to London get : where you are lov'd ;  
 And where this breach, now in our fortunes made,  
 May readily be stopp'd.

*Re-enter young CLIFFORD.*

*Y. Clif.* But that my heart's on future mischief set,  
I would speak blasphemy ere bid you fly :  
But fly you must ; uncurable discomfit  
Reigns in the hearts of all our present parts.  
Away, for your relief ! and we will live  
To see their day, and them our fortune give :  
Away, my lord, away ! [*Exeunt.*

---

SCENE III. *Fields near Saint Albans.*

*Alarum . retreat. Flourish ; then enter YORK, RICHARD PLANTAGENET, WARWICK, and Soldiers, with drum and colours.*

*York.* Of<sup>us</sup> Salisbury, who can report of him,—  
That winter lion, who in rage forgets  
Aged contusions and all brush of time,  
And, like a gallant in the brow of youth,  
Repairs him with occasion ? This happy day  
Is not itself, nor have we won one foot,  
If Salisbury be lost.

*Rich.* My noble father,  
Three times to-day I help him to his horse,  
Three times bestrid him, thrice I led him off,  
Persuaded him from any further act :  
But still, where danger was, still there I met him ;  
And like rich hangings in a homely house,  
So was his will in his old feeble body.  
But, noble as he is, look where he comes.

*Enter SALISBURY.*

*Sal.* Now, by my sword, well hast thou fought to-day ;  
By the mass, so did we all.—I thank you, Richard :  
God knows how long it is I have to live ;  
And it hath pleas'd him that three times to-day  
You have defended me from imminent death.—  
Well, lords, we have not got that which we have :  
'Tis not enough our foes are this time fled,

Being opposites of such repairing nature.

*York.* I know our safety is to follow them;  
For, as I hear, the king is fled to London,  
To call a present court of parliament.

Let us pursue him, ere the writs go forth:—

What says Lord Warwick? shall we after them?

*War.* After them! nay, before them, if we can.  
Now, by my hand,<sup>(96)</sup> lords, 'twas a glorious day:  
Saint Albans' battle, won by famous York,  
Shall be eterniz'd in all age to come.—

Sound drums<sup>(97)</sup> and trumpets;—and to London all:

And more such days as these to us befall! [*Exeunt.*

P. 99. (1)

"*The Dukes of Orleans, Calaber, Bretagne, and Alençon,*" &c.

I may observe that Shakespeare has allowed this line to stand just as he found it in *The First Part of the Contention*, &c.; and, indeed, even in the plays which are wholly his own, he, like other early dramatists, considered himself at liberty occasionally to disregard the laws of metre in giving a list of proper names: e.g. a blank-verse speech in *Richard II.* act ii. sc. 1 (vol. iii. p. 299), contains the following line,—

"Sir John Norbery, Sir Robert Wateton, and Francis Quoint."

(Here the editor of the second folio throw out the "and.")

P. 100. (2) "Item, *that the duchy of Anjou and the county of Maine shall be released and delivered to,*" &c.

"When the Cardinal afterwards reads this article, he says: 'Item, *It is further agreed between them, that the duchies of Anjou and Maine shall be released and delivered over to,*' &c. But the words in the instrument could not thus vary, whilst it was passing from the hands of the Duke to those of the Cardinal. For the inaccuracy Shakespeare must answer, the author of the original play not having been guilty of it. This kind of inaccuracy is, I believe, peculiar to our poet," &c. MALONE.—Mr. Knight and Mr. Collier suppose that Gloster's "sudden qualm" prevents him from giving the exact words of the document: but,—not to mention the utter improbability that, if such had been Shakespeare's intention, he would have left us in any doubt about the matter,—the occurrence of precisely similar inconsistencies in a later part of the play is alone sufficient to prove that they are mistaken. See note (20).

P. 101. (3) "*And hath his highness in his infancy  
Been crown'd in Paris, in despite of foes?*"

Here Steevens inserted the "*Been*" (and so Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector).—Rowe printed,

"*And was his highness in his infancy  
Crowned in Paris,*" &c.

Mr. White Grant (*Shakespeare's Scholar*, &c. p. 334) very ingeniously proposes (making these lines a continuation of the preceding sentence),—

"*And had his highness in his infancy  
Crowned in Paris,*" &c.

("have we studied, and sat in council, and had his highness crowned in Paris," &c.). But I cannot think that there is any corruption in *the first line*: and the present passage reads like one of a series of questions,—"*What! did my brother Henry,*" &c.—"*And did my brother Bedford,*" &c.—"*Have you yourselves,*" &c.—"*Or hath mine uncle Beaufort and myself,*" &c.—"*And hath his highness in his infancy,*" &c.? (To object to the alteration, "*Been*

*crown'd*," &c., because it involves the elision of a syllable, is hypercritical another line of the present play, p. 110, stands thus in the folio,

"Are brazen Images of *Canonized* Saints,"—

where the last syllable of "*Canonized*" ought to have been elided.)

P. 102. (1) "*the duchy of Anjou and Maine*," &c.

We have had a little before (p. 100) "*the duchy of Anjou and the county of Maine*," as also "*the duchies of Anjou and Maine*;" and here the more recent editors (Mr. Collier excepted) silently alter "*duchy*" to "*duchies*,"—rather hastily perhaps: in *The First Part of Henry VI.* p. 73, "*the county Maine and Anjou*" are, immediately after, spoken of as "*those two counties*."

P. 104. (2) "— *will be protector*," &c.

The folio has "— *will be Protector*," &c.

P. 101. (3)

"*Then let's make haste away, and look unto the man*,"

From this line several of the modern editors have thrown out "*away*."

P. 106. (4)

"*My troublous dream this night doth make me sad*"

The folio has "*My troublous dreames this night*," &c.

P. 107. (5)

"*And in that chan where kings and queens are crown'd*," &c.

The folio has "— *were crown'd*," &c. (Mr. Collier prints "— *were crown'd*," &c., and observes that "modern editors have substituted *were* for '*were*' against all authority." None, surely, was required, yet they had that of the original play,—

"and seated in the chaire

Where Kings and Queenes *are* crown'd," &c.

P. 109. (6)

"*our supplications in the quill*"

Perhaps "*in the quill*" may be equivalent to *penned* (as "*in print*" means *printed*); but I greatly doubt it.—In my *Few Notes*, &c. p. 99, I have shown that "*quill*" cannot mean here, as Mr. Hunter infers from a line in Sylvester's *Du Bartas*, the narrow passage through which the Protector was to pass. When, *ibid.* p. 100, I recommended that we should read "*in the coil*" (i.e. in the stir, hustle,—"*coil*" being formerly often written "*quail*,"—for which "*quill*" is an easy misprint), I was not aware that Mr. Singer had anticipated me in his *Shakespeare*, 1826.—Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector substitutes "*in the*

sequel;" and, in explanation of that lection, Mr. Collier says, "*sequel* is used ignorantly for *sequence*" But why should the Petitioner, whose language is elsewhere correct enough, use this one word "ignorantly?" Besides, when a dramatist puts a wrong word into the mouth of a comic character, there is always something ludicrous, or inclining to the ludicrous, in the mistake of the speaker according to the Ms. Corrector's alteration, as explained by Mr. Collier, there is nothing of the kind here.

P. 109. (10) "To my Lord Protector!"

Capell reads, with great probability, "For my lord protector!" making Margaret echo the words of the last speaker.

P. 110. (11) "That my master was?"

The folio has "That my Mistresse was?"

P. 110. (12) "Is this the fashion," &c.

The folio has "Is this the fushions," &c.

P. 111. (13) "Beside the haughty protector, have we Beaufort," &c.

The editor of the second folio altered "haughty" to "haught"

P. 113. (14)  
"Could I come near your beauty with my nails,  
I'd set my ten commandments in your face."

The folio has "I could set," &c,—a reading which, on the score of expression at least, is not indefensible: but since we may suspect that "could" is an error occasioned by the same word occurring immediately above, and since the *First Part of the Contention*, &c., in the corresponding passage, has "I'd set," &c., I adopt, with the modern editors, the latter reading.

P. 113. (15) "her fume needs no spurs," &c

The editor of the second folio substituted "can need" for "needs." (I find that I have queried on the margin of my *Shakespeare*—"Can 'fume' be a misprint for 'furie'?" )

P. 113. (16) "She'll gallop fast enough to her destruction."

So Pope (and Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector).—The folio has "She'll gallop farre enough," &c.

## P. 115. (17)

"K. Hen. *Then be it so.—My Lord of Somerset,  
We make your grace regent over the French.*"

These two lines were inserted by Theobald from *The First Part of the Contention*, &c., because "without them, the King has not declared his assent to Gloucester's opinion; and the Duke of Somerset is made to thank him for the regency, before the king has deputed him to it."—Malone rejects the lines, drawing a most inconsequential conclusion from the variations in this scene between the old and the amended play, and supposing that "Shakespeare thought Henry's assent might be *expressed by a nod*"!—Capell omits them; and asks (with an ignorance of stage-business even greater than Malone's), "may not the king's acquiescence be conveyed by a look?"!—Mr. Collier throws them out, content with the old hypothesis of the *nod*.—Mr. Knight excludes them, for "Henry, having given the power of deciding to Gloucester, both in the case of the armourer and of the regency, might be intended by the poet, on his revival of the play, to speak by the mouth of the protector." But Henry has *not* "given the power of deciding to Gloucester;" he has merely put to him the question,—

"Uncle, *what shall we say to this in law?*"

Now, why should Malone, Capell, Mr. Collier, and Mr. Knight so obstinately refuse to be indebted to the elder play here, when afterwards *they are compelled to borrow from it twice*, in order to render the text intelligible? In a note on act iv. sc. 1, Mr. Collier writes, "This line, necessary to the congruity of the dialogue, is derived from the quarto," &c. and Mr. Knight, *ibid.*, observes, "The passage in brackets is not found in the folio. Without it the point of the dialogue is lost. There can be no doubt that it was omitted by a typographical error," &c.—What is more,—in act ii. sc. 3, where Hamlet says, "and therefore, Peter, have at thee with a downright blow," Malone and Mr. Knight add from the quarto, *without the slightest necessity*, "as Revis of Southampton fell upon Ascapart."

## P. 116. (18)

"Boling. *'First of the king: what shall of him become?'*"

[Reading out of a paper.]

Here Mr. Collier omits the modern stage-direction, "*Reading out of a paper*," and observes, "We need not suppose that Bolingbroke's questions were written in the first instance," &c. But he appears to have forgotten that, at the commencement of this scene, as given in *The First Part of the Contention*, &c., the Duchess says,

"Here, Sir John, take *this scrole of paper here,  
Wherin is writ the questions you shall aske,*" &c.

P. 117. (19) "We'll see your trinkets here all forthcoming.—  
All away!"

This is evidently corrupt. We ought, I believe, to read, either,—

"—— *here all forthcoming.*—  
Away!"

on,—

“ — *here forthcoming* all.—

*Away!*”

for it would seem that either the “*All*” was repeated, by a mistake of the transcriber or compositor, from the preceding line,—or that the reading in the Ms having been altered from “*here all forthcoming*” to “*here forthcoming* all,” the first-written “*all*” was allowed by mistake to retain its place, while the other was improperly transferred from the end of the first line to the commencement of the second.—The more recent editors, with a violent and truly absurd punctuation, print,—

“ We'll see your trinkets *here* all forthcoming ,  
All.—Away !”

P. 117. (20)

“ *Tell me what fate awaits the Duke of Suffolk?*

*What shall betide the Duke of Somerset?*”

But at p. 116, where Bolingbroke reads the very paper which York is now reading, we find,—

“ *What fates await the Duke of Suffolk?*

*What shall befall the Duke of Somerset?*”

See note (2).

P. 118. (21) “ *With such holiness can you do it?*”

Warburton would read,

“ *With such holiness can you not do it?*”

Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector,

“ *And with such holiness you well can do it.*”

Mr. Singer (*Shakespeare Vindicated*, &c. p. 150),

“ *With such holiness you can do it.*”

But,—however unsatisfactory the old reading may be,—all the above emendations are opposed by the corresponding passage in *The First Part of the Contention*, &c.,—

“ Church-men so hate. Good vnecke *can you doate*” [in 4to, 1619, “*can you do't*”].

P. 119. (22)

“ *Glo. True, uncle.*

*Car. Are ye advis'd?—the east side of the grove?*

[*Aside to Glo*

*Glo. Cardinal, I am with you.*

[*Aside to Car.*”

In the folio the whole of this is assigned to “*Glo.*”—Theobald made the proper distribution.



P. 120. (1)

"Simprow," &amp;c.

The folio has "Symon," &amp;c.

P. 121. (2)

"think his running," &amp;c.

So *The First Part of the Contention*, &c.—The folio has "thinke it, Cinning," &c.; but in the rest of the spech it agrees verbatim with the 4to.—The whole is printed as prose in the older play. The folio divides it into lines of unequal length (which, by the by, does not prove that the editor of the folio took the speech for verse, since he afterwards allows several prose-speeches of Cade to stand so divided). Boswell apprehends that "no metre was intended" here; but I see every reason to believe that the present speech was written by the original author in verse, and that his verse has been corrupted into prose. I think, however, with Mr. Knight, that prose is preferable to such verse as an attempt at metrical arrangement, without alterations of the text, produces here.

P. 123. (3)

"Marryed Richard Earle of Cambridge, who was son  
To Edmund Langley, Edward the third's fifth son."

The folio has,—

"Marryed Richard, Earle of Cumbridge  
Who was to Edmond Langley,  
Edward the thirds fift Sonnes Sonne,"

P. 125. (4) "What plain proceeding is more plain than this?"

The folio has "What plaine proceedings is more," &amp;c.

P. 126. (5)

"for sins," &amp;c.

The folio has "for sinne," &amp;c.

P. 127. (5)

"God and King Henry govern England's helm!—  
Give up your staff, sir, and the king his realm."

The folio has "— England's realme."—The emendation (an obvious one) was made by Johnson.

P. 127. (20)

"Glo. My staff! here, noble Henry, is my staff!"

After this line Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector inserts,—

"To think I fain would keep it, makes me laugh;"

and Mr. Collier calls it "an important addition;"—but is it not rather "an impertinent addition"? for assuredly Gloster is in no laughing humour.

P. 127. (30)

"Thus Eleanor's pride dies in her youngest days"

Rowe prints it "— her younger days."—Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector substi-

tutes " — *her proudest days,*" and Mr. Singer's Ms. Corrector (*Shakespeare Vindicated*, &c. p. 152) " — *her strongest days.*"

P. 129. (31) " *mine enemy,*" &c.

So the second folio.—The first folio has "*mine Enemies,*" &c.

P. 129. (32) " *With envious looks, laughing at thy shame.*"

So the line stands both in the folio and in the original play.—The editor of the second folio interpolated "still" before "*laughing,*" &c.

P. 134. (31) " *For he's inclin'd as is the ravenous wolf.*"

The folio has " — *as is the ravenous Wolves,*"—I give the reading of Rowe, which (on account of what precedes,—"*a dove,*" "*the hateful raven,*" and "*a lamb*") is preferable to the more recent alteration " — *as are the ravenous wolves.*"

P. 135. (34)

" *Well, Suffolk, thou shalt not see me blush,*" &c.

The editor of the second folio printed "*Well, Suffolk, yet thou shalt not,*" &c.—Malone reads, "*Well, Suffolk's duke, thou shalt not,*" &c.—the corresponding line in the original play being, "*Why Suffolkes Duke thou shalt not see me blush,*" &c. (Qy "*Well, Suffolk, well, thou shalt not,*" &c.? compare, at p. 141, "*Well, nobles, well,*" &c.)

P. 136. (33)

" *from all suspect.*"

The folio has "*from all suspence,*"

P. 137. (36) " *The ancient proverb will be well effected,*" &c.

Here Mr. Knight puts a note; "effected—the original *affected*. Mr. Collier made this proper change." But "*effected*" is the reading both of the first and of the second folio; "*affected*" the misprint of the *Var. Shakespeare*.

P. 138. (37)

" *Free lords,*" &c.

According to Warburton, here "*Free*" means "not bound up to such precise regards of religion as is the king;" according to Capell, "free from such weaknesses as you see in the king;" and Mr. Singer (in his *Shakespeare*, 1820,) suggests that the word is perhaps to be understood in its old signification of "noble."—But, surely, the reading "*Free*" is very questionable—Hammer printed "*See, lords,*" &c.—Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector substitutes "*Fair lords,*" &c. (in *The Third Part of Henry VI.* act iii. sc. 1, we have "*How now, fair lords!*")

P. 139. (38) " *As Humphrey, prov'd by reasons, to my liege.*"

Hammer printed "*As Humphrey's prov'd by reasons to my liege,*"

P. 142. (31)

"*Whiles I in Ireland nourish a mighty band,*" &c.

In Walker's *Shakespeare's Versification*, &c. p. 65, this line is quoted to show that "*nourish*" is used here as a monosyllable; nor have any of Shakespeare's commentators hesitated at the word. I am strongly inclined, however, to believe that Mr. Collier's *Ms. Corrector* may have been right when he substituted "*Whiles I in Ireland march a mighty band,*" &c.; and the more so, because in *The First Part of Henry VI.* (see p. 1, and note (\*), p. 83), the reading of the folio, "*a Nourish of salt Teares*" is undoubtedly a mistake for "*a marish of salt tears*."

P. 142. (40) "*Will make him say I mov'd him to those arms,*"

We so frequently find "*arms*" misprinted "*arms*," that perhaps we might suspect such to be the case here, were it not for the corresponding passage of the original play;—

"Heele nere confesse that I did set him on,  
And therefore . . . .  
That so soone as I am gone he may begin  
To rise in *Armes* with troupes of cuntry swaines," &c

And see note (79)

P. 143. (41)

"*Margaret*"

The folio has "*Nell*"—Capell and Mr. Collier substitute "*Meg*."

P. 145. (42)

"*Margaret*."

The folio has "*Elianon*."

P. 145. (43)

"*Erect his statua, and worship it.*"

The folio has "*Erect his statue,*" &c.—Mr. Collier observes, *ad l.*, "We must recollect that '*statue*' was sometimes pronounced as three syllables. Modern editors, forgetting this, have all conspired to interpolate *then* into this line after '*statue*,' without the slightest authority or notice."—But we know for certain that the Latin form *statua* was very frequently used, not only by writers of all descriptions during the days of Shakespeare, but also by those who flourished at a late period of the seventeenth century: several instances of this are cited by Todd (Johnson's *Dict.* in v. *Statue*); and I could easily add a dozen others. I therefore have not the slightest doubt that wherever *statue* occurs, while the metre requires three syllables, it is an error for *statua*. Our old poets no more thought of using *statue* as a trisyllable than *stature*, a third form of the word which is not infrequently found: see my *Remarks on Mr. Collier's and Mr. Knight's eds. of Shakespeare*, p. 186.

- P. 145. (11) "*What boded this but well-forewarning wind  
Did seem to say, . . .  
What did I then but curs'd the gentle gusts,*" &c.

Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector reads "— the ungentle gusts," &c.; and so does Mr. Singer's Ms. Corrector (*Shakespeare Vindicated*, &c. p. 152).—But the alteration could hardly have failed to occur to Theobald, Hamner, &c., who must have perceived that "*gentle*" was a very unusual epithet for "*gusts*;" and yet they did not disturb the text. I presume they understood Margaret (who has just above spoken of the "*well-forewarning* wind") to mean,—that, when she cursed the gusts, she was not aware that they were really acting towards her with kindness, in keeping her from the English shore.

- P. 145. (15) "*Margaret,*"

The folio has "Eleanor."

- P. 146. (19) "*To sit and witch me,*" &c.

The folio has "*To sit and watch me,*" &c.

- P. 146. (47) "*Margaret,*"

The folio has "Eleanor."

- P. 146. (48) "[*Warwick goes into an inner chamber,*" &c.

This is a modern addition. Here the folio has no stage-direction. In the corresponding place of *The First Part of the Contention*, &c., we find "*Warwicke drawes the curtaines and shewes Duke Humphrey in his bed.*"

- P. 147. (49) "*to draw  
Upon his face an ocean of salt tears,*"

Steevens would read "*to rain*," &c.: which is also substituted by Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector.—Malone thus defends the old lection,—"*This is one of our poet's harsh expressions. As when a thing is *drained*, drops of water issue from it, he licentiously uses the word here in the sense of *dropping* or *distilling*.*"

- P. 147. (50) "[*The folding-doors of an inner chamber are thrown open,*" &c.  
Here the folio has merely "*Bed put forth.*"

- P. 147. (51) "*For . . .  
For seeing him,*" &c.

There seems reason to suspect that the second "*For*" is an error caused by the occurrence of the same word just above: Capell altered it to "*And*."

P. 150. (41) "*Dread lord, the commons send you word by me,  
Unless false Suffolk straght,*" &c.

The folio has "*Vnlesse Lord Suffolke straigh,*" &c.: but there cannot be a doubt that "Lord" was repeated by mistake from the line above; for the corresponding passage of the original play is,—

"My Lord, the Commons sends you word by me,  
The [Ato 1619, That] vnlesse *false* Suffolke here be done  
to death," &c.

and towards the close of the present speech, as amended in the folio, we have,  
"From such full serpents as *false* Suffolk is."

P. 151. (42) "*Hast thou not spirit to curse thine enemies?  
Suf. A plague upon them!*"

The folio has "— *to curse thine enemy?*" which several editors have retained, but the corresponding words of *The First Part of the Contention*, &c., are "Fire womanish man, canst thou not curse thy enemies?"

P. 153. (41) "wert thou hence."

So the second folio.—The first folio has "*wert thou thence.*"

P. 153. (42) "*I can no more —live thou to joy thy life;  
Myself to joy in naught but that thou livest,*"

The folio has "*My selfe no ioy in nought,*" &c.—I adopt the very slight alteration of Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector; because (though double negatives are not uncommon in Shakespeare) the old reading has a strange awkwardness of expression, and because, to all appearance, the "no" was erroneously repeated from the preceding line.

P. 156. (46) "*The lives of those which we have lost in fight  
Be counterpois'd with such a petty sum?*"

Here the interrogation-point was, I believe, first introduced by Mr. Knight; and it at least renders the passage intelligible. But most probably something has dropped out from the text,—which is certainly the case with respect to two other passages in this scene as given in the folio; see the two next notes. (Rowe printed,

"Nor can those lives which we have lost in fight  
Be counterpois'd," &c.

Malone,

"The lives of those which we have lost in fight  
Cannot be counterpois'd," &c.,—

which is not very happy.—Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector reads,

"Can lives of those which we have lost in fight  
Be counterpois'd," &c.

which Mr. Collier thinks "is unobjectionable," but we may object, and strongly, to the omission of "the" before "lives,")

P. 157. (<sup>57</sup>) "*Jove sometime went disguis'd, and why not I?*"

This line is only found in *The First Part of the Contention*, &c.,—without it, the next speech has no meaning.

P. 157. (<sup>58</sup>)

"Suf. *Obscure and lowly swim, King Henry's blood,*" &c.

In the folio, this line is by mistake made a portion of the preceding speech, and "lowly" is misprinted "lowsie."

P. 158. (<sup>59</sup>) "Cap. *Yes, Poole.*

Suf. *Poole!*"

These two speeches are found only in *The First Part of the Contention*, &c. That they were accidentally omitted in the folio is evident.

P. 158. (<sup>60</sup>)

"*are rising,*" &c.

The folio has "and rising," &c.

P. 159. (<sup>61</sup>) "*Than Bargulus the strong Illyrian pirate,*" &c.

In the notes on this line the commentators have all omitted to mention that "*Bargulus*" is a corruption derived from the faulty reading in Cicero *De Off.* ii. 11,—"*Bargulus*, Illyrius latro, de quo est apud Theopompum," &c. (a passage which Warburton has adduced, and which, by a singular oversight, Mr. Collier has given as an extract from *Theopompus*,—*who wrote in Greek*). The true name is Bardylis (or Bardyllis).

P. 159. (<sup>62</sup>)

"*Gelidus timor occupat artus,*"

The folio has "*Pine gelidus timor,*" &c.—The editor of the second folio, not knowing what to substitute for "Pine," threw out the word; so did Rowe and several of his successors; and I consider it more advisable to follow their example than to print, with Theobald, "*Pene gelidus timor,*" &c., or, with Malone (who thought that here "the measure is of little consequence"), "*Pene gelidus timor,*" &c.—Concerning this quotation,—which, as far as I know, has not yet been traced to its source,—see the notes in the *Var. Shakespeare*.

P. 159. (<sup>63</sup>) "*Come, soldiers, show what cruelty ye can,*" &c.

In the folio this line is given by mistake to the preceding speaker.

P. 161. (51) "And *Smith* the weaver,—"

Capell, here and elsewhere, boldly altered "*Smith*" to "*Will*."—"Instead of '*Will*,'" he says, in his odd style, "the folios and other copies from them give us '*Smith*,' and when this *Smith* comes to speak, call him '*Weaver*.' but as some of this *Weaver's* speeches are prefaced by *Will* in the quartos, and those of all his associates by Christian names only, reason pronounces *Smith* a mistake, and declares for *Will*. the matter is trifling."

P. 161. (65) "shall fall," &c.

The folio has "*shall faile*," &c. (but the speaker is alluding to his name, *Cade* from *cado*.)

P. 164. (66) "for thereby is *England* mamed," &c.

Here the modern editors (Capell excepted) alter "*mained*" to "*mained*,"—The old reading is quite right.—"To MAINE, to lame," Hunter's *Mainamshire Glossary*.

P. 165. (67)

"thou shalt have a license to kill for a hundred lacking one, a week."

The folio omits "*a week*."—The corresponding passage in *The First Part of the Contention*, &c., is, "Thou shalt have licence to kil for foure score & one a week."—See Malone's note *ad l*.

P. 166. (68)

"Still lamenting and mourning for *Suffolk's* death?"

This has been variously altered: but Shakespeare here retains the very words of the original.

P. 166. (69)

"*I fear me, love*," &c.

The older play has "*I feare, my loue*," &c, which several editors have adopted, and it certainly agrees better with the reply of Margaret than the reading of the folio, which is perhaps an accidental variation

P. 167. (70)

"Lord Say, the traitors hate thee."

So the 4<sup>th</sup> folio.—The first folio has "—— hateth thee," (Capell very coolly printed, "~~Lord~~ Say, the traitor rebel hateth thee.")

P. 167. (71) "*The citizens fly and forsake their houses*."

The second folio has "—— fly him, and forsake," &c.—In several modern editions the words "*The citizens*" are made the concluding portion of the preceding line

P. 170. (72)

"in a foot-cloth," &amp;c.

The original play and the second folio have "on a footcloth," &c.; but the reading of the first folio is equally right. Compare Jonson's *Case is altered*, act iv. sc. 4 (*Works*, vi. 39 t, ed. Gifford), "I'll go in my foot-cloth, I'll turn gentleman."

P. 170. (73) "When have I aught exacted at your hands,

But to maintain the king, the realm, and you?"

The folio has "Kent to maintaine, the King," &c.,—the word "Kent" having crept in here by some mistake,—perhaps in consequence of its occurring three times a little above.—Steevens conjectured "Bent to maintain the king," &c.; which does not well suit the context.—I have no hesitation in adopting the correction of Johnson, "*But to maintain the king*," &c.,—which (as Mr. W. N. Lettsom informs me) the late Mr. Sydney Walker thought "undoubtedly" the right reading—Mr. Singer and Mr. Collier print "Kent, to maintain the king," &c.,—supposing "Kent" to be addressed to the *Kentish men*: which appears to me no less strange than Mr. Collier's objection to Johnson's emendation "*But*,"—that it makes Lord Say acknowledge himself guilty of exaction.

P. 171. (74)

"Ye shall have a hempen candle, then, and the help of hatchet."

The folio has "— a hempen Candle then," &c.,—which the editor of the second folio left uncorrected, while he inserted "a" before "*hatchet*"—Farmer's alteration, "— and the pap of a hatchet," has been received into the text of more than one edition: but, as Mr. Collier observes, the old and very common cant phrase "was 'pap with a hatchet,' and not 'pap of a hatchet.'"—The Rev. J. Mitford (*Gent's Magazine* for Nov. 1844, p. 458) would read "— and the helve of a hatchet:" but why the handle of that instrument?—Steevens says that "the help of a hatchet is little better than nonsense,"—forgetting that "a hempen candle" properly comes under the head of nonsense also:—if we allow of the latter prescription for Lord Say's "sickness and diseases," we surely need not be offended at the former.

P. 171. (75) "The palsy, and not fear, provokes me."

Most of the modern editors (including Mr. Collier and Mr. Knight, who are generally opposed to such alterations) print "— provoketh me,"—though even the editor of the second folio made no change here.

P. 172. (76) "Or let a rebel lead you to your deaths?"

The folio has "Or let a rabble leade," &c.—I give the emendation of the two Ms. Correctors,—Mr. Collier's and Mr. Singer's, and, though it requires nothing to confirm it, I may mention that in the corresponding speech of the older play Cado is termed "this monstrous *Rebell* here."



P. 173. (77) "Crying 'Villaco!' unto all they meet."

The folio has "*Crying Villago,*" &c.—Theobald's alteration, "*Crying, Villageois,*" &c., is introduced in all the more recent editions, but Capell (see his note) adopted it with hesitation, and Mr. Hunter (*New Illust. of Shakspeare*, ii. 73) has protested against it.—The old reading "*villago,*" or more properly "*villaco,*" is a term of reproach which we not unfrequently find in our early writers. So in *Every Man out of his Humour*, act v. sc. 3, "Now out, base *villaco!*" where Gifford (*Jonson's Works*, ii. 181) has the following note; "This word occurs in Decker: 'Before they came near the great hall, the faint-hearted *villacoos* sounded at least thrice.' *Unrussing the Humorous Poet*. In both places it means a worthless dastard: (from the Italian *vigliacco*)" (Mr. Hunter, *ubi supra*, is not quite correct when he says that "*Villago* is given by Florio in his *Dict.*;"—Florio has "*Vigliacco*, a rascal, a base varlet," &c.)

P. 175. (78) "Of gallowglusses and stout kerns," &c.

The Rev. J. Mitford (*Gent. Magazine* for Nov. 1844, p. 458) and Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector read "— *stout Irish kerns,*" &c.; but if a word has dropped out (which is probable), it surely was not "Irish;" for why apply that epithet especially to the "*kerns,*" and not to the "*gallowglusses,*" who were *Irish*, also?

P. 175. (79) "His arms are only to remove from thee  
The Duke of Somerset, whom he terms a traitor."

In my *Remarks on Mr. Collier's and Mr. Knight's eds. of Shakspeare*, p. 130, I maintained that we ought to read here "*His aims are only,*" &c. But I now see that "*arms*" is undoubtedly the right word: compare not only the next speech, but what occurs at p. 179,—

"York.  
The cause why I have brought this army hither  
Is, to remove proud Somerset from the king," &c.

"Buck. That is too much presumption on thy part:  
But if thy *arms* be to no other end," &c.

P. 175. (80) "Is straightway calm'd," &c.

So the fourth folio, and rightly.—The first folio has "— *calme,*" the second "— *clum'd,*" the third "— *claim'd.*"

P. 175. (81) "I pray thee, Buckingham, go and meet him," &c.

This has been altered to "— *go and meet with him,*" and to "— *go forth and meet him.*"—A more probable alteration would be "— *go thou and meet him.*"

P. 175. (82) "ambition!"

So the second folio.—The first folio has "*ambitions.*"

P. 176. <sup>(83)</sup> "Enter Iden, with Servants behind."

The folio does not mark the entrance of the Servants; but it seems to be a necessary addition, as Cade presently speaks of Iden's "five men"—In the original play, the corresponding stage direction is, "*Enter Jacke Cade at one doore, and at the other, maister Alexander Eyden, and his men,*" &c.; and there Iden concludes his third speech by saying to his men, "Sirrha, fetch me weopons, and stand you all aside."

P. 176. <sup>(81)</sup> "and worth a monarchy."

Rowe printed "*and's worth,*" &c.; but the text is elliptical, and has the same meaning.

P. 176. <sup>(85)</sup> "by others' waning."

Rowe's correction.—The folio has "*by others warning.*"

P. 177. <sup>(86)</sup> "I beseech Jove," &c.

Instead of "*Jove*" the original play, in the corresponding passage, has "God," which Malone adopted, because, he says, the other reading "was undoubtedly introduced by the editor of the folio to avoid the penalty of the statute, 3 Jac. ch. 2." This may have been the case; but still we frequently find "*Jove*" used by early writers as the name of the God of Christians; e.g.,—

"Beneath our standard of *Joues* powerfull sonno [i.e. Christ]."

*Mr. for Magistratcs*, p. 642, ed. 1610.

And see my ed. of Marlowe's *Works*, vol. ii. 21.

P. 179. <sup>(87)</sup> "Buckingham," &c.

The editor of the second folio printed "O *Buckingham,*" &c.

P. 181. <sup>(89)</sup> "first let me ask of these," &c.

The folio has "— *ask of thee,*" &c.—By "*these*" York "means either his sons, or his troops, to whom he may be supposed to point." MALONE.

P. 181. <sup>(81)</sup> "for my enfranchisement."

So the second folio.—The first has "of my," &c.

P. 182. <sup>(90)</sup> "fell-lurking curs," &c.

An error has been suspected here; but qy. if justly?—Heath proposed to read "*fell-lurching curs,*"—which is little more than an alteration of spelling (see Richardson's *Diet.* in v. *Lurch*); and Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector substitutes "*fell-loolung curs.*"

l'. 182. (91)

"*Of have I seen a hot o'erweening our  
Run back and bite, because he was withheld;  
Who, being suffer'd with the bear's fell paw,  
Hath clapp'd his tail between his legs and cried.*"

Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector substitutes "*Who, having suffer'd with the bear's fell paw,*" &c.—on which Mr. Singer (*Shakespeare Vindicated*, &c. p. 156) remarks truly enough "that the old copy needs no change;" but he misses the truth when he adds that "*suffer'd* is here used passively in the sense of *punished*,"—Nothing can be more evident than that "*being suffer'd*" is put in opposition to "*withheld*," and has here the same meaning as it has earlier in the play, p. 150,

"*Lest, being suffer'd in that harmful slumber,*" &c.

and also in *The Third Part of Henry VI.* act iv. scene 8,

"*A little fire is quickly trodden out;  
Which, being suffer'd, rivers cannot quench.*"—

The ear, when *withheld*, turned round and snapped at those who restrained him; but, *being suffer'd* to engage with the bear's fell paw, &c.

P. 183. (92)

"*death or dignity.*"

The folio has "*death and dignity.*"

P. 183. (93)

"*thy household badge.*"

So *The First Part of the Contention*, &c.—The folio has "*thy houseld Badge.*"

P. 184 (94)

"*And so to arms, victorious further,*" &c.

The second folio has "— *victorious noble father,*" &c.

l'. 187. (95)

"*Of Salisbury, who can report of him,*" &c.

Here, Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector alters "*Of*" to "*Old*,"—and with great probability, for in the corresponding speech of the original play York asks "*But did you see old Salisbury,*" &c.

P. 188. (96)

"*Now, by my hand, lords,*" &c.

Malone reads, with the older play, "*Now, by my faith, lords,*" for the reason mentioned in note (89).

l'. 189. (97)

"*Sound drums and trumpets*"

So the original play.—Here the folio has "*Sound Drumme and Trumpets;*" but in *The Third Part of Henry VI.* act 1, sc 1, it has "*Sound Drummes and Trumpets,*"

THE THIRD PART OF  
KING HENRY THE SIXTH.

# DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

KING HENRY the Sixth.  
 EDWARD, PRINCE OF WALES, his son  
 LOUIS XI. KING OF FRANCE.  
 DUKE OF SOMERSET.  
 DUKE OF EXETER.  
 EARL OF OXFORD.  
 EARL OF NORTHUMBERLAND.  
 EARL OF WESTMORELAND.  
 LORD CLIFFORD.  
 RICHARD PLANTAGENET, Duke of York.  
 EDWARD, Earl of March, afterwards King Edward IV.,  
 EDMUND, Earl of Rutland,  
 GEORGE, afterwards Duke of Clarence,  
 RICHARD, afterwards Duke of Gloster,  
 DUKE OF NORFOLK. } his  
 sons.  
 MARQUIS OF MONTAGUT.  
 EARL OF WARWICK.  
 EARL OF PEMBROKE.  
 LORD HASTINGS.  
 LORD STAFFORD.  
 SIR JOHN MORTIMER, } uncles to the Duke of York.  
 SIR HUGH MORTIMER, }  
 HENRY, Earl of Richmond, a youth.  
 LORD RIVERS, brother to Lady Grey.  
 SIR WILLIAM STANLEY.  
 SIR JOHN MONTGOMERY.  
 SIR JOHN SOMERVILLE.  
 Tutor to Rutland. Mayor of York.  
 Lieutenant of the Tower. A Nobleman  
 Two Keepers. A Huntsman.  
 A Son that has killed his father.  
 A Father that has killed his son.  
 QUEEN MARGARET.  
 LADY GREY, afterwards Queen to Edward IV.  
 BONA, sister to the French Queen.

Soldiers, and other Attendants on King Henry and King Edward,  
 Messengers, Watchmen, &c.

SCENE—*During part of the third act in France, during the rest of the play  
 in England.*

THE THIRD PART OF  
KING HENRY VI.

---

ACT I.

SCENE I. *London. The Parliament-house.*

*Drums. Some Soldiers of YORK's party break in. Then enter the Duke of YORK, EDWARD, RICHARD, NORFOLK, MONTAGUE, WARWICK, and others, with white roses in their hats.*

*War.* I wonder how the king escap'd our hands.

*York.* While we pursu'd the horsemen of the north,  
He slyly stole away, and left his men :  
Whereat the great Lord of Northumberland,  
Whose warlike ears could never brook retreat,  
Cheer'd up the drooping army ; and himself,  
Lord Clifford, and Lord Stafford, all a-breast,  
Charg'd our main battle's front, and, breaking in,  
Were by the swords of common soldiers slain.

*Edw.* Lord Stafford's father, Duke of Buckingham,  
Is either slain or wounded dangerous ;  
I cleft his beaver with a downright blow :  
That this is true, father, behold his blood.

*[Showing his bloody sword.]*

*Mont.* And, brother, (!) here's the Earl of Wiltshire's  
blood, *[To York, showing his.*

Whom I encounter'd as the battles join'd.

*Rich.* Speak thou for me, and tell them what I did.

*[Throwing down the Duke of Somerset's head.]*

*York.* Richard hath best deserv'd of all my sons.—  
But, is your grace dead, my Lord of Somerset ?

*Norf.* Such hope have all the line of John of Gaunt!

*Rich.* Thus do I hope to shake King Henry's head.

*War.* And so do I.—Victorious Prince of York,

Before I see thee seated in that throne

Which now the house of Lancaster usurps,

I vow by heaven these eyes shall never close.

'This is the palace of the fearful king,

And this the regal seat: possess it, York;

For this is thine, and not King Henry's heirs'.

*York.* Assist me, then, sweet Warwick, and I will;

For hither we have broken in by force.

*Norf.* We'll all assist you; he that flies shall die.

*York.* Thanks, gentle Norfolk:—stay by me, my lords;—

And, soldiers, stay, and lodge by me this night.

*War.* And when the king comes, offer him no violence,  
Unless he seek to thrust you out perforce. [*The Soldiers retire.*]

*York.* The queen, this day, here holds her parliament,

But little thinks we shall be of her council:

By words or blows here let us win our right.

*Rich.* Arm'd as we are, let's stay within this house.

*War.* The bloody parliament shall this be call'd,

Unless Plantagenet, Duke of York, be king,

And bashful Henry depos'd, whose cowardice

Hath made us by-words to our enemies.

*York.* Then leave me not, my lords; be resolute;

I mean to take possession of my right.

*War.* Neither the king, nor he that loves him best,

The proudest he that holds up Lancaster,

Dares stir a wing, if Warwick shake his bells.

I'll plant Plantagenet, root him up who dares:—

Resolve thee, Richard; claim the English crown.

[*Warwick leads York to the throne, who seats himself.*]

*Flourish.* Enter KING HENRY, CLIFFORD, NORTHUMBERLAND,  
WESTMORELAND, EXETER, and others, with red roses in their  
hats.

*K. Hen.* My lords, look where the sturdy rebel sits,

Even in the chair of state! belike he means

(Back'd by the power of Warwick, that false peer)

To aspire unto the crown, and reign as king.—  
 Earl of Northumberland, he slew thy father;  
 And thine, Lord Clifford; and you both have vow'd revenge  
 On him, his sons, his favourites, and his friends.

*North.* If I be not, heavens be reveng'd on me!

*Clif.* The hope thereof makes Clifford mourn in steel.

*West.* What, shall we suffer this? let's pluck him down:

My heart for anger burns; I cannot brook it.

*K. Hen.* Be patient, gentle Earl of Westmoreland.

*Clif.* Patience is for poltroons, such as he: <sup>(2)</sup>

He durst not sit there, had your father liv'd.

My gracious lord, here in the parliament

Let us assail the family of York.

*North.* Well hast thou spoken, cousin: be it so.

*K. Hen.* Ah, know you not the city favours them,

And they have troops of soldiers at their beck?

*Exe.* <sup>(3)</sup> But when the duke is slain, they'll quickly fly.

*K. Hen.* Far be the thought of this from Henry's heart,  
 To make a shambles of the parliament-house!

Cousin of Exeter, frowns, words, and threats

Shall be the war that Henry means to use.

[*They advance to the Duke.*]

Thou factious Duke of York, descend my throne,

And kneel for grace and mercy at my feet;

I am thy sovereign.

*York.* I am thine. <sup>(1)</sup>

*Exe.* For shame, come down: he made thee Duke of  
 York.

*York.* It was my inheritance, as the earldom <sup>(5)</sup> was.

*Exe.* Thy father was a traitor to the crown.

*War.* Exeter, thou art a traitor to the crown

In following this usurping Henry.

*Clif.* Whom should he follow but his natural king?

*War.* True, Clifford; and <sup>(6)</sup> that's Richard Duke of York.

*K. Hen.* And shall I stand, and thou sit in my throne?

*York.* It must and shall be so: content thyself.

*War.* Be Duke of Lancaster; let him be king.

*West.* He is both king and Duke of Lancaster;

And that the Lord of Westmoreland shall maintain.



*War.* And Warwick shall disprove it. You forget  
That we are those which chas'd you from the field,  
And slew your fathers, and with colours spread  
March'd through the city to the palace-gates.

*North.* Yes, Warwick, I remember it to my grief;  
And, by his soul, thou and thy house shall rue it.

*West.* Plantagenet, of thee, and these thy sons,  
Thy kinsmen, and thy friends, I'll have more lives  
Than drops of blood were in my father's veins.

*Clif.* Urge it no more; lest that, instead of words,  
I send thee, Warwick, such a messenger  
As shall revenge his death before I stir.

*War.* Poor Clifford! how I scorn his worthless threats!

*York.* Will you we show our title to the crown?  
If not, our swords shall plead it in the field.

*K. Hen.* What title hast thou, traitor, to the crown?  
Thy(?) father was, as thou art, Duke of York;  
Thy grandfather, Roger Mortimer, Earl of March:  
I am the son of Henry the fifth,  
Who made the Dauphin and the French to stoop,  
And seiz'd upon their towns and provinces.

*War.* Talk not of France, sith thou hast lost it all.

*K. Hen.* The lord protector lost it, and not I:  
When I was crown'd I was but nine months old.

*Rich.* You are old enough now, and yet, methinks, you  
lose.—

Father, tear the crown from the usurper's head.

*Edw.* Sweet father, do so; set it on your head.

*Mont.* Good brother [*to York*], as thou lov'st and hon-  
our'st arms,

Let's fight it out, and not stand cavilling thus.

*Rich.* Sound drums and trumpets, and the king will fly.

*York.* Sons, peace!

*K. Hen.* Peace thou! and give King Henry leave to speak.

*War.* Plantagenet shall speak first: hear him, lords;  
And be you silent and attentive too,  
For he that interrupts him shall not live.

*K. Hen.* Think'st thou that I will leave my kingly throne,  
Wherein my grandsire and my father sat?

No: first shall war unpeople this my realm;  
Ay, and their colours,—often borne in France,  
And now in England to our heart's great sorrow,—  
Shall be my winding-sheet.—Why faint you, lords?  
My title's good, and better far than his.

*War.* Prove it, Henry, and thou shalt be king.

*K. Hen.* Henry the fourth by conquest got the crown.

*York.* 'Twas by rebellion against his king.

*K. Hen.* I know not what to say; my title's weak. [*Aside.*  
Tell me, may not a king adopt an heir?

*York.* What then?

*K. Hen.* An if he may, then am I lawful king;  
For Richard, in the view of many lords,  
Resign'd the crown to Henry the fourth,  
Whose heir my father was, and I am his.

*York.* He rose against him, being his sovereign,  
And made him to resign his crown perforce.

*War.* Suppose, my lords, he did it unconstrain'd,  
Think you 'twere prejudicial to his crown?

*Exe.* No; for he could not so resign his crown,  
But that the next heir should succeed and reign.

*K. Hen.* Art thou against us, Duke of Exeter?

*Exe.* His is the right, and therefore pardon me.

*York.* Why whisper you, my lords, and answer not?

*Exe.* My conscience tells me he is lawful king.

*K. Hen.* All will revolt from me, and turn to him. [*Aside.*

*North.* Plantagenet, for all the claim thou lay'st,  
Think not that Henry shall be so depos'd.

*War.* Depos'd he shall be, in despite of all.

*North.* Thou art deceiv'd: 'tis not thy southern power,  
Of Essex, Norfolk, Suffolk, nor of Kent,—  
Which makes thee thus presumptuous and proud,—  
Can set the duke up, in despite of me.

*Clif.* King Henry, be thy title right or wrong,  
Lord Clifford vows to fight in thy defence:  
May that ground gape, and swallow me alive,  
Where I shall kneel to him that slew my father!

*K. Hen.* O Clifford, how thy words revive my heart!

*York.* Henry of Lancaster, resign thy<sup>(8)</sup> crown.—  
What mutter you, or what conspire you, lords?

*War.* Do right unto this princely Duke of York;  
Or I will fill the house with armèd men,  
And over the chair of state, where now he sits,  
Write up his title with usurping blood.

*[He stamps, and the Soldiers show themselves.]*

*K. Hen.* My Lord of Warwick, hear<sup>(9)</sup> but one word:—  
Let me for this my life-time reign as king.

*York.* Confirm the crown to me and to mine heirs,  
And thou shalt reign in quiet while thou liv'st.

*K. Hen.* I am content: Richard Plantagenet,  
Enjoy the kingdom after my decease.

*Clif.* What wrong is this unto the prince your son!

*War.* What good is this to England and himself!

*West.* Base, fearful, and despairing Henry!

*Clif.* How hast thou injur'd both thyself and us!

*West.* I cannot stay to hear these articles.

*North.* Nor I.

*Clif.* Come, cousin, let us tell the queen these news.

*West.* Farewell, faint-hearted and degenerate king,  
In whose cold blood no spark of honour bides.

*North.* Be thou a prey unto the house of York,  
And die in bands, for this unmanly deed!

*Clif.* In dreadful war mayst thou be overcome,  
Or live in peace, abandon'd and despis'd!

*[Exeunt Northumberland, Clifford, and Westmoreland.]*

*War.* Turn this way, Henry, and regard them not.

*Exe.* They seek revenge, and therefore will not yield.

*K. Hen.* Ah, Exeter!

*War.* Why should you sigh, my lord?

*K. Hen.* Not for myself, Lord Warwick, but my son,  
Whom I unnaturally shall disinherit.

But, be it as it may:—I here entail  
The crown to thee, and to thine heirs for ever;  
Conditionally, that here thou take an oath  
To cease this civil war, and, whilst I live,  
To honour me as thy king and sovereign,

And neither by treason nor hostility  
To seek to put me down, and reign thyself.

*York.* This oath I willingly take, and will perform.

[*Coming from the throne.*]

*War.* Long live King Henry!—Plantagenet, embrace him.

*K. Hen.* And long live thou, and these thy forward sons!

*York.* Now York and Lancaster are reconcil'd.

*Exe.* Accurs'd be he that seeks to make them foes!

[*Sennet. The Lords come forward.*]

*York.* Farewell, my gracious lord; I'll to my castle.

*War.* And I'll keep London with my soldiers.

*Norf.* And I to Norfolk with my followers.

*Mont.* And I unto the sea, from whence I came.

[*Exeunt York and his Sons, Warwick, Norfolk,*

*Montague, Soldiers, and Attendants.*]

*K. Hen.* And I, with grief and sorrow, to the court.

*Exe.* Here comes the queen, whose looks bewray her  
'anger:

I'll steal away.

[*Going.*]

*K. Hen.* Exeter, so will I.

[*Going.*]

*Water Queen MARGARET and the Prince of Wales.*

*Q. Mar.* Nay, go not from me; I will follow thee.

*K. Hen.* Be patient, gentle queen, and I will stay.

*Q. Mar.* Who can be patient in such extremes?

Ah, wretched man! would I had died a maid,

And never seen thee, never borne thee son,

Seeing thou hast prov'd so unnatural a father!

Hath he deserv'd to lose his birthright thus?

Hadst thou but lov'd him half so well as I,

Or felt that pain which I did for him once,

Or nourish'd him as I did with my blood,—

Thou wouldst have left thy dearest heart-blood there,

Rather than have made that savage duke thine heir,

And disinherited thine only son.

*Prince.* Father, you cannot disinherit me:

If you be king, why should not I succeed?

*K. Hen.* Pardon me, Margaret;—pardon me, sweet son;—  
The Earl of Warwick and the duke enforc'd me.

*Q. Mar.* Enforc'd thee! art thou king, and wilt be forc'd?  
 I shame to hear thee speak. Ah, timorous wretch!  
 Thou hast undone thyself, thy son, and me;  
 And given unto the house of York such head,  
 As thou shalt reign but by their sufferance.  
 To entail him and his heirs unto the crown,  
 What is it, but to make thy sepulchre,  
 And creep into it far before thy time?  
 Warwick is chancellor, and the lord of Calais;  
 Stern Falconbridge commands the narrow seas;  
 The duke is made protector of the realm;  
 And yet shalt thou be safe? such safety finds  
 The trembling lamb environ'd with wolves.  
 Had I been there, which am a silly woman,  
 The soldiers should have toss'd me on their pikes  
 Before I would have granted to that act.  
 But thou prefer'st thy life before thine honour:  
 And seeing thou dost, I here divorce myself  
 Both from thy table, Henry, and thy bed,  
 Until that act of parliament be repeal'd,  
 Whereby my son is disinherited.  
 The northern lords that have forsworn thy colours  
 Will follow mine, if once they see them spread;  
 And spread they shall be,—to thy foul disgrace,  
 And utter ruin of the house of York.  
 Thus do I leave thee.—Come, son, let's away;  
 Our army is ready; come, we'll after them.

*K. Hen.* Stay, gentle Margaret, and hear me speak.

*Q. Mar.* Thou hast spoke too much already: get thee gone.

*K. Hen.* Gentle son Edward, thou wilt stay with me?

*Q. Mar.* Ay, to be murder'd by his enemies.

*Prince.* When I return with victory from<sup>(10)</sup> the field,  
 I'll see your grace: till then I'll follow her.

*Q. Mar.* Come, son, away; we may not linger thus.

[*Exeunt Queen Margaret and the Prince.*]

*K. Hen.* Poor queen! how love to me and to her son  
 Hath made her break out into terms of rage!  
 Reveng'd may she be on that hateful duke,

Whose haughty spirit, wingèd with desire,  
 Will cost my crown, and like an empty eagle,  
 Tire on the flesh of me and of my son!  
 The loss of those three lords torments my heart:  
 I'll write unto them, and entreat them fair:—  
 Come, cousin, you shall be the messenger.

*Exe.* And I, I hope, shall reconcile them all. [*Exeunt.*

— — — — —

SCENE II. *A room in Sandal Castle, near Wakefield,  
 in Yorkshire.*

*Enter EDWARD, RICHARD, and MONTAGUE.*

*Rich.* Brother, though I be youngest, give me leave.

*Edw.* No, I can better play the orator.

*Mont.* But I have reasons strong and forcible.

*Enter YORK.*

*York.* Why, how now, sons and brother! at a strife?  
 What is your quarrel? how began it first?

*Edw.* No quarrel, but a slight contention.

*York.* About what?

*Rich.* About that which concerns your grace and us,—  
 The crown of England, father, which is yours.

*York.* Mine, boy? not till King Henry be dead.

*Rich.* Your right depends not on his life or death.

*Edw.* Now you are heir, therefore enjoy it now:  
 By giving the house of Lancaster leave to breathe,  
 It will outrun you, father, in the end.

*York.* I took an oath that he should quietly reign.

*Edw.* But, for a kingdom, any oath may be broken:  
 I would break a thousand oaths to reign one year.

*Rich.* No; God forbid your grace should be forsworn.

*York.* I shall be, if I claim by open war.

*Rich.* I'll prove the contrary, if you'll hear me speak.

*York.* Thou canst not, son; it is impossible.

*Rich.* An oath is of no moment, being not took  
 Before a true and lawful magistrate,  
 That hath authority over him that swears:  
 Henry had none, but did usurp the place;

Then, seeing 'twas he that made you to depose,  
 Your oath, my lord, is vain and frivolous.  
 Therefore, to arms. And, father, do but think  
 How sweet a thing it is to wear a crown;  
 Within whose circuit is Elysium,  
 And all that poets feign of bliss and joy.  
 Why do we linger thus? I cannot rest  
 Until the white rose that I wear be dy'd  
 Even in the lukewarm blood of Henry's heart.  
*York.* Richard, enough; I will be king, or die.—  
 Brother, thou shalt to London presently,  
 And whet on Warwick to this enterprise.—  
 Thou, Richard, shalt to<sup>(11)</sup> the Duke of Norfolk,  
 And tell him privily of our intent.—  
 You, Edward, shall unto my Lord Cobham,  
 With whom the Kentishmen will willingly rise:  
 In them I trust; for they are soldiers,  
 Witty, courteous, liberal, full of spirit.—  
 While you are thus employ'd, what resteth more,  
 But that I seek occasion how to rise,  
 And yet the king not privy to my drift,  
 Nor any of the house of Lancaster?

*Enter a Messenger.*

But, stay: what news?—Why com'st thou in such post?

*Mess.* The queen with all the northern earls and lords  
 Intend<sup>(12)</sup> here to besiege you in your castle:  
 She is hard by with twenty thousand men;  
 And therefore fortify your hold, my lord.

*York.* Ay, with my sword. What! think'st thou that  
 we fear them?—

Edward and Richard, you shall stay with me;—  
 My brother Montague shall post to London:  
 Let noble Warwick, Cobham, and the rest,  
 Whom we have left protectors of the king,  
 With powerful policy strengthen themselves,  
 And trust not simple Henry nor his oaths.

*Mont.* Brother, I go; I'll win them, fear it not:  
 And thus most humbly I do take my leave.

[*Exit.*

*Enter Sir JOHN and Sir HUGH MORTIMER.*

*York.* Sir John and Sir Hugh Mortimer, mine uncles!  
You are come to Sandal in a happy hour;  
The army of the queen mean to besiege us.

*Sir John.* She shall not need, we'll meet her in the field.

*York.* What, with five thousand men?

*Rich.* Ay, with five hundred, father, for a need:  
A woman's general; what should we fear?

*[A march afar off.]*

*Edw.* I hear their drums: let's set our men in order,  
And issue forth, and bid them battle straight.

*York.* Five men to twenty!—though the odds be great,  
I doubt not, uncle,<sup>(13)</sup> of our victory.

Many a battle have I won in France,

Whenas the enemy hath been ten to one:

Why should I not now have the like success? *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE III. *Plains near Sandal Castle.*

*Alarum. Enter RUTLAND and his Tutor.*

*Rut.* Ah, whither shall I fly to scape their hands?  
Ah, tutor, look where bloody Clifford comes!

*Enter CLIFFORD and Soldiers.*

*Clif.* Chaplain, away! thy priesthood saves thy life.  
As for the brat of this accursèd duke,  
Whose father slew my father,—he shall die.

*Tut.* And I, my lord, will bear him company.

*Clif.* Soldiers, away with him!

*Tut.* Ah, Clifford, murder not this innocent child,  
Lest thou be hated both of God and man!

*[Exit, forced off by Soldiers.]*

*Clif.* How now! is he dead already? or is it fear  
That makes him close his eyes?—I'll open them.

*Rut.* So looks the pent-up lion o'er the wretch  
That trembles under his devouring paws;  
And so he walks, insulting o'er his prey,



And so he comes, to rend his limbs asunder.—  
 Ah, gentle Clifford, kill me with thy sword,  
 And not with such a cruel threatening look!  
 Sweet Clifford, hear me speak before I die!—  
 I am too mean a subject for thy wrath:  
 Be thou reveng'd on men, and let me live.

*Clif.* In vain thou speak'st, poor boy; my father's blood  
 Hath stopp'd the passage where thy words should enter.

*Rut.* Then let my father's blood open it again:  
 He is a man, and, Clifford, cope with him.

*Clif.* Had I thy brethren here, their lives and thine  
 Were not revenge sufficient for me;  
 No, if I digg'd up thy forefathers' graves,  
 And hung their rotten coffins up in chains,  
 It could not slake mine ire, nor ease my heart.  
 The sight of any of the house of York  
 Is as a fury to torment my soul;  
 And till I root out their accurs'd line,  
 And leave not one alive, I live in hell.  
 Therefore—

[*Lifting his hand.*]

*Rut.* O, let me pray before I take my death!—  
 To thee I pray; sweet Clifford, pity me!

*Clif.* Such pity as my rapier's point affords.

*Rut.* I never did thee harm: why wilt thou slay me?

*Clif.* Thy father hath.

*Rut.* But 'twas ere I was born.

Thou hast one son,—for his sake pity me;  
 Lest in revenge thereof,—sith 'God is just,—  
 He be as miserably slain as I.

Ah, let me live in prison all my days;  
 And when I give occasion of offence,  
 Then let me die, for now thou hast no cause!

*Clif.* No cause!

Thy father slew my father; therefore, die.

[*Stabs him.*]

*Rut.* *Di faciant, laudis summa sit ista tuæ!*

[*Dies.*]

*Clif.* Plantagenet! I come, Plantagenet!

And this thy son's blood cleaving to my blade  
 Shall rust upon my weapon, till thy blood,  
 Congeal'd with this, do make me wipe off both.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE IV. *Another part of the plains near Sandal Castle.**Alarum. Enter YORK,*

*York.* The army of the queen hath got the field :  
My uncles both are slain in rescuing me ;  
And all my followers to the eager foe  
Turn back, and fly, like ships before the wind,  
Or lambs pursu'd by hunger-starvèd wolves.  
My sons,—God knows what hath bechancèd them :  
But this I know,—they have demean'd themselves  
Like men born to renown by life or death.  
Three times did Richard make a lane to me ;  
And thrice cried, " Courage, father ! fight it out !"  
And full as oft came Edward to my side,  
With purple falchion, painted to the hilt  
In blood of those that had encounter'd him :  
And when the hardiest warriors did retire,  
Richard cried, " Charge ! and give no foot of ground !"  
And cried, " A crown, or else a glorious tomb !  
A sceptre, or an earthly sepulchre !"  
With this, we charg'd again : but, out, alas !  
We bodg'd again ; as I have seen a swan  
With bootless labour swim against the tide,  
And spend her strength with over-matching waves.  
*[A short alarum within.]*

Ah, hark ! the fatal followers do pursue ;  
And I am faint, and cannot fly their fury :  
And were I strong, I would not shun their fury :  
The sands are number'd that make up my life ;  
Here must I stay, and here my life must end.

*Enter Queen MARGARET, CLIFFORD, NORTHUMBERLAND, and  
Soldiers.*

Come, bloody Clifford,—rough Northumberland,—  
I dare your quenchless fury to more rage :  
I am your butt, and I abide your shot.

*North.* Yield to our mercy, proud Plantagenet.

*Clif.* Ay, to such mercy as his ruthless arm,

With downright payment, show'd unto my father.  
 Now Phaëton hath tumbled from his car,  
 And made an evening at the noontide prick.

*York.* My ashes, as the phoenix, may bring forth  
 A bird that will revenge upon you all :

And in that hope I throw mine eyes to heaven,  
 Scorning whate'er you can afflict me with.

Why come you not ? what ! multitudes, and fear ?

*Clif.* So cowards fight when they can fly no further ;  
 So doves do peck the falcon's piercing talons ;  
 So desperate thieves, all hopeless of their lives,  
 Breathe out invectives 'gainst the officers.

*York.* O Clifford, but bethink thee once again,  
 And in thy thought o'er-run my former time ;  
 And, if thou canst for blushing, view this face,  
 And bite thy tongue, that slanders him with cowardice  
 Whose frown hath made thee faint and fly ere this !

*Clif.* I will not bandy with thee word for word,  
 But buckle <sup>(1)</sup> with thee blows, twice two for one. [*Draws.*]

*Q. Mar.* Hold, valiant Clifford ! for a thousand causes  
 I would prolong awhile the traitor's life.—  
 Wrath makes him deaf :—speak thou, Northumberland.

*North.* Hold, Clifford ! do not honour him so much  
 To prick thy finger, though to wound his heart :  
 What valour were it, when a cur doth grin,  
 For one to thrust his hand between his teeth,  
 When he might spurn him with his foot away ?  
 It is war's prize to take all vantages ;  
 And ten to one is no impeach of valour.

[*They lay hands on York, who struggles.*]

*Clif.* Ay, ay, so stives the woodcock with the gin.

*North.* So doth the cony struggle in the net.

[*York is taken prisoner.*]

*York.* So triumph thieves upon their conquer'd booty ;  
 So true men yield, with robbers so o'er-match'd.

*North.* What would your grace have done unto him now ?

*Q. Mar.* Brave warriors, Clifford and Northumberland,  
 Come, make him stand upon this molehill here,  
 That raught at mountains with outstretchèd arms,

Yet parted but the shadow with his hand.—  
What! was it you that would be England's king?  
Was't you that revell'd in our parliament,  
And made a preachment of your high descent?  
Where are your mess of sons to back you now?  
The wanton Edward, and the lusty George?  
And where's that valiant crook-back prodigy,  
Dicky your boy, that with his grumbling voice  
Was wont to cheer his dad in mutinies?  
Or, with the rest, where is your darling Rutland?  
Look, York: I stain'd this napkin with the blood  
That valiant Clifford, with his rapier's point,  
Made issue from the bosom of the boy;  
And if thine eyes can water for his death,  
I give thee this to dry thy cheeks withal.  
Alas, poor York! but that I hate thee deadly,  
I should lament thy miserable state.  
I prithee, grieve, to make me merry, York.  
What, hath thy fiery heart so parch'd thine entrails,  
That not a tear can fall for Rutland's death?  
Why art thou patient, man? thou shouldst be mad;  
And I, to make thee mad, do mock thee thus.  
Stamp, rave, and fret, that I may sing and dance.<sup>(15)</sup>  
Thou wouldst be fce'd, I see, to make me sport:  
York cannot speak, unless he wear a crown.—  
A crown for York!—and, lords, bow low to him:—  
Hold you his hands, whilst I do set it on.—

*[Putting a paper-crown on his head.]*

Ay, marry, sir, now looks he like a king!  
Ay, this is he that took King Henry's chair;  
And this is he was his adopted heir.—  
But how is it that great Plantagenet  
Is crown'd so soon, and broke his solemn oath?  
As I bethink me, you should not be king  
Till our King Henry had shook hands with death.  
And will you pale your head in Henry's glory,  
And rob his temples of the diadem,  
Now in his life, against your holy oath?  
O, 'tis a fault too-too unpardonable!—

Off with the crown ; and, with the crown, his head ;  
And, whilst we breathe, take time to do him dead.

*Clif.* That is my office, for my father's sake.

*Q. Mar.* Nay, stay ; let's hear the orisons he makes.

*York.* She-wolf of France, but worse than wolves of France,

Whose tongue more poisons than the adder's tooth !

How ill-beseeming is it in thy sex

To triumph, like an Amazonian trull,

Upon their woes whom fortune captivates !

But that thy face is, visard-like, unchanging,

Made impudent with use of evil deeds,

I would assay, proud queen, to make thee blush :

To tell thee whence thou cam'st, of whom deriv'd,

Were shame enough to shame thee, wert thou not shameless.

Thy father bears the type of King of Naples,

Of both the Sicils, and Jerusalem ;

Yet not so wealthy as an English yeoman.

Hath that poor monarch taught thee to insult ?

It needs not, nor it boots thee not, proud queen ;

Unless the adage must be verifed,—

That beggars mounted run their horse to death. }

'Tis beauty that doth oft make women proud ;

But, God he knows, thy share thereof is small :

'Tis virtue that doth make them most admir'd ;

The contrary doth make thee wonder'd at :

'Tis government that makes them seem divine ;

*The want thereof makes thee abominable :*

Thou art as opposite to every good

As the Antipodes are unto us,

Or as the south to the septentrion.

O tiger's heart wrapp'd in a woman's hide !

How couldst thou drain the life-blood of the child,

To bid the father wipe his eyes withal,

And yet be seen to bear a woman's face ?

Women are soft, mild, pitiful, and flexible ;

Thou stern, obdurate, flinty, rough, remorseless.

Bidd'st thou me rage ? why, now thou hast thy wish :

Wouldst have me weep ? why, now thou hast thy will :

For raging wind blows up incessant showers,

And when the rage allays, the rain begins.  
These tears are my sweet Rutland's obsequies;  
And every drop cries vengeance for his death,  
'Gainst thee, fell Clifford, and thee, false Frenchwoman.

*North.* Beshrew me, but his passions move me so,  
That hardly can I check my eyes from tears.

*York.* That face of his the hungry cannibals  
Would not have touch'd, would not have stain'd with blood :  
But you are more inhuman, more inexorable,—  
O, ten times more,—than tigers of Hyrcania.  
See, ruthless queen, a hapless father's tears :  
This cloth thou dipp'dst in blood of my sweet boy,  
And I with tears do wash the blood away.  
Keep thou the napkin, and go boast of this :

*[Giving back the handkerchief.]*

And, if thou tell'st the heavy story right,  
Upon my soul, the hearers will shed tears ;  
Yea, even my foes will shed fast-falling tears,  
And say, " Alas, it was a piteous deed !"—  
There, take the crown, and, with the crown, my curse ;

*[Giving back the paper-crown.]*

And, in thy need, such comfort come to thee  
As now I reap at thy too cruel hand !—  
Hard-hearted Clifford, take me from the world :  
My soul to heaven, my blood upon your heads !

*North.* Had he been slaughter-man to all my kin,  
I should not for my life but weep with him,  
To see how inly sorrow gripes his soul.

*Q. Mar.* What, weeping-ripe, my Lord Northumberland ?  
Think but upon the wrong he did us all,  
And that will quickly dry thy melting tears.

*Clif.* Here's for my oath, here's for my father's death.

*[Stabbing him.]*

*Q. Mar.* And here's to right our gentle-hearted king.

*[Stabbing him.]*

*York.* Open thy gate of mercy, gracious God !  
My soul flies through these wounds to seek out thee. *[Dies.]*

*Q. Mar.* Off with his head, and set it on York gates ;  
So York may overlook the town of York. *[Flourish. Exeunt.]*

## ACT II.

SCENE I. *A plain near Mortimer's Cross in Herefordshire.*

*Drums. Enter EDWARD and RICHARD, with their forces, marching.*

*Edw.* I wonder how our princely father scap'd,  
Or whether he be scap'd away or no  
From Clifford's and Northumberland's pursuit;  
Had he been ta'en, we should have heard the news;  
Had he been slain, we should have heard the news;  
Or had he scap'd, methinks we should have heard  
The happy tidings of his good escape.—  
How fares my brother? why is he so sad?

*Rich.* I cannot joy, until I be resolv'd  
Where our right valiant father is become,  
I saw him in the battle range about;  
And watch'd him how he singled Clifford forth.  
Methought he bore him in the thickest troop  
As doth a lion in a herd of neat;  
Or as a bear, encompass'd round with dogs,—  
Who having pinch'd a few, and made them cry,  
The rest stand all aloof, and bark at him.  
So far'd our father with his enemies;  
So fled his enemies my warlike father:  
Methinks, 'tis prize enough to be his son.—  
See how the morning opes her golden gates,  
And takes her farewell of the glorious sun!  
How well resembles it the prime of youth,  
Trim'd like a younker prancing to his love!

*Edw.* Dazzle mine eyes, or do I see three suns?

*Rich.* Three glorious suns, each one a perfect sun;  
Not separated with the racking clouds,  
But sever'd in a pale clear-shining sky.  
See, see! they join, embrace, and seem to kiss,  
As if they vow'd some league inviolable:  
Now are they but one lamp, one light, one sun.  
In this the heaven figures some event.

*Edw.* 'Tis wondrous strange, the like yet never heard of.

I think it cites us, brother, to the field,—  
That we, the sons of brave Plantagenet,  
Each one already blazing by our meeds,  
Should, notwithstanding, join our lights together,  
And over-shine the earth, as this the world.  
Whate'er it bodes, henceforward will I bear  
Upon my target three fair shining suns.

*Rich.* Nay, bear three daughters:—by your leave I speak  
it,

You love the breeder better than the male.

*Enter a Messenger.*

But what art thou, whose heavy looks foretell  
Some dreadful story hanging on thy tongue?

*Mess.* Ah, one that was a woful looker-on  
Whenas the noble Duke of York was slain,  
Your princely father and my loving lord!

*Edw.* O, speak no more! for I have heard too much.

*Rich.* Say how he died, for I will hear it all.

*Mess.* Environ'd he was with many foes;  
And stood against them as the hope of Troy  
Against the Greeks that would have enter'd Troy.  
But Hercules himself must yield to odds;  
And many strokes, though with a little axe,  
Hew down and fell the hardest-timber'd oak.  
By many hands your father was subdu'd;  
But only slaughter'd by the ireful arm  
Of unrelenting Clifford, and the queen,—  
Who crown'd the gracious duke in high despite;  
Laugh'd in his face; and when with grief he wept,  
The ruthless queen gave him to dry his cheeks  
A napkin steep'd in the harmless blood  
Of sweet young Rutland, by rough Clifford slain:  
And after many scorns, many foul taunts,  
They took his head, and on the gates of York  
They set the same; and there it doth remain,  
The saddest spectacle that e'er I view'd.

*Edw.* Sweet Duke of York, our prop to lean upon,—  
Now thou art gone, we have no staff, no stay!—



O Clifford, boisterous Clifford, thou hast slain  
 The flower of Europe for his chivalry;  
 And treacherously hast thou vanquish'd him,  
 For hand to hand he would have vanquish'd thee!—  
 Now my soul's palace is become a prison:  
 Ah, would she break from hence, that this my body  
 Might in the ground be closèd up in rest!  
 For never henceforth shall I joy again,  
 Never, O never shall I see more joy!

*Rich.* I cannot weep; for all my body's moisture  
 Scarce serves to quench my furnace-burning heart:  
 Nor can my tongue unload my heart's great burden;  
 For selfsame wind that I should speak withal  
 Is kindling coals that fire all my breast,  
 And burn me up with flames, that tears would quench.  
 To weep is to make less the depth of grief:  
 Tears, then, for babes; blows and revenge for me!—  
 Richard, I bear thy name; I'll venge thy death,  
 Or die renownèd by attempting it.

*Edw.* His name that valiant duke hath left with thee;  
 His dukedom and his chair with me is left.

*Rich.* Nay, if thou be that princely eagle's bird,  
 Show thy descent by gazing 'gaunst the sun:  
 For chair and dukedom, throne and kingdom say;  
 Either that is thine, or else thou wert not his.

*March.* Enter WARWICK and MONTAGUE, with forces.

*War.* How now, fair lords! What fare? what news  
 abroad?

*Rich.* Great Lord of Warwick, if we should recount  
 Our baleful news, and at each word's deliverance  
 Stab poniards in our flesh till all were told,  
 The words would add more anguish than the wounds.  
 O valiant lord, the Duke of York is slain!

*Edw.* O Warwick, Warwick! that Plantagenet,  
 Which held thee dearly as his soul's redemption,  
 Is by the stern Lord Clifford done to death.

*War.* Ten days ago I drown'd these news in tears;  
 And now, to add more measure to your woes,

I come to tell you things sith then befall'n.  
After the bloody fray at Wakefield fought,  
Where your brave father breath'd his latest gasp,  
Tidings, as swiftly as the posts could run,  
Were brought me of your loss and his depart.  
I, then in London, keeper of the king,  
Muster'd my soldiers, gather'd flocks of friends,  
And very well appointed, as I thought,<sup>(16)</sup>  
March'd toward Saint Albans to intercept the queen,  
Bearing the king in my behalf along;  
For by my scouts I was advertis'd  
That she was coming with a full intent  
To dash our late decree in parliament  
Touching King Henry's oath and your succession.  
Short tale to make,—we at Saint Albans met,  
Our battles join'd, and both sides fiercely fought:  
But whether 'twas the coldness of the king,  
Who look'd full gently on his warlike queen,  
That robb'd my soldiers of their heated spleen;  
Or whether 'twas report of her success;  
Or more than common fear of Clifford's rigour,  
Who thunders to his captives, Blood and death,  
I cannot judge; but, to conclude with truth,  
Their weapons like to lightning came and went;  
Our soldiers',—like the night-owl's lazy flight,  
Or like a lazy<sup>(17)</sup> thrasher with a flail,—  
Fell gently down, as if they struck their friends.  
I cheer'd them up with justice of our cause,  
With promise of high pay and great rewards:  
But all in vain; they had no heart to fight,  
And we, in them, no hope to win the day;  
So that we fled; the king unto the queen;  
Lord George your brother, Norfolk, and myself,  
In haste, post-haste, are come to join with you;  
For in the marches here, we heard, you were,  
Making another head to fight again.

*Edw.* Where is the Duke of Norfolk, gentle Warwick?  
And when came George from Burgundy to England?

*War.* Some six miles off the duke is with the soldiers;

And for your brother, he was lately sent  
From your kind aunt, Duchess of Burgundy,  
With aid of soldiers to this needful war.

*Rich.* 'Twas odds, belike, when valiant Warwick fled :  
Oft have I heard his praises in pursuit,  
But ne'er till now his scandal of retire.

*War.* Nor now my scandal, Richard, dost thou hear ;  
For thou shalt know this strong right hand of mine  
Can pluck the diadem from faint Henry's head,  
And wring the awful sceptre from his fist,  
Were he as famous and as bold in war  
As he is fam'd for mildness, peace, and prayer.

*Rich.* I know it well, Lord Warwick ; blame me not :  
'Tis love I bear thy glories makes me speak.  
But in this troublous time what's to be done ?  
Shall we go throw away our coats of steel,  
And wrap our bodies in black mourning-gowns,  
Numbering our Ave-Maries with our beads ?  
Or shall we on the helmets of our foes  
Tell our devotion with revengeful arms ?  
If for the last, say Ay, and to it, lords.

*War.* Why, therefore Warwick came to seek you out ;  
And therefore comes my brother Montague.  
Attend me, lords. The proud insulting queen,  
With Clifford and the haught Northumberland,  
And of their feather many more proud birds,  
Have wrought the easy-melting king like wax.  
He swore consent to your succession,  
His oath enroll'd in the parliament ;  
And now to London all the crew are gone,  
To frustrate both his oath, and what beside  
May make against the house of Lancaster.  
Their power, I think, is thirty thousand strong :  
Now, if the help of Norfolk and myself,  
With all the friends that thou, brave Earl of March,  
Amongst the loving Welshmen canst procure,  
Will but amount to five-and-twenty thousand,  
Why, *Via!* to London will we march again ;<sup>(18)</sup>  
And once again bestride our foaming steeds,

And once again cry, Charge upon our foes !  
But never once again turn back and fly.

*Rich.* Ay, now methinks I hear great Warwick speak :  
Ne'er may he live to see a sunshine day,  
That cries, Retire, if Warwick bid him stay.

*Edw.* Lord Warwick, on thy shoulder will I lean ;  
And when thou fail'st <sup>(19)</sup> (as God forbid the hour !),  
Must Edward fall, which peril heaven forbend !

*War.* No longer Earl of March, but Duke of York :  
The next degree is England's royal throne ;  
For King of England shalt thou be proclaim'd  
In every borough as we pass along ;  
And he that throws not up his cap for joy,  
Shall for the fault make forfeit of his head.  
King Edward,—valiant Richard,—Montague,—  
Stay we no longer, dreaming of renown,  
But sound the trumpets, and about our task.

*Rich.* Then, Clifford, were thy heart as hard as steel  
(As thou hast shown it flinty by thy deeds),  
I come to pierce it,—or to give thee mine.

*Edw.* Then strike up drums :—God and Saint George  
for us !

*Enter a Messenger.*

*War.* How now ! what news ?

*Mess.* The Duke of Norfolk sends you word by me,  
The queen is coming with a puissant host ;  
And craves your company for speedy counsel.

*War.* Why, then it sorts, brave warriors : let's away.

[*Exeunt.*

---

SCENE II. *Before York.*

*Flourish.* *Enter* King HENRY, Queen MARGARET, the Prince of  
WALES, CLIFFORD, and NORTHUMBERLAND, with forces

*Q. Mar.* Welcome, my lord, to this brave town of York.  
Yonder's the head of that arch-enemy  
That sought to be encompass'd with your crown :  
Doth not the object cheer your heart, my lord ?

*K. Hen.* Ay, as the rocks cheer them that fear their  
wreck:—

To see this sight, it irks my very soul.—  
Withhold revenge, dear God! 'tis not my fault,  
Nor wittingly have I infring'd my vow.

*Clf.* My gracious liege, this too much lenity  
And harmful pity must be laid aside.  
To whom do lions cast their gentle looks?  
Not to the beast that would usurp their den.  
Whose hand is that the forest bear doth lick?  
Not his that spoils her young before her face.  
Who scapes the lurking serpent's mortal sting?  
Not he that sets his foot upon her back.  
The smallest worm will turn being trodden on,  
And doves will peck in safeguard of their brood.  
Ambitious York did level at thy crown,  
Thou smiling while he knit his angry brows:  
He, but a duke, would have his son a king,  
And raise his issue, like a loving sire;  
Thou, being a king, bless'd with a goodly son,  
Didst yield consent to disinherit him,  
Which argu'd thee a most unloving father.  
Unreasonable creatures feed their young;  
And though man's face be fearful to their eyes,  
Yet, in protection of their tender ones,  
Who hath not seen them (even with those wings  
Which sometime they have us'd with fearful flight,)  
Make war with him that climb'd unto their nest,  
Offering their own lives in their young's defence?  
For shame, my liege, make them your precedent!  
Were it not pity that this goodly boy  
Should lose his birthright by his father's fault,  
And long hereafter say unto his child,  
"What my great-grandfather and grandsire got  
My careless father fondly gave away"?  
Ah, what a shame were this! Look on the boy;  
And let his manly face, which promiseth  
Successful fortune, steel thy melting heart  
To hold thine own, and leave thine own with him.

*K. Hen.* Full well hath Clifford play'd the orator,  
Infering arguments of mighty force.  
But, Clifford, tell me, didst thou never hear  
That things ill-got had ever bad success?  
And happy always was it for that son  
Whose father for his hoarding went to hell?  
I'll leave my son my virtuous deeds behind;  
And would my father had left me no more!  
For all the rest is held at such a rate  
As brings a thousand-fold more care to keep  
Than in possession any jot of pleasure.—  
Ah, cousin York! would thy best friends did know  
How it doth grieve me that thy head is here!

*Q. Mar.* My lord, cheer up your spirits: our foes are  
nigh,  
And this soft courage<sup>(20)</sup> makes your followers faint.  
You promis'd knighthood to our forward son:  
Unsheathe your sword, and dub him presently.—  
Edward, kneel down.

*K. Hen.* Edward Plantagenet, arise a knight;  
And learn this lesson,—draw thy sword in right.

*Prince.* My gracious father, by your kingly leave,  
I'll draw it as apparent to the crown,  
And in that quarrel use it to the death.

*Clif.* Why, that is spoken like a toward prince.

*Enter a Messenger*

*Mess.* Royal commanders, be in readiness:  
For with a band of thirty thousand men  
Comes Warwick, backing of the Duke of York;  
And in the towns, as they do march along,  
Proclaims him king, and many fly to him:  
Darraign your battle, for they are at hand.

*Clif.* I would your highness would depart the field:  
The queen hath best success when you are absent.

*Q. Mar.* Ay, good my lord, and leave us to our fortune.

*K. Hen.* Why, that's my fortune too; therefore I'll stay.

*North.* Be it with resolution, then, to fight.

*Prince.* My royal father, cheer these noble lords,

And hearten those that fight in your defence :  
 Unsheathe your sword, good father ; cry, " Saint George ! "

*March.* Enter EDWARD, GEORGE, RICHARD, WARWICK, NORFOLK,  
 MONTAGUE, and Soldiers.

*Edw.* Now, perjur'd Henry ! wilt thou kneel for grace,  
 And set thy diadem upon my head ;  
 Or bide the mortal fortune of the field ?

*Q. Mar.* Go, rate thy minions, proud insulting boy !  
 Becomes it thee to be thus bold in terms  
 Before thy sovereign and thy lawful king ?

*Edw.* I am his king, and he should bow his knee ;  
 I was adopted heir by his consent :  
 Since<sup>(21)</sup> when, his oath is broke ; for, as I hear,  
 You, that are king, though he do wear the crown,  
 Have caus'd him, by new act of parliament,  
 To blot out me, and put his own son in.

*Clif.* And reason too :  
 Who should succeed the father but the son ?

*Rich.* Are you there, butcher ?—O, I cannot speak !

*Clif.* Ay, crook-back, here I stand to answer thee,  
 Or any he the proudest of thy sort.

*Rich.* 'Twas you that kill'd young Rutland, was it not ?

*Clif.* Ay, and old York, and yet not satisfied.

*Rich.* For God's sake, lords, give signal to the fight.

*War.* What say'st thou, Henry, wilt thou yield the crown ?

*Q. Mar.* Why, how now, long-tongu'd Warwick ! dare  
 you speak ?

When you and I met at Saint Albans last,  
 Your legs did better service than your hands.

*War.* Then 'twas my turn to fly, and now 'tis thine.

*Clif.* You said so much before, and yet you fled.

*War.* 'Twas not your valour, Clifford, drove me thence.

*North.* No, nor your manhood that durst make you stay.

*Rich.* Northumberland, I hold thee reverently.—

Break off the parley ; for scarce I can refrain

The execution of my big-sworn heart

Upon that Clifford, that cruel child-killer.

*Clif.* I slew thy father,—call'st thou him a child ?

*Rich.* Ay, like a dastard and a treacherous coward,  
As thou didst kill our tender brother Rutland ;  
But ere sunset I'll make thee curse the deed.

*K. Hen.* Have done with words, my lords, and hear me  
speak.

*Q. Mar.* Defy them, then, or else hold close thy lips.

*K. Hen.* I prithee, give no limits to my tongue :  
I am a king, and privileg'd to speak.

*Clif.* My liege, the wound that bred this meeting here  
Cannot be cur'd by words ; therefore be still.

*Rich.* Then, executioner, unsheathe thy sword :  
By him that made us all, I am resolv'd  
That Clifford's manhood lies upon his tongue.

*Edw.* Say, Henry, shall I have my right, or no ?  
A thousand men have broke their fasts to-day,  
That ne'er shall dine unless thou yield the crown.

*War.* If thou deny, their blood upon thy head ;  
For York in justice puts his armour on.

*Prince.* If that be right which Warwick says is right,  
There is no wrong, but every thing is right.

*Rich.*<sup>(23)</sup> Whoever got thee, there thy mother stands ;  
For, well I wot, thou hast thy mother's tongue.

*Q. Mar.* But thou art neither like thy sire nor dam ;  
But like a foul mis-shapen stigmatic,  
Mark'd by the destinies to be avoided,  
As venom toads, or lizards' dreadful stings.

*Rich.* Iron of Naples hid with English gilt,  
Whose father bears the title of a king  
(As if a channel should be call'd the sea),  
Sham'st thou not, knowing whence thou art extraught,  
To let thy tongue detect thy base-born heart ?

*Edw.* A wisp of straw were worth a thousand crowns,  
To make this shameless callet know herself.—  
Helen of Greece was fairer far than thou,  
Although thy husband may be Menelaus ;  
And ne'er was Agamemnon's brother wrong'd  
By that false woman, as this king by thee.  
His father revell'd in the heart of France,  
And tam'd the king, and made the dauphin stoop ;



And had he match'd according to his state,  
 He might have kept that glory to this day;  
 But when he took a beggar to his bed,  
 And grac'd thy poor sire with his bridal-day,  
 Even then that sunshine brew'd a shower for him,  
 That wash'd his father's fortunes forth of France,  
 And heap'd sedition on his crown at home.  
 For what bath broach'd this tumult but thy pride?  
 Hadst thou been meek, our title still had slept;  
 And we, in pity of the gentle king,  
 Had slipp'd our claim until another age.

*Geo.* But when we saw our sunshine made thy spring,  
 And that thy summer bred us no increase,  
 We set the axe to thy usurping root;  
 And though the edge hath something hit ourselves,  
 Yet, know thou, since we have begun to strike,  
 We'll never leave till we have hewn thee down,  
 Or bath'd thy growing with our heated bloods.

*Edw.* And, in this resolution, I defy thee;  
 Not willing any longer conference,  
 Since thou deniest<sup>(23)</sup> the gentle king to speak.—  
 Sound trumpets!—let our bloody colours wave!—  
 And either victory, or else a grave.

*Q. Mar.* Stay, Edward.

*Edw.* No, wrangling woman, we'll no longer stay:  
 These words will cost ten thousand lives this day. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. *A field of battle between Towton and Saxton,  
 in Yorkshire.*

*Alarums · excursions. Enter WARWICK.*

*War.* Forspent with toil, as runners with a race,  
 I lay me down a little while to breathe;  
 For strokes receiv'd, and many blows repaid,  
 Have robb'd my strong-knit sinews of their strength,  
 And, spite of spite, needs must I rest awhile.

*Enter EDWARD, running.*

*Edw.* Smile, gentle heaven! or strike, ungentle death!  
For this world frowns, and Edward's sun is clouded.

*War.* How now, my lord! what hap? what hope of good?

*Enter GEORGE.*

*Geo.* Our hap is loss, our hope but sad despair;  
Our ranks are broke, and ruin follows us:

What counsel give you? whither shall we fly?

*Edw.* Bootless is flight,—they follow us with wings;  
And weak we are, and cannot shun pursuit.

*Enter RICHARD.*

*Rich.* Ah, Warwick, why hast thou withdrawn thyself?  
Thy brother's blood the thirsty earth hath drunk,  
Broach'd with the steely point of Clifford's lance;  
And, in the very pangs of death, he cried,  
Like to a dismal clangor heard from far,  
"Warwick, revenge! brother, revenge my death!"  
So, underneath the belly of their steeds,  
That stain'd their fetlocks in his smoking blood,  
The noble gentleman gave up the ghost.

*War.* Then let the earth be drunken with our blood:  
I'll kill my horse, because I will not fly.  
Why stand we like soft-hearted women here,  
Wailing our losses, whiles the foe doth rage;  
And look upon, as if the tragedy  
Were play'd in jest by counterfeiting actors?  
Here on my knee I vow to God above,  
I'll never pause again, never stand still,  
Till either death hath clos'd these eyes of mine,  
Or fortune given me measure of revenge.

*Edw.* O Warwick, I do bend my knee with thine;  
And in this vow do chain my soul to thine!—  
And, ere my knee rise from the earth's cold face,  
I throw my hands, mine eyes, my heart to thee,  
Thou setter-up and plucker-down of kings,—  
Beseeching thee, if with thy will it stands  
That to my foes this body must be prey,

Yet that thy brazen gates of heaven may ope,  
And give sweet passage to my sinful soul!—  
Now, lords, take leave until we meet again,  
Where'er it be, in heaven or in<sup>(21)</sup> earth.

*Rich.* Brother, give me thy hand;—and, gentle Warwick,  
Let me embrace thee in my weary arms:  
I, that did never weep, now melt with woe  
That winter should cut off our spring-time so.

*War.* Away, away! Once more, sweet lords, farewell.

*Geo.* Yet let us all together to our troops,  
And give them leave to fly that will not stay;  
And call them pillars that will stand to us;  
And, if we thrive, promise them such rewards  
As victors wear at the Olympian games:  
This may plant courage in their quailing breasts;  
For yet is hope of life and victory.—  
Forslow no longer, make we hence again. [Exeunt.

SCENE IV. *Another part of the field.*

*Excursions. Enter RICHARD and CLIFFORD.*

*Rich.* Now, Clifford, I have singled thee alone:  
Suppose this arm is for the Duke of York,  
And this for Rutland; both bound to revenge,  
Wert thou environ'd with a brazen wall.

*Clif.* Now, Richard, I am with thee here alone:  
This is the hand that stabb'd thy father York;  
And this the hand that slew thy brother Rutland;  
And here's the heart that triumphs in their death,  
And cheers these hands that slew thy sire and brother,  
To execute the like upon thyself;  
And so, have at thee!

[*They fight. Warwick enters; Clifford flies.*

*Rich.* Nay, Warwick, single out some other chase;  
For I myself will hunt this wolf to death. [Exeunt.

SCENE V. *Another part of the field.**Alarm. Enter King HENRY.*

*K. Hen.* This battle fares like to the morning's war,  
When dying clouds contend with growing light,  
What time the shepherd, blowing of his nails,  
Can neither call it perfect day nor night.  
Now sways it this way, like a mighty sea  
Fore'd by the tide to combat with the wind;  
Now sways it that way, like the selfsame sea  
Fore'd to retire by fury of the wind:  
Sometime the flood prevails, and then the wind;  
Now one the better, then another best;  
Both tugging to be victors, breast to breast,  
Yet neither conqueror nor conquer'd:  
So is the equal poise of this fell war.  
Here on this molehill will I sit me down.  
To whom God will, there be the victory!  
For Margaret my queen, and Clifford too,  
Have chid me from the battle; swearing both  
They prosper best of all when I am thence.  
Would I were dead! if God's good will were so;  
For what is in this world but grief and woe?  
O God! methinks it were a happy life,  
To be no better than a homely swain;  
To sit upon a hill, as I do now,  
To carve out dials quaintly, point by point,  
Thereby to see the minutes how they run,—  
How many make the hour full complete;  
How many hours bring about the day;  
How many days will finish up the year;  
How many years a mortal man may live.  
When this is known, then to divide the times,—  
So many hours must I tend my flock;  
So many hours must I take my rest;  
So many hours must I contemplate;  
So many hours must I sport myself;  
So many days my ewes have been with young;

So many weeks ere the poor fools will yeau ;  
 So many years<sup>(25)</sup> ere I shall shear the fleece :  
 So minutes, hours, days, months, and years,<sup>(26)</sup>  
 Pass'd over to the end they were created,  
 Would bring white hairs unto a quiet grave.  
 Ah, what a life were this ! how sweet ! how lovely !  
 Gives not the hawthorn-bush a sweeter shade  
 'To shepherds, looking on their silly sheep,  
 Than doth a rich embroider'd canopy  
 'To kings that fear their subjects' treachery ?  
 O, yes, it doth ; a thousand-fold it doth.  
 And to conclude,—the shepherd's homely curds,  
 His cold thin drink out of his leather bottle,  
 His wonted sleep under a fresh tree's shade,  
 All which secure and sweetly he enjoys,  
 Is far beyond a prince's delicates,  
 His viands sparkling in a golden cup,  
 His body couchèd in a curious bed,  
 When care, mistrust, and treason waits on him.

*Alarum. Enter a Son that has killed his father, bringing in the dead body.*

*Son.* Ill blows the wind that profits nobody.  
 This man, whom hand to hand I slew in fight,  
 May be possessèd with some store of crowns ;  
 And I, that haply take them from him now,  
 May yet ere night yield both my life and them  
 'To some man else, as this dead man doth me.—  
 Who's this ?—O God ! it is my father's face,  
 Whom in this conflict I unwares have kill'd.  
 O heavy times, begetting such events !  
 From London by the king was I press'd forth ;  
 My father, being the Earl of Warwick's man,  
 Came on the part of York, press'd by his master ;  
 And I, who at his hands receiv'd my life,  
 Have by my hands of life bereavèd him.—  
 Pardon me, God, I knew not what I did !—  
 And pardon, father, for I knew not thee !—  
 My tears shall wipe away these bloody marks ;

And no more words till they have flow'd their fill.

*K. Hen.* O piteous spectacle! O bloody times!  
Whiles lions war and battle for their dens,  
Poor harmless lambs abide their enmity.—  
Weep, wretched man, I'll aid thee tear for tear;  
And let our hearts and eyes, like civil war,  
Be blind with tears, and break o'ercharg'd with grief.

*Enter a Father that has killed his son, bringing in the body.*

*Fath.* Thou that so stoutly hast resisted me,  
Give me thy gold, if thou hast any gold;  
For I have bought it with an hundred blows.—  
But let me see: is this our foeman's face?  
Ah, no, no, no, it is mine only son!  
Ah, boy, if any life be left in thee,  
Throw up thine eye! see, see what showers arise,  
Blown with the windy tempest of my heart,  
Upon thy wounds, that kill mine eye and heart!—  
O, pity, God, this miserable age!—  
What stratagems, how fell, how butcherly,  
Erroneous, mutinous, and unnatural,  
This deadly quarrel daily doth beget!  
O boy, thy father gave thee life too soon,  
And hath bereft thee of thy life too late!

*K. Hen.* Woe above woe! grief more than common grief!  
O that my death would stay these ruthful deeds!—  
O, pity, pity, gentle heaven, pity!—  
The red rose and the white are on his face,  
The fatal colours of our striving houses:  
The one his purple blood right well resembles;  
The other his pale cheeks, methinks, presenteth:  
Wither one rose, and let the other flourish;  
If you contend, a thousand lives must wither.

*Son.* How will my mother for a father's death  
Take on with me, and ne'er be satisfied!

*Fath.* How will my wife for slaughter of my son  
Shed seas of tears, and ne'er be satisfied!

*K. Hen.* How will the country for these woful chances  
Misthink the king, and not be satisfied!

*Son.* Was ever son so ru'd a father's death?

*Fath.* Was ever father so bemoan'd his son?

*K. Hen.* Was ever king so griev'd for subjects' woe?

Much is your sorrow; mine ten times so much.

*Son.* I'll bear thee hence, where I may weep my fill.

[*Exit with the body.*]

*Fath.* These arms of mine shall be thy winding-sheet;

My heart, sweet boy, shall be thy sepulchre,—

For from my heart thine image ne'er shall go;

My sighing breast shall be thy funeral bell;

And so obsequious will thy father be,

E'en<sup>(27)</sup> for the loss of thee, having no more,

As Priam was for all his valiant sons.

I'll bear thee hence; and let them fight that will,

For I have murder'd where I should not kill.

[*Exit with the body.*]

*K. Hen.* Sad-hearted men, much overgone with care,

Here sits a king more woful than you are.

*Alarums: excursions. Enter Queen MARGARET, Prince of WALES,  
and EXETER.*

*Prince.* Fly, father, fly! for all your friends are fled,

And Warwick rages like a chafed bull:

Away! for death doth hold us in pursuit.

*Q. Mar.* Mount you, my lord; towards Berwick post  
again:

Edward and Richard, like a brace of greyhounds

Having the fearful flying hare in sight,

With fiery eyes sparkling for very wrath,

And bloody steel grasp'd in their ireful hands,

Are at our backs; and therefore hence again.

*Exe.* Away! for vengeance comes along with them:

Nay, stay not to expostulate,—make speed;

Or else come after: I'll away before.

*K. Hen.* Nay, take me with thee, good sweet Exeter:

Not that I fear to stay, but love to go

Whither the queen intends. Forward; away! [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI. *Another part of the field,**A loud alarum. Enter CLIFFORD, wounded.*

*Clif.* Here burns my candle out,—ay, here it dies,  
 Which, whiles it lasted, gave King Henry light.  
 O Lancaster, I fear thy overthrow  
 More than my body's parting with my soul!  
 My love and fear glu'd many friends to thee;  
 And, now I fall, thy tough commixtures melt.  
 Impairing Henry, strengthening misproud York,  
 The common people swarm like summer flies;<sup>(28)</sup>  
 And whither fly the gnats but to the sun?  
 And who shines now but Henry's enemies?  
 O Phoebus, hadst thou never given consent  
 That Phaeton should check thy fiery steeds,  
 Thy burning car never had scorched the earth!  
 And, Henry, hadst thou sway'd as kings should do,  
 Or as thy father and his father did,  
 Giving no ground unto the house of York,  
 They never then had sprung like summer flies;<sup>(29)</sup>  
 I and ten thousand in this luckless realm  
 Had left no mourning widows for our death;  
 And thou this day hadst kept thy chair in peace.  
 For what doth cherish weeds but gentle air?  
 And what makes robbers bold but too much lenity?—  
 Bootless are complaints, and cureless are my wounds;  
 No way to fly, nor strength to hold out flight:  
 The foe is merciless, and will not pity;  
 For at their hands I have deserv'd no pity.  
 The air hath got into my deadly wounds,  
 And much effuse of blood doth make me faint.—  
 Come, York and Richard, Warwick and the rest;  
 I stabb'd your fathers' bosoms,—split my breast. [*He faints.*]

*Alarum and retreat. Enter EDWARD, GEORGE, RICHARD, MONTAGUE, WARWICK, and Soldiers*

*Edw.* Now breathe we, lords: good fortune bids us pause,  
 And smooth the frowns of war with peaceful looks.—



Some troops pursue the bloody-minded queen,  
That led calm Henry, though he were a king,  
As doth a sail, fill'd with a fretting gust,  
Command an argosy to stem the waves.  
But think you, lords, that Clifford fled with them?

*War.* No, 'tis impossible he should escape;  
For, though before his face I speak the words,  
Your brother Richard mark'd him for the grave:  
And wheresoe'er he is, he's surely dead.

*[Clifford groans, and dies.]*

*Edw.* <sup>(30)</sup> Whose soul is that which takes her heavy leave?

*Rich.* A deadly groan, like life and death's departing.

*Edw.* See who it is: and, now the battle's ended,  
If friend or foe, let him be gently us'd.

*Rich.* Revoke that doom of mercy, for 'tis Clifford;  
Who not contented that he lopp'd the branch  
In hewing Rutland when his leaves put forth,  
But set his murdering knife unto the root  
From whence that tender spray did sweetly spring,—  
I mean our princely father, Duke of York.

*War.* From off the gates of York fetch down the head,  
Your father's head, which Clifford placèd there;  
Instead whereof let this supply the room:  
Measure for measure must be answer'd.

*Edw.* Bring forth that fatal screech-owl to our house,  
That nothing sung but death to us and ours:  
Now death shall stop his dismal threatening sound,  
And his ill-boding tongue no more shall speak.

*[Soldiers bring the body forward.]*

*War.* I think his understanding is bereft.—  
Speak, Clifford, dost thou know who speaks to thee?—  
Dark cloudy death o'ershades his beams of life,  
And he nor sees nor hears us what we say.

*Rich.* O, would he did! and so, perhaps, he doth:  
'Tis but his policy to counterfeit,  
Because he would avoid such bitter taunts  
Which in the time of death he gave our father.

*Geo.* If so thou think'st, vex him with eager words.

*Rich.* Clifford, ask mercy, and obtain no grace.

*Edw.* Clifford, repent in bootless penitence.

*War.* Clifford, devise excuses for thy faults.

*Geo.* While we devise fell tortures for thy faults.

*Rich.* Thou didst love York, and I am son to York.

*Edw.* Thou pitied'st Rutland, I will pity thee.

*Geo.* Where's Captain Margaret, to fence you now?

*War.* They mock thee, Clifford: swear as thou wast wont.

*Rich.* What, not an oath? nay, then the world goes hard  
When Clifford cannot spare his friends an oath.—  
I know by that he's dead; and, by my soul,  
If this right hand would buy two hours' life,  
That I in all despite might rail at him,  
This hand should chop it off; and with the issuing blood  
Stifle the villain whose unstanched thirst  
York and young Rutland could not satisfy.

*War.* Ay, but he's dead: off with the traitor's head,  
And rear it in the place your father's stands.—  
And now to London with triumphant march,  
There to be crownèd England's royal king.  
From whence shall Warwick cut the sea to France,  
And ask the Lady Bona for thy queen:  
So shalt thou sinew both these lands together;  
And, having France thy friend, thou shalt not dread  
The scatter'd foe that hopes to rise again;  
For though they cannot greatly sting to hurt,  
Yet look to have them buzz to offend thine ears.  
First will I see the coronation;  
And then to Brittany I'll cross the sea,  
To effect this marriage, so it please my lord.

*Edw.* Even as thou wilt, sweet Warwick, let it be;  
For in<sup>(31)</sup> thy shoulder do I build my seat,  
And never will I undertake the thing  
Wherein thy counsel and consent is wanting.—  
Richard, I will create thee Duke of Gloster;—  
And George, of Clarence:—Warwick, as ourself,  
Shall do and undo as him pleaseth best.

*Rich.* Let me be Duke of Clarence, George of Gloster;  
For Gloster's dukedom is too ominous.

*War.* Tut, that's a foolish observation :  
 Richard, be Duke of Gloster. Now to London,  
 To see these honours in possession.

[*Exeunt.*]

### ACT III.

#### SCENE I. *A Chase in the north of England.*

*Enter two Keepers, with cross-bows in their hands.*

*First Keep.* Under this thick-grown brake we'll shroud  
 ourselves ;

For through this laund anon the deer will come ;  
 And in this covert will we make our stand,  
 Culling the principal of all the deer.

*Sec. Keep.* I'll stay above the hill, so both may shoot.

*First Keep.* That cannot be ; the noise of thy cross-bow  
 Will scare the herd, and so my shoot is lost.  
 Here stand we both, and aim we at the best :  
 And, for the time shall not seem tedious,  
 I'll tell thee what befel me on a day  
 In this self-place where now we mean to stand.

*Sec. Keep.* Here comes a man ; let's stay till he be past.

*Enter King HENRY, disguised, with a prayer-book.*

*K. Hen.* From Scotland am I stol'n, even of pure love,  
 To greet mine own land with my wishful sight,  
 No, Harry, Harry, 'tis no land of thine ;  
 Thy place is fill'd, thy sceptre wrung from thee,  
 Thy balm wash'd off wherewith thou wast anointed :  
 No bending knee will call thee Cæsar now,  
 No humble suitors press to speak for right,  
 No, not a man comes for redress of thee ;  
 For how can I help them, and not myself ?

*First Keep.* Ay, here's a deer whose skin's a keeper's fee ;  
 This is the *quondam* king ; let's seize upon him.

*K. Hen.* Let me embrace these sour adversities ;<sup>(32)</sup>  
 For wise men say it is the wisest course.

*Sec. Keep.* Why linger we? let us lay hands upon him.

*First Keep.* Forbear awhile; we'll hear a little more.

*K. Hen.* My queen and son are gone to France for aid;  
And, as I hear, the great commanding Warwick  
Is thither gone, to crave the French king's sister  
To wife for Edward: if this news be true,  
Poor queen and son, your labour is but lost;  
For Warwick is a subtle orator,  
And Louis a prince soon won with moving words.  
By this account, then, Margaret may win him;  
For she's a woman to be pitied much:  
Her sighs will make a battery in his breast;  
Her tears will pierce into a marble heart;  
The tiger will be mild whiles she doth mourn;  
And Nero will be tainted with remorse,  
To hear and see her plaints, her blinish tears.  
Ay, but she's come to beg; Warwick, to give:  
She, on his left side, craving aid for Henry;  
He, on his right, asking a wife for Edward.  
She weeps, and says her Henry is depos'd;  
He smiles, and says his Edward is install'd;  
That she, poor wretch, for grief can speak no more;  
Whiles Warwick tells his title, smooths the wrong,  
Inferreth arguments of mighty strength,  
And in conclusion wins the king from her,  
With promise of his sister, and what else,  
To strengthen and support King Edward's place.  
O Margaret, thus 'twill be; and thou, poor soul,  
Art then forsaken, as thou went'st forlorn!

*Sec. Keep.* Say, what art thou, that<sup>(33)</sup> talk'st of kings  
and queens?

*K. Hen.* More than I seem, and less than I was born to:  
A man at least, for less I should not be;  
And men may talk of kings, and why not I?

*Sec. Keep.* Ay, but thou talk'st as if thou wert a king.

*K. Hen.* Why, so I am—in mind; and that's enough.

*Sec. Keep.* But, if thou be a king, where is thy crown?

*K. Hen.* My crown is in my heart, not on my head;  
Not deck'd with diamonds and Indian stones,

Nor to be seen : my crown is call'd content,—  
A crown it is that seldom kings enjoy.

*Sec. Keep.* Well, if you be a king crown'd with content,  
Your crown content and you must be contented  
To go along with us ; for, as we think,  
You are the king King Edward hath depos'd ;  
And we his subjects, sworn in all allegiance,  
Will apprehend you as his enemy.

*K. Hen.* But did you never swear, and break an oath ?

*Sec. Keep.* No, never such an oath ; nor will not now.

*K. Hen.* Where did you dwell when I was King of England ?

*Sec. Keep.* Here in this country, where we now remain.

*K. Hen.* I was anointed king at nine months old ;  
My father and my grandfather were kings ;  
And you were sworn true subjects unto me :  
And tell me, then, have you not broke your oaths ?

*First Keep.* No ;  
For we were subjects but while you were king.

*K. Hen.* Why, am I dead ? do I not breathe a man ?  
Ah, simple men, you know not what you swear !  
Look, as I blow this feather from my face,  
And as the air blows it to me again,  
Obeying with my wind when I do blow,  
And yielding to another when it blows,  
Commanded always by the greater gust ;  
Such is the lightness of you common men.  
But do not break your oaths ; for of that sin  
My mild entreaty shall not make you guilty.  
Go where you will, the king shall be commanded ;  
And be you kings ; command, and I'll obey.

*First Keep.* We are true subjects to the king, King Edward.

*K. Hen.* So would you be again to Henry,  
If he were seated as King Edward is.

*First Keep.* We charge you, in God's name, and<sup>(31)</sup> the king's,  
To go with us unto the officers.

*K. Hen.* In God's name, lead ; your king's name be obey'd :

And what God will, that let your king perform ;  
And what he will, I humbly yield unto. [Exeunt.

SCENE II. *London. A room in the palace.*

*Enter King EDWARD, GLOSTER, CLARENCE, and Lady GREY.*

*K. Edw.* Brother of Gloster, at Saint Alban's field  
This lady's husband, Sir John Grey,<sup>(35)</sup> was slain,  
His lands<sup>(36)</sup> then seiz'd on by the conqueror :  
Her suit is now to repossess those lands ;  
Which we in justice cannot well deny,  
Because in quarrel of the house of York  
The worthy gentleman did lose his life.

*Glo.* Your highness shall do well to grant her suit ;  
It were dishonour to deny it her.

*K. Edw.* It were no less ; but yet I'll make a pause.

*Glo.* Yea, is it so ?

I see the lady hath a thing to grant,  
Before the king will grant her humble suit. [Aside to *Clar.*

| *Clar.* He knows the game : how true he keeps the wind !

[Aside to *Glo.*

*Glo.* Silence !

[Aside to *Clar.*

*K. Edw.* Widow, we will consider of your suit ;  
And come some other time to know our mind.

*L. Grey.* Right gracious lord, I cannot brook delay :  
May it please your highness to resolve me now ;  
And what your pleasure is, shall satisfy me.

*Glo.* Ay, widow ? then I'll warrant you all your lands,  
An if what pleases him shall please you.

Fight closer, or, good faith, you'll catch a blow. [Aside.

*Clar.* I fear her not, unless she chance to fall.

[Aside to *Glo.*

*Glo.* God forbid that ! for he'll take vantages.

[Aside to *Clar.*

*K. Edw.* How many children hast thou, widow ? tell me.

*Clar.* I think he means to beg a child of her. [Aside to *Glo.*

*Glo.* Nay, whip me, then ;<sup>(37)</sup> he'll rather give her two.

[Aside to *Clar.*

*L. Grey.* Three, my most gracious lord.

*Glo.* You shall have four, if you'll be rul'd by him.

[*Aside.*

*K. Edw.* 'Twere pity they should lose their father's lands.<sup>(38)</sup>

*L. Grey.* Be pitiful, dread lord, and grant it, then.

*K. Edw.* Lords, give us leave: I'll try this widow's wit.

*Glo.* Ay, good leave have you; for you will have leave,  
Till youth take leave, and leave you to the crutch,

[*Aside, and retires with Clarence.*

*K. Edw.* Now tell me, madam, do you love your children?

*L. Grey.* Ay, full as dearly as I love myself.

*K. Edw.* And would you not do much to do them good?

*L. Grey.* To do them good, I would sustain some harm.

*K. Edw.* Then get your husband's lands, to do them good.

*L. Grey.* Therefore I came unto your majesty.

*K. Edw.* I'll tell you how these lands are to be got.

*L. Grey.* So shall you bind me to your highness' service.

*K. Edw.* What service wilt thou do me, if I give them?

*L. Grey.* What you command, that rests in me to do.

*K. Edw.* But you will take exceptions to my boon.

*L. Grey.* No, gracious lord, except I cannot do it.

*K. Edw.* Ay, but thou caust do what I mean to ask.

*L. Grey.* Why, then I will do what your grace commands.

*Glo.* He plies her hard; and much rain wears the marble.

[*Aside to Clar.*

*Clar.* As red as fire! nay, then her wax must melt.

[*Aside to Glo.*

*L. Grey.* Why stops my lord? shall I not hear my task?

*K. Edw.* An easy task; 'tis but to love a king.

*L. Grey.* That's soon perform'd, because I am a subject.

*K. Edw.* Why, then, thy husband's lands I freely give thee.

*L. Grey.* I take my leave with many thousand thanks.

*Glo.* The match is made; she seals it with a curt'sy. [*Aside.*

*K. Edw.* But stay thee,—'tis the fruits of love I mean.

*L. Grey.* The fruits of love I mean, my loving liege.

*K. Edw.* Ay, but, I fear me, in another sense.

What love, think'st thou, I sue so much to get?

*L. Grey.* My love till death, my humble thanks, my  
prayers;

That love which virtue begs, and virtue grants.

*K. Edw.* No, by my troth, I did not mean such love.

*L. Grey.* Why, then you mean not as I thought you did.

*K. Edw.* But now you partly may perceive my mind.

*L. Grey.* My mind will never grant what I perceive

Your highness aims at, if I aim aright.

*K. Edw.* To tell thee plain, I aim to lie with thee.

*L. Grey.* To tell you plain, I had rather lie in prison.

*K. Edw.* Why, then thou shalt not have thy husband's lands.

*L. Grey.* Why, then mine honesty shall be my dower;

For by that loss I will not purchase them.

*K. Edw.* Therein thou wrong'st thy children mightily.

*L. Grey.* Herein your highness wrongs both them and me.

But, mighty lord, this merry inclination

Accords not with the sadness of my suit:

Please you dismiss me, either with ay or no.

*K. Edw.* Ay, if thou wilt say ay to my request;

No, if thou dost say no to my demand.

*L. Grey.* Then, no, my lord. My suit is at an end.

*Glo.* The widow likes him not, she knits her brows.

[*Aside to Clar.*

*Clar.* He is the bluntest wooer in Christendom,

[*Aside to Glo.*

*K. Edw.* Her looks do argue her replete with modesty;

Her words do show her wit incomparable;

All her perfections challenge sovereignty:

One way or other, she is for a king;

And she shall be my love, or else my queen.— [*Aside.*

Say that King Edward take thee for his queen?

*L. Grey.* 'Tis better said than done, my gracious lord:

I am a subject fit to jest withal,

But far unfit to be a sovereign.

*K. Edw.* Sweet widow, by my state I swear to thee

I speak no more than what my soul intends;

And that is, to enjoy thee for my love.

*L. Grey.* And that is more than I will yield unto:

I know I am too mean to be your queen,

And yet too good to be your concubine.

*K. Edw.* You cavil, widow: I did mean, my queen.



*L. Grey.* 'Twill grieve your grace my sons should call  
you father.

*K. Edw.* No more than when my daughters call thee  
mother.

Thou art a widow, and thou hast some children ;  
And, by God's mother, I, being but a bachelor,  
Have other some : why, 'tis a happy thing  
To be the father unto many sons.

Answer no more, for thou shalt be my queen.

*Glo.* The ghostly father now hath done his shrift.

[*Aside to Clar.*

*Clar.* When he was made a shriver, 'twas for shift.

[*Aside to Glo.*

*K. Edw.* Brothers, you muse what chat we two have had.

*Glo.* The widow likes it not, for she looks very <sup>(39)</sup> sad.

*K. Edw.* You'd think it strange if I should marry her.

*Clar.* To whom, <sup>(40)</sup> my lord ?

*K. Edw.* Why, Clarence, to myself.

*Glo.* That would be ten days' wonder at the least.

*Clar.* That's a day longer than a wonder lasts.

*Glo.* By so much is the wonder in extremes.

*K. Edw.* Well, jest on, brothers : I can tell you both  
Her suit is granted for her husband's lands.

*Enter a Nobleman.*

*Nob.* My gracious lord, Henry your foe is taken,  
And brought your prisoner to your palace-gate.

*K. Edw.* See that he be convey'd unto the Tower :—  
And go we, brothers, to the man that took him,  
To question of his apprehension.—

Widow, go you along :—lords, use her honourably. <sup>(11)</sup>

[*Exeunt King Edward, Lady Grey, Clarence, and Nobleman.*

*Glo.* Ay, Edward will use women honourably.—

Would he were wasted, marrow, bones, and all,  
'That from his loins no hopeful branch may spring,  
To cross me from the golden time I look for !  
And yet, between my soul's desire and me  
(The lustful Edward's title buried)  
Is Clarence, Henry, and his son young Edward,

And all the unlook'd-for issue of their bodies,  
To take their rooms, ere I can place myself:  
A cold premeditation for my purpose!  
Why, then, I do but dream on sovereignty;  
Like one that stands upon a promontory,  
And spies a far-off shore where he would tread,  
Wishing his foot were equal with his eye;  
And chides the sea that sunders him from thence,  
Saying, he'll lade it dry to have his way:  
So do I wish the crown, being so far off;  
And so I chide the means that keep me from it;  
And so I say, I'll cut the causes off,  
Flattering me with impossibilities.—  
My eye's too quick, my heart o'erwheens too much,  
Unless my hand and strength could equal them.  
Well, say there is no kingdom, then, for Richard;  
What other pleasure can the world afford?  
I'll make my heaven in a lady's lap,  
And deck my body in gay ornaments,  
And witch sweet ladies with my words and looks.  
O miserable thought! and more unlikely  
Than to accomplish twenty golden crowns!  
Why, love forswore me in my mother's womb:  
And, for I should not deal in her soft laws,  
She did corrupt frail nature with some bribe,  
To shrink mine arm up like a wither'd shrub;  
To make an envious mountain on my back,  
Where sits deformity to mock my body;  
To shape my legs of an unequal size;  
To disproportion me in every part,  
Like to a chaos, or an unlick'd bear-whelp  
That carries no impression like the dam,  
And am I, then, a man to be lov'd?  
O monstrous fault, to harbour such a thought!  
Then, since this earth affords no joy to me,  
But to command, to check, to o'erbear such  
As are of better person than myself,  
I'll make my heaven to dream upon the crown,  
And, whiles I live, to account this world but hell,

Until<sup>(12)</sup> my mis-shap'd trunk that bears this head  
 Be round inpalèd with a glorious crown.  
 And yet I know not how to get the crown,  
 For many lives stand between me and home :  
 And I,—like one lost in a thorny wood,  
 That rents the thorns, and is rent with the thorns,  
 Seeking a way, and straying from the way ;  
 Not knowing how to find the open air,  
 But toiling desperately to find it out,—  
 Torment myself to catch the English crown :  
 And from that torment I will free myself,  
 Or hew my way out with a bloody axe.  
 Why, I can smile, and murder whiles I smile ;  
 And cry content to that which grieves my heart ;  
 And wet my cheeks with artificial tears,  
 And frame my face to all occasions.  
 I'll drown more sailors than the mermaid shall ;  
 I'll slay more gazers than the basilisk ;  
 I'll play the orator as well as Nestor ;  
 Deceive more silyly than Ulysses could ;  
 And, like a Sinon, take another Troy ;  
 I can add colours to the chameleon ;  
 Change shapes with Proteus for advantages ;  
 And set the murderous Machiavel to school.  
 Can I do this, and cannot get a crown ?  
 Tut, were it further off, I'll pluck it down. [Exit.]

SCENE III. *France. A room in the palace.*

*Flourish. Enter LOUIS the French king, and Lady BONA, attended ; the King takes his state. Then enter Queen MARGARET, Prince EDWARD, and the Earl of OXFORD.*

*K. Lou.* Fair Queen of England, worthy Margaret,  
 Sit down with us : it ill befits thy state [Rising.]  
 And birth, that thou shouldst stand while Louis doth sit.  
*Q. Mar.* No, mighty King of France : now Margaret  
 Must strike her sail, and learn awhile to serve,

Where kings command. I was, I must confess,  
Great Albion's queen in former golden days :  
But now mischance hath trod my title down,  
And with dishonour laid me on the ground ;  
Where I must take like seat unto my fortune,  
And to my humble seat conform myself.

*K. Lou.* Why, say, fair queen, whence springs this deep  
despair ?

*Q. Mar.* From such a cause as fills mine eyes with tears,  
And stops my tongue, while heart is drown'd in cares.

*K. Lou.* Whate'er it be, be thou still like thyself,  
And sit thee by our side : yield not thy neck

*[Seats her by him.*

To fortune's yoke, but let thy dauntless mind  
Still ride in triumph over all mischance.  
Be plain, Queen Margaret, and tell thy grief ;  
It shall be eas'd, if France can yield relief.

*Q. Mar.* Those gracious words revive my drooping  
thoughts,

And give my tongue-tied sorrows leave to speak.

Now, therefore, be it known to noble Louis,  
That Henry, sole possessor of my love,  
Is, of a king, become a banish'd man,  
And forc'd to live in Scotland a forlorn ;  
While proud ambitious Edward duke of York  
Usurps the regal title and the seat  
Of England's true-anointed lawful king.  
This is the cause that I, poor Margaret,—  
With this my son, Prince Edward, Henry's heir,—  
Am come to crave thy just and lawful aid ;  
And if thou fail us, all our hope is done :  
Scotland hath will to help, but cannot help ;  
Our people and our peers are both misled,  
Our treasure seiz'd, our soldiers put to flight,  
And, as thou seest, ourselves in heavy plight.

*K. Lou.* Renowned queen, with patience calm the storm,  
While we bethink a means to break it off.

*Q. Mar.* The more we stay, the stronger grows our foe.

*K. Lou.* The more I stay, the more I'll succour thee.

*Q. Mar.* O, but impatience waiteth on true sorrow :—  
And see where comes the breeder of my sorrow !

*Enter WARWICK, attended.*

*K. Lou.* What's he approacheth boldly to our presence ?

*Q. Mar.* Our Earl of Warwick, Edward's greatest friend.

*K. Lou.* Welcome, brave Warwick ! What brings thee  
to France ?

*[Descending from his state. Queen Margaret rises.]*

*Q. Mar.* Ay, now begins a second storm to rise ;

For this is he that moves both wind and tide.

*War.* From worthy Edward, king of Albion,  
My lord and sovereign, and thy vowèd friend,  
I come, in kindness and unfeignèd love,—  
First, to do greetings to thy royal person ;  
And then to crave a league of amity ;  
And lastly, to confirm that amity  
With nuptial knot, if thou vouchsafe to grant  
That virtuous Lady Bona, thy fair sister,  
To England's king in lawful marriage.

*Q. Mar.* If that go forward, Henry's hope is done.

*War.* And, gracious madam [*to Bona*], in our king's behalf,

I am commanded, with your leave and favour,  
Humbly to kiss your hand, and with my tongue  
To tell the passion of my sovereign's heart ;  
Where fame, late entering at his heedful ears,  
Hath plac'd thy beauty's image and thy virtue.

*Q. Mar.* King Louis,—and Lady Bona,—hear me speak,  
Before you answer Warwick. His demand  
Springs not from Edward's well-meant honest love,  
But from deceit bred by necessity ;  
For how can tyrants safely govern home,  
Unless abroad they purchase great alliance ?  
To prove him tyrant this reason may suffice,—  
That Henry liveth still ; but were he dead,  
Yet here Prince Edward stands, King Henry's son.  
Look, therefore, Louis, that by this league and marriage  
Thou draw not on thy danger and dishonour ;

For though usurpers sway the rule awhile,  
Yet heavens are just, and time suppresseth wrongs.

*War.* Injurious Margaret!

*Prince.* And why not queen?

*War.* Because thy father Henry did usurp;  
And thou no more art prince than she is queen.

*Oxf.* Then Warwick disannuls great John of Gaunt,  
Which did subdue the greatest part of Spain;  
And, after John of Gaunt, Henry the fourth,  
Whose wisdom was a mirror to the wisest;  
And, after that wise prince, Henry the fifth,  
Who by his prowess conquerèd all France:  
From these our Henry lineally descends.

*War.* Oxford, how haps it, in this smooth discourse,  
You told not how Henry the sixth hath lost  
All that which Henry the fifth had gotten?  
Methinks these peers of France should smile at that.  
But for the rest,—you tell a pedigree  
Of threescore and two years; a silly time  
To make prescription for a kingdom's worth.

*Oxf.* Why, Warwick, canst thou speak against thy liege,  
Whom thou obeyed'st thirty and six years,  
And not bewray thy treason with a blush?

*War.* Can Oxford, that did ever fence the right,  
Now buckler falsehood with a pedigree?  
For shame! leave Henry, and call Edward king.

*Oxf.* Call him my king by whose injurious doom  
My elder brother, the Lord Aubrey Vere,  
Was done to death? and more than so, my father,  
Even in the downfall of his mellow'd years,  
When nature brought him to the door of death?  
No, Warwick, no; while life upholds this arm,  
This arm upholds the house of Lancaster.

*War.* And I the house of York.

*K. Lou.* Queen Margaret, Prince Edward, and Oxford,  
Vouchsafe, at our request, to stand aside,  
While I use further conference with Warwick.

*Q. Mar.* Heavens grant that Warwick's words bewitch him  
not! [*Retiring with the Prince and Oxford.*]

*K. Lou.* Now, Warwick, tell me, even upon thy conscience,

Is Edward your true king? for I were loth  
To link with him that were not lawful chosen.

*War.* Thereon I pawn my credit and mine honour.

*K. Lou.* But is he gracious in the people's eye?

*War.* The more, that Henry was unfortunate.

*K. Lou.* Then further,—all dissembling set aside,  
Tell me for truth the measure of his love  
Unto our sister Bona.

*War.* Such it seems  
As may beseem a monarch like himself.  
Myself have often heard him say, and swear,  
That this his love was an eternal<sup>(43)</sup> plant,  
Whereof the root was fix'd in virtue's ground,  
The leaves and fruit maintain'd with beauty's sun;  
Exempt from envy, but not from disdain,  
Unless the Lady Bona quit his pain.

*K. Lou.* Now, sister, let us hear your firm resolve.

*Bona.* Your grant, or your denial, shall be mine:—  
Yet I confess [*to War.*] that often ere this day,  
When I have heard your king's desert recounted,  
Mine ear hath tempted judgment to desire.

*K. Lou.* Then, Warwick, thus,—Our sister shall be Edward's;  
And now forthwith shall articles be drawn  
Touching the jointure that your king must make,  
Which with her dowry shall be counterpois'd.—  
Draw near, Queen Margaret, and be a witness  
That Bona shall be wife to the English king.

*Prince.* To Edward, but not to the English king.

*Q. Mar.* Deceitful Warwick! it was thy device  
By this alliance to make void my suit:  
Before thy coming, Louis was Henry's friend.

*K. Lou.* And still is friend to him and Margaret:  
But if your title to the crown be weak,—  
As may appear by Edward's good success,—  
Then 'tis but reason that I be releas'd  
From giving aid which late I promis'd.

Yet shall you have all kindness at my hand  
That your estate requires, and mine can yield.

*War.* Henry now lives in Scotland at his ease,  
Where having nothing, nothing can he lose.  
And as for you yourself, our *quondam* queen,  
You have a father able to maintain you;  
And better 'twere you troubled him than France.

*Q. Mar.* Peace, impudent and shameless Warwick,—<sup>(44)</sup>  
Proud setter-up and puller-down of kings!  
I will not hence, till, with my talk and tears,  
Both full of truth, I make King Louis behold  
Thy sly conveyance and thy lord's false love;  
For both of you are birds of selfsame feather.

[*A horn sounded within.*]

*K. Lou.* Warwick, this is some post to us, or thee.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* My lord ambassador, these letters are for you,  
Sent from your brother, Marquis Montague:—  
These from our king unto your majesty:—  
And, madam, these for you; from whom I know not.

[*To Margaret. They all read their letters.*]

*Oxf.* I like it well, that our fair queen and mistress  
Smiles at her news, while Warwick frowns at his.

*Prince.* Nay, mark how Louis stamps, as he were nettled:  
I hope all's for the best.

*K. Lou.* Warwick, what are thy news?—and yours, fair  
queen?

*Q. Mar.* Mine, such as fill my heart with unhop'd joys.

*War.* Mine, full of sorrow and heart's discontent.

*K. Lou.* What! has your king married the Lady Grey?  
And now, to soothe your forgery and his,  
Sends me a paper to persuade me patience?  
Is this the alliance that he seeks with France?  
Dare he presume to scorn us in this manner?

*Q. Mar.* I told your majesty as much before:  
This proveth Edward's love, and Warwick's honesty.

*War.* King Louis, I here protest, in sight of heaven,  
And by the hope I have of heavenly bliss,



That I am clear from this misdeed of Edward's,—  
 No more my king, for he dishonours me,  
 But most himself, if he could see his shame.  
 Did I forget, that by the house of York  
 My father came untimely to his death?  
 Did I let pass the abuse done to my niece?  
 Did I impale him with the regal crown?  
 Did I put Henry from his native right?  
 And am I guerdon'd at the last with shame?  
 Shame on himself! for my desert is honour:  
 And, to repair my honour lost for him,  
 I here renounce him, and return to Henry.—  
 My noble queen, let former grudges pass,  
 And henceforth I am thy true servitor:  
 I will revenge his wrong to Lady Bona,  
 And replant Henry in his former state.

*Q. Mar.* Warwick, these words have turn'd my hate to  
 love;

And I forgive and quite forget old faults,  
 And joy that thou becom'st King Henry's friend.

*War.* So much his friend, ay, his unfeignèd friend,  
 That, if King Louis vouchsafe to furnish us  
 With some few bands of chosen soldiers,  
 I'll undertake to land them on our coast,  
 And force the tyrant from his seat by war.  
 'Tis not his new-made bride shall succour him:  
 And as for Clarence,—as my letters tell me,  
 He's very likely now to fall from him,  
 For matching more for wanton lust than honour,  
 Or than for strength and safety of our country.

*Bona.* Dear brother, how shall Bona be reveng'd,  
 But by thy help to this distressèd queen?

*Q. Mar.* Renownèd prince, how shall poor Henry live,  
 Unless thou rescue him from foul despair?

*Bona.* My quarrel and this English queen's are one.

*War.* And mine, fair Lady Bona, joins with yours.

*K. Lou.* And mine with hers, and thine, and Margaret's.  
 Therefore, at last, I firmly am resolv'd  
 You shall have aid.

*Q. Mar.* Let me give humble thanks for all at once.

*K. Lou.* Then, England's messenger, return in post,  
And tell false Edward, thy supposed king,  
That Louis of France is sending over masquers  
To revel it with him and his new bride :  
Thou seest what's past,—go fear thy king withal.

*Bona.* Tell him, in hope he'll prove a widower shortly,  
I'll wear the willow-garland for his sake.

*Q. Mar.* Tell him, my mourning-weeds are laid aside,  
And I am ready to put armour on.

*War.* Tell him from me, that he hath done me wrong ;  
And therefore I'll uncrown him, ere't be long.  
There's thy reward : be gone. [Exit Mess.]

*K. Lou.* But, Warwick,  
Thou and Oxford, with five thousand men,  
Shall cross the seas, and bid false Edward battle ;  
And, as occasion serves, this noble queen  
And prince shall follow with a fresh supply.  
Yet, ere thou go, but answer me one doubt,—  
What pledge have we of thy firm loyalty ?

*War.* This shall assure my constant loyalty,—  
That if our queen and this young prince agree,  
I'll join mine eldest daughter and my joy  
To him forthwith in holy wedlock-bands.

*Q. Mar.* Yes, I agree, and thank you for your motion.—  
Son Edward, she is fair and virtuous,  
Therefore delay not, give thy hand to Warwick ;  
And, with thy hand, thy faith irrevocable,  
That only Warwick's daughter shall be thine.

*Prince.* Yes, I accept her, for she well deserves it ;  
And here, to pledge my vow, I give my hand.

[He gives his hand to Warwick.]

*K. Lou.* Why stay we now ? These soldiers shall be  
levied,  
And thou, Lord Bourbon, our high-admiral,  
Shall waft them over with our royal fleet.—  
I long till Edward fall by war's mischance,  
For mocking marriage with a dame of France.  
[Exeunt all except Warwick.]

*War.* I came from Edward as ambassador,  
 But I return his sworn and mortal foe ;  
 Matter of marriage was the charge he gave me,  
 But dreadful war shall answer his demand.  
 Had he none else to make a stale but me ?  
 Then none but I shall turn his jest to sorrow.  
 I was the chief that rais'd him to the crown,  
 And I'll be chief to bring him down again :  
 Not that I pity Henry's misery,  
 But seek revenge on Edward's mockery. [Exit.]

## ACT IV.

SCENE I. *London. A room in the palace.*

*Enter GLOSTER, CLARENCE, SOMERSET, MONTAGUE, and others*

*Glo.* Now tell me, brother Clarence, what think you  
 Of this new marriage with the Lady Grey ?  
 Hath not our brother made a worthy choice ?

*Clar.* Alas, you know, 'tis far from hence to France ;  
 How could he stay till Warwick made return ?

*Som.* My lords, forbear this talk ; here comes the king.

*Glo.* And his well-chosen bride.

*Clar.* I mind to tell him plainly what I think.

*Flourish.* *Enter King Edward, attended ; Lady Gauray, as Queen ;  
 Pembroke, Stafford, Hastings, and others.*

*K. Edw.* Now, brother of Clarence, how like you our  
 choice,  
 That you stand pensive, as half malcontent ?

*Clar.* As well as Louis of France, or the Earl of Warwick ;  
 Which are so weak of courage and in judgment,  
 That they'll take no offence at our abuse.

*K. Edw.* Suppose they take offence without a cause,  
 They are but Louis and Warwick : I am Edward,  
 Your king and Warwick's, and must have my will.

*Glo.* And<sup>(45)</sup> shall have your will, because our king ;  
 Yet hasty marriage seldom proveth well.

*K. Edw.* Yea, brother Richard, are you offended too?

*Glo.* Not I:

No, God forbid that I should wish them sever'd  
Whom God hath join'd together; ay, and 'twere pity  
To sunder them that yoke so well together.

*K. Edw.* Setting your scorns and your mislike aside,  
Tell me some reason why the Lady Grey  
Should not become my wife and England's queen:—  
And you too, Somerset and Montague,  
Speak freely what you think.

*Clar.* Then this is mine opinion,—that King Louis  
Becomes your enemy, for mocking him  
About the marriage of the Lady Bona.

*Glo.* And Warwick, doing what you gave in charge,  
Is now dishonour'd by this new marriage.

*K. Edw.* What if both Louis and Warwick be appeas'd  
By such invention as I can devise?

*Mont.* Yet, to have join'd with France in such alliance  
Would more have strengthen'd this our commonwealth  
'Gainst foreign storms than any home-bred marriage.

*Hast.* Why, knows not Montague that of itself  
England is safe, if true within itself?

*Mont.* But<sup>(10)</sup> the safer when 'tis back'd with France.

*Hast.* 'Tis better using France than trusting France:  
Let us be back'd with God, and with the seas  
Which he hath given for fence impregnable,  
And with their helps only defend ourselves;  
In them and in ourselves our safety lies.

*Clar.* For this one speech Lord Hastings well deserves  
To have the heir of the Lord Hungerford.

*K. Edw.* Ay, what of that? it was my will and grant;  
And for this once my will shall stand for law.

*Glo.* And yet methinks your grace hath not done well,  
To give the heir and daughter of Lord Scales  
Unto the brother of your loving bride;  
She better would have fitted me or Clarence:  
But in your bride you bury brotherhood.

*Clar.* Or else you would not have bestow'd the heir

Of the Lord Bouville on your new wife's son,  
And leave your brothers to go speed elsewhere.

*K. Edw.* Alas, poor Clarence! is it for a wife  
That thou art malcontent? I will provide thee.

*Clar.* In choosing for yourself, you show'd your judgment,  
Which being shallow, you shall give me leave  
To play the broker in mine own behalf;  
And to that end I shortly mind to leave you.

*K. Edw.* Leave me, or tarry, Edward will be king,  
And not be tied unto his brother's will.

*Q. Eliz.* My lords, before it pleas'd his majesty  
To raise my state to title of a queen,  
Do me but right, and you must all confess  
That I was not ignoble of descent;  
And meaner than myself have had like fortune.  
But as this title honours me and mine,  
So your dislikes, to whom I would be pleasing,  
Do cloud my joys with danger and with sorrow.

*K. Edw.* My love, forbear to fawn upon their frowns:  
What danger or what sorrow can befall thee,  
So long as Edward is thy constant friend,  
And their true sovereign, whom they must obey?  
Nay, whom they shall obey, and love thee too,  
Unless they seek for hatred at my hands;  
Which if they do, yet will I keep thee safe,  
And they shall feel the vengeance of my wrath.

*Glo.* I hear, yet say not much, but think the more.

[*Aside.*]

*Enter a Messenger*

*K. Edw.* Now, messenger, what letters or what news  
From France?

*Mess.* My sovereign liege, no letters; and few words,  
But such as I, without your special pardon,  
Dare not relate.

*K. Edw.* Go to, we pardon thee: therefore, in brief,  
Tell me their words as near as thou canst guess them.  
What answer makes King Louis unto our letters?

*Mess.* At my depart, these were his very words :  
 " Go tell false Edward, thy<sup>(17)</sup> supposed king,  
 That Louis of France is sending over masquers  
 To revel it with him and his new bride."

*K. Edw.* Is Louis so brave? belike he thinks me Henry.  
 But what said Lady Bona to my marriage?

*Mess.* These were her words, utter'd with mild disdain :  
 " Tell him, in hope he'll prove a widower shortly,  
 I'll wear the willow-garland for his sake."

*K. Edw.* I blame not her, she could say little less ;  
 She had the wrong. But what said Henry's queen ?  
 For I have heard that she was there in place.

*Mess.* " Tell him," quoth she, " my mourning-weeds are  
 done,  
 And I am ready to put armour on."

*K. Edw.* Belike she minds to play the Amazon.  
 But what said Warwick to these injuries?

*Mess.* He, more incens'd against your majesty  
 Than all the rest, discharg'd me with these words :  
 " Tell him from me, that he hath done me wrong,  
 And therefore I'll uncrown him, ere't be long."

*K. Edw.* Ha! durst the traitor breathe out so proud  
 words?

Well, I will arm me, being thus forewarn'd :  
 They shall have wars, and pay for their presumption.  
 But say, is Warwick friends with Margaret?

*Mess.* Ay, gracious sovereign; they are so link'd in  
 friendship,

That young Prince Edward marries Warwick's daughter.

*Clar.* Belike the elder; Clarence will have the younger.  
 Now, brother king, farewell, and sit you fast,  
 For I will hence to Warwick's other daughter ;  
 That, though I want a kingdom, yet in marriage  
 I may not prove inferior to yourself.—  
 You that love me and Warwick, follow me.

[*Exit Clarence, and Somerset follows.*]

*Glo.* Not I :  
 My thoughts aim at a further matter ; I  
 Stay not for the<sup>(18)</sup> love of Edward, but the crown. [*Aside,*

*K. Edw.* Clarence and Somerset both gone to Warwick!  
 Yet am I arm'd against the worst can happen;  
 And haste is needful in this desperate case.—  
 Pembroke and Stafford, you in our behalf  
 Go levy men, and make prepare for war;  
 They are already, or quickly will be landed:  
 Myself in person will straight follow you.

[*Exeunt Pembroke and Stafford.*]

But, ere I go, Hastings and Montague,  
 Resolve my doubt. You twain, of all the rest,  
 Are near to Warwick by blood and by alliance:  
 Tell me if you love Warwick more than me?  
 If it be so, then both depart to him;  
 I rather wish you foes than hollow friends:  
 But if you mind to hold your true obedience,  
 Give me assurance with some friendly vow,  
 That I may never have you in suspect.

*Mont.* So God help Montague as he proves true!

*Hast.* And Hastings as he favours Edward's cause!

*K. Edw.* Now, brother Richard, will you stand by us?

*Glo.* Ay, in despite of all that shall withstand you.

*K. Edw.* Why, so! then am I sure of victory.

Now therefore let us hence; and lose no hour,

Till we meet Warwick with his foreign power. [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II. *A plain in Warwickshire.*

*Enter WARWICK and OXFORD, with French and other forces.*

*War.* Trust me, my lord, all hitherto goes well;  
 The common people by numbers swarm to us.—  
 But see where Somerset and Clarence comes!

*Enter CLARENCE and SOMERSET*

Speak suddenly, my lords,—are we all friends?

*Clar.* Fear not that, my lord.

*War.* Then, gentle Clarence, welcome unto Warwick;—  
 And welcome, Somerset:—I hold it cowardice  
 To rest mistrustful where a noble heart

Hath pawn'd an open hand in sign of love ;  
 Else might I think that Clarence, Edward's brother,  
 Were but a feign'd friend to our proceedings :  
 But welcome, sweet Clarence ; my daughter shall be thine.  
 And now what rests but, in night's coverture,  
 Thy brother being carelessly encamp'd,  
 His soldiers lurking in the towns<sup>(10)</sup> about,  
 And but attended by a simple guard,  
 We may surprise and take him at our pleasure ?  
 Our scouts have found the adventure very easy :  
 That as Ulysses and stout Diomede  
 With sleight and manhood stole to Rhesus' tents,  
 And brought from thence the Thracian fatal steeds ;  
 So we, well cover'd with the night's black mantle,  
 At unawares may beat down Edward's guard,  
 And seize himself ; I say not, slaughter him,  
 For I intend but only to surprise him.—  
 You that will follow me to this attempt,  
 Applaud the name of Henry with your leader.

[*They all cry, " Henry ! "*

Why, then, let's on our way in silent sort :  
 For Warwick and his friends, God and Saint George !

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE III. *Edward's camp, near Warwick.*

*Enter certain Watchmen, before the King's tent.*

*First Watch.* Come on, my masters, each man take his stand :

The king, by this, is set him down to sleep.

*Second Watch.* What, will he not to bed ?

*First Watch.* Why, no ; for he hath made a solemn vow  
 Never to lie and take his natural rest  
 Till Warwick or himself be quite suppress'd.

*Second Watch.* To-morrow, then, belike, shall be the day,  
 If Warwick be so near as men report.

*Third Watch.* But say, I pray, what nobleman is that  
 That with the king here resteth in his tent ?



*First Watch.* 'Tis the Lord Hastings, the king's chiefest friend.

*Third Watch.* O, is it so? But why commands the king  
That his chief followers lodge in towns about him,  
While he himself keeps in the cold field?

*Second Watch.* 'Tis the more honour, because more dangerous.

*Third Watch.* Ay, but give me worship and quietness;  
I like it better than a dangerous honour.  
If Warwick knew in what estate he stands,  
'Tis to be doubted he would waken him.

*First Watch.* Unless our halberds did shut up his passage.

*Second Watch.* Ay, wherefore else guard we his royal tent,  
But to defend his person from night-foes?

*Enter WARWICK, CLARENCE, OXFORD, SOMERSET, and forces.*

*War.* This is his tent; and see where stand his guard.  
Courage, my masters! honour now or never!  
But follow me, and Edward shall be ours.

*First Watch.* Who goes there?

*Second Watch.* Stay, or thou diest!

[*Warwick and the rest cry all, "Warwick! Warwick!" and set upon the Guard, who fly, crying, "Arm! arm!" Warwick and the rest following them.*]

*The drum beating and trumpets sounding, re-enter WARWICK and the rest, bringing the King out in his gown, sitting in a chair. GLOSTER and HASTINGS are seen flying.*

*Som.* What are they that fly there?

*War.* Richard and Hastings: let them go; here is the duke.

*K. Edw.* The duke! Why, Warwick, when we parted  
last,<sup>(54)</sup>

Thou call'dst me king.

*War.* Ay, but the case is alter'd:  
When you disgrac'd me in my embassy,  
Then I degraded you from being king,  
And come now to create you Duke of York.  
Alas, how should you govern any kingdom,

That know not how to use ambassadors;  
Nor how to be contented with one wife;  
Nor how to use your brothers brotherly;  
Nor how to study for the people's welfare;  
Nor how to shroud yourself from enemies?

*K. Edw.* Yea, brother of Clarence, art thou here too?

Nay, then I see that Edward needs must down.—  
Yet, Warwick, in despite of all mischance,  
Of thee thyself and all thy complices,  
Edward will always bear himself as king:  
Though fortune's malice overthrow my state,  
My mind exceeds the compass of her wheel.

*War.* Then, for his mind, be Edward England's king:

*[Takes off his crown.]*

But Henry now shall wear the English crown,  
And be true king indeed; thou but the shadow.—  
My Lord of Somerset, at my request,  
See that forthwith Duke Edward be convey'd  
Unto my brother, Archbishop of York.  
When I have fought with Pembroke and his fellows,  
I'll follow you, and tell what answer<sup>(51)</sup>  
Louis and the Lady Bona send to him.—  
Now, for a while farewell, good Duke of York.

*K. Edw.* What fates impose, that men must needs abide;  
It boots not to resist both wind and tide.

*[Exit, led out; Somerset with him.]*

*Oxf.* What now remains, my lords, for us to do,  
But march to London with our soldiers?

*War.* Ay, that's the first thing that we have to do;  
To free King Henry from imprisonment,  
And see him seated in the regal throne. *[Exeunt.]*

---

SCENE IV. *London. A room in the palace.*

*Enter Queen ELIZABETH and RIVERS.*

*Riv.* Madam, what makes you in this sudden change?

*Q. Eliz.* Why, brother Rivers, are you yet to learn  
What late misfortune is befall'n King Edward?

*Riv.* What, loss of some pitch'd battle against Warwick ?

*Q. Eliz.* No, but the loss of his own royal person.

*Riv.* Then, is my sovereign slain ?

*Q. Eliz.* Ay, almost slain, for he is taken prisoner ;

Either betray'd by falsehood of his guard,

Or by his foe surpris'd at unawares :

And, as I further have to understand,

Is new committed to the Bishop of York,

Fell Warwick's brother, and by that our foe.

*Riv.* These news, I must confess, are full of grief ;

Yet, gracious madam, bear it as you may ;

Warwick may lose, that now hath won the day.

*Q. Eliz.* Till then, fair hope must hinder life's decay.

And I the rather wean me from despair,

For love of Edward's offspring in my womb :

This is it that makes me bridle passion,

And bear with mildness my misfortune's cross ;

Ay, ay, for this I draw-in many a tear,

And stop the rising of blood-sucking sighs,

Lest with my sighs or tears I blast or drown

King Edward's fruit, true heir to the English crown.

*Riv.* But, madam, where is Warwick, then, become ?

*Q. Eliz.* I am inform'd that he comes towards London,

To set the crown once more on Henry's head :

Guess thou the rest, King Edward's friends must down.

But, to prevent the tyrant's violence

(For trust not him that hath once broken faith),

I'll hence forthwith unto the sanctuary,

To save at least the heir of Edward's right :

There shall I rest secure from force and fraud.

Come, therefore, let us fly while we may fly :

If Warwick take us, we are sure to die.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V. *A park near Middleham Castle in Yorkshire.*

*Enter GLOSTER, HASTINGS, Sir William STANLEY, and others.*

*Glo.* Now, my Lord Hastings and Sir William Stanley,  
Leave off to wonder why I drew you hither,

Into this chiefest thicket of the park.  
 Thus stands<sup>(52)</sup> the case: you know our king, my brother,  
 Is prisoner to the bishop here, at whose hands  
 He hath good usage and great liberty;  
 And often, but attended with weak guard,  
 Comes<sup>(53)</sup> hunting this way to disport himself.  
 I have advértis'd him by secret means,  
 That if about this hour he make this way,  
 Under the colour of his usual game,  
 He shall here find his friends, with horse and men,  
 To set him free from his captivity.

*Enter King EDWARD and a Huntsman.*

*Hunt.* This way, my lord; for this way lies the game.

*K. Edw.* Nay, this way, man: see where the huntsmen  
 stand.—

Now, brother of Gloster, Lord Hastings, and the rest,  
 Stand you thus close, to steal the bishop's deer?

*Glo.* Brother, the time and case requireth haste:  
 Your horse stands ready at the park-corner.

*K. Edw.* But whither shall we then?

*Hast.* To Lynn, my lord; and ship<sup>(54)</sup> from thence to  
 Flanders.

*Glo.* Well guess'd, believe me; for that was my meaning.

*K. Edw.* Stanley, I will requite thy forwardness.

*Glo.* But wherefore stay we? 'tis no time to talk.

*K. Edw.* Huntsman, what say'st thou? wilt thou go along?

*Hunt.* Better do so than tarry and be hang'd.

*Glo.* Come then, away; let's ha' no more ado.

*K. Edw.* Bishop, farewell: shield thee from Warwick's  
 frown;

And pray that I may repossess the crown. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE VI. *A room in the Tower.*

*Enter King HENRY, CLARENCE, WARWICK, SOMERSET, young RICHMOND, OXFORD, MONTAGUE, Lieutenant of the Tower, and Attendants.*

*K. Hen.* Master lieutenant, now that God and friends

Have shaken Edward from the regal seat,  
And turn'd my captive state to liberty,  
My fear to hope, my sorrows unto joys,—  
At our enlargement what are thy due fees?

*Lieu.* Subjects may challenge nothing of their sovereigns;  
But if an humble prayer may prevail,  
I then crave pardon of your majesty.

*K. Hen.* For what, lieutenant? for well-using me?  
Nay, be thou sure I'll well requite thy kindness,  
For that it made my imprisonment a pleasure,  
Ay, such a pleasure as incaged birds  
Conceive, when, after many moody thoughts,  
At last, by notes of household harmony,  
They quite forget their loss of liberty.—  
But, Warwick, after God, thou sett'st me free,  
And chiefly therefore I thank God and thee;  
He was the author, thou the instrument.  
Therefore, that I may conquer fortune's spite,  
By living low, where fortune cannot hurt me,  
And that the people of this blessèd land  
May not be punish'd with my thwarting stars,—  
Warwick, although my head still wear the crown,  
I here resign my government to thee,  
For thou art fortunate in all thy deeds.

*War.* Your grace hath still been fam'd for virtuous;  
And now may seem as wise as virtuous,  
By spying and avoiding fortune's malice,  
For few men rightly temper with the stars:  
Yet in this one thing let me blame your grace,  
For choosing me when Clarence is in place.

*Clar.* No, Warwick, thou art worthy of the sway,  
To whom the heavens, in thy nativity,  
Adjudg'd an olive-branch and laurel-crown,  
As likely to be blest in peace and war;  
And therefore I yield thee my free consent.

*War.* And I choose Clarence only for protector.

*K. Hen.* Warwick and Clarence, give me both your  
hands:

Now join your hands, and with your hands your hearts,

That no dissension hinder government ;  
 I make you both protectors of this land ;  
 While I myself will lead a private life,  
 And in devotion spend my latter days,  
 To sin's rebuke and my Creator's praise.

*War.* What answers Clarence to his sovereign's will ?

*Clar.* That he consents, if Warwick yield consent ;  
 For on thy fortune I repose myself.

*War.* Why, then, though loth, yet must I be content :  
 We'll yoke together, like a double shadow  
 To Henry's body, and supply his place ;  
 I mean, in bearing weight of government,  
 While he enjoys the honour and his ease.  
 And, Clarence, now then it is more than needful  
 Forthwith that Edward be pronounc'd a traitor,  
 And all his lands and goods be confiscate.<sup>(55)</sup>

*Clar.* What else ? and that succession be determin'd.

*War.* Ay, therein Clarence shall not want his part.

*K. Hen.* But, with the first of all your chief affairs,  
 Let me entreat (for I command no more),  
 That Margaret your queen, and my son Edward,  
 Be sent for, to return from France with speed ;  
 For, till I see them here, by doubtful fear  
 My joy of liberty is half eclips'd.

*Clar.* It shall be done, my sovereign, with all speed.

*K. Hen.* My Lord of Somerset, what youth is that,  
 Of whom you seem to have so tender care ?

*Som.* My liege, it is young Henry, earl of Richmond.

*K. Hen.* Come hither, England's hope.—If secret powers

*[Lays his hand on his head.*

Suggest but truth to my divining thoughts,  
 This pretty lad will prove our country's bliss.  
 His looks are full of peaceful majesty ;  
 His head by nature fram'd to wear a crown,  
 His hand to wield a sceptre ; and himself  
 Likely in time to bless a regal throne.  
 Make much of him, my lords ; for this is he  
 Must help you more than you are hurt by me.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*War.* What news, my friend?

*Mess.* That Edward is escapèd from your brother,  
And fled, as he hears since, to Burgundy.

*War.* Unsavoury news! but how made he escape?

*Mess.* He was convey'd by Richard duke of Gloster,  
And the Lord Hastings, who attended him  
In secret ambush on the forest-side,  
And from the bishop's huntsmen rescu'd him;  
For hunting was his daily exercise.

*War.* My brother was too careless of his charge.—  
But let us hence, my sovereign, to provide  
A salve for any sore that may betide.

*[Exeunt King Henry, Warwick, Clarence, Lieutenant, and Attendants.]*

*Som.* My lord, I like not of this flight of Edward's;  
For doubtless Burgundy will yield him help,  
And we shall have more wars before't be long.  
As Henry's late presaging prophecy  
Did glad my heart with hope of this young Richmond,  
So doth my heart misgive me, in these conflicts  
What may befall him, to his harm and ours:  
Therefore, Lord Oxford, to prevent the worst,  
Forthwith we'll send him hence to Brittany,  
'Till storms be past of civil enmity.

*Oxf.* Ay, for if Edward repossess the crown,  
'Tis like that Richmond with the rest shall down.

*Som.* It shall be so; he shall to Brittany.  
Come, therefore, let's about it speedily.

*[Exeunt.]*

SCENE VII. *Before York.*

*Flourish. Enter King EDWARD, GLOSTER, HASTINGS, and forces.*

*K. Edw.* Now, brother Richard, Lord Hastings, and the  
rest,  
Yet thus far fortune maketh us amends,  
And says, that once more I shall interchange

My wandèd state for Henry's regal crown.  
Well have we pass'd, and now repass'd the seas,  
And brought desirèd help from Burgundy:  
What, then, remains, we being thus arriv'd  
From Ravenspurgh haven before the gates of York,  
But that we enter, as into our dukedom?

*Glo.* The gates made fast!—Brother, I like not this;  
For many men that stumble at the threshold  
Are well foretold that danger lurks within.

*K. Edw.* Tush, man, abodements must not now affright  
us:

By fair or foul means we must enter in,  
For hither will our friends repair to us.

*Hast.* My liege, I'll knock once more to summon them.

*Enter, on the walls, the Mayor of York and Aldermen.*

*May.* My lords, we were forewarnèd of your coming,  
And shut the gates for safety of ourselves;  
For now we owe allegiance unto Henry.

*K. Edw.* But, master mayor, if Henry be your king,  
Yet Edward at the least is Duke of York.

*May.* True, my good lord; I know you for no less.

*K. Edw.* Why, and I challenge nothing but my duke-  
dom,

As being well content with that alone.

*Glo.* But when the fox hath once got in his nose,  
He'll soon find means to make the body follow. [*Aside.*

*Hast.* Why, master mayor, why stand you in a doubt?  
Open the gates; we are King Henry's friends.

*May.* Ay, say you so? the gates shall then be open'd.

[*Exit, with Aldermen, above.*

*Glo.* A wise stout captain, and soon persuaded!

*Hast.* The good old man would fain that all were well,  
So 'twere not long of him; but being enter'd,  
I doubt not, I, but we shall soon persuade  
Both him and all his brothers unto reason.

*Enter the Mayor and Aldermen, below.*

*K. Edw.* So, master mayor: these gates must not be shut  
But in the night or in the time of war.



What! fear not, man, but yield me up the keys;

[*Takes his keys.*]

For Edward will defend the town and thee,  
And all those friends that deign to follow me.

*Drum. Enter MONTGOMERY and forces, marching.*

*Glo.* Brother, this is Sir John Montgomery,  
Our trusty friend, unless I be deceiv'd.

*K. Edw.* Welcome, Sir John! But why come you in  
arms?

*Mont.* To help King Edward in his time of storm,  
As every loyal subject ought to do.

*K. Edw.* Thanks, good Montgomery; but we now forget  
Our title to the crown, and only claim  
Our dukedom till God please to send the rest.

*Mont.* Then fare you well, for I will hence again:  
I came to serve a king, and not a duke.—  
Drummer, strike up, and let us march away. [*A march begun.*]

*K. Edw.* Nay, stay, Sir John, awhile; and we'll debate  
By what safe means the crown may be recover'd.

*Mont.* What talk you of debating? in few words,—  
If you'll not here proclaim yourself our king,  
I'll leave you to your fortune, and be gone  
To keep them back that come to succour you:  
Why shall we fight, if you pretend no title?

*Glo.* Why, brother, wherefore stand you on nice points?

*K. Edw.* When we grow stronger, then we'll make our  
claim:

Till then, 'tis wisdom to conceal our meaning.

*Hast.* Away with scrupulous wit! now arms must rule.

*Glo.* And fearless minds climb soonest unto crowns.  
Brother, we will proclaim you out of hand;  
The bruit thereof will bring you many friends.

*K. Edw.* Then be it as you will; for 'tis my right,  
And Henry but usurps the diadem.

*Mont.* Ay, now my sovereign speaketh like himself;  
And now will I be Edward's champion.

*Hast.* Sound trumpet; Edward shall be here pro-  
claim'd:—

Come, fellow-soldier, make thou proclamation.

[*Gives him a paper. Flourish.*]

*Sold.* [*reads*] "Edward the fourth, by the grace of God, king of England and France, and lord of Ireland, &c."

*Mont.* And whosoe'er gainsays King Edward's right,  
By this I challenge him to single fight.

[*Throws down his gauntlet.*]

*All.* Long live Edward the fourth!

*K. Edw.* Thanks, brave Montgomery;—and thanks unto  
you all:

If fortune serve me, I'll requite this kindness.  
Now, for this night, let's harbour here in York;  
And when the morning sun shall raise his ear  
Above the border of this horizon,  
We'll forward towards Warwick and his mates;  
For well I wot that Henry is no soldier.—  
Ah, froward Clarence! how evil it becoms thee,  
To flatter Henry, and forsake thy brother!  
Yet, as we may, we'll meet both thee and Warwick.—  
Come on, brave soldiers: doubt not of the day;  
And, that once gotten, doubt not of large pay. [Exeunt.]

---

SCENE VIII. *London. A room in the palace.*

*Flourish.* Enter King HENRY, WARWICK, CLARENCE, MONTAGUE,  
EXETER, and OXFORD.

*War.* What counsel, lords? Edward from Belgia,  
With hasty Germans and blunt Hollanders,  
Hath pass'd in safety through the narrow seas,  
And with his troops doth march amain to London;  
And many giddy people flock to him.

*Oxf.*<sup>(36)</sup> Let's levy men, and beat him back again.

*Clar.* A little fire is quickly trodden out;  
Which, being suffer'd, rivers cannot quench.

*War.* In Warwickshire I have true-hearted friends,  
Not mutinous in peace, yet bold in war;  
Those will I muster up:—and thou, son Clarence,  
Shalt stir up in Suffolk, Norfolk, and in Kent,

The knights and gentlemen to come with thee :—  
 Thou, brother Montague, in Buckingham,  
 Northampton, and in Leicestershire, shalt find  
 Men well inclin'd to hear what thou command'st :—  
 And thou, brave Oxford, wondrous well belov'd,  
 In Oxfordshire shalt muster up thy friends.  
 My sovereign, with the loving citizens,—  
 Like to his island girt in with the ocean,  
 Or modest Dian circled with her nymphs,—  
 Shall rest in London till we come to him.—  
 Fair lords, take leave, and stand not to reply.—  
 Farewell, my sovereign.

*K. Hen.* Farewell, my Hector, and my Troy's true hope.

*Clar.* In sign of truth, I kiss your highness' hand.

*K. Hen.* Well-minded Clarence, be thou fortunate!

*Mont.* Comfort, my lord ;—and so, I take my leave.

*Oxf.* And thus [*kissing Henry's hand*] I seal my truth,  
 and bid adieu.

*K. Hen.* Sweet Oxford, and my loving Montague,  
 And all at once, once more a happy farewell.

*War.* Farewell, sweet lords : let's meet at Coventry.

[*Exeunt War. Clar. Oxf. and Mont.*]

*K. Hen.* Here at the palace will I rest awhile.  
 Cousin of Exeter, what thinks your lordship ?  
 Methinks the power that Edward hath in field  
 Should not be able to encounter mine.

*Exe.* The doubt is, that he will seduce the rest.

*K. Hen.* That's not my fear ; my meed hath got me fame :  
 I have not stopp'd mine ears to their demands,  
 Nor posted off their suits with slow delays ;  
 My pity hath been balm to heal their wounds,  
 My mildness hath allay'd their swelling griefs,  
 My mercy dried their water-flowing tears ;  
 I have not been desirous of their wealth,  
 Nor much oppress'd them with great subsidies,  
 Nor forward of revenge, though they much err'd :  
 Then why should they love Edward more than me ?  
 No, Exeter, these graces challenge grace :  
 And, when the lion fawns upon the lamb,

The lamb will never cease to follow him.

[*Shout within, "A Lancaster! A Lancaster!"*]

*Exe.* Hark, hark, my lord! what shouts are these?

*Enter King EDWARD, GLOSTER, and Soldiers.*

*K. Edw.* Seize on the shame-fac'd Henry, bear him  
hence;

And once again proclaim us king of England.—

You are the fount that makes small brooks to flow;

Now stops thy spring; my sea shall suck them dry,

And swell so much the higher by their ebb.—

Hence with him to the Tower; let him not speak.

[*Exeunt some with King Henry.*]

And, lords, towards Coventry bend we our course,

Where peremptory Warwick now remains:

The sun shines hot; and, if we use delay,

Cold biting winter mars our hop'd-for hay.

*Glo.* Away betimes, before his forces join,

And take the great-grown traitor unawares:

Brave warriors, march amain towards Coventry. [*Exeunt.*]

---

## ACT V.

### SCENE I. Coventry.

*Enter, upon the walls, WARWICK, the Mayor of Coventry, two  
Messengers, and others.*

*War.* Where is the post that came from valiant Oxford?—  
How far hence is thy lord, mine honest fellow?

*First Mess.* By this at Dunsmore, marching hitherward.

*War.* How far off is our brother Montague?—  
Where is the post that came from Montague?

*Second Mess.* By this at Daintry, with a puissant troop.

*Enter Sir JOHN SOMERVILLE.*

*War.* Say, Somerville, what says my loving son?  
And, by thy guess, how nigh is Clarence now?

*Som.* At Southam I did leave him with his forces,  
And do expect him here some two hours hence.

[*Drum heard.*]

*War.* Then Clarence is at hand; I hear his drum.

*Som.* It is not his, my lord; here Southam lies:  
The drum your honour hears marcheth from Warwick.

*War.* Who should that be? belike, unlook'd-for friends.

*Som.* They are at hand, and you shall quickly know.

*March, flourish. Enter King EDWARD, GLOSTER, and forces.*

*K. Edw.* Go, trumpet, to the walls, and sound a parle.

*Glo.* See how the surly Warwick mans the wall!

*War.* O unbid spite! is sportful Edward come?

Where slept our scouts, or how are they seduc'd,  
That we could hear no news of his repair?

*K. Edw.* Now, Warwick, wilt thou ope the city-gates,  
Speak gentle words, and humbly bend thy knee,  
Call Edward king, and at his hands beg mercy?  
And he shall pardon thee these outrages.

*War.* Nay, rather, wilt thou draw thy forces hence,  
Confess who set thee up and pluck'd thee down,  
Call Warwick patron, and be penitent?  
And thou shalt still remain the Duke of York.

*Glo.* I thought, at least, he would have said the king;  
Or did he make the jest against his will?

*War.* Is not a dukedom, sir, a goodly gift?

*Glo.* Ay, by my faith, for a poor earl to give:  
I'll do thee service for so good a gift.

*War.* 'Twas I that gave the kingdom to thy brother.

*K. Edw.* Why, then, 'tis mine, if but by Warwick's gift.

*War.* Thou art no Atlas for so great a weight:  
And, weakling, Warwick takes his gift again;  
And Henry is my king, Warwick his subject.

*K. Edw.* But Warwick's king is Edward's prisoner:  
And, gallant Warwick, do but answer this,—  
What is the body when the head is off?

*Glo.* Alas, that Warwick had no more forecast,  
But, whiles he thought to steal the single ten,  
The king was slyly finger'd from the deck!

You left poor Henry at the bishop's palace,  
And, ten to one, you'll meet him in the Tower.

*K. Edw.* 'Tis even so; yet you are Warwick still.

*Glo.* Come, Warwick, take the time; kneel down, kneel  
down:

Nay, when? strike now, or else the iron cools.

*War.* I had rather chop this hand off at a blow,  
And with the other fling it at thy face,  
Than bear so low a sail, to strike to thee.

*K. Edw.* Sail how thou canst, have wind and tide thy  
friend;

This hand, fast wound about thy coal-black hair,  
Shall, whiles thy head is warm and new cut off,  
Write in the dust this sentence with thy blood,—  
"Wind-changing Warwick now can change no more."

*Enter OXFORD, with forces, drum, and colours.*

*War.* O cheerful colours! see where Oxford comes!

*Oxf.* Oxford, Oxford, for Lancaster!

*[He and his forces enter the city.]*

*Glo.* The gates are open, let us enter too.

*K. Edw.* So other foes may set upon our backs.

Stand we in good array; for they no doubt

Will issue out again and bid us battle:

If not, the city being but of small defence,

We'll quickly rouse the traitors in the same.

*War.* O, welcome, Oxford! for we want thy help.

*Enter MONTAGUE, with forces, drum, and colours.*

*Mont.* Montague, Montague, for Lancaster!

*[He and his forces enter the city.]*

*Glo.* Thou and thy brother both shall buy this treason  
Even with the dearest blood your bodies bear.

*K. Edw.* The harder match'd, the greater victory:  
My mind presageth happy gain and conquest.

*Enter SOMERSET, with forces, drum, and colours*

*Som.* Somerset, Somerset, for Lancaster!

*[He and his forces enter the city.]*

*Glo.* Two of thy name, both Dukes of Somerset,

Have sold their lives unto the house of York;  
And thou shalt be the third, if this sword hold.

*Enter CLARENCE, with forces, drum, and colours.*

*War.* And lo, where George of Clarence sweeps along,  
Of force enough to bid his brother battle;  
With whom an<sup>(37)</sup> upright zeal to right prevails  
More than the nature of a brother's love!—  
Come, Clarence, come; thou wilt, if Warwick call.

*Clar.* Father of Warwick, know you what this means?

*[Taking the red rose out of his hat.]*

Look here, I throw my infamy at thee:  
I will not ruinate my father's house,  
Who gave his blood to lime the stones together,  
And set up Lancaster. Why, trow'st thou, Warwick,  
That Clarence is so harsh, so blunt, unnatural,  
To bend the fatal instruments of war  
Against his brother and his lawful king?  
Perhaps thou wilt object my holy oath:  
To keep that oath, were more impiety  
Than Jephtha's,<sup>(38)</sup> when he sacrific'd his daughter.  
I am so sorry for my trespass made,  
That, to deserve well at my brother's hands,  
I here proclaim myself thy mortal foe;  
With resolution, wheresoe'er I meet thee  
(As I will meet thee, if thou stir abroad),  
To plague thee for thy foul misleading me.  
And so, proud-hearted Warwick, I defy thee,  
And to my brother turn my blushing cheeks.—  
Pardon me, Edward, I will make amends;—  
And, Richard, do not frown upon my faults,  
For I will henceforth be no more unconstant.

*K. Edw.* Now welcome more, and ten times more belov'd,  
Than if thou never hadst deserv'd our hate.

*Glo.* Welcome, good Clarence; this is brother-like.

*War.* O passing traitor, perjur'd and unjust!

*K. Edw.* What, Warwick, wilt thou leave the town, and  
fight?

Or shall we beat the stones about thine ears?

*War.* Alas, I am not coop'd here for defence !  
I will away towards Barnet presently,  
And bid thee battle, Edward, if thou dar'st.

*K. Edw.* Yes, Warwick, Edward dares, and leads the  
way.—

Lords, to the field ; Saint George and victory !

[*March. Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. *A field of battle near Barnet.*

*Alarums and excursions. Enter King EDWARD, bringing in  
WARWICK wounded.*

*K. Edw.* So, lie thou there : die thou, and die our fear ;  
For Warwick was a bug that fear'd us all.—  
Now, Montague, sit fast ; I seek for thee,  
That Warwick's bones may keep thine company. [*Exit.*]

*War.* Ah, who is nigh ? come to me, friend or foe,  
And tell me who is victor, York or Warwick ?  
Why ask I that ? my mangled body shows,  
My blood, my want of strength, my sick heart shows,  
That I must yield my body to the earth,  
And, by my fall, the conquest to my foe. .  
Thus yields the cedar to the axe's edge,  
Whose arms gave shelter to the princely eagle,  
Under whose shade the ramping lion slept,  
Whose top-branch overpeer'd Jove's spreading tree,  
And kept low shrubs from winter's powerful wind.  
These eyes, that now are dimm'd with death's black veil,  
Have been as piercing as the mid-day sun,  
To search the secret treasons of the world :  
The wrinkles in my brows, now fill'd with blood,  
Were liken'd oft to kingly sepulchres ;  
For who liv'd king, but I could dig his grave ?  
And who durst smile when Warwick bent his brow ?  
Lo, now my glory smear'd in dust and blood !  
My parks, my walks, my manors that I had,  
Even now forsake me ; and of all my lands  
Is nothing left me but my body's length !



Why, what is pomp, rule, reign, but earth and dust?  
And, live we how we can, yet die we must.

*Enter OXFORD and SOMERSET.*

*Som.* Ah, Warwick, Warwick! wert thou as we are,  
We might recover all our loss again:  
The queen from France hath brought a puissant power;  
Even now we heard the news: ah, couldst thou fly!

*War.* Why, then I would not fly.—Ah, Montague,  
If thou be there, sweet brother, take my hand,  
And with thy lips keep in my soul awhile!  
Thou lov'st me not; for, brother, if thou didst,  
Thy tears would wash this cold congeal'd blood,  
That glues my lips, and will not let me speak.  
Come quickly, Montague, or I am dead.

*Som.* Ah, Warwick! Montague hath breath'd his last;  
And to the latest gasp cried out for Warwick,  
And said, "Commend me to my valiant brother."  
And more he would have said; and more he spoke,  
Which sounded like a cannon in a vault,  
That might not be distinguish'd; but at last  
I well might hear, deliver'd with a groan,  
"O, farewell, Warwick!"

*War.* Sweet rest his soul!—Fly, lords, and save yourselves;  
For Warwick bids you all farewell, to meet in heaven.<sup>(39)</sup>

[*Dies.*

*Oxf.* Away, away, to meet the queen's great power!

[*Exeunt, bearing off Warwick's body.*

### SCENE III. *Another part of the field.*

*Flourish.* *Enter King EDWARD in triumph; with CLARENCE,  
GLOSTER, and the rest.*

*K. Edw.* Thus far our fortune keeps an upward course,  
And we are grac'd with wreaths of victory.  
But, in the midst of this bright-shining day,  
I spy a black, suspicious, threatening cloud,  
That will encounter with our glorious sun,

Ere he attain his easeful western bed :  
I mean, my lords, those powers that the queen  
Hath rais'd in Gallia have arriv'd our coast,  
And, as we hear, march on to fight with us.

*Clar.* A little gale will soon disperse that cloud,  
And blow it to the source from whence it came :  
Thy very beams will dry those vapours up ;  
For every cloud engenders not a storm.

*Glo.* The queen is valu'd thirty thousand strong,  
And Somerset, with Oxford, fled to her :  
If she have time to breathe, be well assur'd  
Her faction will be full as strong as ours.

*K. Edw.* We are advértis'd by our loving friends  
That they do hold their course toward Tewksbury :  
We, having now the best at Barnet field,  
Will thither straight, for willingness rids way ;  
And, as we march, our strength will be augmented  
In every county as we go along.—  
Strike up the drum ; cry, Courage ! and away. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV. *Plains near Tewksbury.*

*March.* Enter QUEEN MARGARET, PRINCE EDWARD, SOMERSET,  
OXFORD, and Soldiers.

*Q. Mar.* Great lords, wise men ne'er sit and wail their  
loss,  
But cheerly seek how to redress their harms.  
What though the mast be now blown overboard,  
The cable broke, the holding-anchor lost,  
And half our sailors swallow'd in the flood ?  
Yet lives our pilot still : is't meet that he  
Should leave the helm, and, like a fearful lad,  
With tearful eyes add water to the sea,  
And give more strength to that which hath too much ;  
Whiles, in his moan, the ship splits on the rock,  
Which industry and courage might have sav'd ?  
Ah, what a shame ! ah, what a fault were this !  
Say Warwick was our anchor ; what of that ?

And Montague our topmast; what of him?  
 Our slaughter'd friends the tackles; what of these?  
 Why, is not Oxford here another anchor?  
 And Somerset another goodly mast?  
 The friends of France our shrouds and tacklings?  
 And, though unskilful, why not Ned and I  
 For once allow'd the skilful pilot's charge?  
 We will not from the helm to sit and weep;  
 But keep our course, though the rough wind say no,  
 From shelves and rocks that threaten us with wreck.  
 As good to chide the waves as speak them fair,  
 And what is Edward but a ruthless sea?  
 What Clarence but a quicksand of deceit?  
 And Richard but a ragged fatal rock?  
 All these the enemies to our poor bark.  
 Say you can swim; alas, 'tis but awhile!  
 Tread on the sand; why, there you quickly sink:  
 Bestride the rock; the tide will wash you off,  
 Or else you famish,—that's a threefold death.  
 This speak I, lords, to let you understand,  
 If ease some one of you would fly from us,  
 That there's no hop'd-for mercy with the brothers  
 More than with ruthless waves, with sands, and rocks.  
 Why, courage, then! what cannot be avoided  
 'Twere childish weakness to lament or fear.

*Prince.* Methinks a woman of this valiant spirit  
 Should, if a coward heard her speak these words,  
 Infuse his breast with magnanimity,  
 And make him naked foil a man-at-arms.  
 I speak not this as doubting any here;  
 For did I but suspect a fearful man,  
 He should have leave to go away betimes;  
 Lest in our need he might infect another,  
 And make him of like spirit to himself.  
 If any such be here,—as God forbid!—  
 Let him depart before we need his help.

*Of.* Women and children of so high a courage,  
 And warriors faint! why, 'twere perpetual shame.—  
 O brave young prince! thy famous grandfather

Doth live again in thee : long mayst thou live  
To bear his image and renew his glories !

*Som.* And he that will not fight for such a hope,  
Go home to bed, and, like the owl by day,  
If he arise, be mock'd and wonder'd at.

*Q. Mar.* Thanks, gentle Somerset ; — sweet Oxford,  
thanks.

*Prince.* And take his thanks that yet hath nothing else.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* Prepare you, lords, for Edward is at hand,  
Ready to fight ; therefore be resolute.

*Oxf.* I thought no less : it is his policy  
To haste thus fast, to find us unprovided.

*Som.* But he's deceiv'd ; we are in readiness.

*Q. Mar.* This cheers my heart, to see your forwardness.

*Oxf.* Here pitch our battle ; hence we will not budge.

*Flourish and march. Enter, at a distance, King EDWARD,  
CLARENCE, GLOSTER, and forces.*

*K. Edw.* Brave followers, yonder stands the thorny wood,  
Which, by the heavens' assistance, and your strength,  
Must by the roots be hewn up yet ere night.  
I need not add more fuel to your fire,  
For well I wot ye blaze to burn them out :  
Give signal to the fight, and to it, lords.

*Q. Mar.* Lords, knights, and gentlemen, what I should  
say

My tears gainsay ; for every word I speak,  
Ye see, I drink the water of mine eyes.<sup>(60)</sup>  
Therefore, no more but this : — Henry, your sovereign,  
Is prisoner to the foe ; his state usurp'd,  
His realm a slaughter-house, his subjects slain,  
His statutes cancell'd, and his treasure spent ;  
And yonder is the wolf that makes this spoil.  
You fight in justice : then, in God's name, lords,  
Be valiant, and give signal to the fight. [*Exeunt both armies.*]

SCENE V. *Another part of the same.*

*Alarums: excursions: and afterwards a retreat. Then enter King EDWARD, CLARENCE, GLOSTER, and forces; with Queen MARGARET, OXFORD, and SOMERSET, prisoners.*

*K. Edw.* Now, here a period of tumultuous broils.  
 Away with Oxford to Hammes' Castle straight:  
 For Somerset, off with his guilty head.  
 Go, hear them hence; I will not hear them speak.

*Os.* For my part, I'll not trouble thee with words.

*Som.* Nor I, but stoop with patience to my fortune.

*[Exeunt Oxford and Somerset, guarded.]*

*Q. Mar.* So part we sadly in this troublous world,  
 To meet with joy in sweet Jerusalem.

*K. Edw.* Is proclamation made, that who finds Edward  
 Shall have a high reward, and he his life?

*Glo.* It is: and lo, where youthful Edward comes!

*Enter Soldiers, with Prince EDWARD.*

*K. Edw.* Bring forth the gallant, let us hear him speak.  
 What, can so young a thorn begin to prick?—  
 Edward, what satisfaction canst thou make  
 For bearing arms, for stirring up my subjects,  
 And all the trouble thou hast turn'd me to?

*Prince.* Speak like a subject, proud ambitious York!  
 Suppose that I am now my father's mouth,  
 Resign thy chair, and where I stand kneel thou,  
 Whilst I propose the selfsame words to thee,  
 Which, traitor, thou wouldst have me answer to.

*Q. Mar.* Ah, that thy father had been so resolv'd!

*Glo.* That you might still have worn the petticoat,  
 And ne'er have stol'n the breech from Lancaster.

*Prince.* Let AEsop fable in a winter's night;  
 His curish riddles sort not with this place.

*Glo.* By heaven, but, I'll plague ye for that word.

*Q. Mar.* Ay, thou wast born to be a plague to men.

*Glo.* For God's sake, take away this captive scold.

*Prince.* Nay, take away this scolding crook-back rather.

*K. Edw.* Peace, wilful boy, or I will charm your tongue.

*Clar.* Untutor'd lad, thou art too malapert.

*Prince.* I know my duty; you are all undutiful:  
Lascivious Edward,—and thou perjur'd George,—  
And thou mis-shapen Dick,—I tell ye all  
I am your better, traitors as ye are;—  
And thou usurp'st my father's right and mine.

*K. Edw.* Take that, the likeness of this railer here.

[*Stabs him.*

*Glo.* Sprawl'st thou? take that, to end thy agony.

[*Stabs him.*

*Clar.* And there's for twitting me with perjury.

[*Stabs him.*

*Q. Mar.* O, kill me too!

*Glo.* Marry, and shall. [*Offers to kill her.*

*K. Edw.* Hold, Richard, hold; for we have done too much.

*Glo.* Why should she live, to fill the world with words?

*K. Edw.* What, doth she swoon? use means for her recovery.

*Glo.* Clarence, excuse me to the king my brother;  
I'll hence to London on a serious matter:  
Ere ye come there, be sure to hear some news.

*Clar.* What? what?

*Glo.* The<sup>(u)</sup> Tower, the Tower! [*Exit.*

*Q. Mar.* O Ned, sweet Ned! speak to thy mother, boy!  
Canst thou not speak?—O traitors! murderers!—  
They that stabb'd Cæsar shed no blood at all,  
Did not offend, nor were not worthy blame,  
If this foul deed were by to equal it:  
He was a man; this, in respect, a child,—  
And men ne'er spend their fury on a child.  
What's worse than murderer, that I may name it?  
No, no, my heart will burst, an if I speak:—  
And I will speak, that so my heart may burst.—  
Butchers and villains! bloody cannibals!  
How sweet a plant have you untimely clogg'd!  
You have no children, butchers! if you had,  
The thought of them would have stirr'd up remorse:  
But if you ever chance to have a child,  
Look in his youth to have him so cut off

As, deathsmen, you have rid this sweet young prince !

*K. Edw.* Away with her ; go, bear her hence perforce.

*Q. Mar.* Nay, never bear me hence, dispatch me here ;  
Here sheathe thy sword, I'll pardon thee my death :  
What, wilt thou not ?—then, Clarence, do it thou.

*Clar.* By heaven, I will not do thee so much ease.

*Q. Mar.* Good Clarence, do ; sweet Clarence, do thou  
do it.

*Clar.* Didst thou not hear me swear I would not do it ?

*Q. Mar.* Ay, but thou usest to forswear thyself :

'Twas sin before, but now 'tis charity.

What, wilt thou not ?—Where is that devil's butcher,<sup>(62)</sup>

Hard-favour'd Richard ?—Richard, where art thou ?

Thou art not here : murder is thy alms-deed ;

Petitioners for blood thou ne'er putt'st back.

*K. Edw.* Away, I say ; I charge ye, bear her hence.

*Q. Mar.* So come to you and yours, as to this prince !

[*Exit, led out.*]

*K. Edw.* Where's Richard gone ?

*Clar.* To London, all in post ; and, as I guess,  
To make a bloody supper in the Tower.

*K. Edw.* He's sudden, if a thing comes in his head.

Now march we hence : discharge the common sort

With pay and thanks, and let's away to London,

And see our gentle queen how well she fares,—

By this, I hope, she hath a son for me.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI. *London. A room in the Tower.*

King HENRY is discovered sitting with a book in his hand, the Lieutenant attending. Enter GLOSTER.

*Glo.* Good day, my lord. What, at your book so hard ?

*K. Hen.* Ay, my good lord :—my lord, I should say rather ;  
'Tis sin to flatter, good was little better :

Good Gloster and good devil were alike,

And both preposterous ; therefore, not good lord.

*Glo.* Sirrah, leave us to ourselves : we must confer.

[*Exit Lieutenant.*]

*K. Hen.* So flies the reckless shepherd from the wolf;  
So first the harmless sheep doth yield his fleece,  
And next his throat unto the butcher's knife.—  
What scene of death hath Roscius now to act?

*Glo.* Suspicion always haunts the guilty mind ;  
The thief doth fear each bush an officer.

*K. Hen.* The bird that hath been limèd in a bush,  
With trembling wings misdoubteth every bush;  
And I, the hapless male to one sweet bird,  
Have now the fatal object in my eye  
Where my poor young was lim'd, was caught, and kill'd.

*Glo.* Why, what a peevish fool was that of Crete,  
That taught his son the office of a fowl!  
And yet, for all his wings, the fool was drown'd.

*K. Hen.* I, Dædalus; my poor boy, Icarus;  
Thy father, Minos, that denied our course;  
The sun, that sear'd the wings of my sweet boy,  
Thy brother Edward; and thyself, the sea,  
Whose envious gulf did swallow up his life.  
Ah, kill me with thy weapon, not with words!  
My breast can better brook thy dagger's point  
Than can my ears that tragic history.

But wherefore dost thou come? is't for my life?

*Glo.* Think'st thou I am an executioner?

*K. Hen.* A persecutor, I am sure, thou art:  
If murdering innocents be executing,  
Why, then thou art an executioner.

*Glo.* Thy son I kill'd for his presumption.

*K. Hen.* Hadst thou been kill'd when first thou didst  
presume,

Thou hadst not liv'd to kill a son of mine.  
And thus I prophesy,—that many a thousand,  
Which now mistrust no parcel of my fear,  
And many an old man's sigh and many a widow's,  
And many an orphan's water-standing eye,—  
Men for their sons, wives for their husbands, <sup>(63)</sup>  
Orphans for their parents' timeless death,—  
Shall rue the hour that ever thou wast born.  
The owl shriek'd at thy birth,—an evil sign ;



The night-crow cried, aboding luckless time ;  
 Dogs howl'd, and hideous tempest shook down trees ;  
 The raven rook'd her on the chimney's top,  
 And chattering pies in dismal discords<sup>(61)</sup> sung.  
 Thy mother felt more than a mother's pain,  
 And yet brought forth less than a mother's hope,—  
 To wit,  
 An indigested and deformèd lump,<sup>(62)</sup>  
 Not like the fruit of such a goodly tree.  
 Teeth hadst thou in thy head when thou wast born,  
 To signify, thou cam'st to bite the world :  
 And, if the rest be true which I have heard,  
 Thou cam'st—

*Glo.* I'll hear no more :—die, prophet, in thy speech :

[*Stabs him.*]

For this, amongst the rest, was I ordain'd.

*K. Hen.* Ay, and for much more slaughter after this.

O, God forgive my sins, and pardon thee !

[*Dies.*]

*Glo.* What, will the aspiring blood of Lancaster  
 Sink in the ground ? I thought it would have mounted.  
 See how my sword weeps for the poor king's death !  
 O, may such purple tears be alway shed  
 From those that wish the downfall of our house !—  
 If any spark of life be yet remaining,  
 Down, down to hell ; and say I sent thee thither,—

[*Stabs him again.*]

I, that have neither pity, love, nor fear.—

Indeed, 'tis true that Henry told me of ;

For I have often heard my mother say

I came into the world with my legs forward :

Had I not reason, think ye, to make haste,

And seek their ruin that usurp'd our right ?

The midwife wonder'd ; and the women cried,

"O, Jesus bless us, he is born with teeth !"

And so I was ; which plainly signified

That I should snarl, and bite, and play the dog.

Then, since the heavens have shap'd my body so,

Let hell make crook'd my mind to answer it.

I have no brother, I am like no brother ;

And this word "love," which greybeards call divine,  
Be resident in men like one another,  
And not in me: I am myself alone.—  
Clarence, beware; thou keep'st me from the light:  
But I will sort a pitchy day for thee;  
For I will buzz abroad such prophecies,  
That Edward shall be fearful of his life;  
And then, to purge his fear, I'll be thy death.  
King Henry and the prince his son are gone:  
Clarence, thy turn is next, and then the rest;  
Counting myself but bad till I be best.—  
I'll throw thy body in another room,  
And triumph, Henry, in thy day of doom.

[*Exit with the body.*]

---

SCENE VII. *The same. A room in the palace.*

*Flourish.* King EDWARD is discovered sitting on his throne; QUEEN ELIZABETH with the infant Prince, CLARENCE, GLOSTER, HASTINGS, and others, near him.

*K. Edw.* Once more we sit in England's royal throne,  
Re-purchas'd with the blood of enemies.  
What valiant foemen, like to autumn's corn,  
Have we mow'd down in tops of all their pride!  
Three Dukes of Somerset,—threecfold renown'd<sup>(66)</sup>  
For hardy and undoubted champions;  
Two Cliffords, as the father and the son;  
And two Northumberlands,—two braver men  
Ne'er spur'd their coursers at the trumpet's sound;  
With them, the two brave bears, Warwick and Montague,  
That in their chains fetter'd the kingly lion,  
And made the forest tremble when they roar'd.  
Thus have we swept suspicion from our seat,  
And made our footstool of security.—  
Come hither, Bess, and let me kiss my boy.—  
Young Ned, for thee, thine uncles and myself  
Have in our armours watch'd the winter's night;  
Went all afoot in summer's scalding heat,

That thou mightst repossess the crown in peace ;  
And of our labours thou shalt reap the gain.

*Glo.* I'll blast his harvest, if your head were laid ;  
For yet I am not look'd on in the world.  
This shoulder was ordain'd so thick to heave ;  
And heave it shall some weight, or break my back :—  
Work thou the way,—and that shall execute.<sup>(67)</sup> [*Aside.*

*K. Edw.* Clarence and Gloster, love my lovely queen ;  
And kiss your princely nephew, brothers both.

*Clar.* The duty that I owe unto your majesty  
I seal upon the lips of this sweet babe.

*K. Edw.*<sup>(68)</sup> Thanks, noble Clarence ; worthy brother,  
thanks.

*Glo.* And, that I love the tree from whence thou  
sprang'st,  
Witness the loving kiss I give the fruit.—  
To say the truth, so Judas kiss'd his master,  
And cried, all hail ! whenas he meant all harm. [*Aside.*

*K. Edw.* Now am I seated as my soul delights,  
Having my country's peace and brothers' loves.

*Clar.* What will your grace have done with Margaret ?  
Reignier, her father, to the king of France  
Hath pawn'd the Siells and Jerusalem,  
And hither have they sent it for her ransom.

*K. Edw.* Away with her, and waft her hence to France.  
And now what rests, but that we spend the time  
With stately triumphs, mirthful comic shows,  
Such as besit the pleasure of the court ?  
Sound drums and trumpets ! farewell sour annoy !  
For here, I hope, begins our lasting joy. [*Exeunt.*

P. 207. (1) "Mont. *And, brother, &c.*

[To York," &c.

So afterwards in the present scene, "Mont. *Good brother,*" &c., p. 210; again in sc. 2, York three times calls Montague "*brother,*" pp 215, 216, and Montague addresses him by the same name, p. 216. See the notes on the last-mentioned scene in the *Var Shakespeare*; where Malone seems right in saying that "Shakespeare certainly supposed them [York and Montague] to be brothers-in-law."

P. 209. (2) "*Patience is for poltroons, such as he.*"

This is altered by the editor of the second folio to "— *Poltroones, and such is he :*" but here Shakespeare has retained the very words of the original play,—*The True Tragedie of Richard duke of Yorke.*

P. 209. (3) "Exc. *But when,*" &c.

So the older play.—The folio has "*Westm. But when,*" &c.,—a mistake, as the next speech evinces

P. 209 (4) "*I am thine.*"

The *True Tragedie*, &c. has "Thou art deceiv'd: *I am thine,*"—which Mr. Knight thinks is "assuredly" weaker than the reading of the folio, and Mr. Collier agrees with him. but I am not so certain of it.

P. 209. (5) "*It was my inheritance, as the earldom was.*"

In the original play "— *as the kingdome is.*" "Why Shakespeare made this alteration," observes Malone, "it is not easy to say; for the new line only exhibits the same meaning more obscurely." The "*earldom*" is that of March, which York inherited from his mother. See, in *The Sec. Part of Henry VI.* p. 125, York's speech, "*His eldest sister, Anne,*" &c.

P. 209. (6) "*True, Clifford; and that's Richard Duke of York.*"

In this line the folio (accidentally, no doubt) omits "*and,*"—which is found in the older play; and which was inserted here by the editor of the second folio,—who most probably knew nothing of that play.

P. 210. (7) "*Thy father,*" &c.

The folio has "*My father,*" &c

P. 212. (8) "*Henry of Lancaster, resign thy crown.*"

In this line,—*which Shakespeare has left just as he found it in the original play,*

—the words "*thy crown*" are obviously equivalent to "the crown which thou now wearest:" yet Mr. Collier recommends the alteration of his Ms. Corrector, "*— resign my crown;*" and Mr. Singer thinks that the change made by his own Ms. Corrector, "*— resign the crown,*" is a much more probable reading. (In act ii. sc. 2, Edward says,

"Now, perjur'd Henry I wilt thou kneel for grace,  
And set *thy diadem* upon my head," &c.)

P. 212. (9) "*My Lord of Warwick, hear but one word.*"

The editor of the third folio, and Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector, read "*— hear me but one word.*"—and, indeed, the corresponding passage of *The True Tragicke*, &c., is "O Warwicke, heare me speake."

P. 214. (10) "*from the field.*"

So the original play, and the second folio.—The first folio has "*to the field.*"

P. 216. (11)

"*Thou, Richard, shall to the Duke of Norfolk,*" &c.

Several editors silently print "*— shall unto the Duke,*" &c. (No change is made here by the editor of the second folio.)

P. 216. (12)

"*The queen with all the northern earls and lords  
Intend,*" &c.

See note (31) on *The First Part of Henry VI.* p. 90.

P. 217. (13)

"*uncle,*" &c.

Qy. "uncles" ? (compare "mine uncles" above)

P. 220. (14)

"*But buckle with thee,*" &c.

So the original play.—The folio has "*But buckler with thee,*" &c.

P. 221. (15)

"*Stamp, rave, and fret, that I may sing and dance*"

Mr. Collier observes, *ad l.*, "This line, in Malone's Shakespeare by Boswell, is misplaced four lines too early [immediately after "I prithe, grieve, to make me merry, York"], so that the text in both places is rendered unintelligible." But let us hear Malone: "I have placed this line as it stands in the old play. In the folio it is introduced, I believe, by the carelessness of the transcriber, some lines lower, after the words—'do make thee thus,' where it appears to me out of its place"—"Though I do not choose to deviate from the folio here, I would not say that Malone was wrong in making the transposition, nor can I discover the slightest grounds for Mr. Collier's assertion that it renders the text unintelligible."

P. 227. (16) "And very well appointed, as I thought," &c.

This line is found only in *The True Tragedie*, &c.—It has been inserted here by all the more recent editors, with the exception of Mr. Collier, who remarks, *ad l.*, that "if we were to adopt it into the text, we should have no excuse for not inserting many more [lines] from the old 4to, not found in the folio, 1623, which we may presume were rejected by Shakespeare, when he made his alterations in, and additions to, 'The True Tragedy.'" But in the present long speech, bating this line, and one or two very trifling verbal alterations, the folio agrees exactly with the original play; nor do I well see how any one can read the passage attentively, and fail to be convinced that the line has been omitted in the folio by mistake. (In the first speech of act ii sc. 6, Mr. Collier inserts a line from *The True Tragedie*, &c., which he observes "is obviously necessary to the sense," and adds, "how it became omitted in the folio, it is vain at this time of day to conjecture.")

P. 227. (11) "like the night-owl's lazy flight,  
Or like a lazy thrasher with a flail," &c.

In the second line "lazy" seems to be an error of the transcriber or printer.—The older play has "O, like an idle thresher," &c.

P. 228. (19) "Why, Via! to London will we march amain."

So *The True Tragedie*, &c.—The folio, by mistake, omits "amain."

P. 229. (10) "And when thou fail'st," &c.

This has been altered (on account of the following "Must Edward fail?" to "When thou fail'st," &c.; and no doubt the two words are often confounded by printers (see note (6) p. 200): but the corresponding passage of the older play is, "And when thou faints," &c.

P. 231. (20) "And this soft courage makes your followers faint."

Mason, and Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector, read, "And this soft carriage makes your followers faint,"—Mr. Collier asking "What is 'soft courage,' but a contradiction in terms?" and adducing, in support of the alteration, the corresponding line of the older play,—

"This harmful pity makes your followers faint."

Mr. Singer, too, thinks the reading "'soft carriage' so obvious, that it is surprising it had not been admitted into the text long since." *Shakespeare Indicated*, &c. p. 160.—But the old lection is not to be hastily discarded. Mason, the Ms. Corrector, Mr. Collier, and Mr. Singer seem not to have remembered that "courage" was often used formerly in the sense of "heart, spirit, mind;" and here "soft courage" may be equivalent to *soft spirit*,—*soft-heartedness*.—Spenser has (and, according to Mr. Collier's criticism, the passage contains "a contradiction in terms"),—

"Disleall knight, whose *coward corage* chose  
To wreake itselfe on beast all innocent," &c.

*The Faerie Queene*, b. ii. c. v. st. 5,—

where Upton remarks, "*Courage* is heart or mind. *Coragium*, in the base Latinity, was used for *cor*."

P. 232, (21) "Since when," &c.

To these words the folio (as *The True Tragedie*, &c. does) prefixes "*Clu*,"—  
"Though Shakespeare gave the whole of this speech to Edward by substituting [in the last line of it] '*me*' for '*his brother*,' the same division which is found in the quarto is inadvertently retained in the folio." MALONE.

P. 233, (22) "Rich."

The folio, by mistake, has "War."

P. 234, (23) "Since thou deniest the gentle king to speake."

So *The True Tragedie*, &c.—The folio has "*Since thou demed'st the gentle*," &c.,—a manifest error.

P. 235, (24) "in heaven or in earth."

Several editors print "— or on earth,"—forgetting that formerly "*m*" was often used as equivalent to "on."

P. 238, (25) "So many years ere I shall shear the fleece"

Rowe printed "*So many months ere*," &c., which is also given by Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector.—According to Malone (who seems to have been quite satisfied with his own explanation), "*years*" mean "the years which must elapse between the time of the yearning of the ewes, and the lambs arriving to such a state as to admit of being shorn."

P. 238, (26)

"So minutes, hours, days, months, and years," &c.

Rowe printed "*So minutes, hours, days, weeks, months, and years*," &c.

P. 240, (27) "E'en for the loss of thee," &c.

The folio has "*Men for the losse of thee*," &c.,—for which Rowe (without any regard to the *ductus literarum*) substituted "*Sad for the loss of thee*," &c.—When, in my *Remarks on Mr. Collier's and Mr. Knight's eds. of Shakespeare*, p. 133, I conjectured "*E'en for the loss of thee*," &c. (which is also the emendation of Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector), I was not aware that Capell had printed "*Even for the loss of thee*," &c.

P. 241. (23)

"O Lancaster, I fear thy overthrow

. . . . .  
 . . . . .  
 And, now I fall, thy tough committures melt.  
 Impairing Henry, strengthening misproud York,  
 The common people swarm like summer flies," &c.

The last of these lines is found only in *The True Tragedie*, &c., from which Theobald inserted it in the text, where it is obviously necessary for the sense. (Theobald put a comma after "melt," and a full-point after "York," in which punctuation he has been followed by Mr. Collier. But, "O Lancaster," &c., and "Impairing Henry," can hardly be portions of the same sentence.)

P. 241. (23) "*They never then had sprung like summer flies.*"

This line is not in *The True Tragedie*, &c.—Capell pronounced it to be merely the line which occurs earlier in the original play, "*The common people swarm like summer flies*,"—see the preceding note,—"*altered by either a publisher's or player's bêtise, and then crammed into a place where it has no concern possible*;" and he accordingly omitted it. But it has not offended any of the other editors, with the exception of Mr. Collier, who remarks, and I think truly, that it "seems rather awkwardly introduced in the folio, the sense of the whole passage running better without it than with it."

P. 242. (23)

"Edw. Whose soul is that . . .  
 Rich. . . . .  
 Edw. . . . .  
*If friend or foe, let him be gently us'd.*"

So these speeches (differing but slightly from the present text) are distributed in *The True Tragedie*, &c.—In the folio they stand thus;—

"Rich. Whose soule is that which takes his heavy leaue?  
 A deadly grone, like life and death's departing  
 See who it is.  
 Ed. And now the Battails ended,  
 If Friend or Foe, let him be gently us'd."

"It seems absurd," observes Malone, "that Richard should first say to his brother, or to one of the soldiers, 'See who it is,'—and then himself declare that it is Clifford; and therefore I suppose the variation in the folio arose, not from Shakespeare, but from some negligence or inaccuracy of a compositor or transcriber."

P. 243. (23) "*For in thy shoulder do I build my seat,*" &c.

The editor of the second folio substituted "*For on thy shoulder,*" &c.—See note (21).



P. 244. (82) "*Let me embrace these sour adversities,*" &c.

So Pope (and Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector).—The folio has "*Let me embrace the sour Adversaries,*" &c. (In my *Remarks on Mr. Collier's and Mr. Knight's eds. of Shakespeare*, p. 134, I conjectured that the poet might have written "*Let me embrace thee, sour adversity*" (adversity).

P. 245. (83)

"*Say, what art thou, that talk'st of kings and queens?*"

Here the folio omits "*that,*"—accidentally, it would seem.—The corresponding line in the original play is, "*What art thou that talkest of kings and queens?*" (Mr. Collier prints "*Say, what art thou talkest of,*" &c.; which is at variance with what soon after follows, "*Ay, but thou talk'st as if thou wert a king.*")

P. 246. (84)

"*and the king's,*" &c.

The modern reading is "*and in the king's,*" &c.

P. 247. (85)

"*Sir John Grey,*" &c.

The folio has "*Sir Richard Grey,*" &c. (and so the original play).

P. 247. (86)

"*His lands then seiz'd,*" &c.

So *The True Tragedie*, &c.—The folio has "*His land then,*" &c.

P. 247. (87)

"*Nay, whip me, then; he'll rather give her two.*"

So the older play.—The folio has "*Nay, then whip me,*" &c.

P. 248. (88)

"K. Edw. '*Twere pity they should lose their father's lands.*"

L. Grey '*Be pitiful, dread lord, and grant it, then.*'"

Here the modern reading is, "*their father's land,*"—an alteration made on account of the subsequent "*it.*" But see "*lands*" thrice before, and *five times* after, the present passage.—In old writers "*it*" not unfrequently refers to a preceding plural word: here, however, "*it*" would seem to mean "*my suit.*" (At the close of this play, 292, we find,—

"*Reignier, her father, to the king of France*

*Hath pawn'd the Sicils and Jerusalem,*

*And hither have they sent it for her ransom,*"—

where "*it*" means, of course, "*the sum for which they were pawned.*")

P. 250. (89)

"*looks very sad.*"

The editor of the second folio threw out "*very.*"

P. 250. (90)

"*To whom, my lord?*"

The folio has "*To who, my Lord?*" But the corresponding speech in the older play is "*Marry her my Lord, to whom?*"

P. 250. (11) "use her honourably,"

So the older play (and the second folio).—The first folio has "use her honourable," a reading unexceptionable in itself; but the next line goes far to prove that it is an accidental variation,

P. 252. (12) "Until my mis-shap'd trunk that bears this head  
Be round impaled with a glorious crown."

This has been variously altered: but I believe, with Malone, that the lines now stand as Shakespeare wrote them.

P. 256. (13) "an eternal plant,"

So the older play.—The folio has "an Eternall Plant."

P. 257. (14) "Peace, impudent and shameless Warwick," &c.

The editor of the second folio printed "—— Warwick, peace," &c.

P. 260. (15)

"And shall have your will, because our king," &c.

Rowe printed "And you shall have your will," &c.,—which, however it may improve the metre, weakens the expression.—The corresponding words in *The True Tragedie*, &c., are "And shall, because our king," &c.

P. 261. (16) "But the safer," &c.

The second folio has "Yes, but the safer," &c.

P. 263. (17) "thy supposed king," &c.

Here the folio has "the supposed king," &c.: but see before, p. 259.

P. 263. (18) "Stay not for the love of Edward," &c.

The usual modern reading is "Stay not for love of Edward," &c.,—and right perhaps.

P. 265. (19) "in the towns about," &c.

The folio has "in the towne about," &c. (and so the older play): but see the first speech of *Third Watchman*, p. 266 (which is not in the older play).

P. 266. (20) "Why, Warwick, when we parted last," &c.

So *The True Tragedie*, &c.—The folio omits "last."

P. 267. <sup>(51)</sup> "I'll follow you, and tell what answer," &c.

Here, it would seem, "*answer*" is to be read as a trisyllable (This line has been altered to "*I'll follow you, and tell you what reply,*" &c., and to "*I'll follow you, and tell his grace what answer,*" &c.!!)

P. 269. <sup>(52)</sup> "Thus stands the case."

The folio has "*Thus stand the case.*"

P. 269. <sup>(53)</sup> "Comes hunting," &c.

The folio has "*Come hunting,*" &c.

P. 269. <sup>(54)</sup> "and ship from thence to Flanders."

So the second folio.—The first folio has "*and shipt from,*" &c.

P. 271. <sup>(55)</sup> "And all his lands and goods be confiscate."

The folio has "*—and Goods confiscate.*"—The editor of the second folio (who, I believe, had no more authority for his alterations than any of the modern editors) substituted "*— and Goods confiscated.*"—I adopt Malone's reading: compare *Merchant of Venice*, act iv. sc. 1, "all thy goods are *confiscate*;" also *The Comedy of Errors*, act i. sc. 1 and sc. 2; and *Cymbeline*, act v. sc. 5.

P. 275. <sup>(56)</sup> "Oxf Let's levy men," &c.

In the folio this speech is assigned to "*King.*" See the notes of Johnson, Steevens, and Malone *ad l.*—Mr. Collier thinks that "it is not at all inconsistent with the other speeches of the king in this scene"—to me it appears utterly so. Besides, Henry has resigned the government into the hands of Warwick and Clarence (see p. 271); nor is *his* opinion now asked by Warwick, whose words are, "What counsel, lords?" Throughout the present scene, Warwick speaks of Henry, and addresses him, as his "*sovereign.*"—

"*My sovereign, with the loving citizens,*" &c.

"Fair lords, take leave, and stand not to reply.—

Farewell, *my sovereign.*

Farewell, sweet lords."

(A little above, in the stage-direction at the commencement of this scene, the folio has "*Somerset*" instead of "*Exeter.*")

P. 280. <sup>(57)</sup> "With whom an upright," &c.

The folio has "*With whom in vpright,*" &c.

P. 280. <sup>(58)</sup> " *Than Jephtha's, when,*" &c.

The folio has "*Then Jephah, when,*" &c.

P. 282. <sup>(59)</sup>

"*War. Sweet rest his soul!—Fly, lords, and save yourselves;  
For Warwick bids you all farewell, to meet in heaven.*"

The modern editors have tried various methods of improving this passage: but any alteration is forbidden by the fact, that here Shakespeare *has retained the very words of The True Tragedie*, &c. (Mr. Knight's note *ad l.* shows that he is not acquainted with the reading of the old copies.)

P. 285. <sup>(60)</sup> " *I drink the water of mine eyes.*"

So the older play in the corresponding passage.—The folio has "*— of my eye,*"—which, with good reason, Malone suspects to be "rather an error in the transcriber than an alteration by Shakespeare."

P. 287. <sup>(61)</sup> " *The Tower,*" &c.

In the folio "*The*" is accidentally omitted.

P. 288. <sup>(62)</sup>

"*What wilt thou not?—Where is that devil's butcher,  
Hard-favour'd Richard?—Richard, where art thou?*"

The folio has,

"*What wilt thou not? Where is that duels butcher Richard?  
Hard fauor'd Richard?*" &c.

but that "*Richard*" is an accidental addition we have proof in the corresponding passage of the original play,—

"*When is the Duels butcher, hardfauored Richard,  
Richard where art thou?*"

P. 289. <sup>(63)</sup> " *Men for their sons, wives for their husbands,  
Orphans for their parents' timeless death,*" &c.

Thus amended by the editor of the second folio,—

"*— Wives for their Husbunds fate,  
And Orphans for,*" &c.

P. 290. <sup>(64)</sup> " *And chattering pies in dismal discords sung.*"

The older play has "*— discord sung;*" and perhaps the variation in the folio is not to be attributed to Shakespeare.

P. 290. (53) "To wit,  
An indigested and deform'd lump," &c.

This, in the folio, forms a single verse, and Mr. Collier says that it is "one of Shakespeare's numerous twelve-syllable lines." I prefer, however, the above arrangement. Indeed, on comparing the present reading with that of *The True Tragedie*, &c.,—

"To wit, an yndigeste creuted lumpe," &c.,—

I cannot help suspecting very strongly that the words "*To wit*" have been retained in the folio contrary to Shakespeare's intention,—he having expanded the rest of the original line into a perfect verse.—The editor of the second folio gives,

"To wit, an indigested deformed lumpe," &c.,—

Malone prints,

"To wit,—an indigest deformed lump," &c.

and remarks that "Shakespeare uses the word '*indigest*' in *King John*."—I know not whether he had forgotten that in *The Sec. Part of Henry VI.* act v. sc. 1 (p. 182), Richard is called, as in the present passage, "*foul indigested lump*."

P. 291. (56) "threefold renown'd," &c.

The folio has "*threefold Renowne*," &c.

P. 292. (57) "Work thou the way,—and that shalt execute."

The folio has "—*and that shalt execute*" (and so the second folio).—*The True Tragedie*, &c. has "—*and thou shalt execute*," which Capell and Malone adopted—I prefer substituting "*shall*" for "*shalt*," as the slighter deviation from the folio.—(By "*thou*" we must understand the speaker's head. "*that*," says Johnson, "may stand, the arm being included in the shoulder.")

P. 292. (58) "K. Edw. Thanks," &c.

In the folio this line is given to "Cla."—In the original play it is spoken by the Queen; and to her Theobald assigned it.

KING RICHARD THE THIRD.

# DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.



KING EDWARD the Fourth.

EDWARD, Prince of Wales, afterwards King Edward V., } sons to  
 RICHARD, Duke of York, } the King.

GEORGE, Duke of Clarence, } brothers to  
 RICHARD, Duke of Gloster, afterwards King Richard III., } the King.

A young Son of Clarence.

HENRY, Earl of Richmond, afterwards King Henry VII.

CARDINAL BOUCHIER, Archbishop of Canterbury.

THOMAS ROTHERHAM, Archbishop of York.

JOHN MORTON, Bishop of Ely.

DUKE OF BUCKINGHAM.

DUKE OF NORFOLK.

EARL OF SURREY, his son.

EARL RIVERS, brother to King Edward's Queen:

MARQUIS OF DORSET and LORD GREY, her sons.

EARL OF OXFORD.

LORD HASTINGS.

LORD STANLEY.

LORD LOVELL.

SIR THOMAS VAUGHAN.

SIR RICHARD HATCLIFF.

SIR WILLIAM CATESBY.

SIR JAMES TYBELL.

SIR JAMES BLOUNT.

SIR WALTER HERBERT.

SIR ROBERT BRAKENBURY, Lieutenant of the Tower.

CHRISTOPHER URWICK, a priest. Another Priest.

Lord Mayor of London. Sheriff of Wiltshire.

ELIZABETH, queen to King Edward IV.

MARGARET, widow to King Henry VI.

DUCHESS OF YORK, mother to King Edward IV., Clarence, and Gloster.

LADY ANNE, widow to Edward Prince of Wales, son to King Henry  
 VI.; afterwards married to the Duke of Gloster.

A young Daughter of Clarence.

Lords and other Attendants, two Gentlemen, a Pursuivant, Scivener,  
 Citizens, Murderers, Messengers, Soldiers, &c.

SCENE—*England.*

# KING RICHARD III.

---

## ACT I.

SCENE I. *London. A street.*

*Enter GLOSTER.*

*Glo.* Now is the winter of our discontent  
Made glorious summer by this sun of York;  
And all the clouds that lower'd upon our house  
In the deep bosom of the ocean buried.  
Now are our brows bound with victorious wreaths;  
Our bruised arms hung up for monuments;  
Our stern alarums chang'd to merry meetings,  
Our dreadful marches to delightful measures.  
Grim-visag'd war hath smooth'd his wrinkled front;  
And now,—instead of mounting barb'd steeds  
To fright the souls of fearful adversaries,—  
He capers nimbly in a lady's chamber  
To the lascivious pleasing of a lute.  
But I,—that am not shap'd for sportive tricks,  
Nor made to court an amorous looking-glass;  
I, that am rudely stamp'd, and want love's majesty  
To strut before a wanton ambling nymph;  
I, that am curtail'd of this fair proportion,  
Cheated of feature by dissembling nature,  
Deform'd, unfinish'd, sent before my time  
Into this breathing world scarce half made up,  
And that so lamely and unfashionable,  
That dogs bark at me as I halt by them;—



Why I, in this weak piping time of peace,  
 Have no delight to pass away the time,  
 Unless to spy my shadow in the sun,  
 And descant on mine own deformity :  
 And therefore,—since I cannot prove a lover,  
 To entertain these fair well-spoken days,—  
 I am determinèd to prove a villain,  
 And hate the idle pleasures of these days.  
 Plots have I laid, inductions dangerous,  
 By drunken prophecies, libels, and dreams,  
 To set my brother Clarence and the king  
 In deadly hate the one against the other :  
 And, if King Edward be as true and just  
 As I am subtle, false, and treacherous,  
 This day should Clarence closely be mew'd up,—  
 About a prophecy, which says that G  
 Of Edward's heirs the murderer shall be.  
 Dive, thoughts, down to my soul :—here Clarence comes.

*Enter CLARENCE, guarded, and BRAKENBURY.*

Brother, good day : what means this armèd guard  
 That waits upon your grace ?

*Clar.* His majesty,  
 Tendering my person's safety, hath appointed  
 This conduct to convey me to the Tower.

*Glo.* Upon what cause ?

*Clar.* Because my name is George.

*Glo.* Alack, my lord, that fault is none of yours ;  
 He should, for that, commit your godfathers :—  
 O, belike his majesty hath some intent  
 That you shall be new-christen'd in the Tower.  
 But what's the matter, Clarence ? may I know ?

*Clar.* Yea, Richard, when I know ; for I protest  
 As yet I do not : but, as I can learn,  
 He hearkens after prophecies and dreams ;  
 And from the cross-row plucks the letter G,  
 And says a wizard told him that by G  
 His issue disinherited should be ;  
 And, for my name of George begins with G,

It follows in his thought that I am he.  
These, as I learn, and such-like toys as these,  
Have mov'd his highness to commit me now.

*Glo.* Why, this it is, when men are rul'd by women :—  
'Tis not the king that sends you to the Tower ;  
My Lady Grey his wife, Clarence, 'tis she  
That tempers him to this extremity.<sup>(1)</sup>  
Was it not she, and that good man of worship,  
Antony Woodville,<sup>(2)</sup> her brother there,  
That made him send Lord Hastings to the Tower,  
From whence this present day he is deliver'd ?  
We are not safe, Clarence ; we are not safe.

*Clar.* By heaven, I think there is no man secure  
But the queen's kindred, and night-walking heralds  
That trudge betwixt the king and Mistress Shore.  
Heard you not what an humble suppliant  
Lord Hastings was to her for his delivery ?

*Glo.* Humbly complaining to her deity  
Got my lord chamberlain his liberty.  
I'll tell you what,—I think it is our way,  
If we will keep in favour with the king,  
To be her men, and wear her livery :  
The jealous o'erworn widow and herself,  
Since that our brother dubb'd them gentlewomen,  
Are mighty gossips in this monarchy.

*Brak.* I beseech your graces both to pardon me ;  
His majesty hath straitly given in charge  
That no man shall have private conference,  
Of what degree soever, with his brother.

*Glo.* Even so ; an please your worship, Brakenbury,  
You may partake of any thing we say ;  
We speak no treason, man ;—we say the king  
Is wise and virtuous ; and his noble queen  
Well struck in years, fair, and not jealous ;—  
We say that Shore's wife hath a pretty foot,  
A cherry lip, a bonny eye, a passing pleasing tongue ;  
And that the queen's kindred are made gentlefolks :  
How say you, sir ? can you deny all this ?

*Brak.* With this, my lord, myself have naught to do.

*Glo.* Naught to do with Mistress Shore! I tell thee,  
fellow,

He that doth naught with her, excepting one,  
Were best to do it secretly, alone.

*Brak.* What one, my lord?

*Glo.* Her husband, knave:—wouldst thou betray me?

*Brak.* I beseech your grace to pardon me; and, withal,  
Forbear your conference with the noble duke.

*Clar.* We know thy charge, Brakenbury, and will obey.

*Glo.* We are the queen's abjects, and must obey.—

Brother, farewell: I will unto the king;  
And whatsoe'er you will employ me in,—  
Were it to call King Edward's widow sister,—  
I will perform it to enfranchise you.

Meantime, this deep disgrace in brotherhood  
'Touches me deeper than you can imagine.

*Clar.* I know it pleaseth neither of us well.

*Glo.* Well, your imprisonment shall not be long;  
I will deliver you, or else lie for you:  
Meantime, have patience.

*Clar.* I must perforce: farewell.

[*Exeunt Clarence, Brakenbury, and Guard.*]

*Glo.* Go, tread the path that thou shalt ne'er return,  
Simple, plain Clarence!—I do love thee so,  
That I will shortly send thy soul to heaven,  
If heaven will take the present at our hands.—  
But who comes here? the new-deliver'd Hastings?

*Enter HASTINGS.*

*Hast.* Good time of day unto my gracious lord!

*Glo.* As much unto my good lord chamberlain!

Well me you welcome to this open air.

How hath your lordship brook'd imprisonment?

*Hast.* With patience, noble lord, as prisoners must:

But I shall live, my lord, to give them thanks

That were the cause of my imprisonment.

*Glo.* No doubt, no doubt; and so shall Clarence too;  
For they that were your enemies are his,  
And have prevail'd as much on him as you.

*Hast.* More pity that the eagle should be mew'd,  
Whiles kites and buzzards prey at liberty.

*Glo.* What news abroad?

*Hast.* No news so bad abroad as this at home,—  
The king is sickly, weak, and melancholy,  
And his physicians fear him mightily.

*Glo.* Now, by Saint Paul, this news is bad indeed.  
O, he hath kept an evil diet long,  
And overmuch consum'd his royal person :  
'Tis very grievous to be thought upon.  
What, is he in his bed?

*Hast.* He is.

*Glo.* Go you before, and I will follow you. [*Exit Hastings.*  
He cannot live, I hope; and must not die  
Till George be pack'd with posthorse<sup>(a)</sup> up to heaven.  
I'll in, to urge his hatred more to Clarence,  
With lies well steel'd with weighty arguments;  
And, if I fail not in my deep intent,  
Clarence hath not another day to live :  
Which done, God take King Edward to his mercy,  
And leave the world for me to bustle in !  
For then I'll marry Warwick's youngest daughter :  
What though I kill'd her husband and her father ?  
The readiest way to make the wench amends,  
Is to become her husband and her father :  
The which will I; not all so much for love  
As for another secret close intent,  
By marrying her, which I must reach unto.  
But yet I run before my horse to market :  
Clarence still breathes; Edward still lives and reigns :  
When they are gone, then must I count my gains. [*Exit.*

---

SCENE II. *The same. Another street.*

*Enter the corpse of King HENRY the sixth, borne in an open coffin,  
Gentlemen bearing halberds to guard it, and Lady ANNE as  
mourner.*

*Anne.* Set down, set down your honourable load,—

If honour may be shrouded in a hearse,—  
Whilst I awhile obsequiously lament  
The untimely fall of virtuous Lancaster.—  
Poor key-cold figure of a holy king !  
Pale ashes of the house of Lancaster !  
Thou bloodless remnant of that royal blood !  
Be it lawful that I invoke thy ghost,  
To hear the lamentations of poor Anne,  
Wife to thy Edward, to thy slaughter'd son,  
Stabb'd by the selfsame hand that made these wounds !  
Lo, in these windows that let forth thy life,  
I pour the helpless balm of my poor eyes :—  
O, cursèd be the hand that made these holes !  
Cursèd the heart that had the heart to do it !  
Cursèd the blood that let this blood from hence !  
More direful hap betide that hated wretch,  
That makes us wretched by the death of thee,  
Than I can wish to adders, spiders, toads,  
Or any creeping venom'd thing that lives !  
If ever he have child, abortive be it,  
Prodigious, and untimely brought to light,  
Whose ugly and unnatural aspect  
May fright the hopeful mother at the view ;  
And that he heir to his unhappiness !  
If ever he have wife, let her be made  
More miserable by the death of him  
Than I am made by my young lord and thee !—  
Come, now towards Chertsey with your holy load,  
Taken from Paul's to be interrèd there ;  
And still, as you are weary of the weight,  
Rest you, whiles I lament King Henry's corse.  
[*The Bearers take up the corpse and advance.*

*Enter GLOSTER*

*Glo.* Stay, you that bear the corse, and set it down.

*Anne.* What black magician conjures up this fiend,  
To stop devoted charitable deeds ?

*Glo.* Villains, set down the corse ; or, by Saint Paul,  
I'll make a corse of him that disobeys !

*First Gent.* My lord, stand back, and let the coffin pass.

*Glo.* Unmanner'd dog! stand thou, when I command:  
Advance thy halberd higher than my breast,  
Or, by Saint Paul, I'll strike thee to my foot,  
And spurn upon thee, beggar, for thy boldness.

[*The Bearers set down the coffin.*]

✓ *Anne.* What, do you tremble? are you all afraid?

Alas, I blame you not; for you are mortal,  
And mortal eyes cannot endure the devil.—  
Avaunt, thou dreadful minister of hell!  
Thou hadst but power over his mortal body,—  
His soul thou canst not have; therefore, be gone.

*Glo.* Sweet saint, for charity, be not so curst.

✓ *Anne.* Foul devil, for God's sake, hence, and trouble us  
not;

For thou hast made the happy earth thy hell,  
Fill'd it with cursing cries and deep exclaims.  
If thou delight to view thy heinous deeds,  
Behold this pattern of thy butcheries.—  
O, gentlemen, see, see! dead Henry's wounds  
Open their congeal'd mouths and bleed afresh!—  
Blush, blush, thou lump of foul deformity;  
For 'tis thy presence that exhales this blood  
From cold and empty veins, where no blood dwells;  
Thy deed, inhuman and unnatural,  
Provokes this deluge most unnatural.—  
O God, which this blood mad'st, revenge his death!  
O earth, which this blood drink'st, revenge his death!  
Either, heaven, with lightning strike the murderer dead;  
Or, earth, gape open wide, and eat him quick,  
As thou dost swallow up this good king's blood,  
Which his hell-govern'd arm hath butcher'd!

✓ *Glo.* Lady, you know no rules of charity,  
Which renders good for bad, blessings for curses.

✓ *Anne.* Villain, thou know'st no law of God nor man:  
No beast so fierce but knows some touch of pity.

*Glo.* But I know none, and therefore am no beast.

*Anne.* O wonderful, when devils tell the truth!

*Glo.* More wonderful, when angels are so angry.—

Vouchsafe, divine perfection of a woman,  
Of these supposed evils, to give me leave,  
By circumstance, but to acquit myself.

*Anne.* Vouchsafe, diffus'd infection of a man,  
For these known evils, but to give me leave,  
By circumstance, to curse thy cursèd self.

*Glo.* Fairer than tongue can name thee, let me have  
Some patient leisure to excuse myself.

*Anne.* Fouler than heart can think thee, thou canst make  
No excuse current, but to hang thyself.

*Glo.* By such despair, I should accuse myself.

*Anne.* And, by despairing, shalt thou stand excus'd;  
For doing worthy vengeance on thyself,  
That didst unworthy slaughter upon others.

*Glo.* Say that I slew them not?

*Anne.* Then say they were not slain:  
But dead they are, and, devilish slave, by thee.

*Glo.* I did not kill your husband.

*Anne.* Why, then he is alive.

*Glo.* Nay, he is dead; and slain by Edward's hand.

*Anne.* In thy foul throat thou liest: Queen Margaret saw  
Thy murderous falchion smoking in his blood;  
The which thou once didst bend against her breast,  
But that thy brothers beat aside the point.

*Glo.* I was provokèd by her slanderous tongue,  
That laid their guilt upon my guiltless shoulders.

*Anne.* Thou wast provokèd by thy bloody mind,  
That never dreamt on aught but butcheries:  
Didst thou not kill this king?

*Glo.* I grant ye.

*Anne.* Dost grant me, hedgehog? then, God grant me too  
Thou mayst be damnèd for that wicked deed!

O, he was gentle, mild, and virtuous!

*Glo.* The fitter for the King of heaven, that hath him.

*Anne.* He is in heaven, where thou shalt never come.

*Glo.* Let him thank me, that help to send him thither;  
For he was fitter for that place than earth.

*Anne.* And thou unfit for any place but hell.

*Glo.* Yes, one place else, if you will hear me name it.

*Anne.* Some dungeon.

*Glo.* Your bed-chamber.

*Anne.* Ill rest betide the chamber where thou liest!

*Glo.* So will it, madam, till I lie with you.

*Anne.* I hope so.

*Glo.* I know so.—But, gentle Lady Anne,—

To leave this keen encounter of our wits,  
And fall somewhat into a slower method,—  
Is not the causer of the timeless deaths  
Of these Plantagenets, Henry and Edward,  
As blameful as the executioner?

*Anne.* Thou wast the cause, and most accurs'd effect.

*Glo.* Your beauty was the cause of that effect;  
Your beauty, that did haunt me in my sleep  
To undertake the death of all the world,  
So I might live one hour in your sweet bosom.

*Anne.* If I thought that, I tell thee, homicide,  
These nails should rend that beauty from my cheeks.

*Glo.* These eyes could not endure that beauty's wreck;  
You should not blemish it, if I stood by:  
As all the world is cheer'd by the sun,  
So I by that; it is my day, my life.

*Anne.* Black night o'ershadeth thy day, and death thy  
life!

*Glo.* Curse not thyself, fair creature; thou art both.

*Anne.* I would I were, to be reveng'd on thee.

*Glo.* It is a quarrel most unnatural,  
To be reveng'd on him that loveth thee.

*Anne.* It is a quarrel just and reasonable,  
To be reveng'd on him that kill'd my husband.

*Glo.* He that bereft thee, lady, of thy husband,  
Did it to help thee to a better husband.

*Anne.* His better doth not breathe upon the earth.

*Glo.* He lives that loves thee better than he could.

*Anne.* Name him.

*Glo.* Plantagenet.

*Anne.* Why, that was he.

*Glo.* The selfsame name, but one of better nature.

*Anne.* Where is he?



*Glo.* Here. [*She spits at him.*] Why dost thou spit at me?

*Anne.* Would it were mortal poison, for thy sake!

*Glo.* Never came poison from so sweet a place.

*Anne.* Never hung poison on a fouler toad.

Out of my sight! thou dost infect mine eyes.

*Glo.* Thine eyes, sweet lady, have infected mine.

*Anne.* Would they were basilisks, to strike thee dead!

*Glo.* I would they were, that I might die at once;

For now they kill me with a living death.

Those eyes of thine from mine have drawn salt tears,

Sham'd their aspects with store of childish drops:

These eyes, which never shed remorseful tear,

No, when my father York and Edward wept,

To hear the piteous moan that Rutland made

When black-fac'd Clifford shook his sword at him;

Nor when thy warlike father, like a child,

Told the sad story of my father's death,

And twenty times made pause, to sob and weep,

That all the standers-by had wet their cheeks,

Like trees bedash'd with rain; in that sad time

My manly eyes did scorn an humble tear;

And what these sorrows could not thence exhale,

Thy beauty hath, and made them blind with weeping.

I never su'd to friend nor enemy;

My tongue could never learn sweet smoothing word;

But, now thy beauty is propos'd my foe,

My proud heart sues, and prompts my tongue to speak.

[*She looks scornfully at him.*]

Teach not thy lip such scorn; for it was made

For kissing, lady, not for such contempt.

If thy revengeful heart cannot forgive,

Lo, here I lend thee this sharp-pointed sword;

Which if thou please to hide in this true breast,

And let the soul forth that adorest thee,

I lay it naked to the deadly stroke,

And humbly beg the death upon my knee.

Nay, do not pause; for I did kill King Henry,—

[*She offers at his breast with his sword.*]

But 'twas thy beauty that provokèd me.

Nay, now dispatch; 'twas I that stabb'd young Edward,—

*[She again offers at his breast.]*

But 'twas thy heavenly face that set me on.

*[She lets fall the sword.]*

Take up the sword again, or take up me.

*Anne.* Arise, dissembler: though I wish thy death,  
I will not be thy executioner.

*Glo.* Then bid me kill myself, and I will do it.

*Anne.* I have already.

*Glo.* That was in thy rage:

Speak it again, and, even with the word,  
This hand, which, for thy love, did kill thy love,  
Shall, for thy love, kill a far truer love;  
To both their deaths shalt thou be accessary.

*Anne.* I would I knew thy heart.

*Glo.* 'Tis figur'd in my tongue.

*Anne.* I fear me both are false.

*Glo.* Then never man was true.

*Anne.* Well, well, put up your sword.

*Glo.* Say, then, my peace is made.

*Anne.* That shalt thou know hereafter.

*Glo.* But shall I live in hope?

*Anne.* All men, I hope, live so.

*Glo.* Vouchsafe to wear this ring.

*Anne.* To take, is not to give. *[She puts on the ring.]*

*Glo.* Look, how this ring encompasseth thy finger,

Even so thy breast encloseth my poor heart;  
Wear both of them, for both of them are thine.  
And if thy poor devoted servant may  
But beg one favour at thy gracious hand,  
Thou dost confirm his happiness for ever.

*Anne.* What is it?

*Glo.* That it may please you leave these sad designs  
To him that hath more cause to be a mourner,  
And presently repair to Crosby-place;  
Where,—after I have solemnly interr'd,  
At Chertsey monastery, this noble king,  
And wet his grave with my repentant tears,—

I will with all expedient duty see you :  
For divers unknown reasons, I beseech you,  
Grant me this boon.

*Anne.* With all my heart ; and much it joys me too,  
To see you are become so penitent.—  
Tressel and Berkley, go along with me.

*Glo.* Bid me farewell.

*Anne.* 'Tis more than you deserve ;  
But since you teach me how to flatter you,  
Imagine I have said farewell already.

[*Exeunt Lady Anne, Tressel, and Berkley.*]

*Glo.* Sirs, take up the corse.

*Gent.* Towards Chertsey, noble lord ?

*Glo.* No, to White-Friars ; there attend my coming.

[*Exeunt the rest with the corpse.*]

Was ever woman in this humour woo'd ?  
Was ever woman in this humour won ?  
I'll have her ;—but I will not keep her long.  
What ! I, that kill'd her husband and his father,  
To take her in her heart's extremest hate ;  
With curses in her mouth, tears in her eyes,  
The bleeding witness of her<sup>(4)</sup> hatred by ;  
Having God, her conscience, and these bars against me,  
And I no friends to back my suit withal,  
But the plain devil and dissembling looks,  
And yet to win her,—all the world to nothing !  
Ha !

Hath she forgot already that brave prince,  
Edward, her lord, whom I, some three months since,  
Stabb'd in my angry mood at Tewksbury ?  
A sweeter and a lovelier gentleman,—  
Fram'd in the prodigality of nature,  
Young, valiant, wise, and, no doubt, right royal,—  
The spacious world cannot again afford :  
And will she yet abase her eyes on me,  
That cropp'd the golden prime of this sweet prince,  
And made her widow to a woful bed ?  
On me, whose all not equals Edward's moiety ?  
On me, that halt and am mis-shapen thus ?

My dukedom to a beggarly denier,  
I do mistake my person all this while :  
Upon my life, she finds, although I cannot,  
Myself to be a marvellous proper man.  
I'll be at charges for a looking-glass ;  
And entertain a score or two of tailors,  
To study fashions to adorn my body :  
Since I am crept in favour with myself,  
I will maintain it with some little cost.  
But first I'll turn yon fellow in his grave ;  
And then return lamenting to my love.—  
Shine out, fair sun, till I have bought a glass,  
That I may see my shadow as I pass. [Exit.

---

SCENE III. *The same. A room in the palace.*

*Enter* QUEEN ELIZABETH, RIVERS, and GREY.

*Riv.* Have patience, madam: there's no doubt his majesty  
Will soon recover his accustom'd health.

*Grey.* In that you brook it ill, it makes him worse :  
Therefore, for God's sake, entertain good comfort,  
And cheer his grace with quick and merry words.

*Q. Eliz.* If he were dead, what would betide on me ?

*Grey.* No other harm but loss of such a lord.

*Q. Eliz.* The loss of such a lord includes all harms.

*Grey.* The heavens have bless'd you with a goodly son,  
'To be your comforter when he is gone.

*Q. Eliz.* Ah, he is young ; and his minority  
Is put unto the trust of Richard Gloster,  
A man that loves not me, nor none of you.

*Riv.* Is it concluded he shall be protector ?

*Q. Eliz.* It is determin'd, not concluded yet :  
But so it must be, if the king miscarry.

*Enter* BUCKINGHAM and STANLEY.<sup>(6)</sup>

*Grey.* Here come the lords of Buckingham and Stanley.

*Buck.* Good time of day unto your royal grace!

*Stan.* God make your majesty joyful as you have been !

*Q. Eliz.* The Countess Richmond, good my Lord of Stanley,

To your good prayer will scarcely say amen.  
Yet, Stanley, notwithstanding she's your wife,  
And loves not me, be you, good lord, assur'd  
I hate not you for her proud arrogance.

*Stan.* I do beseech you, either not believe  
The envious slanders of her false accusers;  
Or, if she be accus'd on true report,  
Bear with her weakness, which, I think, proceeds  
From wayward sickness, and no grounded malice.

*Q. Eliz.* Saw you the king to-day, my Lord of Stanley?

*Stan.* But now the Duke of Buckingham and I  
Are come from visiting his majesty.

*Q. Eliz.* What likelihood of his amendment, lords?

*Buck.* Madam, good hope; his grace speaks cheerfully.

*Q. Eliz.* God grant him health! Did you confer with him?

*Buck.* Ay, madam: he desires to make atonement  
Between the Duke of Gloster and your brothers,  
And between them and my lord chamberlain;  
And sent to warn them to his royal presence.

*Q. Eliz.* Would all were well!—but that will never be:  
I fear our happiness is at the height.

*Enter GLOSTER, HASTINGS, and DORSET.*

*Glo.* They do me wrong, and I will not endure it:—  
Who are they that complain unto the king  
That I, forsooth, am stern, and love them not?  
By holy Paul, they love his grace but lightly  
That fill his ears with such dissentious rumours.  
Because I cannot flatter, and speak fair,  
Smile in men's faces, smooth, deceive, and cog,  
Duck with French nods and apish courtesy,  
I must be held a rancorous enemy.  
Cannot a plain man live, and think no harm,  
But thus his simple truth must be abus'd  
By silken, sly, insinuating Jacks?

*Grey.* To whom in all this presence speaks your grace?

*Glo.* To thee, that hast nor honesty nor grace.  
When have I injur'd thee? when done thee wrong?—  
Or thee?—or thee?—or any of your faction?  
A plague upon you all! His royal grace,—  
Whom God preserve better than you would wish!—  
Cannot be quiet scarce a breathing-while,  
But you must trouble him with lewd complaints.

*Q. Eliz.* Brother of Gloster, you mistake the matter.  
The king, on his own royal disposition,  
And not provok'd by any suitor else;  
Aiming, belike, at your interior hatred,  
That in your outward action shows itself  
Against my children, brothers, and myself,  
Makes him to send;<sup>(6)</sup> that thereby he may gather  
The ground of your ill-will, and so remove it.

*Glo.* I cannot tell:—the world is grown so bad,  
That wrens make<sup>(7)</sup> prey where eagles dare not perch:  
Since every Jack became a gentleman,  
There's many a gentle person made a Jack.

*Q. Eliz.* Come, come, we know your meaning, brother  
Gloster;  
You envy my advancement and my friends':  
God grant we never may have need of you!

*Glo.* Meantime, God grants that we have need of you:  
Our brother is imprison'd by your means,  
Myself disgrac'd, and the nobility  
Held in contempt; while great promotions  
Are daily given to ennoble those  
That scarce, some two days since, were worth a noble.

*Q. Eliz.* By Him that rais'd me to this careful height  
From that contented hap which I enjoy'd,  
I never did incense his majesty  
Against the Duke of Clarence, but have been  
An earnest advocate to plead for him.  
My lord, you do me shameful injury,  
Falsely to draw me in these vile suspects.

*Glo.* You may deny that you were not the mean  
Of my Lord Hastings' late imprisonment.

*Riv.* She may, my lord; for—

*Glo.* She may, Lord Rivers!—why, who knows not so?  
 She may do more, sir, than denying that:  
 She may help you to many fair preferments;  
 And then deny her aiding hand therein,  
 And lay those honours on your high desert.  
 What may she not? She may,—ay, marry, may she,—

*Riv.* What, marry, may she?

*Glo.* What, marry, may she! marry with a king,  
 A bachelor, a handsome stripling too:  
 I wis your grandam had a worscr match.

*Q. Eliz.* My Lord of Gloster, I have too long borne  
 Your blunt upbraidings and your bitter scoffs:  
 By heaven, I will acquaint his majesty  
 Of those gross taunts that oft I have endur'd.  
 I had rather be a country servant-maid  
 Than a great queen, with this condition,—  
 To be so baited, scorn'd, and storm'd at:

*Enter Queen MARGARET, behind.*

Small joy have I in being England's queen.

*Q. Mar.* And lessen'd be that small, God, I beseech him!  
 Thy honour, state, and seat is due to me.

*Glo.* What! threat you me with telling of the king?  
 Tell him, and spare not: look, what I have said  
 I will avouch in presence of the king:  
 I dare adventure to be sent to the Tower.  
 'Tis time to speak,—my pains are quite forgot.

*Q. Mar.* Out, devil! I remember them too well:  
 Thou kill'dst my husband Henry in the Tower,  
 And Edward, my poor son, at Tewksbury.

*Glo.* Ere you were queen, ay, or your husband king,  
 I was a pack-horse in his great affairs;  
 A weeder-out of his proud adversaries,  
 A liberal rewarder of his friends:  
 To royalise his blood I spilt mine own.

*Q. Mar.* Ay, and much better blood than his or thine.

*Glo.* In all which time you and your husband Grey  
 Were factious for the house of Lancaster;—  
 And, Rivers, so were you:—was not your husband

In Margaret's battle at Saint Alban's slain?  
 Let me put in your minds, if you forget,  
 What you have been ere this, and what you are;  
 Withal, what I have been, and what I am.

*Q. Mar.* A murderous villain, and so still thou art.

*Glo.* Poor Clarence did forsake his father, Warwick;  
 Ay, and forswore himself,—which Jesu pardon!—

*Q. Mar.* Which God revenge!

*Glo.* To fight on Edward's party, for the crown;  
 And for his meed, poor lord, he is mew'd up.  
 I would to God my heart were flint, like Edward's;  
 Or Edward's soft and pitiful, like mine:  
 I am too childish-foolish for this world.

*Q. Mar.* Hie thee to hell for shame, and leave this world,  
 Thou cacademon! there thy kingdom is.

*Riv.* My Lord of Gloster, in those busy days  
 Which here you urge to prove us enemies,  
 We follow'd then our lord, our sovereign king:  
 So should we you, if you should be our king.

*Glo.* If I should be!—I had rather be a pedler:  
 Far be it from my heart, the thought thereof!

*Q. Eliz.* As little joy, my lord, as you suppose  
 You should enjoy, were you this country's king,—  
 As little joy you may suppose in me,  
 That I enjoy, being the queen thereof.

*Q. Mar.* As<sup>(\*)</sup> little joy enjoys the queen thereof;  
 For I am she, and altogether joyless.

I can no longer hold me patient.— [Advancing.

Hear me, you wrangling pirates, that fall out  
 In sharing that which you have pill'd from me!  
 Which of you trembles not that looks on me?  
 If not, that, I being queen, you bow like subjects,  
 Yet that, by you depos'd, you quake like rebels?—  
 Ah, gentle villain, do not turn away!

*Glo.* Foul wrinkled witch, what mak'st thou in my sight?

*Q. Mar.* But repetition of what thou hast marr'd;  
 That will I make before I let thee go.

*Glo.* Wert thou not banish'd on pain of death?

*Q. Mar.* I was; but I do find more pain in banishment



Than death can yield me here by my abode.  
A husband and a son thou ow'st to me,—  
And thou a kingdom,—all of you allegiance:  
This sorrow that I have, by right is yours;  
And all the pleasures you usurp are mine.

*Glo.* The curse my noble father laid on thee,  
When thou didst crown his warlike brows with paper,  
And with thy scorn drew'st rivers from his eyes;  
And then, to dry them, gav'st the duke a clout  
Steep'd in the faultless blood of pretty Rutland;—  
His curses, then from bitterness of soul  
Denounc'd against thee, are all fall'n upon thee;  
And God, not we, hath plagu'd thy bloody deed.

*Q. Eliz.* So just is God, to right the innocent.

*Hast.* O, 'twas the foulest deed to slay that babe,  
And the most merciless that e'er was heard of!

*Riv.* Tyrants themselves wept when it was reported.

*Dor.* No man but prophesied revenge for it.

*Buck.* Northumberland, then present, wept to see it.

*Q. Mar.* What, were you snarling all before I came,  
Ready to catch each other by the throat,  
And turn you all your hatred now on me?

Did York's dread curse prevail so much with heaven,

That Henry's death, my lovely Edward's death,

Their kingdom's loss, my woful banishment,

Could all but answer for that peevish brat?

Can curses pierce the clouds and enter heaven?—

Why, then, give way, dull clouds, to my quick curses!—

Though not by war, by surfeit die your king,

As ours by murder, to make him a king!

Edward thy son, that now is Prince of Wales,

For Edward my son, that was Prince of Wales,

Die in his youth by like untimely violence!

Thyself a queen, for me that was a queen,

Outlive thy glory, like my wretched self!

Long mayst thou live to wail thy children's loss;

And see another, as I see thee now,

Deck'd in thy rights, as thou art stall'd in mine!

Long die thy happy days before thy death;

And, after many lengthen'd hours of grief,  
 Die neither mother, wife, nor England's queen!—  
 Rivers and Dorset, you were standers by,—  
 And so wast thou, Lord Hastings,—when my son  
 Was stabb'd with bloody daggers: God, I pray him,  
 That none of you may live his natural age,  
 But by some unlook'd accident cut off!

*Glo.* Have done thy charm, thou hateful wither'd hag!

*Q. Mar.* And leave out thee? stay, dog, for thou shalt  
 hear me.

✓If heaven have any grievous plague in store  
 Exceeding those that I can wish upon thee,  
 O, let them<sup>(9)</sup> keep it till thy sins be ripe,  
 And then hurl down their indignation  
 On thee, the troubler of the poor world's peace!  
 The worm of conscience still be-gnaw thy soul!  
 Thy friends suspect for traitors while thou liv'st,  
 And take deep traitors for thy dearest friends!  
 No sleep close up that deadly eye of thine,  
 Unless it be while some tormenting dream  
 Affrights thee with a hell of ugly devils!  
 Thou elvish-mark'd, abortive, rooting hog!  
 Thou that wast seal'd in thy nativity  
 The slave of nature and the son of hell!<sup>(10)</sup>  
 Thou slander of thy heavy mother's womb!  
 Thou loathèd issue of thy father's loins!  
 Thou rag of honour! thou detested—

*Glo.* Margaret.

*Q. Mar.* Richard!

*Glo.* Ha?

*Q. Mar.* I call thee not.

*Glo.* I cry thee mercy, then; for I did think  
 That thou hadst call'd me all these bitter names.

*Q. Mar.* Why, so I did; but look'd for no reply.  
 O, let me make the period to my curse!

*Glo.* 'Tis done by me, and ends in—Margaret.

*Q. Eliz.* Thus have you breath'd your curse against your-  
 self.

*Q. Mar.* Poor painted queen, vain flourish of my fortune!

Why strew'st thou sugar on that bottled spider,  
Whose deadly web ensnareth thee about?  
Fool, fool! thou whett'st a knife to kill thyself.  
The day will come that thou shalt wish for me  
To help thee curse this poisonous bunch-back'd toad.

*Hast.* False-boding woman, end thy frantic curse,  
Lest to thy harm thou move our patience.

*Q. Mar.* Foul shame upon you! you have all mov'd mine.

*Riv.* Were you well serv'd, you would be taught your  
duty.

*Q. Mar.* To serve me well, you all should do me duty,  
Teach me to be your queen, and you my subjects:  
O, serve me well, and teach yourselves that duty!

*Dor.* Dispute not with her,—she is lunatic.

*Q. Mar.* Peace, master marquis, you are malapert:  
Your fire-new stamp of honour is scarce current:

O, that your young nobility could judge

What 'twere to lose it, and be miserable!

They that stand high have many blasts to shake them;

And if they fall, they dash themselves to pieces.

*Glo.* Good counsel, marry:—learn it, learn it, marquis.

*Dor.* It touches you, my lord, as much as me.

*Glo.* Ay, and much more: but I was born so high,  
Our aery buildeth in the cedar's top,  
And dallies with the wind, and scorns the sun.

*Q. Mar.* And turns the sun to shade;—alas! alas!—

Witness my son, now in the shade of death;

Whose bright out-shining beams thy cloudy wrath

Hath in eternal darkness folded up.

Your aery buildeth in our aery's nest:—

O God, that seest it, do not suffer it;

As it was won with blood, lost be it so!

*Buck.* Peace, peace, for shame, if not for charity.

*Q. Mar.* Urge neither charity nor shame to me:

Uncharitably with me have you dealt,

And shamefully my hopes by you are butcher'd.

My charity is outrage, life my shame,—

And in that shame still live my sorrow's rage!

*Buck.* Have done, have done.

*Q. Mar.* O princely Buckingham, I'll kiss thy hand,  
In sign of league and amity with thee:  
Now fair befall thee, and thy noble house!  
Thy garments are not spotted with our blood,  
Nor thou within the compass of my curse.

*Buck.* Nor no one here; for curses never pass  
The lips of those that breathe them in the air.

*Q. Mar.* I will not think but they ascend the sky,  
And there awake God's gentle-sleeping peace.  
O Buckingham, take heed of yonder dog!  
Look, when he fawns he bites; and when he bites,  
His venom tooth will rankle to the death:  
Have not to do with him, beware of him;  
Sin, death, and hell have set their marks on him,  
And all their ministers attend on him.

*Glo.* What doth she say, my Lord of Buckingham?

*Buck.* Nothing that I respect, my gracious lord.

*Q. Mar.* What, dost thou scorn me for my gentle counsel?

And soothe the devil that I warn thee from?

O, but remember this another day,  
When he shall split thy very heart with sorrow,  
And say, poor Margaret was a prophetess!—  
Live each of you the subjects to his hate,  
And he to yours, and all of you to God's!

[*Exit.*

*Hast.* My hair doth stand on end to hear her curses.

*Riv.* And so doth mine: I muse why she's at liberty.

*Glo.* I cannot blame her: by God's holy mother,  
She hath had too much wrong; and I repent  
My part thereof that I have done to her.

*Q. Eliz.* I never did her any, to my knowledge.

*Glo.* Yet you have all the vantage of her wrong.  
I was too hot to do somebody good,  
That is too cold in thinking of it now.  
Marry, as for Clarence, he is well repaid;  
He is frank'd up to fattening for his pains;—  
God pardon them that are the cause thereof!

*Riv.* A virtuous and a Christian-like conclusion,  
'To pray for them that have done scath to us.

*Glo.* So do I ever, being well advis'd;  
For had I curs'd now, I had curs'd myself.

[*Aside.*

*Enter CATESBY.*

*Cates.* Madam, his majesty doth call for you,—  
And for your grace,—and you, my noble lords.<sup>(11)</sup>

*Q. Eliz.* Catesby, I come.—Lords, will you go with me?

*Riv.* We wait upon your grace.

[*Exeunt all except Gloster.*

*Glo.* I do the wrong, and first begin to brawl.  
The secret mischiefs that I set abroad  
I lay unto the grievous charge of others.  
Clarence,—whom I, indeed, have cast in darkness,—  
I do beweepe to many simple gulls;  
Namely, to Stanley, Hastings, Buckingham;  
And tell them 'tis the queen and her allies  
That stir the king against the duke my brother.  
Now, they believe it; and withal whet me  
To be reveng'd on Rivers, Vaughan, Grey:  
But then I sigh; and, with a piece of Scripture,  
'Tell them that God bids us do good for evil:  
And thus I clothe my naked villany  
With odd old ends stol'n forth of holy writ;  
And seem a saint, when most I play the devil.—  
But, soft! here come my executioners.

*Enter two Murderers.*

How now, my hardy, stout-resolvèd mates!  
Are you now going to dispatch this thing?

*First Murd.* We are, my lord; and come to have the  
warrant,

That we may be admitted where he is.

*Glo.* Well thought upon;—I have it here about me:

[*Gives the warrant.*

When you have done, repair to Crosby-place.  
But, sirs, be sudden in the execution,  
Withal obdurate, do not hear him plead;  
For Clarence is well-spoken, and perhaps  
May move your hearts to pity, if you mark him.

*First Murd.* Tut, tut, my lord, we will not stand to prate;  
Talkers are no good doers: be assur'd

We go to use our hands, and not our tongues.

*Glo.* Your eyes drop millstones, when fools' eyes fall  
tears:

I like you, lads;—about your business straight;

Go, go, dispatch.

*First Murd.* We will, my noble lord. [Exeunt.]

---

SCENE IV. *London. A room in the Tower.*

*Enter CLARENCE and BRAKENBURY.*

*Brak.* Why looks your grace so heavily to-day?

*Clar.* O, I have pass'd a miserable night,  
So full of fearful dreams, of ugly sights,  
That, as I am a Christian faithful man,  
I would not spend another such a night,  
Though 'twere to buy a world of happy days,—  
So full of dismal terror was the time!

*Brak.* What was your dream, my lord? I pray you, tell  
me.

*Clar.* Methoughts<sup>(19)</sup> that I had broken from the Tower,  
And was embark'd to cross to Burgundy;  
And, in my company, my brother Gloster;  
Who from my cabin tempted me to walk  
Upon the hatches: thence we look'd toward England,  
And cited up a thousand heavy times,  
During the wars of York and Lancaster  
That had befall'n us. As we pac'd along  
Upon the giddy footing of the hatches,  
Methought that Gloster stumbled; and, in falling,  
Struck me, that thought to stay him, overboard,  
Into the tumbling billows of the main.  
O Lord! methought, what pain it was to drown!  
What dreadful noise of water in mine ears!  
What sights of ugly death within mine eyes!  
Methoughts I saw a thousand fearful wrecks;

A thousand men that fishes gnaw'd upon ;  
Wedges of gold, great anchors, heaps of pearl,  
Inestimable stones, unvalu'd jewels,  
All scatter'd in the bottom of the sea :  
Some lay in dead men's skulls ; and, in those holes  
Where eyes did once inhabit, there were crept  
(As 'twere in scorn of eyes,) reflecting gems,  
That woo'd the slimy bottom of the deep,  
And mock'd the dead bones that lay scatter'd by.

*Brak.* Had you such leisure in the time of death  
To gaze upon the secrets of the deep ?

*Clar.* Methought I had ; and often did I strive  
To yield the ghost : but still the envious flood  
Stopp'd-in my soul, and would not let it forth  
To find the empty, vast, and wandering air ;  
But smother'd it within my panting bulk,  
Which almost burst to belch it in the sea.

*Brak.* Awak'd you not with this sore agony ?

*Clar.* No, no, my dream was lengthen'd after life ;  
O, then began the tempest to my soul !  
I pass'd, methought, the melancholy flood,  
With that grim ferryman which poets write of,  
Unto the kingdom of perpetual night.  
The first that there did greet my stranger soul,  
Was my great father-in-law, renown'd Warwick ;  
Who cried aloud, " What scourge for perjury  
Can this dark monarchy afford false Clarence ?"  
And so he vanish'd : then came wandering by  
A shadow like an angel, with bright hair  
Dabbled in blood ; and he shriek'd out aloud,  
" Clarence is come,—false, fleeting, perjur'd Clarence,—  
That stabb'd me in the field by Tewksbury ;—  
Seize on him, Furies, take him to your torments !"  
With that, methought, a legion of foul fiends  
Environ'd me, and howl'd in mine ears  
Such hideous cries, that, with the very noise,  
I trembling wak'd, and, for a season after,  
Could not believe but that I was in hell,—  
Such terrible impression made my dream.

*Brak.* No marvel, lord, though it affrighted you ;  
I am afraid, methinks, to hear you tell it.

*Clar.* O Brakenbury, I have done those things,  
That now give evidence against my soul,  
For Edward's sake ; and see how he requites me !—  
O God ! if my deep prayers cannot appease thee,  
But thou wilt be aveng'd on my misdeeds,  
Yet execute thy wrath in me alone,—  
O, spare my guiltless wife and my poor children !—  
Keeper, I prithee, sit by me awhile ;  
My soul is heavy, and I fain would sleep.

*Brak.* I will, my lord : God give your grace good  
rest !—<sup>(13)</sup> [*Clarence sleeps.*]

Sorrow breaks seasons and reposing hours,  
Makes the night morning, and the noon-tide night.  
Princes have but their titles for their glories,  
An outward honour for an inward toil ;  
And, for unfelt imaginations,  
They often feel a world of restless cares :  
So that, between their titles and low name,  
There's nothing differs but the outward fame.

*Enter the two Murderers.*

*First Murd.* Ho ! who's here ?

*Brak.* What wouldst thou, fellow ? and how cam'st thou  
hither ?

*First Murd.* I would speak with Clarence, and I came  
hither on my legs.

*Brak.* What, so brief ?

*Sec. Murd.* 'Tis better, sir, than to be tedious.—Let him  
see our commission ; and talk no more.

[*A paper is delivered to Brakenbury, who reads it.*]

*Brak.* I am, in this, commanded to deliver  
The noble Duke of Clarence to your hands :—  
I will not reason what is meant hereby,  
Because I will be guiltless of the meaning.  
There lies the duke asleep,—and there the keys :  
I'll to the king ; and signify to him  
That thus I have resign'd to you my charge.



*First Murd.* You may, sir; 'tis a point of wisdom: fare you well. *[Exit Brakenbury.]*

*Sec. Murd.* What, shall we stab him as he sleeps?

*First Murd.* No; he'll say 'twas done cowardly, when he wakes.

*Sec. Murd.* When he wakes! why, fool, he shall never wake until the great judgment-day.

*First Murd.* Why, then he'll say we stabbed him sleeping.

*Sec. Murd.* The urging of that word "judgment" hath bred a kind of remorse in me.

*First Murd.* What, art thou afraid?

*Sec. Murd.* Not to kill him, having a warrant for it; but to be damned for killing him, from the which no warrant can defend me.

*First Murd.* I thought thou hadst been resolute.

*Sec. Murd.* So I am, to let him live.

*First Murd.* I'll back to the Duke of Gloster, and tell him so.

*Sec. Murd.* Nay, I prithee, stay a little: I hope my holy<sup>(14)</sup> humour will change; it was wont to hold me but while one tells twenty.

*First Murd.* How dost thou feel thyself now?

*Sec. Murd.* Faith, some certain dregs of conscience are yet within me.

*First Murd.* Remember our reward, when the deed's done.

*Sec. Murd.* Zounds, he dies: I had forgot the reward.

*First Murd.* Where's thy conscience now?

*Sec. Murd.* In the Duke of Gloster's purse.

*First Murd.* So, when he opens his purse to give us our reward, thy conscience flies out.

*Sec. Murd.* 'Tis no matter; let it go; there's few or none will entertain it.

*First Murd.* What if it come to thee again?

*Sec. Murd.* I'll not meddle with it,—it makes a man a coward: a man cannot steal, but it accuseth him; a man cannot swear, but it checks him; a man cannot lie with his neighbour's wife, but it detects him: 'tis a blushing shame-faced spirit that mutinies in a man's bosom; it fills one full of obstacles: it made me once restore a purse of

gold, that by chance I found; it beggars any man that keeps it: it is turned out of all towns and cities for a dangerous thing; and every man that means to live well endeavours to trust to himself and live without it.

*First Murd.* Zounds, it is even now at my elbow, persuading me not to kill the duke.

*Sec. Murd.* Take the devil in thy mind, and believe him not: he would insinuate with thee, but to make thee sigh.

*First Murd.* I am strong-framed, he cannot prevail with me.

*Sec. Murd.* Spoke like a tall fellow that respects his reputation. Come, shall we fall to work?

*First Murd.* Take him on the costard with the hilts of thy sword, and then throw him into the malmsey-butt in the next room.

*Sec. Murd.* O excellent device! and make a sop of him.

*First Murd.* Soft! he wakes.

*Sec. Murd.* Strike!

*First Murd.* No, we'll reason with him.

*Clar.* Where art thou, keeper? give me a cup of wine.

*First Murd.* You shall have wine enough, my lord, anon.

*Clar.* In God's name, what art thou?

*First Murd.* A man, as you are.

*Clar.* But not, as I am, royal.

*First Murd.* Nor you, as we are, loyal.

*Clar.* Thy voice is thunder, but thy looks are humble.

*First Murd.* My voice is now the king's, my looks mine own.

*Clar.* How darkly and how deadly dost thou speak!

Your eyes do menace me: why look you pale?

Who sent you hither? Wherefore do you come?

*Both Murd.* To, to, to—

*Clar.* To murder me?

*Both Murd.* Ay, ay.

*Clar.* You scarcely have the hearts to tell me so,  
And therefore cannot have the hearts to do it.

Wherein, my friends, have I offended you?

*First Murd.* Offended us you have not, but the king.

*Clar.* I shall be reconcil'd to him again.

*Sec. Murd.* Never, my lord ; therefore prepare to die.

*Clar.* Are you drawn forth among a world of men  
To slay the innocent ? What is my offence ?  
Where is the evidence that doth accuse me ?  
What lawful quest have given their verdict up  
Unto the frowning judge ? or who pronounce'd  
The bitter sentence of poor Clarence' death ?  
Before I be convict by course of law,  
To threaten me with death is most unlawful.  
I charge you, as you hope to have redemption  
By Christ's dear blood shed for our grievous sins,  
That you depart, and lay no hands on me ;  
The deed you undertake is damnable.

*First Murd.* What we will do, we do upon command.

*Sec. Murd.* And he that hath commanded is our king.

*Clar.* Erroneous vassals ! the great King of kings  
Hath in the table of his law commanded  
That thou shalt do no murder : will you, then,  
Spurn at his edict, and fulfil a man's ?  
Take heed ; for he holds vengeance in his hand,  
To hurl upon their heads that break his law.

*Sec. Murd.* And that same vengeance doth he hurl on  
thee,

For false forswearing, and for murder too :  
Thou didst receive the sacrament to fight  
In quarrel of the house of Lancaster.

*First Murd.* And, like a traitor to the name of God,  
Didst break that vow ; and with thy treacherous blade  
Unripp'dst the bowels of thy sovereign's son.

*Sec. Murd.* Whom thou wast sworn to cherish and defend.

*First Murd.* How canst thou urge God's dreadful law  
to us,

When thou hast broke it in such dear degree ?

*Clar.* Alas ! for whose sake did I that ill deed ?

For Edward, for my brother, for his sake ;  
He sends you not to murder me for this ;  
For in that sin he is as deep as I.  
If God will be aveng'd for the deed,

O, know you yet, he doth it publicly :  
Take not the quarrel from his powerful arm ;  
He needs no indictment nor lawless course  
To cut off those that have offended him.

*First Murd.* Who made thee, then, a bloody minister,  
When gallant-springing brave Plantagenet,  
That princely novice, was struck dead by thee ?

*Clar.* My brother's love, the devil, and my rage.

*First Murd.* Thy brother's love, our duty, and thy faults,  
Provoke us hither now to slaughter thee.

*Clar.* If you do love my brother, hate not me ;  
I am his brother, and I love him well.  
If you are hir'd for meed, go back again,  
And I will send you to my brother Gloster,  
Who shall reward you better for my life  
Than Edward will for tidings of my death.

*Sec. Murd.* You are deceiv'd, your brother Gloster hates  
you.

*Clar.* O, no, he loves me, and he holds me dear :  
Go you to him from me.

*Both Murd.* Ay, so we will.

*Clar.* Tell him, when that our princely father York  
Bless'd his three sons with his victorious arm,  
And charg'd us from his soul to love each other,  
He little thought of this divided friendship :  
Bid Gloster think on this, and he will weep.

*First Murd.* Ay, millstones ; as he lesson'd us to weep.

*Clar.* O, do not slander him, for he is kind.

*First Murd.* Right as snow in harvest.—Come, you de-  
ceive yourself :

'Tis he that sends us to destroy you here.

*Clar.* It cannot be ; for he bewept my fortune,  
And hugg'd me in his arms, and swore, with sobs,  
That he would labour my delivery.

*First Murd.* Why, so he doth, when he delivers you  
From this earth's thralldom to the joys of heaven.

*Sec. Murd.* Make peace with God, for you must die, my  
lord.

*Clar.* Have you that holy feeling in your souls,

To counsel me to make my peace with God,  
 And are you yet to your own souls so blind,  
 That you will war with God by murdering me?—  
 O, sirs, consider, they that set you on  
 To do this deed will hate you for the deed.<sup>(15)</sup>

*Sec. Murd.* What shall we do?

*Clar.* Relent, and save your souls.

*First Murd.* Relent! 'tis cowardly and womanish.

*Clar.* Not to relent is beastly, savage, devilish.

Which of you, if you were a prince's son,  
 Being pent from liberty, as I am now,—  
 If two such murderers as yourselves came to you,—  
 Would not entreat for life?—

My friend, I spy some pity in thy looks;  
 O, if thine eye be not a flatterer,  
 Come thou on my side, and entreat for me,  
 As you would beg, were you in my distress:  
 A begging prince what beggar pities not?

*Sec. Murd.* Look behind you, my lord.

*First Murd.* Take that, and that: if all this will not do,  
[Stabs him.]

I'll drown you in the malmsey-butt within.

[Exit, with the body.]

*Sec. Murd.* A bloody deed, and desperately dispatch'd!  
 How fain, like Pilate, would I wash my hands  
 Of this most grievous guilty murder done!

*Re-enter First Murderer.*

*First Murd.* How now! what mean'st thou, that thou  
 help'st me not?

By heaven, the duke shall know how slack you have been.

*Sec. Murd.* I would he knew that I had sav'd his brother!  
 Take thou the fee, and tell him what I say;  
 For I repent me that the duke is slain. [Exit.]

*First Murd.* So do not I: go, coward as thou art.—

Well, I'll go hide the body in some hole,  
 Till that the duke give order for his burial:

And when I have my meed, I will away;

For this will out, and then I must not stay.

[Exit.]

## ACT II.

SCENE I. *London. A room in the palace.*

*Enter King EDWARD (led in sick), Queen ELIZABETH, DORSET, RIVERS, HASTINGS, BUCKINGHAM, GREY, and others.*

*K. Edw.* Why, so;—now have I done a good day's work:—

You peers, continue this united league:  
I every day expect an embassy  
From my Redeemer to redeem me hence;  
And now in peace my soul shall part to heaven,  
Since I have made my friends at peace on earth.  
Rivers and Hastings, take each other's hand;  
Dissemble not your hatred, swear your love.

*Riv.* By heaven, my soul is purg'd from grudging hate;  
And with my hand I seal my true heart's love.

*Hast.* So thrive I, as I truly swear the like!

*K. Edw.* Take heed you dally not before your king;  
Lest he that is the supreme King of kings  
Confound your hidden falsehood, and award  
Either of you to be the other's end.

*Hast.* So prosper I, as I swear perfect love!

*Riv.* And I, as I love Hastings with my heart!

*K. Edw.* Madam, yourself are not exempt from this,—  
Nor you, son Dorset,—Buckingham, nor you;—  
You have been factious one against the other.  
Wife, love Lord Hastings, let him kiss your hand;  
And what you do, do it unfeignèdly.

*Q. Eliz.* There, Hastings; I will never more remember  
Our former hatred, so thrive I and mine!

*K. Edw.* Dorset, embrace him;—Hastings, love lord  
marquis.

*Dor.* This interchange of love, I here protest,  
Upon my part shall be inviolable.

*Hast.* And so swear I. [*Embraces Dorset.*]

*K. Edw.* Now, princely Buckingham, seal thou this  
league

With thy embracements to my wife's allies,  
And make me happy in your unity.

*Buck.* Whenever Buckingham doth turn his hate  
Upon your grace [*to the Queen*], but with all dutious love  
Doth cherish you and yours, God punish me  
With hate in those where I expect most love !  
When I have most need to employ a friend,  
And most assurèd that he is a friend,  
Deep, hollow, treacherous, and full of guile,  
Be he unto me !—this do I beg of heaven,  
When I am cold in love to you or yours.

[*Embracing Rivers, &c.*]

*K. Edw.* A pleasing cordial, princely Buckingham,  
Is this thy vow unto my sickly heart.  
There wanteth now our brother Gloster here,  
To make the blessed period of this peace.

*Buck.* And, in good time, here comes the noble duke.

[*Enter GLOSTER.*]

*Glo.* Good morrow to my sovereign king and queen ;  
And, princely peers, a happy time of day !

*K. Edw.* Happy, indeed, as we have spent the day.  
Gloster, we have done deeds of charity ;  
Made peace of enmity, fair love of hate,  
Between these swelling wrong-incensèd peers.

*Glo.* A blessèd labour, my most sovereign lord.—  
Among this princely heap, if any here,  
By false intelligence, or wrong surmise,  
Hold me a foe ;  
If I unwittingly, or in my rage,  
Have aught committed that is hardly borne  
By any in this presence, I desire  
To reconcile me to his friendly peace :  
'Tis death to me to be at enmity ;  
I hate it, and desire all good men's love.—  
First, madam, I entreat true peace of you,  
Which I will purchase with my dutious service ;—  
Of you, my noble cousin Buckingham,  
If ever any grudge were lodg'd between us ;—

Of you,<sup>(16)</sup> and you, Lord Rivers, and of Dorset,  
 That all without desert have frown'd on me ;—  
 Of you, Lord Woodville, and Lord Scales, of you ;—  
 Dukes, earls, lords, gentlemen ;—indeed, of all.  
 I do not know that Englishman alive  
 With whom my soul is any jot at odds  
 More than the infant that is born to-night :  
 I thank my God for my humility.

*Q. Eliz.* A holiday shall this be kept hereafter :—  
 I would to God all strifes were well compounded.—  
 My sovereign lord, I do beseech your highness  
 To take our brother Clarence to your grace.

*Glo.* Why, madam, have I offer'd love for this,  
 To be so flouted in this royal presence ?  
 Who knows not that the gentle duke is dead ? [*They all start.*]  
 You do him injury to scorn his corpse.

*K. Edw.* Who knows not he is dead ! who knows he is ?

*Q. Eliz.* All-seeing heaven, what a world is this !

*Buck.* Look I so pale, Lord Dorset, as the rest ?

*Dor.* Ay, my good lord ; and no man in the presence  
 But his red colour hath forsook his cheeks.

*K. Edw.* Is Clarence dead ? the order was revers'd.

*Glo.* But he, poor man, by your first order died,  
 And that a wing'd Mercury did bear ;  
 Some tardy cripple bore the countermand,  
 That came too lag to see him buried.  
 God grant that some, less noble and less loyal,  
 Nearer in bloody thoughts, but not in blood,  
 Deserve not worse than wretched Clarence did,  
 And yet go current from suspicion !

*Enter STANLEY.*

*Stan.* A boon, my sovereign, for my service done !

*K. Edw.* I prithee, peace : my soul is full of sorrow.

*Stan.* I will not rise, unless your highness hear me.

*K. Edw.* Then say at once what is it thou request'st.

*Stan.* The forfeit, sovereign, of my servant's life ;  
 Who slew to-day a riotous gentleman  
 Lately attendant on the Duke of Norfolk.



*K. Edw.* Have I a tongue to doom my brother's death,  
And shall that tongue give pardon to a slave?  
My brother kill'd no man,—his fault was thought,  
And yet his punishment was bitter death.  
Who su'd to me for him? who, in my wrath,  
Kneel'd at my feet, and bid me be advis'd?  
Who spoke of brotherhood? who spoke of love?  
Who told me how the poor soul did forsake  
The mighty Warwick, and did fight for me?  
Who told me, in the field at Tewksbury,  
When Oxford had me down, he rescu'd me,  
And said, "Dear brother, live, and be a king"?  
Who told me, when we both lay in the field  
Frozen almost to death, how he did lap me  
Even in his garments, and did give himself,  
All thin and naked, to the numb cold night?  
All this from my remembrance brutish wrath  
Sinfully pluck'd, and not a man of you  
Had so much grace to put it in my mind.  
But when your carters or your waiting-vassals  
Have done a drunken slaughter, and defac'd  
The precious image of our dear Redeemer,  
You straight are on your knees for pardon, pardon;  
And I, unjustly too, must grant it you:—  
But for my brother not a man would speak,—  
Nor I, ungracious, speak unto myself  
For him, poor soul. The proudest of you all  
Have been beholding to him in his life;  
Yet none of you would once beg for his life.—  
O God, I fear thy justice will take hold  
On me, and you, and mine, and yours for this!—  
Come, Hastings, help me to my closet.—  
Ah, poor Clarence!

*[Exeunt King, Queen, Hastings, Rivers, Dorset, and Grey.]*

*Glo.* This is the fruit of rashness!—Mark'd you not  
How that the guilty kindred of the queen  
Look'd pale when they did hear of Clarence's death?  
O, they did urge it still unto the king!  
God will revenge it.—Come, lords, will you go

To comfort Edward with our company?

*Buck.* We wait upon your grace.

[*Exeunt.*]

---

SCENE II. *Another room in the palace.*

*Enter the Duchess of YORK, with a Son and Daughter of CLARENCE.*

*Son.* Good grandam, tell us, is our father dead?

*Duch.* No, boy.

*Daugh.* Why do you weep so oft, and beat your breast,  
And cry, "O Clarence, my unhappy son!"

*Son.* Why do you look on us, and shake your head,  
And call us orphans, wretches, castaways,  
If that our noble father be alive?

*Duch.* My pretty cousins, you mistake me both;  
I do lament the sickness of the king,  
As loth to lose him, not your father's death;  
It were lost sorrow to wail one that's lost.

*Son.* Then you conclude, my grandam, he is dead.  
The king mine uncle is to blame for this:  
God will revenge it; whom I will importune  
With earnest prayers all to that effect.

*Daugh.* And so will I.

*Duch.* Peace, children, peace! the king doth love you  
well:

Incapable and shallow innocents,  
You cannot guess who caus'd your father's death.

*Son.* Grandam, we can; for my good uncle Gloster  
Told me, the king, provok'd to it by the queen,  
Devis'd impeachments to imprison him:  
And when my uncle told me so, he wept,  
And pitied me, and kindly kiss'd my cheek;  
Bade me rely on him as on my father,  
And he would love me dearly as his child.

*Duch.* Ah, that deceit should steal such gentle shape,  
And with a virtuous visor hide deep vice!  
He is my son; ay, and therein my shame;  
Yet from my dugs he drew not this deceit.

*Son.* Think you my uncle did dissemble, grandam?

*Duch.* Ay, boy.

*Son.* I cannot think it.—Hark! what noise is this?

*Enter Queen ELIZABETH, distractedly; RIVERS and DORSET following her.*

*Q. Eliz.* Ah, who shall hinder me to wail and weep,  
To chide my fortune, and torment myself?  
I'll join with black despair against my soul,  
And to myself become an enemy.

*Duch.* What means this scene of rude impatience?

*Q. Eliz.* To make an act of tragic violence:—  
Edward, my lord, thy son, our king, is dead.  
Why grow the branches when the root is gone?  
Why wither not the leaves that want their sap?  
If you will live, lament; if die, be brief,  
That our swift-wing'd souls may catch the king's;  
Or, like obedient subjects, follow him  
To his new kingdom of ne'er-changing night.

*Duch.* Ah, so much interest have I in thy sorrow  
As I had title in thy noble husband!  
I have bewept a worthy husband's death,  
And liv'd by looking on his images:  
But now two mirrors of his princely semblance  
Are crack'd in pieces by malignant death,  
And I for comfort have but one false glass,  
That grieves me when I see my shame in him.  
Thou art a widow; yet thou art a mother,  
And hast the comfort of thy children left:  
But death hath snatch'd my husband from mine arms,  
And pluck'd two crutches from my feeble hands,—  
Clarence and Edward. O, what cause have I  
(Thine being but a moiety of my moan)  
To over-go thy woes and drown thy cries!

*Son.* Ah, aunt, you wept not for our father's death!  
How can we aid you with our kindred tears?

*Daugh.* Our fatherless distress was left unmoan'd;  
Your widow-dolour likewise be unwept!

*Q. Eliz.* Give me no help in lamentation;

I am not barren to bring forth complaints :  
All springs reduce their currents to mine eyes,  
That I, being govern'd by the watery moon,  
May send forth plenteous tears to drown the world !  
Ah for my husband, for my dear lord Edward !

*Chil.* Ah for our father, for our dear lord Clarence !

*Duch.* Alas for both, both mine, Edward and Clarence !

*Q. Eliz.* What stay had I but Edward ? and he's gone.

*Chil.* What stay had we but Clarence ? and he's gone.

*Duch.* What stays had I but they ? and they are gone.

*Q. Eliz.* Was never widow had so dear a loss !

*Chil.* Were never orphans had so dear a loss !

*Duch.* Was never mother had so dear a loss !

Alas, I am the mother of these griefs !  
Their woes are parcell'd, mine are general.  
She for an Edward weeps, and so do I ;  
I for a Clarence weep, so doth not she :  
These babes for Clarence weep, and so do I ;  
I for an Edward weep, so do not they :—  
Alas, you three, on me, threefold distress'd,  
Pour all your tears ! I am your sorrow's nurse,  
And I will pamper it with lamentation.

*Dor.* Comfort, dear mother : God is much displeas'd  
That you take with unthankfulness his doing :  
In common worldly things, 'tis call'd ungrateful,  
With dull unwillingness to repay a debt  
Which with a bounteous hand was kindly lent ;  
Much more to be thus opposite with heaven,  
For it requires the royal debt it lent you.

*Riv.* Madam, bethink you, like a careful mother,  
Of the young prince your son : send straight for him ;  
Let him be crown'd ; in him your comfort lives :  
Drown desperate sorrow in dead Edward's grave,  
And plant your joys in living Edward's throne.

*Enter GLOSTER, BUCKINGHAM, STANLEY, HASTINGS, RATCLIFF, and others.*

*Glo.* Sister, have comfort : all of us have cause  
To wail the dimming of our shining star ;

But none can cure their harms by wailing them.—  
 Madam, my mother, I do cry you mercy ;  
 I did not see your grace :—humbly on my knee  
 I crave your blessing.

*Duch.* God bless thee ; and put meekness in thy breast,  
 Love, charity, obedience, and true duty !

*Glo.* Amen ; and make me die a good old man !—  
 That is the butt-end of a mother's blessing : [*Aside.*  
 I marvel that her grace did leave it out.

*Buck.* You cloudy princes and heart-sorrowing peers,  
 That bear this heavy mutual load of moan,  
 Now cheer each other in each other's love :  
 Though we have spent our harvest of this king,  
 We are to reap the harvest of his son.  
 The broken rancour of your high-swoln hearts,  
 But lately splinter'd,<sup>(17)</sup> knit, and join'd together,  
 Must gently be preserv'd, cherish'd, and kept :  
 Me seemeth good, that, with some little train,  
 Forthwith from Ludlow the young prince be fet  
 Hither to London, to be crown'd our king.

*Riv.* Why with some little train, my Lord of Buckingham ?

*Buck.* Marry, my lord, lest, by a multitude,  
 The new-heal'd wound of malice should break out ;  
 Which would be so much the more dangerous,  
 By how much the estate is green and yet ungovern'd :  
 Where every horse bears his commanding rein,  
 And may direct his course as please himself,  
 As well the fear of harm, as harm apparent,  
 In my opinion, ought to be prevented.

*Glo.* I hope the king made peace with all of us ;  
 And the compâct is firm and true in me.

*Riv.* And so in me ; and so, I think, in all :  
 Yet, since it is but green, it should be put  
 To no apparent likelihood of breach,  
 Which haply by much company might be urg'd :  
 Therefore I say with noble Buckingham,  
 That it is meet so few should fetch the prince.

*Hast.* And so say I.

*Glo.* Then be it so ; and go we to determine

Who they shall be that straight shall post to Ludlow.  
Madam,—and you, my mother,<sup>(18)</sup>—will you go  
To give your censures in this business?

[*Exeunt all except Buckingham and Gloster.*]

*Buck.* My lord, whoever journeys to the prince,  
For God's sake, let not us two stay at home;  
For, by the way, I'll sort occasion,  
As index to the story we late talk'd of,  
To part the queen's proud kindred from the prince.

*Glo.* My other self, my counsel's consistory,  
My oracle, my prophet!—my dear cousin,  
I, as a child, will go by thy direction.  
Toward Ludlow then, for we'll not stay behind. [*Exeunt.*]

---

SCENE III. *London. A street.*

*Enter two Citizens, meeting.*

*First Cit.* Good morrow, neighbour: whither away so fast?

*Sec. Cit.* I promise you, I scarcely know myself:  
Hear you the news abroad?

*First Cit.* Yes,—that the king is dead.

*Sec. Cit.* Ill news, by'r lady; seldom comes the better:  
I fear, I fear 'twill prove a giddy world.

*Enter a third Citizen.*

*Third Cit.* Neighbours, God speed!

*First Cit.* Give you good morrow, sir.

*Third Cit.* Doth the news hold of good King Edward's  
death?

*Sec. Cit.* Ay, sir, it is too true; God help, the while!

*Third Cit.* Then, masters, look to see a troublous world.

*First Cit.* No, no; by God's good grace his son shall reign.

*Third Cit.* Woe to that land that's govern'd by a child!

*Sec. Cit.* In him there is a hope of government,  
Which, in his nonage, council under him,  
And, in his full and ripen'd years, himself,  
No doubt, shall then, and till then, govern well.

*First Cit.* So stood the state when Henry the sixth

Was crown'd in Paris but at nine months old.

*Third Cit.* Stood the state so? No, no, good friends, God wot;  
For then this land was famously enrich'd  
With politic grave counsel; then the king  
Had virtuous uncles to protect his grace.

*First Cit.* Why, so hath this, both by his father and mother.

*Third Cit.* Better it were they all came by his father,  
Or by his father there were none at all;  
For emulation now, who shall be nearest,  
Will touch us all too near, if God prevent not.  
O, full of danger is the Duke of Gloster!  
And the queen's sons and brothers haught and proud:  
And were they to be rul'd, and not to rule,  
This sickly land might solace as before.

*First Cit.* Come, come, we fear the worst; all will be well.

*Third Cit.* When clouds are seen, wise men put on their  
cloaks;

When great leaves fall, then winter is at hand;  
When the sun sets, who doth not look for night?  
Untimely storms make men expect a dearth.  
All may be well; but, if God sort it so,  
'Tis more than we deserve, or I expect.

*Sec. Cit.* Truly, the hearts of men are full of fear:  
You cannot reason almost with a man  
That looks not heavily and full of dread.

*Third Cit.* Before the days of change, still is it so:  
By a divine instinct men's minds mistrust  
Ensuing danger; as, by proof, we see  
The water swell before a boisterous storm.  
But leave it all to God.—Whither away?

*Sec. Cit.* Marry, we were sent for to the justices.

*Third Cit.* And so was I: I'll bear you company. [*Exeunt.*]

---

SCENE IV. *The same. A room in the palace.*

*Enter the Archbishop of York, the young Duke of York, Queen  
ELIZABETH, and the Duchess of York.*

*Arch.* Last night, I hear, they lay at Northampton;  
At Stony-Stratford will they be to-night:

To-morrow, or next day, they will be here.

*Duch.* I long with all my heart to see the prince :  
I hope he is much grown since last I saw him.

*Q. Eliz.* But I hear, no ; they say my son of York  
Has almost overta'en him in his growth.

*York.* Ay, mother ; but I would not have it so.

*Duch.* Why, my young cousin ? it is good to grow.

*York.* Grandam, one night, as we did sit at supper,  
My uncle Rivers talk'd how I did grow  
More than my brother : " Ay," quoth my uncle Gloster,  
" Small herbs have grace, great weeds do grow apace :"  
And since, methinks, I would not grow so fast,  
Because sweet flowers are slow, and weeds make haste.

*Duch.* Good faith, good faith, the saying did not hold  
In him that did object the same to thee :  
He was the wretched'st thing when he was young,  
So long a-growing and so leisurely,  
That, if his rule were true, he should be gracious.

*Arch.*<sup>(19)</sup> And so, no doubt he is, my gracious madam.

*Duch.* I hope he is ; but yet let mothers doubt.

*York.* Now, by my troth, if I had been remember'd,  
I could have given my uncle's grace a flout,  
To touch his growth nearer than he touch'd mine.

*Duch.* How, my young York ? I prithee, let me hear it.

*York.* Marry, they say my uncle grew so fast  
That he could gnaw a crust at two hours old :  
'Twas full two years ere I could get a tooth.  
Grandam, this would have been a biting jest.

*Duch.* I prithee, pretty York, who told thee this ?

*York.* Grandam, his nurse.

*Duch.* His nurse ! why, she was dead ere thou wast born.

*York.* If 'twere not she, I cannot tell who told me.

*Q. Eliz.* A parlous boy :—go to, you are too shrewd.

*Arch.*<sup>(20)</sup> Good madam, be not angry with the child.

*Q. Eliz.* Pitchers have ears.

*Arch.* Here comes a messenger.

*Enter a Messenger.*

What news ?



*Mess.* Such news, my lord, as grieves me to report.

*Q. Eliz.* How doth the prince?

*Mess.* Well, madam, and in health.

*Duch.* What is thy news?

*Mess.* Lord Rivers and Lord Grey are sent to Pomfret,  
With them Sir Thomas Vaughan, prisoners.

*Duch.* Who hath committed them?

*Mess.* The mighty dukes  
Gloster and Buckingham.

*Q. Eliz.*<sup>(21)</sup> For what offence?

*Mess.* The sum of all I can, I have disclos'd;  
Why or for what the nobles were committed  
Is all unknown to me, my gracious lady.

*Q. Eliz.* Ay me, I see the ruin of my house!  
The tiger now hath seiz'd the gentle hind;  
Insulting tyranny begins to jet  
Upon the innocent and awless throne:—  
Welcome, destruction, blood, and massacre!  
I see, as in a map, the end of all.

*Duch.* Accurs'd and unquiet wrangling days,  
How many of you have mine eyes beheld!  
My husband lost his life to get the crown;  
And often up and down my sons were toss'd,  
For me to joy, and weep, their gain and loss:  
And being seated, and domestic broils  
Clean over-blown, themselves, the conquerors,  
Make war upon themselves; brother to brother,  
Blood to blood, self against self:—O, preposterous  
And frantic outrage, end thy damn'd spleen;  
Or let me die, to look on death no more!

*Q. Eliz.* Come, come, my boy; we will to sanctuary.—  
Madam, farewell.

*Duch.* Stay, I will go with you.

*Q. Eliz.* You have no cause.

*Arch.* My gracious lady, go;  
[To the Queen.

And thither bear your treasure and your goods.  
For my part, I'll resign unto your grace  
The seal I keep: and so betide to me

As well I tender you and all of yours!  
Come, I'll conduct you to the sanctuary.

[*Exeunt.*]

---

### ACT III.

SCENE I. *London. A street.*

*The trumpets sound. Enter the Prince of WALES, GLOSTER, BUCKINGHAM, CATESBY, Cardinal BOURCHIER, and others.*

*Buck.* Welcome, sweet prince, to London, to your chamber.

*Glo.* Welcome, dear cousin, my thoughts' sovereign:  
The weary way hath made you melancholy.

*Prince.* No, uncle; but our crosses on the way  
Have made it tedious, wearisome, and heavy:  
I want more uncles here to welcome me.

*Glo.* Sweet prince, the untainted virtue of your years  
Hath not yet div'd into the world's decoit:  
No more can you distinguish of a man  
Than of his outward show; which, God he knows,  
Seldom or never jumpeth with the heart,  
Those uncles which you want were dangerous;  
Your grace attended to their sugar'd words,  
But look'd not on the poison of their hearts:  
God keep you from them, and from such false friends!

*Prince.* God keep me from false friends! but they were none.

*Glo.* My lord, the mayor of London comes to greet you.

*Enter the Lord Mayor, and his train.*

*May.* God bless your grace with health and happy days!

*Prince.* I thank you, good my lord;—and thank you all.

[*Exeunt Mayor, &c.*]

I thought my mother, and my brother York,  
Would long ere this have met us on the way:  
T'ie, what a slug is Hastings, that he comes not  
To tell us whether they will come or no!

*Buck.* And, in good time, here comes the sweating lord.

*Enter HASTINGS.*

*Prince.* Welcome, my lord : what, will our mother come ?

*Hast.* On what occasion, God he knows, not I,  
The queen your mother, and your brother York,  
Have taken sanctuary : the tender prince  
Would fain have come with me to meet your grace,  
But by his mother was perforce withheld.

*Buck.* Fie, what an indirect and peevish course  
Is this of hers !—Lord cardinal, will your grace  
Persuade the queen to send the Duke of York  
Unto his princely brother presently ?  
If she deny,—Lord Hastings, go with him,  
And from her jealous arms pluck him perforce.

*Card.* My Lord of Buckingham, if my weak oratory  
Can from his mother win the Duke of York,  
Anon expect him here ; but if she be obdurate  
To mild entreaties, God in heaven forbid  
We should infringe the holy privilege  
Of blessèd sanctuary ! not for all this land  
Would I be guilty of so great a sin.

*Buck.* You are too senseless-obstinate, my lord,  
Too ceremonious and traditional ;  
Weigh it but with the grossness of this age,<sup>(42)</sup>  
You break not sanctuary in seizing him.  
The benefit thereof is always granted  
To those whose dealings have deserv'd the place,  
And those who have the wit to claim the place :  
This prince hath neither claim'd it nor deserv'd it ;  
And therefore, in mine opinion, cannot have it :  
Then, taking him from hence that is not there,  
You break no privilege nor charter there.  
Oft have I heard of sanctuary-men ;  
But sanctuary-children ne'er till now.

*Card.* My lord, you shall o'er-rule my mind for once.—  
Come on, Lord Hastings, will you go with me ?

*Hast.* I go, my lord.

*Prince.* Good lords, make all the speedy haste you may.  
[*Exeunt Cardinal and Hastings.*]

Say, uncle Gloster, if our brother come,  
Where shall we sojourn till our coronation ?

*Glo.* Where it seems<sup>(23)</sup> best unto your royal self.  
If I may counsel you, some day or two  
Your highness shall repose you at the Tower :  
Then where you please, and shall be thought most fit  
For your best health and recreation.

*Prince.* I do not like the Tower, of any place.—  
Did Julius Cæsar build that place, my lord ?

*Buck.* He did, my gracious lord, begin that place ;  
Which, since, succeeding ages have re-edified.

*Prince.* Is it upon record, or else reported  
Successively from age to age, he built it ?

*Buck.* Upon record, my gracious lord.

*Prince.* But say, my lord, it were not register'd,  
Methinks the truth should live from age to age,  
As 'twere retail'd to all posterity,  
Even to the general all-ending day.

*Glo.* So wise so young, they say, do never live long.

[*Aside.*

*Prince.* What say you, uncle ?

*Glo.* I say, without characters, fame lives long.—  
Thus, like the formal vice, Iniquity,  
I moralize two meanings in one word.

[*Aside.*

*Prince.* That Julius Cæsar was a famous man ;  
With what his valour did enrich his wit,  
His wit set down to make his valour live :  
Death makes no conquest of this conqueror ;  
For now he lives in fame, though not in life.—  
I'll tell you what, my cousin Buckingham,—

*Buck.* What, my gracious lord ?

*Prince.* An if I live until I be a man,  
I'll win our ancient right in France again,  
Or die a soldier, as I liv'd a king.

*Glo.* Short summers lightly have a forward spring.

[*Aside.*

*Buck.* Now, in good time, here comes the Duke of York.

*Enter YORK, HASTINGS, and the Cardinal.*

*Prince.* Richard of York! how fares our loving brother?

*York.* Well, my dread lord; so must I call you now.

*Prince.* Ay, brother,—to our grief, as it is yours:

Too late he died that might have kept that title,

Which by his death hath lost much majesty.

*Glo.* How fares our cousin, noble Lord of York?

*York.* I thank you, gentle uncle. O, my lord,  
You said that idle weeds are fast in growth:  
The prince my brother hath outgrown me far.

*Glo.* He hath, my lord.

*York.* And therefore is he idle?

*Glo.* O, my fair cousin, I must not say so.

*York.* Then is he more beholding to you than I.

*Glo.* He may command me as my sovereign;

But you have power in me as in a kinsman.

*York.* I pray you, uncle, give me this dagger.

*Glo.* My dagger, little cousin? with all my heart.

*Prince.* A beggar, brother?

*York.* Of my kind uncle, that I know will give;  
And being but a toy, which is no grief to give.

*Glo.* A greater gift than that I'll give my cousin.

*York.* A greater gift! O, that's the sword to it.

*Glo.* Ay, gentle cousin, were it light enough.

*York.* O, then, I see, you will part but with light gifts;  
In weightier things you'll say a beggar nay.

*Glo.* It is too weighty for your grace to wear.

*York.* I weigh it lightly, were it heavier.

*Glo.* What, would you have my weapon, little lord?

*York.* I would, that I might thank you as you call me.

*Glo.* How?

*York.* Little.

*Prince.* My Lord of York will still be cross in talk:—  
Uncle, your grace knows how to bear with him.

*York.* You mean, to bear me, not to bear with me:—  
Uncle, my brother mocks both you and me;  
Because that I am little, like an ape,  
He thinks that you should bear me on your shoulders.

*Buck.* With what a sharp-provided wit he reasons!

To mitigate the scorn he gives his uncle,  
He prettily and aptly taunts himself:  
So cunning and so young is wonderful.

*Glo.* My lord, will't please you pass along?  
Myself and my good cousin Buckingham  
Will to your mother, to entreat of her  
To meet you at the Tower, and welcome you.

*York.* What, will you go unto the Tower, my lord?

*Prince.* My lord protector needs will have it so.

*York.* I shall not sleep in quiet at the Tower.

*Glo.* Why, what should you fear?

*York.* Marry, my uncle Clarence' angry ghost:  
My grandam told me he was murder'd there.

*Prince.* I fear no uncles dead.

*Glo.* Nor none that live, I hope.

*Prince.* An if they live, I hope I need not fear.  
But come, my lord; and with a heavy heart,  
Thinking on them, go I unto the Tower.

[*Senet. Exeunt Prince, York, Hastings, Cardinal,  
and Attendants.*]

*Buck.* Think you, my lord, this little prating York  
Was not incensèd by his subtle mother  
To taunt and scorn you thus opprobriously?

*Glo.* No doubt, no doubt: O, 'tis a parlous boy;  
Bold, quick, ingenious, forward, capable:  
He is all the mother's, from the top to toe.

*Buck.* Well, let them rest.—Come hither, Catesby.  
Thou art sworn as deeply to effect what we intend  
As closely to conceal what we impart:  
Thou know'st our reasons urg'd upon the way;—  
What think'st thou? is it not an easy matter  
To make William Lord Hastings of our mind,  
For the instalment of this noble duke  
In the seat royal of this famous isle?

*Cate.* He for his father's sake so loves the prince,  
That he will not be won to aught against him.

*Buck.* What think'st thou, then, of Stanley? will not he?

*Cate.* He will do all in all as Hastings doth.

*Buck.* Well, then, no more but this: go, gentle Catesby,

And, as it were far off, sound thou Lord Hastings,  
How he doth stand affected to our purpose ;  
And summon him to-morrow to the Tower,  
To sit about the coronation.

If thou dost find him tractable to us,  
Encourage him, and tell him all our reasons :  
If he be leaden, icy, cold, unwilling,  
Be thou so too ; and so break off the talk,  
And give us notice of his inclination :  
For we to-morrow hold divided councils,  
Wherein thyself shalt highly be employ'd.

*Glo.* Commend me to Lord William : tell him, Catesby,  
His ancient knot of dangerous adversaries  
To-morrow are let blood at Pomfret-castle ;  
And bid my lord, for joy of this good news,  
Give Mistress Shore one gentle kiss the more.

*Buck.* Good Catesby, go, effect this business soundly.

*Cate.* My good lords both, with all the head I can.

*Glo.* Shall we hear from you, Catesby, ere we sleep ?

*Cate.* You shall, my lord.

*Glo.* At Crosby-place, there shall you find us both.

[*Exit Catesby.*]

*Buck.* Now, my lord, what shall we do, if we perceive  
Lord Hastings will not yield to our complots ?

*Glo.* Chop off his head, man ;—somewhat we will do :—  
And, look, when I am king, claim thou of me  
The earldom of Hereford, and all the movables  
Whereof the king my brother was possess'd.

*Buck.* I'll claim that promise at your grace's hand.

*Glo.* And look to have it yielded with all kindness,  
Come, let us sup betimes, that afterwards  
We may digest our complots in some form.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. Before Lord HASTINGS' house.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* My lord ! my lord !—

[*Knocking.*]

*Hast.* [*within*] Who knocks ?

*Mess.* One from the Lord Stanley.

*Hast.* [*within*] What is't o'clock?

*Mess.* Upon the stroke of four.

*Enter HASTINGS.*

*Hast.* Cannot my Lord Stanley sleep these tedious nights?

*Mess.* So it appears by that I have to say.

First, he commends him to your noble self.

*Hast.* What then?

*Mess.* Then certifies your lordship, that this night  
He dreamt the boar had ras'd off his helm;  
Besides, he says there are two councils held;  
And that may be determin'd at the one  
Which may make you and him to rue at the other.  
Therefore he sends to know your lordship's pleasure,—  
If you will presently take horse with him,  
And with all speed post with him toward the north,  
To shun the danger that his soul divines.

*Hast.* Go, fellow, go, return unto thy lord;  
Bid him not fear the separated councils:  
His honour and myself are at the one,  
And at the other is my good friend Catesby;  
Where nothing can proceed that toucheth us  
Whereof I shall not have intelligence.  
Tell him his fears are shallow, without instance:  
And for his dreams, I wonder he's so simple  
To trust the mockery of unquiet slumbers:  
To fly the boar before the boar pursues,  
Were to incense the boar to follow us,  
And make pursuit where he did mean no chase.  
Go, bid thy master rise and come to me;  
And we will both together to the Tower,  
Where, he shall see, the boar will use us kindly.

*Mess.* I'll go, my lord, and tell him what you say. [*Exit.*]

*Enter CATESBY.*

*Cate.* Many good morrows to my noble lord!

*Hast.* Good morrow, Catesby; you are early stirring:  
What news, what news, in this our tottering state?



*Cate.* It is a reeling world, indeed, my lord ;  
And I believe will never stand upright  
Till Richard wear the garland of the realm.

*Hast.* How ! wear the garland ! dost thou mean the  
crown ?

*Cate.* Ay, my good lord.

*Hast.* I'll have this crown of mine cut from my shoulders  
Before I'll see the crown so foul misplac'd.  
But canst thou guess that he doth aim at it ?

*Cate.* Ay, on my life ; and hopes to find you forward  
Upon his party for the gain thereof :  
And thereupon he sends you this good news,—  
That this same very day your enemies,  
The kindred of the queen, must die at Pomfret.

*Hast.* Indeed, I am no mourner for that news,  
Because they have been still my adversaries ;  
But, that I'll give my voice on Richard's side,  
To bar my master's heirs in true descent,  
God knows I will not do it to the death.

*Cate.* God keep your lordship in that gracious mind !

*Hast.* But I shall laugh at this a twelve-month hence,—  
That they which brought me in my master's hate,  
I live to look upon their tragedy.  
Well, Catesby, ere a fortnight make me older,  
I'll send some packing that yet think not on 't.

*Cate.* 'Tis a vile thing to die, my gracious lord,  
When men are unprepar'd, and look not for it.

*Hast.* O monstrous, monstrous ! and so falls it out  
With Rivers, Vaughan, Grey : and so 'twill do  
With some men else, that think themselves as safe  
As thou and I ; who, as thou know'st, are dear  
To princely Richard and to Buckingham.

*Cate.* The princes both make high account of you,—  
For they account his head upon the bridge. [Aside.]

*Hast.* I know they do ; and I have well deserv'd it.

*Enter STANLEY.*

Come on, come on ; where is your boar-spear, man ?  
Fear you the boar, and go so unprovided ?

*Stan.* My lord, good morrow;—good morrow, Catesby:—  
You may jest on, but, by the holy rood,  
I do not like these several councils, I.

*Hast.* My lord, I hold my life as dear as you do yours;<sup>(21)</sup>  
And never in my days, I do protest,  
Was it so precious to me as 'tis now:  
Think you, but that I know our state secure,  
I would be so triumphant as I am?

*Stan.* The lords at Pomfret, when they rode from London,  
Were jocund, and suppos'd their states were sure,—  
And they, indeed, had no cause to mistrust;  
But yet, you see, how soon the day o'ercast.  
This sudden stab of rancour I misdoubt:  
Pray God, I say, I prove a needless coward!  
What, shall we toward the Tower? the day is spent.

*Hast.* Come, come, have with you.—Wot you what, my  
lord?

To-day the lords you talk of are beheaded.

*Stan.* They, for their truth, might better wear their  
heads

Than some that have accus'd them wear their hats.—  
But come, my lord, let's away.

*Enter a Pursuivant.*

*Hast.* Go on before; I'll talk with this good fellow.

*[Exeunt Stan. and Catesby.]*

How now, sirrah! how goes the world with thee?

*Purs.* The better that your lordship please to ask.

*Hast.* I tell thee, man, 'tis better with me now  
Than when thou mett'st me last where now we meet:  
Then was I going prisoner to the Tower,  
By the suggestion of the queen's allies;  
But now, I tell thee (keep it to thyself),  
This day those enemies are put to death,  
And I in better state than e'er I was.

*Purs.* God hold it, to your honour's good content!

*Hast.* Gramercy, fellow: there, drink that for me.

*[Throwing him his purse.]*

*Purs.* I thank your honour.

*[Exit.]*

*Enter a Priest.*

*Pr.* Well met, my lord; I am glad to see your honour.

*Hast.* I thank thee, good Sir John, with all my heart.  
I am in your debt for your last exercise;  
Come the next Sabbath, and I will content you.<sup>(25)</sup>

*Enter BUCKINGHAM.*

*Buck.* What, talking with a priest, lord chamberlain!  
Your friends at Pomfret, they do need the priest;  
Your honour hath no shriving-work in hand.

*Hast.* Good faith, and when I met this holy man,  
The men you talk of came into my mind.—  
What, go you toward the Tower?

*Buck.* I do, my lord; but long I cannot stay there:  
I shall return before your lordship thence.

*Hast.* Nay, like enough, for I stay dinner there.

*Buck.* And supper too, although thou know'st it not.

*[Aside.*

Come, will you go?

*Hast.* I'll wait upon your lordship. *[Exeunt.*

SCENE III. *Pomfret. Before the Castle.*

*Enter RATCLIFF, with a guard, conducting RIVERS, GREY, and  
VAUGHAN to execution.*

*Riv.* Sir Richard Ratcliff, let me tell thee this,—  
To-day shalt thou behold a subject die  
For truth, for duty, and for loyalty.

*Grey.* God bless the prince from all the pack of you!  
A knot you are of damnèd blood-suckers.

*Vaugh.* You live that shall cry woe for this hereafter.

*Rat.* Dispatch; the limit of your lives is out.

*Riv.* O Pomfret, Pomfret! O thou bloody prison,  
Fatal and ominous to noble peers!  
Within the guilty closure of thy walls  
Richard the second here was hack'd to death;

And, for more slander to thy dismal seat,  
We give thee up our guiltless blood to drink.

*Grey.* Now Margaret's curse is fall'n upon our heads,  
When she exclaim'd on Hastings, you, and I,  
For standing by when Richard stabb'd her son.

*Riv.* Then curs'd she Richard, then curs'd she Bucking-  
ham,  
Then curs'd she Hastings:—O, remember, God,  
To hear her prayer for them, as now for us!  
And for my sister and her princely sons,  
Be satisfied, dear God, with our true blood,  
Which, as thou know'st, unjustly must be spilt.

*Rat.* Make haste; the hour of death is expiate.<sup>(26)</sup>

*Riv.* Come, Grey,—come, Vaughan,—let us here em-  
brace:

Farewell, until we meet again in heaven.

[*Exeunt.*

---

SCENE IV. *London. A room in the Tower.*

BUCKINGHAM, STANLEY, HASTINGS, the Bishop of Ely, RATCLIFF,  
LOVEL, and others, sitting at a table, Officers of the Council  
attending.

*Hast.* Now, noble peers, the cause why we are met  
Is, to determine of the coronation.

In God's name, speak,—when is the royal day?

*Buck.* Are all things ready for that royal time?

*Stan.* They are; and wants but nomination.

*Ely.* To-morrow, then, I judge a happy day.

*Buck.* Who knows the lord protector's mind herein?  
Who is most inward with the noble duke?

*Ely.* Your grace, we think, should soonest know his  
mind.

*Buck.* We know each other's faces; for our hearts,  
He knows no more of mine than I of yours;  
Nor I of his, my lord, than you of mine.—  
Lord Hastings, you and he are near in love.

*Hast.* I thank his grace, I know he loves me well;  
But, for his purpose in the coronation,

I have not sounded him, nor he deliver'd  
 His gracious pleasure any way therein :  
 But you, my honourable lords, may name the time ;  
 And in the duke's behalf I'll give my voice,  
 Which, I presume, he'll take in gentle part.  
*Ely.* In happy time, here comes the duke himself.

*Enter GLOSTER.*

*Glo.* My noble lords and cousins all, good morrow.  
 I have been long a sleeper ; but, I trust,  
 My absence doth neglect no great design,  
 Which by my presence might have been concluded.

*Buck.* Had you not come upon your cue, my lord,  
 William Lord Hastings had pronounc'd your part,—  
 I mean, your voice,—for crowning of the king.

*Glo.* Than my Lord Hastings no man might be bolder ;  
 His lordship knows me well, and loves me well.—  
 My Lord of Ely, when I was last in Holborn,  
 I saw good strawberries in your garden there :  
 I do beseech you send for some of them.

*Ely.* Marry, and will, my lord, with all my heart.

[*Exit.*

*Glo.* Cousin of Buckingham, a word with you.

[*Takes him aside.*

Catesby hath sounded Hastings in our business,  
 And finds the testy gentleman so hot,  
 That he will lose his head ere give consent  
 His master's child, as worshipfully he terms it,  
 Shall lose the royalty of England's throne.

*Buck.* Withdraw yourself awhile ; I'll go with you.

[*Exeunt Gloster and Buckingham.*

*Stan.* We have not yet set down this day of triumph.  
 To-morrow, in my judgment, is too sudden ;  
 For I myself am not so well provided  
 As else I would be, were the day prolong'd.

*Re-enter Bishop of Ely.*

*Ely.* Where is my lord the Duke of Gloster ?  
 I have sent for these strawberries.

*Hast.* His grace looks cheerfully and smooth this morning ;

There's some conceit or other likes him well,  
When that he bids good morrow with such spirit.  
I think there's never a man in Christendom  
Can lesser hide his love or hate than he ;  
For by his face straight shall you know his heart.

*Stan.* What of his heart perceive you in his face  
By any livelihood<sup>(27)</sup> he show'd to-day ?

*Hast.* Marry, that with no man here he is offended ;  
For, were he, he had shown it in his looks.

*Re-enter GLOSTER and BUCKINGHAM.*

*Glo.* I pray you all, tell me what they deserve  
That do conspire my death with devilish plots  
Of damnèd witchcraft, and that have prevail'd  
Upon my body with their hellish charms ?

*Hast.* The tender love I bear your grace, my lord,  
Makes me most forward in this princely presence  
To doom the offenders : whosoe'er they be,  
I say, my lord, they have deservèd death.

*Glo.* Then be your eyes the witness of their evil :  
Look how I am bewitch'd ; behold mine arm  
Is, like a blasted sapling, wither'd up :  
And this is Edward's wife, that monstrous witch,  
Consorted with that harlot-strumpet Shore,  
That by their witchcraft thus have markèd me.

*Hast.* If they have done this deed, my noble lord,—

*Glo.* If ! thou protector of this damnèd strumpet,  
Talk'st thou to me of " ifs ? " Thou art a traitor :—  
Off with his head !—now, by Saint Paul I swear,  
I will not dine until I see the same.—  
Lovel and Ratcliff,<sup>(28)</sup> look that it be done :—  
The rest, that love me, rise and follow me.

*[Exeunt all, except Hastings, Lovel, and Ratcliff.]*

*Hast.* Woe, woe for England ! not a whit for me ;  
For I, too fond, might have prevented this.  
Stanley did dream the boar did rase his helm ;

And I did scorn it, and disdain to fly:  
 Three times to-day my foot-cloth horse did stumble,  
 And started, when he look'd upon the Tower,  
 As loth to bear me to the slaughter-house.  
 O, now I need the priest that spake to me:  
 I now repent I told the pursuivant,  
 As too triumphing, how mine enemies  
 To-day at Pomfret bloodily were butcher'd,  
 And I myself secure in grace and favour.  
 O Margaret, Margaret, now thy heavy curse  
 Is lighted on poor Hastings' wretched head!

*Rat.* Come, come, dispatch; the duke would be at dinner:  
 Make a short shrift; he longs to see your head.

*Hast.* O momentary grace of mortal men,  
 Which we more hunt for than the grace of God!  
 Who builds his hope in air of your good looks,  
 Lives like a drunken sailor on a mast,  
 Ready, with every nod, to tumble down  
 Into the fatal bowels of the deep.

*Lov.* Come, come, dispatch; 'tis bootless to exclaim.

*Hast.* O bloody Richard!—miserable England!

I prophesy the fearfull'st time to thee

That ever wretched age hath look'd upon.—

Come, lead me to the block; bear him my head:

They smile at me who shortly shall be dead.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE V. *The same. The Tower-walls.*

*Enter GLOSTER and BUCKINGHAM, in rusty armour, marvellous ill-favoured.*

*Glo.* Come, cousin, canst thou quake, and change thy colour,

Murder thy breath in middle of a word,

And then again begin, and stop again,

As if thou wert distraught and mad with terror?

*Buck.* Tut, I can counterfeit the deep tragedian;

Speak and look back, and pry on every side,

Tremble and start at wagging of a straw,

Intending deep suspicion : ghastly looks  
Are at my service, like enforced smiles ;  
And both are ready in their offices,  
At any time, to grace my stratagems.  
But what, is Catesby gone ?

*Glo.* He is ; and, see, he brings the mayor along.

*Enter the Lord Mayor and CATESBY.*

*Buck.* Lord mayor,—

*Glo.* Look to the drawbridge there !

*Buck.* Hark ! a drum.

*Glo.* Catesby, o'erlook the walls.

*Buck.* Lord mayor, the reason we have sent,—

*Glo.* Look back, defend thee,—here are enemies.

*Buck.* God and our innocency defend and guard us !

*Glo.* Be patient, they are friends,—Ratcliff and Lovel

*Enter LOVEL and RATCLIFF, with HASTINGS' head.*

*Lov.* Here is the head of that ignoble traitor,  
The dangerous and unsuspected Hastings.

*Glo.* So dear I lov'd the man, that I must weep.  
I took him for the plainest harmless creature  
That breath'd upon the earth a Christian ;  
Made him my book, wherein my soul recorded  
The history of all her secret thoughts :  
So smooth he daub'd his vice with show of virtue,  
That, his apparent open guilt omitted,—  
I mean, his conversation with Shore's wife,—  
He liv'd from all attainder of suspect.

*Buck.* Well, well, he was the covert'st shelter'd traitor  
That ever liv'd.—

Would you imagine, or almost believe  
(Were't not that, by great preservation,  
We live to tell it you), the subtle traitor  
This day had plotted, in the council-house,  
To murder me and my good Lord of Gloster ?

*May.* Had he done so ?

*Glo.* What, think you we are Turks or infidels ?  
Or that we would, against the form of law,



Proceed thus rashly in the villain's death,  
But that the extreme peril of the case,  
The peace of England and our persons' safety,  
Enforc'd us to this execution?

*May.* Now, fair befall you! he deserv'd his death;  
And your good graces both have well proceeded,  
To warn false traitors from the like attempts.  
I never look'd for better at his hands,  
After he once fell in with Mistress Shore.

*Buck.* Yet had we not determin'd he should die,  
Until your lordship came to see his end;  
Which now the loving haste of these our friends,  
Something against our meaning, have<sup>(29)</sup> prevented:  
Because, my lord, we would have had you heard  
The traitor speak, and timorously confess  
The manner and the purpose of his treasons;  
That you might well have signified the same  
Unto the citizens, who haply may  
Misconstrue<sup>(30)</sup> us in him, and wail his death.

*May.* But, my good lord, your grace's word shall serve,  
As well as I had seen, and heard him speak;  
And do not doubt, right noble princes both,  
But I'll acquaint our duteous citizens  
With all your just proceedings in this case.

*Glo.* And to that end we wish'd your lordship here,  
To avoid the censures of the carping world.

*Buck.* But since you come too late of our intent,  
Yet witness what you hear we did intend:  
And so, my good lord mayor, we bid farewell.

[*Exit Lord Mayor.*]

*Glo.* Go, after, after, cousin Buckingham.  
The mayor towards Guildhall hies him in all post:—  
There, at your meetest vantage of the time,  
Infer the bastardy of Edward's children:  
Tell them how Edward put to death a citizen,  
Only for saying he would make his son  
Heir to the crown; meaning, indeed, his house,  
Which, by the sign thereof, was termèd so.  
Moreover, urge his hateful luxury,

And bestial appetite in change of lust;  
Which stretch'd unto their servants, daughters, wives,  
Even where his raging<sup>(31)</sup> eye or savage heart,  
Without control, list'd to make a prey.  
Nay, for a need, thus far come near my person:—  
Tell them, when that my mother went with child  
Of that insatiate Edward, noble York  
My princely father then had wars in France;  
And, by true computation of the time,  
Found that the issue was not his begot;  
Which well appear'd in his lineaments,  
Being nothing like the noble duke my father:  
Yet touch this sparingly, as 'twere far off;  
Because, my lord, you know my mother lives.

*Buck.* Doubt not, my lord, I'll play the orator  
As if the golden fee for which I plead  
Were for myself: and so, my lord, adieu.

*Glo.* If you thrive well, bring them to Baynard's Castle;  
Where you shall find me well accompanied  
With reverend fathers and well-learn'd bishops.

*Buck.* I go; and towards three or four o'clock  
Look for the news that the Guildhall affords. [Exit.]

*Glo.* Go, Lovel, with all speed to Doctor Shaw,—  
Go thou [*to Cate.*] to Friar Penker;—bid them both  
Meet me within this hour at Baynard's Castle.

*[Exeunt Lovel and Catesby.]*

Now will I in, to take some privy order,  
To draw the brats of Clarence out of sight;  
And to give notice, that no manner person  
Have any time recourse unto the princes. [Exit.]

---

SCENE VI. *The same. A street.*

*Enter a Scrivener.*

*Scriv.* Here is the indictment of the good Lord Hastings;  
Which in a set hand fairly is engross'd,  
That it may be to-day read o'er in Paul's.

And mark how well the sequel hangs together :—  
Eleven hours I have spent to write it over,  
For yesternight by Catesby was it sent me ;  
The precedent was full as long a-doing :  
And yet within these five hours Hastings liv'd,  
Untainted, unexamined, free, at liberty.  
Here's a good world the while ! Who is so gross,  
That cannot see this palpable device ?  
Yet who so bold, but says he sees it not ?  
Bad is the world ; and all will come to naught,  
When such ill dealing must be seen in thought. [Exit.

---

SCENE VII. *The same. Court of Baynard's Castle.*

*Enter GLOSTER and BUCKINGHAM, meeting.*

*Glo.* How now, how now ! what say the citizens ?

*Buck.* Now, by the holy mother of our Lord,  
The citizens are mum, say not a word.

*Glo.* Touch'd you the bastardy of Edward's children ?

*Buck.* I did ; with his contract with Lady Lucy,  
And his contract by deputy in France ;  
The insatiate greediness of his desires,  
And his enforcement of the city wives ;  
His tyranny for trifles ; his own bastardy,—  
As being got, your father then in France,  
And his resemblance, being not like the duke :  
Withal I did infer your lineaments,—  
Being the right idea of your father,  
Both in your form and nobleness of mind ;  
Laid open all your victories in Scotland,  
Your discipline in war, wisdom in peace,  
Your bounty, virtue, fair humility ;  
Indeed, left nothing fitting for your purpose  
Untouch'd, or slightly handled, in discourse ;  
And when my oratory drew toward end,  
I bid them that did love their country's good  
Cry, " God save Richard, England's royal king !"  
*Glo.* And did they so ?

*Buck.* No, so God help me, they spake not a word;  
But, like dumb statuas<sup>(32)</sup> or breathing stones,  
Star'd each on other, and look'd deadly pale.  
Which when I saw, I reprehended them;  
And ask'd the mayor what meant this wilful silence:  
His answer was,—the people were not us'd  
To be spoke to but by the recorder.  
Then he was urg'd to tell my tale again,—  
“Thus saith the duke, thus hath the duke inferr'd;”  
But nothing spoke in warrant from himself.  
When he had done, some followers of mine own,  
At lower end of the hall, hurl'd up their caps,  
And some ten voices cried, “God save King Richard!”  
And thus I took the vantage of those few,—  
“Thanks, gentle citizens and friends,” quoth I;  
“This general applause and cheerful shout  
Argues your wisdom and your love to Richard;”  
And even here brake off, and came away.

*Glo.* What tongueless blocks were they! would they not  
speak?

Will not the mayor, then, and his brethren, come?

*Buck.* The mayor is here at hand. Intend some fear;  
Be not you spoke with, but by mighty suit:  
And look you get a prayer-book in your hand,  
And stand between two churchmen, good my lord;  
For on that ground I'll make a holy descant:  
And be not easily won to our requests;  
Play the maid's part,—still answer nay, and take it.

*Glo.* I go; and if you plead as well for them  
As I can say nay to thee for myself,  
No doubt we bring it to a happy issue.

*Buck.* Go, go, up to the leads; the lord mayor knocks.

[*Exit Gloster.*]

*Enter the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Citizens.*

Welcome, my lord: I dance attendance here;  
I think the duke will not be spoke withal.

*Enter, from the Castle, CATESBY.*

Now, Catesby,—what says your lord to my request?

*Cate.* He doth entreat your grace, my noble lord,  
To visit him to-morrow or next day :  
He is within, with two right-reverend fathers,  
Divinely bent to meditation ;  
And in no worldly suit would he be mov'd,  
To draw him from his holy exercise.

*Buck.* Return, good Catesby, to the gracious duke ;  
Tell him, myself, the mayor and aldermen,  
In deep designs, in matter of great moment,  
No less importing than our general good,  
Are come to have some conference with his grace.

*Cate.* I'll signify so much unto him straight. *[Exit.]*

*Buck.* Ah, ha, my lord, this prince is not an Edward !  
He is not lolling <sup>(33)</sup> on a lewd day-bed,  
But on his knees at meditation ;  
Not dallying with a brace of courtezans,  
But meditating with two deep divines ;  
Not sleeping, to engross his idle body,  
But praying, to enrich his watchful soul :  
Happy were England, would this virtuous prince  
Take on his grace the sovereignty thereof :  
But, sure, <sup>(34)</sup> I fear, we shall not win him to it.

*May.* Marry, God defend his grace should say us nay !

*Buck.* I fear he will. Here Catesby comes again.

*Re-enter CATESBY.*

Now, Catesby, what says his grace ?

*Cate.* He wonders to what end you have assembled  
Such troops of citizens to come to him :  
His grace not being warn'd thereof before,  
He fears, my lord, you mean no good to him.

*Buck.* Sorry I am my noble cousin should  
Suspect me, that I mean no good to him :  
By heaven, we come to him in perfect love ;  
And so once more return and tell his grace. *[Exit Catesby.]*  
When holy and devout religious men  
Are at their beads, 'tis much to draw them thence,—  
So sweet is zealous contemplation.

*Enter GLOSTER, in a gallery above, between two Bishops.*

*CATESBY returns.*

*May.* See, where his grace stands 'tween two clergymen!

*Buck.* Two props of virtue for a Christian prince,  
To stay him from the fall of vanity :  
And, see, a book of prayer in his hand,—  
True ornament<sup>(35)</sup> to know a holy man.—  
Famous Plantagenet, most gracious prince,  
Lend favourable ear to our requests;  
And pardon us the interruption  
Of thy devotion and right Christian zeal.

*Glo.* My lord, there needs no such apology :  
I rather do beseech you pardon me,  
Who, earnest in the service of my God,  
Deferr'd the visitation of my friends.  
But, leaving this, what is your grace's pleasure?

*Buck.* Even that, I hope, which pleaseth God above,  
And all good men of this ungovern'd isle.

*Glo.* I do suspect I have done some offence  
That seems disgracious in the city's eye;  
And that you come to reprehend my ignorance.

*Buck.* You have, my lord: would it might please your  
grace,  
On our entreaties, to amend your fault!

*Glo.* Else wherefore breathe I in a Christian land?

*Buck.* Know, then, it is your fault that you resign  
The supreme seat, the throne majestic,  
The scepter'd office of your ancestors,  
Your state of fortune and your due of birth,  
The lineal glory of your royal house,  
To the corruption of a blemish'd stock:  
Whiles, in the mildness of your sleepy thoughts  
(Which here we waken to our country's good,)  
This noble isle doth want her proper limbs;  
Her face defac'd with scars of infamy,  
Her royal stock graft with ignoble plants,  
And almost shoulder'd in the swallowing gulf  
Of dark forgetfulness and deep oblivion.

Which to recure, we heartily solicit  
Your gracious self to take on you the charge  
And kingly government of this your land ;—  
Not as protector, steward, substitute,  
Or lowly factor for another's gain ;  
But as successively, from blood to blood,  
Your right of birth, your empery, your own.  
For this, consorted with the citizens  
Your very worshipful and loving friends,  
And by their vehement instigation,  
In this just suit come I to move your grace.

*Glo.* I cannot tell, if to depart in silence,  
Or bitterly to speak in your reproof,  
Best fitteth my degree or your condition :  
If, not to answer,—you might haply think  
Tongue-tied ambition, not replying, yielded  
To bear the golden yoke of sovereignty,  
Which fondly you would here impose on me ;  
If to reprove you for this suit of yours,  
So season'd with your faithful love to me,  
Then, on the other side, I check'd my friends.  
Therefore,—to speak, and to avoid the first,  
And then, in speaking, not to incur the last,—  
Definitively thus I answer you.  
Your love deserves my thanks ; but my desert  
Unmeritable shuns your high request.  
First, if all obstacles were cut away,  
And that my path were even to the crown,  
As the ripe revenue and due of birth ;  
Yet so much is my poverty of spirit,  
So mighty and so many my defects,  
That I would rather hide me from my greatness,—  
Being a bark to brook no mighty sea,—  
Than in my greatness covet to be hid,  
And in the vapour of my glory smother'd.  
But, God be thank'd, there is no need of me  
(And much I need to help you, were there need) ;  
The royal tree hath left us royal fruit,  
Which, mellow'd by the stealing hours of time,

Will well become the seat of majesty,  
And make, no doubt, us happy by his reign.  
On him I lay that you would lay on me,—  
The right and fortune of his happy stars;  
Which God defend that I should wring from him!

*Buck.* My lord, this argues conscience in your grace;  
But the respects thereof are nice and trivial,  
All circumstances well considered.  
You say that Edward is your brother's son:  
So say we too, but not by Edward's wife;  
For first was he contract to Lady Lucy,—  
Your mother lives a witness to his vow,—  
And afterward by substitute betroth'd  
To Bona, sister to the King of France.  
These both put off, a poor petitioner,  
A care-craz'd mother to a many sons,  
A beauty-waning and distress'd widow,  
Even in the afternoon of her best days,  
Made prize and purchase of his wanton eye,  
Seduc'd the pitch and height of his degree  
To base declension and loath'd bigamy:  
By her, in his unlawful bed, he got  
This Edward, whom our manners call the prince.  
More bitterly could I expostulate,  
Save that, for reverence to some alive,  
I give a sparing limit to my tongue.  
Then, good my lord, take to your royal self  
This proffer'd benefit of dignity;  
If not to bless us and the land withal,  
Yet to draw forth your noble ancestry  
From the corruption of abusing time,  
Unto a lineal true-derived course.

*May.* Do, good my lord; your citizens entreat you.

*Buck.* Refuse not, mighty lord, this proffer'd love.

*Cate.* O, make them joyful, grant their lawful suit!

*Glo.* Alas, why would you heap those cares on me?

I am unfit for state and majesty:—

I do beseech you, take it not amiss;

I cannot nor I will not yield to you.



*Buck.* If you refuse it,—as, in love and zeal,  
Loth to depose the child, your brother's son;  
As well we know your tenderness of heart,  
And gentle, kind, effeminate remorse,  
Which we have noted in you to your kindred,  
And egally indeed to all estates,—  
Yet know, whêr you accept our suit or no,  
Your brother's son shall never reign our king;  
But we will plant some other in the throne,  
To the disgrace and downfall of your house:  
And in this resolution here we leave you.—  
Come, citizens, we will entreat no more.

*[Exit Buckingham; the Mayor, Aldermen, and  
Citizens retiring.]*

*Cate.* Call them again, sweet prince, accept their suit:  
If you deny them, all the land will rue it.

*Glo.* Will you enforce me to a world of cares?  
Call them again. *[Catesby goes to the Mayor, &c., and then  
exit.]* I am not made of stone,<sup>(30)</sup>  
But penetrable to your kind entreaties,  
Albeit against my conscience and my soul.

*Re-enter BUCKINGHAM and CATESBY; the Mayor, &c. coming forward.*

Cousin of Buckingham,—and sage, grave men,—  
Since you will buckle fortune on my back,  
To bear her burden, whêr I will or no,  
I must have patience to endure the load:  
But if black scandal or foul-fac'd reproach  
Attend the sequel of your imposition,  
Your mere enforcement shall acquittance me  
From all the impure blots and stains thereof;  
For God he knows, and you may partly sec,  
How far I am from the desire of this.

*May.* God bless your grace! we see it, and will say it.

*Glo.* In saying so, you shall but say the truth.

*Buck.* Then I salute you with this royal title,—  
Long live King Richard, England's worthy king!

*All.* Amen.

*Buck.* To-morrow may it please you to be crown'd?

*Glo.* Even when you please, for you will have it so.

*Buck.* To-morrow, then, we will attend your grace.  
And so, most joyfully, we take our leave.

*Glo.* Come, let us to our holy work again.—

[*To the Bishops.*

Farewell, my cousin ;—farewell, gentle friends. [*Exeunt.*

---

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I. *London. Before the Tower.*

*Enter, on one side, Queen ELIZABETH, Duchess of YORK, and Marquis of DORSET ; on the other, ANNE Duchess of GLOSTER, leading Lady MARGARET PLANTAGENET, CLARENCE'S young Daughter.*

*Duch.* Who meets us here ?—my niece Plantagenet  
Led in the hand of her kind aunt of Gloster ?

Now, for my life, she's wand'ring to the Tower,  
On pure heart's love, to greet the tender princes.—(37)  
Daughter, well met.

*Anne.* God give your graces both  
A happy and a joyful time of day !

*Q. Eliz.* As much to you, good sister ! Whither away ?

*Anne.* No further than the Tower ; and, as I guess,  
Upon the like devotion as yourselves,  
To gratulate the gentle princes there.

*Q. Eliz.* Kind sister, thanks : we'll enter all together :—  
And, in good time, here the lieutenant comes.

*Enter BRAKENBURY.*

Master lieutenant, pray you, by your leave,  
How doth the prince, and my young son of York ?

*Brak.* Right well, dear madam. By your patience,  
I may not suffer you to visit them ;  
The king hath strictly charg'd the contrary.

*Q. Eliz.* The king ! who's that ?

*Brak.* I mean the lord protector,

*Q. Eliz.* The Lord protect him from that kingly title !

Hath he set bounds between their love and me ?

I am their mother ; who shall bar me from them ?

*Duch.* I am their father's mother ; I will see them.

*Anne.* Their aunt I am in law, in love their mother :  
Then bring me to their sights ; I'll bear thy blame,  
And take thy office from thee, on my peril.

*Brak.* No, madam, no,—I may not leave it so :  
I am bound by oath, and therefore pardon me. [Exit.]

*Enter STANLEY.*

*Stan.* Let me but meet you, ladies, one hour hence,  
And I'll salute your grace of York as mother,  
And reverend looker-on, of two fair queens.—  
Come, madam, you must straight to Westminster,  
[To the Duchess of Gloster.]

There to be crownèd Richard's royal queen.

*Q. Eliz.* Ah, cut my lace asunder,  
That my pent heart may have some scope to beat,  
Or else I swoon with this dead-killing news !

*Anne.* Despiteful tidings ! O unpleasing news !

*Dor.* Be of good cheer : mother, how fares your grace ?

*Q. Eliz.* O Dorset, speak not to me, get thee gone !  
Death and destruction dog thee at the heels ;  
Thy mother's name is ommons to children.  
If thou wilt outstrip death, go cross the seas,  
And live with Richmond, from the reach of hell :  
Go, hie thee, hie thee from this slaughter-house,  
Lest thou increase the number of the dead ;  
And make me die the thrall of Margaret's curse,—  
Nor mother, wife, nor England's counted queen.

*Stan.* Full of wise care is this your counsel, madam.—  
Take all the swift advantage of the hours ;  
You shall have letters from me to my son  
In your behalf, to meet you on the way :  
Be not ta'en tardy by unwise delay.

*Duch.* O ill-dispersing wind of misery !—  
O my accursèd womb, the bed of death !  
A cockatrice hast thou hatch'd to the world,  
Whose unavoided eye is murderous.

*Stan.* Come, madam, come; I in all haste was sent.

*Anne.* And I with all unwillingness will go.—

O, would to God that the inclusive verge  
Of golden metal that must round my brow  
Were red-hot steel, to sear me to the brain!  
Anointed let me be with deadly venom;  
And die, ere men can say, God save the queen!

*Q. Eliz.* Go, go, poor soul, I envy not thy glory;  
To feed my humour, wish thyself no harm.

*Anne.* No, why?—When he that is my husband now  
Came to me, as I follow'd Henry's corse;  
When scarce the blood was well wash'd from his hands  
Which issu'd from my other angel husband,  
And that dead saint which then I weeping follow'd;  
O, when, I say, I look'd on Richard's face,  
This was my wish,—“Be thou,” quoth I, “accurs'd,  
For making me, so young, so old a widow!  
And, when thou wedd'st, let sorrow haunt thy bed;  
And be thy wife (if any be so mad)  
More miserable by the life<sup>(38)</sup> of thee  
Than thou hast made me by my dear lord's death!”  
Lo, ere I can repeat this curse again,  
Within so small a time, my woman's heart  
Grossly grew captive to his honey words,  
And prov'd the subject of mine own soul's curse,—  
Which hitherto hath held mine eyes from rest;  
For never yet one hour in his bed  
Did I enjoy the golden dew of sleep,  
But with his timorous dreams was still awak'd.  
Besides, he hates me for my father Warwick;  
And will, no doubt, shortly be rid of me.

*Q. Eliz.* Poor heart, adieu! I pity thy complaining.

*Anne.* No more than with my soul I mourn for yours.

*Q. Eliz.*<sup>(39)</sup> Farewell, thou woful welcomer of glory!

*Anne.* Adieu, poor soul, that tak'st thy leave of it!

*Duch.* Go thou to Richmond, and good fortune guide  
thee!— [To Dorset.

Go thou to Richard, and good angels tend thee!—

[To Anne.

Go thou to sanctuary, and good thoughts possess thee!—

[*To Queen Elizabeth.*

I to my grave, where peace and rest lie with me!

Eighty odd years of sorrow have I seen,

And each hour's joy wreck'd with a week of teen.

*Q. Eliz.* Stay yet, look back with me unto the Tower.—

Pity, you ancient stones, those tender babes,

Whom envy hath immur'd within your walls!

Rough cradle for such little pretty ones!

Rude ragged nurse, old sullen playfellow

For tender princes, use my babies well!

So foolish sorrow bids<sup>(40)</sup> your stones farewell. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II. *The same. A room of state in the palace.*

*Senet.* RICHARD, as king, upon his throne; BUCKINGHAM,

CATESBY, a page, and others.

*K. Rich.* Stand all apart.—Cousin of Buckingham,—

*Buck.* My gracious sovereign?

*K. Rich.* Give me thy hand. Thus high, by thy advice

And thy assistance, is King Richard seated:—

But shall we wear these glories for a day?

Or shall they last, and we rejoice in them?

*Buck.* Still live they, and for ever let them last!

*K. Rich.* Ah, Buckingham, now do I play the touch,

To try if thou be current gold indeed:—

Young Edward lives;—think now what I would speak.

*Buck.* Say on, my loving lord.

*K. Rich.* Why, Buckingham, I say, I would be king.

*Buck.* Why, so you are, my thrice-renownèd liege.

*K. Rich.* Ha! am I king? 'tis so:—but Edward lives.

*Buck.* True, noble prince.

*K. Rich.*

O bitter consequence,

That Edward still should live,—true, noble prince!—

Cousin, thou wast not wont to be so dull:—

Shall I be plain?—I wish the bastards dead;

And I would have it suddenly perform'd.

What say'st thou now? speak suddenly, be brief.

*Buck.* Your grace may do your pleasure.

*K. Rich.* Tut, tut, thou art all ice, thy kindness freezes:  
Say, have I thy consent that they shall die?

*Buck.* Give me some little breath, some pause, dear lord,  
Before I positively speak in this:  
I will resolve you herein presently. [*Exit.*

*Cate.* The king is angry: see, he gnaws his lip.  
[*Aside to another.*

*K. Rich.* I will converse with iron-witted fools  
[*Descends from his throne.*

And unrespective boys: none are for me  
That look into me with considerate eyes:—  
High-reaching Buckingham grows circumspect.—  
Boy!—

*Page.* My lord?

*K. Rich.* Know'st thou not any whom corrupting gold  
Would tempt unto a close exploit of death?

*Page.* I know a discontented gentleman,  
Whose humble means match not his haughty spirit:  
Gold were as good as twenty orators,  
And will, no doubt, tempt him to any thing.

*K. Rich.* What is his name?

*Page.* His name, my lord, is Tyrrel.

*K. Rich.* I partly know the man: go, call him hither,  
boy. [*Exit Page.*

The deep-revolving witty Buckingham  
No more shall be the neighbour to my counsels:  
Hath he so long held out with me untir'd,  
And stops he now for breath?—well, be it so.

*Enter STANLEY.*

How now, Lord Stanley! what's the news?

*Stan.* Know, my loving lord,  
The Marquis Dorset, as I hear, is fled  
To Richmond, in the parts where he abides.

*K. Rich.* Come hither, Catesby:—rumour it abroad  
That Anne, my wife, is very grievous sick;  
I will take order for her keeping close:  
Inquire me out some mean poor gentleman,  
Whom I will marry straight to Clarence' daughter;—

The boy is foolish, and I fear not him,—  
 Look, how thou dream'st!—I say again, give out  
 That Anne my queen is sick, and like to die:  
 About it; for it stands me much upon,  
 To stop all hopes whose growth may damage me.

[*Exit Catesby.*

I must be married to my brother's daughter,  
 Or else my kingdom stands on brittle glass:—  
 Murder her brothers, and then marry her!  
 Uncertain way of gain! But I am in  
 So far in blood, that sin will pluck on sin:  
 Tear-falling pity dwells not in this eye.

*Re-enter Page, with TYRREL.*

Is thy name Tyrrel?

*Tyr.* James Tyrrel, and your most obedient subject.

*K. Rich.* Art thou, indeed?

*Tyr.* Prove me, my gracious lord.

*K. Rich.* Dar'st thou resolve to kill a friend of mine?

*Tyr.* Please you;

But I had rather kill two enemies.

*K. Rich.* Why, then thou hast it: two deep enemies,  
 Foes to my rest, and my sweet sleep's disturbers,  
 Are they that I would have thee deal upon:—  
 Tyrrel, I mean those bastards in the Tower.

*Tyr.* Let me have open means to come to them,  
 And soon I'll rid you from the fear of them.

*K. Rich.* Thou sing'st sweet music. Hark, come hither,  
 Tyrrel:

Go, by this token:—rise, and lend thine ear: [ *Whispers.*  
 There is no more but so:—say it is done,  
 And I will love thee, and prefer thee for it.

*Tyr.* I will dispatch it straight. [ *Exit.*

*Re-enter BUCKINGHAM.*

*Buck.* My lord, I have consider'd in my mind  
 The late demand that you did sound me in.

*K. Rich.* Well, let that rest. Dorset is fled to Richmond.

*Buck.* I hear the news, my lord.

*K. Rich.* Stanley, he is your wife's son:—well, look to it.

*Buck.* My lord, I claim the gift, my due by promise,  
For which your honour and your faith is pawn'd;  
The earldom of Hereford, and the movables,  
Which you have promisèd I shall possess.

*K. Rich.* Stanley, look to your wife: if she convey  
Letters to Richmond, you shall answer it.

*Buck.* What says your highness to my just request?

*K. Rich.* I do remember me,—Henry the sixth  
Did prophesy that Richmond should be king,  
When Richmond was a little pceevish boy.  
A king!—perhaps—

*Buck.* My lord,—

*K. Rich.* How chance the prophot could not at that time  
Have told me, I being by, that I should kill him?

*Buck.* My lord, your promise for the earldom,—

*K. Rich.* Richmond!—When last I was at Exeter,  
The mayor in courtesy show'd me the castle,  
And call'd it Rouge-mont: at which name I started,  
Because a bard of Ireland told me once,  
I should not live long after I saw Richmond.

*Buck.* My lord,—

*K. Rich.* Ay, what's o'clock?

*Buck.* I am thus bold to put your grace in mind  
Of what you promis'd me.

*K. Rich.* Well, but what's o'clock?

*Buck.* Upon the stroke of ten.

*K. Rich.* Well, let it strike.

*Buck.* Why let it strike?

*K. Rich.* Because that, like a Jack, thou keep'st the  
stroke

Belwixt thy begging and my meditation.

I am not in the giving vein to-day.

*Buck.* Why, then resolve me whether you will or no.

*K. Rich.* Thou troublest me; I am not in the vein.

[*Exeunt King Richard and train.*]

*Buck.* And is it thus? repays he my deep service  
With such contempt? made I him king for this?

O, let me think on Hastings, and be gone  
To Brecknock, while my fearful head is on!

[*Exit.*]



SCENE III. *Another room in the palace.**Enter TYRREL.*

*Tyr.* The tyrannous and bloody act is done,—  
The most arch deed of piteous massacre  
That ever yet this land was guilty of.  
Dighton and Forrest, whom I did suborn  
To do this piece of ruthless butchery,  
Albeit they were flesh'd villains, bloody dogs,  
Melting with tenderness and mild compassion,  
Wept like two children in their death's sad story.  
"O, thus," quoth Dighton, "lay the gentle babes,"—  
"Thus, thus," quoth Forrest, "girdling one another  
Within their alabaster innocent arms:  
Their lips were four red roses on a stalk,  
Which in their summer beauty kiss'd each other.  
A book of prayers on their pillow lay;  
Which once," quoth Forrest, "almost chang'd my mind;  
But, O, the devil,"—there the villain stopp'd;  
When Dighton thus told on,—"we smother'd  
The most replenish'd sweet work of nature,  
That from the prime creation e'er she fram'd."  
Hence both are gone with conscience and remorse  
They could not speak; and so I left them both,  
To hear this tidings to the bloody king:—  
And here he comes.

*Enter King RICHARD.*

All health, my sovereign lord!

*K. Rich.* Kind Tyrrel, am I happy in thy news?

*Tyr.* If to have done the thing you gave in charge  
Beget your happiness, be happy then,  
For it is done.

*K. Rich.* But didst thou see them dead?

*Tyr.* I did, my lord.

*K. Rich.* And buried, gentle Tyrrel?

*Tyr.* The chaplain of the Tower hath buried them;  
But where, to say the truth, I do not know.

*K. Rich.* Come to me, Tyrrel, soon, at after supper,

When thou shalt tell the process of their death.  
Meantime, but think how I may do thee good,  
And be inheritor of thy desire.  
Farewell till then.

*Tyr.* I humbly take my leave. [*Exit.*]

*K. Rich.* The son of Clarence have I pent up close;  
His daughter meanly have I match'd in marriage;  
The sons of Edward sleep in Abraham's bosom,  
And Anne my wife hath bid the world good night.  
Now, for I know the Bretagne Richmond aims  
At young Elizabeth, my brother's daughter,  
And, by that knot, looks proudly on the crown,  
To her go I, a jolly thriving wooer.

*Enter RATCLIFF.*

*Rat.* My lord,—

*K. Rich.* Good news or bad, that thou com'st in so  
bluntly?

*Rat.* Bad news, my lord: Morton is fled to Richmond;  
And Buckingham, back'd with the hardy Welshmen,  
Is in the field, and still his power increaseth.

*K. Rich.* Ely with Richmond troubles me more near  
Than Buckingham and his rash-levied strength.  
Come,—I have learn'd that fearful commenting  
Is leaden servitor to dull delay;  
Delay leads impotent and snail-pac'd beggary:  
Then fiery expedition be my wing,  
Jove's Mercury, and herald for a king!  
Go, muster men: my counsel is my shield;  
We must be brief, when traitors brave the field. [*Exeunt.*]

---

SCENE IV. *Before the palace.*

*Enter QUEEN MARGARET*

*Q. Mar.* So, now prosperity begins to mellow,  
And drop into the rotten mouth of death.  
Here in these confines slyly have I lurk'd,  
To watch the waning of mine enemies.

A dire induction am I witness to,  
 And will to France; hoping the consequence  
 Will prove as bitter, black, and tragical.—  
 Withdraw thee, wretched Margaret: who comes here?

[Retires.]

*Enter Queen ELIZABETH and the Duchess of York.*

*Q. Eliz.* Ah, my poor princes! ah, my tender babes!  
 My unblown flowers, new-appearing sweets!  
 If yet your gentle souls fly in the air,  
 And be not fix'd in doom perpetual,  
 Hover about me with your airy wings,  
 And hear your mother's lamentation!

*Q. Mar.* Hover about her; say, that right for right  
 Hath dimm'd your infant morn to aged night.

*Duch.* So many miseries have craz'd my voice,  
 That my woe-wearied tongue is still and mute.—  
 Edward Plantagenet, why art thou dead?

*Q. Mar.* Plantagenet doth quit Plantagenet,  
 Edward for Edward pays a dying debt.

*Q. Eliz.* Wilt thou, O God, fly from such gentle lambs,  
 And throw them in the entrails of the wolf?  
 When didst thou sleep, when such a deed was done?

*Q. Mar.* When holy Harry died, and my sweet son.

*Duch.* Dead life, blind sight, poor mortal living ghost,  
 Woe's scene, world's shame, grave's due by life usurp'd,  
 Brief abstract and record of tedious days,  
 Rest thy unrest on England's lawful earth,      [Sitting down.  
 Unlawfully made drunk with innocent blood!

*Q. Eliz.* Ah, that thou wouldst as soon afford a grave  
 As thou canst yield a melancholy seat!  
 Then would I hide my bones, not rest them here.  
 Ah, who hath any cause to mourn but we?

[Sitting down by her.]

*Q. Mar.* If ancient sorrow be most reverent,  
 Give mine the benefit of seniory,      [Coming forward.  
 And let my griefs frown on the upper hand.  
 If sorrow can admit society,      [Sitting down with them.  
 Tell o'er your woes again by viewing mine:—  
 I had an Edward, till a Richard kill'd him;

I had a Henry,<sup>(41)</sup> till a Richard kill'd him :  
Thou hadst an Edward, till a Richard kill'd him ;  
Thou hadst a Richard, till a Richard kill'd him.

*Duch.* I had a Richard too, and thou didst kill him ;  
I had a Rutland too, thou holp'st to kill him.

*Q. Mar.* Thou hadst a Clarence too, and Richard kill'd  
him.

From forth the kennel of thy womb hath crept  
A hell-hound that doth hunt us all to death :  
That dog, that had his teeth before his eyes,  
To worry lambs, and lap their gentle blood ;  
That foul defacer of God's handiwork ;  
That excellent grand tyrant of the earth,  
That reigns in gall'd eyes of weeping souls,—<sup>(42)</sup>  
Thy womb let loose, to chase us to our graves,—  
O upright, just, and true-disposing God,  
How do I thank thee, that this carnal cur  
Preys on the issue of his mother's body,  
And makes her pew-fellow with others' moan !

*Duch.* O Harry's wife, triumph not in my woes !  
God witness with me, I have wept for thine.

*Q. Mar.* Bear with me ; I am hungry for revenge,  
And now I cloy me with beholding it.  
Thy Edward he is dead, that kill'd my Edward ;  
Thy other Edward dead, to quit my Edward ;  
Young York he is but boot, because both they  
*Matah*<sup>(43)</sup> *not the high perfection of my lass.*  
Thy Clarence he is dead that stabb'd my Edward ;  
And the beholders of this frantic play,  
The adulterate Hastings, Rivers, Vaughan, Grey,  
Untimely smother'd in their dusky graves.  
Richard yet lives, hell's black intelligencer ;  
Only reserv'd their factor, to buy souls,  
And send them thither :—but at hand, at hand,  
Ensues his piteous and unpitied end :  
Earth gapes, hell burns, fiends roar, saints pray,  
To have him suddenly convey'd from hence.—  
Cancel his bond of life, dear God, I pray,  
That I may live to say, The dog is dead !

*Q. Eliz.* O, thou didst prophesy the time would come  
That I should wish for thee to help me curse  
That bottled spider, that foul bunch-back'd toad!

*Q. Mar.* I call'd thee then, vain flourish of my fortune;  
I call'd thee then, poor shadow, painted queen;  
The presentation of but what I was;  
The flattering index of a direful pageant;  
One heav'd a-high, to be hurl'd down below;  
A mother only mock'd with two fair babes;  
A dream of what thou wast; a garish flag,  
To be the aim of every dangerous shot;  
A sign of dignity, a breath, a bubble;  
A queen in jest, only to fill the scene.  
Where is thy husband now? where be thy brothers?  
Where be thy two sons? wherein dost thou joy?  
Who sues, and kneels, and says, God save the queen?  
Where be the bending peers that flatter'd thee?  
Where be the thronging troops that follow'd thee?  
Decline all this, and see what now thou art:  
For happy wife, a most distress'd widow;  
For joyful mother, one that wails the name;  
For one being su'd to, one that humbly sues;  
For queen, a very caitiff crown'd with care;  
For one<sup>(44)</sup> that scorn'd at me, now scorn'd of me;  
For one being fear'd of all, now fearing one;  
For one commanding all, obey'd of none.  
Thus hath the course of justice wheel'd about,  
And left thee but a very prey to time;  
Having no more but thought of what thou wast,  
To torture thee the more, being what thou art.  
Thou didst usurp my place, and dost thou not  
Usurp the just proportion of my sorrow?  
Now thy proud neck bears half my burden'd yoke;  
From which even here I slip my wearied head,  
And leave the burden of it all on thee.  
Farewell, York's wife, and queen of sad mischance:—  
These English woes shall make me smile in France.

*Q. Eliz.* O thou well-skill'd in curses, stay awhile,  
And teach me how to curse mine enemies!

*Q. Mar.* Forbear to sleep the night, and fast the day;  
 Compare dead happiness with living woe;  
 Think that thy babes were fairer than they were,  
 And he that slew them fouler than he is:  
 Bettering thy loss makes the bad-causer worse:  
 Revolving this will teach thee how to curse.

*Q. Eliz.* My words are dull; O, quicken them with  
 thine!

*Q. Mar.* Thy woes will make them sharp, and pierce like  
 mine. *[Exit.]*

*Duch.* Why should calamity be full of words?

*Q. Eliz.* Windy attorneys to their client woes,  
 Airy succeders of intestate joys,  
 Poor breathing orators of miseries!  
 Let them have scope: though what they do impart  
 Help nothing else, yet do they ease the heart.

*Duch.* If so, then be not tongue-tied: go with me,  
 And in the breath of bitter words let's smother  
 My damnèd son, that thy two sweet sons smother'd.

*[Drum within.]*

I hear his drum:—be copious in exclams.

*Enter King RICHARD and his train, marching.*

*K. Rich.* Who intercepts me in my expedition?

*Duch.* O, she that might have intercepted thee,  
 By strangling thee in her accursèd womb,  
 From all the slaughters, wretch, that thou hast done!

*Q. Eliz.* Hid'st thou that forehead with a golden crown,  
 Where should be branded, if that right were right,  
 The slaughter of the prince that ow'd that crown,  
 And the dire death of my poor sons and brothers?  
 Tell me, thou villain-slave, where are my children?

*Duch.* Thou toad, thou toad, where is thy brother Cla-  
 rence?

And little Ned Plantagenet, his son?

*Q. Eliz.* Where is the gentle Rivers, Vaughan, Grey?

*Duch.* Where is kind Hastings?

*K. Rich.* A flourish, trumpets! strike alarum, drums!  
 Let not the heavens hear these tell-tale women

Rail on the Lord's anointed: strike, I say!

[*Flourish. Alarums.*]

Either be patient, and entreat me fair,  
Or with the clamorous report of war  
Thus will I drown your exclamations.

*Duch.* Art thou my son?

*K. Rich.* Ay, I thank God, my father, and yourself.

*Duch.* Then patiently hear<sup>(45)</sup> my impatience.

*K. Rich.* Madam, I have a touch of your condition,  
That cannot brook the accent of reproof.

*Duch.* O, let me speak!

*K. Rich.* Do, then; but I'll not hear.

*Duch.* I will be mild and gentle in my words.

*K. Rich.* And brief, good mother; for I am in haste.

*Duch.* Art thou so hasty? I have stay'd for thee,  
God knows, in torment and in agony.

*K. Rich.* And came I not at last to comfort you?

*Duch.* No, by the holy rood, thou know'st it well,  
Thou can'st on earth to make the earth my hell.  
A grievous burden was thy birth to me;  
Tetchy and wayward was thy infancy;  
Thy school-days frightful, desperate, wild, and furious;  
Thy prime of manhood daring, bold, and venturous;  
Thy age confirm'd, proud, subtle, sly, and bloody,  
More mild, but yet more harmful, kind in hatred:  
What comfortable hour canst thou name,  
That ever grac'd me in thy company?

*K. Rich.* Faith, none, but Humphrey Hour, that call'd  
your grace  
To breakfast once forth of my company.  
If I be so disgracious in your eye,  
Let me march on, and not offend you, madam.—  
Strike up the drum.

*Duch.* I prithee, hear me speak.

*K. Rich.* You speak too bitterly.

*Duch.* Hear me a word,  
For I shall never speak to thee again.

*K. Rich.* So.

*Duch.* Either thou wilt die, by God's just ordinance,

Ere from this war thou turn a conqueror ;  
 Or I with grief and extreme age shall perish,  
 And never look upon thy face again.  
 Therefore take with thee my most heavy curse ;  
 Which, in the day of battle, tire thee more  
 Than all the complete armour that thou wear'st !  
 My prayers on the adverse party fight ;  
 And there the little souls of Edward's children  
 Whisper the spirits of thine enemies,  
 And promise them success and victory.  
 Bloody thou art, bloody will be thy end ;  
 Shame serves thy life, and doth thy death attend. [Exit.

*Q. Eliz.* Though far more cause, yet much less spirit to  
 curse

Abides in me ; I say amen to her. [Going.

*K. Rich.* Stay, madam ; I must talk a word with you.

*Q. Eliz.* I have no more sons of the royal blood  
 For thee to slaughter : for my daughters, Richard,—  
 They shall be praying nuns, not weeping queens ;  
 And therefore level not to hit their lives.

*K. Rich.* You have a daughter call'd Elizabeth,  
 Virtuous and fair, royal and gracious.

*Q. Eliz.* And must she die for this ? O, let her live,  
 And I'll corrupt her manners, stain her beauty ;  
 Slander myself as false to Edward's bed ;  
 Throw over her the veil of infamy :  
 So she may live unscarr'd of bleeding slaughter,  
 I will confess she was not Edward's daughter.

*K. Rich.* Wrong not her birth, she is of royal blood.

*Q. Eliz.* To save her life, I'll say she is not so.

*K. Rich.* Her life is safest only in her birth.

*Q. Eliz.* And only in that safety died her brothers.

*K. Rich.* Lo, at their births good stars were opposite.

*Q. Eliz.* No, to their lives bad friends were contrary.

*K. Rich.* All unavoids is the doom of destiny.

*Q. Eliz.* True, when avoided grace makes destiny :  
 My babes were destin'd to a fairer death,  
 If grace had bless'd thee with a fairer life.

*K. Rich.* You speak as if that I had slain my cousins.



*Q. Eliz.* Cousins, indeed ; and by their uncle cozen'd  
Of comfort, kingdom, kindred, freedom, life.  
Whose hand soever lanc'd their tender hearts,  
Thy head, all indirectly, gave direction :  
No doubt the murderous knife was dull and blunt  
Till it was whetted on thy stone-hard heart,  
To revel in the entrails of my lambs.  
But that still use of grief makes wild grief tame,  
My tongue should to thy ears not name my boys  
Till that my nails were anchor'd in thine eyes ;  
And I, in such a desperate bay of death,  
Like a poor bark, of sails and tackling reft,  
Rush all to pieces on thy rocky bosom.

*K. Rich.* Madam, so thrive I in my enterprise  
And dangerous success of bloody wars,  
As I intend more good to you and yours  
Than ever you or yours by me were harm'd !

*Q. Eliz.* What good is cover'd with the face of heaven,  
To be discover'd, that can do me good ?

*K. Rich.* The advancement of your children, gentle lady.

*Q. Eliz.* Up to some scaffold, there to lose their heads ?

*K. Rich.* No, to the dignity and height of honour,  
The high imperial type of this earth's glory.

*Q. Eliz.* Flatter my sorrows with report of it ;  
Tell me what state, what dignity, what honour,  
Canst thou demise to any child of mine ?

*K. Rich.* Even all I have ; ay, and myself and all,  
Will I withal endow a child of thine ;  
So in the Lethe of thy angry soul  
Thou drown the sad remembrance of those wrongs  
Which thou supposest I have done to thee.

*Q. Eliz.* Be brief, lest that the process of thy kindness  
Last longer telling than thy kindness' date.

*K. Rich.* Then know, that from my soul I love thy  
daughter.

*Q. Eliz.* My daughter's mother thinks it with her soul.

*K. Rich.* What do you think ?

*Q. Eliz.* That thou dost love my daughter from thy soul :  
So, from thy soul's love, didst thou love her brothers ;

And, from my heart's love, I do thank thee for it.

*K. Rich.* Be not so hasty to confound my meaning :  
I mean, that with my soul I love thy daughter,  
And do intend to make her Queen of England.

*Q. Eliz.* Well, then, who dost thou mean shall be her king?

*K. Rich.* Even he that makes her queen : who else should be?

*Q. Eliz.* What, thou?

*K. Rich.* I, even I : what think you of it, madam ? <sup>(46)</sup>

*Q. Eliz.* How canst thou woo her?

*K. Rich.* That I would learn of you,  
As one being best acquainted with her humour.

*Q. Eliz.* And wilt thou learn of me?

*K. Rich.* Madam, with all my heart.

*Q. Eliz.* Send to her, by the man that slew her brothers,  
A pair of bleeding hearts ; thereon engrave  
Edward and York ; then haply will she weep :  
Therefore present to her,—as sometime Margaret  
Did to thy father, steep'd in Rutland's blood,—  
A handkerchief ; which, say to her, did drain  
The purple sap from her sweet brothers' bodies, <sup>(47)</sup>  
And bid her wipe her weeping eyes withal.  
If this inducement move her not to love,  
Send her a letter of thy noble deeds ;  
Tell her thou mad'st away her uncle Clarence,  
Her uncle Rivers ; ay, and, for her sake,  
Mad'st quick conveyance with her good aunt Anne.

*K. Rich.* You mock me, madam ; this is not the way  
To win your daughter.

*Q. Eliz.* There is no other way ;  
Unless thou couldst put on some other shape,  
And not be Richard that hath done all this.

*K. Rich.* Say that I did all this for love of her?

*Q. Eliz.* Nay, then indeed she cannot choose but hate <sup>(48)</sup>  
thee,

Having bought love with such a bloody spoil.

*K. Rich.* Look, what is done cannot be now amended :  
Men shall deal unadvisedly sometimes,  
Which after-hours give leisure to repent.  
If I did take the kingdom from your sons,

To make amends, I'll give it to your daughter.  
If I have kill'd the issue of your womb,  
To quicken your increase, I will beget  
Mine issue of your blood upon your daughter :  
A grandam's name is little less in love  
Than is the doting title of a mother ;  
They are as children but one step below,  
Even of your mettle, of your very blood ;  
Of all one pain,—save for a night of groans  
Endur'd of her, for whom you bid like sorrow.  
Your children were vexation to your youth ;  
But mine shall be a comfort to your age.  
The loss you have is but a son being king,  
And by that loss your daughter is made queen.  
I cannot make you what amends I would,  
Therefore accept such kindness as I can.  
Dorset your son, that with a fearful soul  
Leads discontented steps in foreign soil,  
This fair alliance quickly shall call home  
To high promotions and great dignity :  
The king, that calls your beauteous daughter wife,  
Familiarly shall call thy Dorset brother ;  
Again shall you be mother to a king,  
And all the ruins of distressful times  
Repair'd with double riches of content.  
What ! we have many goodly days to see :  
'The liquid drops of tears that you have shed  
Shall come again, transform'd to orient pearl,  
Advantaging their loan<sup>(49)</sup> with interest  
Of ten-times-double gain of happiness.  
Go, then, my mother, to thy daughter go ;  
Make bold her bashful years with your experience ;  
Prepare her ears to hear a wooer's tale ;  
Put in her tender heart the aspiring flame  
Of golden sovereignty ; acquaint the princess  
With the sweet silent hours of marriage joys :  
And when this arm of mine hath chastis'd  
The petty rebel, dull-brain'd Buckingham,  
Bound with triumphant garlands will I come,

And lead thy daughter to a conqueror's bed ;  
To whom I will retail my conquest won,  
And she shall be sole victress, Cæsar's Cæsar.

*Q. Eliz.* What were I best to say ? her father's brother  
Would be her lord ? or shall I say, her uncle ?  
Or, he that slew her brothers and her uncles ?  
Under what title shall I woo for thee,  
That God, the law, my honour, and her love,  
Can make seem pleasing to her tender years ?

*K. Rich.* Infer fair England's peace by this alliance.

*Q. Eliz.* Which she shall purchase with still-lasting war.

*K. Rich.* Tell her, the king, that may command, entreats.

*Q. Eliz.* That at her hands which the king's King forbids.

*K. Rich.* Say, she shall be a high and mighty queen.

*Q. Eliz.* To wait the title, as her mother doth.

*K. Rich.* Say, I will love her everlastingly.

*Q. Eliz.* But how long shall that title "ever" last ?

*K. Rich.* Sweetly in force unto her fair life's end.

*Q. Eliz.* But how long fairly shall her sweet life last ?

*K. Rich.* As long as heaven and nature lengthens it.

*Q. Eliz.* As long as hell and Richard likes of it.

*K. Rich.* Say, I, her sovereign, am her subject low.

*Q. Eliz.* But she, your subject, loathes such sovereignty.

*K. Rich.* Be eloquent in my behalf to her.

*Q. Eliz.* An honest tale speeds best being plainly told.

*K. Rich.* Then, plainly to her tell my loving tale.

*Q. Eliz.* Plain and not honest is too harsh a style.

*K. Rich.* Your reasons are too shallow and too quick.

*Q. Eliz.* O, no, my reasons are too deep and dead ;—

'Too deep and dead, poor infants, in their graves.

*K. Rich.* Harp not on that string, madam ; that is past.

*Q. Eliz.* Harp on it still shall I till heart-strings break.

*K. Rich.* Now, by my George, my garter, and my crown,—

*Q. Eliz.* Profan'd, dishonour'd, and the third usurp'd.

*K. Rich.* I swear,—

*Q. Eliz.* By nothing ; for this is no oath :

'Thy George, profan'd, hath lost his holy honour ;

'Thy garter, blemish'd, pawn'd his knightly virtue ;

'Thy crown, usurp'd, disgrac'd his kingly glory.

If something thou wouldst swear to be believ'd,  
Swear, then, by something that thou hast not wrong'd.

*K. Rich.* Now, by the world,—

*Q. Eliz.* 'Tis full of thy foul wrongs.

*K. Rich.* My father's death,—

*Q. Eliz.* Thy life hath that dishonour'd.

*K. Rich.* Then, by myself,—

*Q. Eliz.* Thyself is self-misus'd.

*K. Rich.* Why, then, by God,—

*Q. Eliz.* God's wrong is most of all.

If thou hadst fear'd to break an oath by him,  
The unity the king thy brother made  
Had not been broken, nor my brother slain:<sup>(50)</sup>  
If thou hadst fear'd to break an oath by him,  
The imperial metal, circling now thy head,  
Had grac'd the tender temples of my child;  
And both the princes had been breathing here,  
Which now, two tender bedfellows for dust,  
Thy broken faith hath made a prey for worms.  
What canst thou swear by now?

*K. Rich.* The time to come.

*Q. Eliz.* That thou hast wrong'd in the time o'erpast;  
For I myself have many tears to wash  
Hereafter time, for time past wrong'd by thee.  
The children live, whose parents thou hast slaughter'd,  
Ungovern'd youth, to wail it in their age;  
The parents live, whose children thou hast butcher'd,  
Old barren plants, to wail it with their age.  
Swear not by time to come; for that thou hast  
Misus'd ere us'd, by times ill-us'd o'erpast.

*K. Rich.* As I intend to prosper, and repent!  
So thrive I in my dangerous attempt  
Of hostile arms! myself myself confound!  
Heaven and fortune bar me happy hours!  
Day, yield me not thy light; nor, night, thy rest!  
Be opposite all planets of good luck  
To my proceeding!—if, with pure heart's love,  
Immaculate devotion, holy thoughts,  
I tender not thy beauteous princely daughter!

In her consists my happiness and thine ;  
Without her, follows to myself and thee,  
Herself, the land, and many a Christian soul,  
Death, desolation, ruin, and decay :  
It cannot be avoided but by this ;  
It will not be avoided but by this.  
Therefore, dear mother (I must call you so),  
Be the attorney of my love to her :  
Plead what I will be, not what I have been ;  
Not my deserts, but what I will deserve :  
Urge the necessity and state of times,  
And be not peevish found in great designs.

*Q. Eliz.* Shall I be tempted of the devil thus ?

*K. Rich.* Ay, if the devil tempt you to do good.

*Q. Eliz.* Shall I forget myself to be myself ?

*K. Rich.* Ay, if your self's remembrance wrong yourself.

*Q. Eliz.* But thou didst kill my children.

*K. Rich.* But in your daughter's womb I bury them :

Where, in that nest of spicery, they shall breed  
Selves of themselves, to your recomforture.

*Q. Eliz.* Shall I go win my daughter to thy will ?

*K. Rich.* And be a happy mother by the deed.

*Q. Eliz.* I go.—Write to me very shortly,  
And you shall understand from me her mind.

*K. Rich.* Bear her my true love's kiss ; and so, farewell.

[*Kissing her. Exit Queen Elizabeth.*]

Relenting fool, and shallow, changing woman !

*Enter RATCLIFF ; CATESBY following.*

How now ! what news ?

*Rat.* Most mighty sovereign, on the western coast  
Rideth a puissant navy ; to the shore  
Throng many doubtful hollow-hearted friends,  
Unarm'd, and unresolv'd to beat them back :  
'Tis thought that Richmond is their admiral ;  
And there they hull, expecting but the aid  
Of Buckingham to welcome them ashore.

*K. Rich.* Some light-foot friend post to the Duke of  
Norfolk :—

Ratcliff, thyself,—or Catesby ; where is he ?

*Cate.* Here, my good lord.

*K. Rich.* Catesby, fly to the duke.

*Cate.* I will, my lord, with all convenient haste.

*K. Rich.* Ratcliff,<sup>(61)</sup> come hither :—post to Salisbury :  
When thou com'st thither,—Dull, unmindful villain,

[*To Catesby.*

Why stay'st thou here, and go'st not to the duke ?

*Cate.* First, mighty liege, tell me your highness' pleasure,  
What from your grace I shall deliver to him.

*K. Rich.* O, true, good Catesby :—bid him levy straight  
The greatest strength and power he can make,  
And meet me suddenly at Salisbury.

*Cate.* I go. [*Exit.*

*Rat.* What, may it please you, shall I do at Salisbury ?

*K. Rich.* Why, what wouldst thou do there before I go ?

*Rat.* Your highness told me I should post before.

*Enter STANLEY.*

*K. Rich.* My mind is chang'd.—Stanley, what news with  
you ?

*Stan.* None good, my liege, to please you with the hear-  
ing ;

Nor none so bad, but well may be reported.

*K. Rich.* Hoyday, a riddle ! neither good nor bad !  
What need'st thou run so many miles about,  
When thou mayst tell thy tale the nearest way ?  
Once more, what news ?

*Stan.* Richmond is on the seas.

*K. Rich.* There let him sink, and be the seas on him !  
White-liver'd runagate, what doth he there ?

*Stan.* I know not, mighty sovereign, but by guess.

*K. Rich.* Well, as you guess ?

*Stan.* Stirr'd up by Dorset, Buckingham, and Morton,  
He makes for England, here, to claim the crown.

*K. Rich.* Is the chair empty ? is the sword unsway'd ?  
Is the king dead ? the empire unpossess'd ?  
What heir of York is there alive but we ?  
And who is England's king but great York's heir ?

Then, tell me, what makes he upon the seas?

*Stan.* Unless for that, my liege, I cannot guess.<sup>(52)</sup>

*K. Rich.* Unless for that he comes to be your liege,  
You cannot guess wherefore the Welshman comes.  
Thou wilt revolt, and fly to him, I fear.

*Stan.* No, mighty liege; therefore mistrust me not.

*K. Rich.* Where is thy power, then, to beat him back?  
Where be thy tenants and thy followers?  
Are they not now upon the western shore,  
Safe-conducting the rebels from their ships?

*Stan.* No, my good lord, my friends are in the north.

*K. Rich.* Cold friends to me: what do they in the  
north,

When they should serve their sovereign in the west?

*Stan.* They have not been commanded, mighty king:  
Pleaseth your majesty to give me leave,  
I'll muster up my friends, and meet your grace  
Where and what time your majesty shall please.

*K. Rich.* Ay, ay, thou wouldst be gone to join with  
Richmond:

But I'll not trust thee.

*Stan.* Most mighty sovereign,  
You have no cause to hold my friendship doubtful:  
I never was nor never will be false.

*K. Rich.* Go, then, and muster men. But leave behind  
Your son, George Stanley: look your heart be firm,  
Or else his head's assurance is but frail.

*Stan.* So deal with him as I prove true to you. *[Exit.]*

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* My gracious sovereign, now in Devonshire,  
As I by friends am well advertised,  
Sir Edward Courtney, and the haughty prelate  
Bishop of Exeter, his elder brother,  
With many more confederates, are in arms.

*Enter a second Messenger.*

*Sec. Mess.* In Kent, my liege, the Guildfords are in  
arms;



And every hour more competitors  
Flock to the rebels, and their power grows strong.

*Enter a third Messenger.*

*Third Mess.* My lord, the army of great Buckingham—

*K. Rich.* Out on ye, owls! nothing but songs of death?

*[He strikes him.]*

There, take thou that, till thou bring better news.

*Third Mess.* The news I have to tell your majesty  
Is, that by sudden floods and fall of waters,  
Buckingham's army is dispers'd and scatter'd;  
And he himself wander'd away alone,  
No man knows whither.

*K. Rich.* I cry thee mercy:  
'There is my purse to cure that blow of thine.  
Hath any well-advisèd friend proclaim'd  
Reward to him that brings the traitor in?

*Third Mess.* Such proclamation hath been made, my lord.

*Enter a fourth Messenger.*

*Fourth Mess.* Sir Thomas Lovel and Lord Marquis  
Dorset,

'Tis said, my liege, in Yorkshire are in arms.  
But this good comfort bring I to your highness,—  
The Bretagne navy is dispers'd by tempest:  
Richmond, in Dorsetshire, sent out a boat  
Unto the shore, to ask those on the banks  
If they were his assistants, yea or no;  
Who answer'd him, they came from Buckingham  
Upon his party: he, mistrusting them,  
Hois'd sail, and made his course again for Bretagne.

*K. Rich.* March on, march on, since we are up in arms;  
If not to fight with foreign enemies,  
Yet to beat down these rebels here at home.

*Re-enter CATESBY.*

*Cate.* My liege, the Duke of Buckingham is taken,—  
That is the best news: that the Earl of Richmond  
Is with a mighty power landed at Milford,  
Is colder news, but yet they must be told.

*K. Rich.* Away towards Salisbury ! while we reason here,  
A royal battle might be won and lost :—  
Some one take order Buckingham be brought  
To Salisbury ; the rest march on with me. [*Flourish. Exeunt.*]

---

SCENE V. *A room in Lord STANLEY's house.*

*Enter STANLEY and Sir CHRISTOPHER URSWICK.*

*Stan.* Sir Christopher, tell Richmond this from me :—  
That, in the sty of the most deadly boar,  
My son George Stanley is frank'd up in hold :  
If I revolt, off goes young George's head ;  
The fear of that holds off my present aid.  
So, get thee gone : commend me to thy lord ;  
Withal say that the queen hath heartily consented  
He should espouse Elizabeth her daughter.  
But, tell me, where is princely Richmond now ?

*Chris.* At Pembroke, or at Ha'rford-west, in Wales.

*Stan.* What men of name resort to him ?

*Chris.* Sir Walter Herbert, a renowned soldier ;  
Sir Gilbert Talbot, Sir William Stanley ;  
Oxford, redoubted Pembroke, Sir James Blunt,  
And Rice ap Thomas, with a valiant crew ;  
And many other of great name and worth :  
And towards London do they bend their power,  
If by the way they be not fought withal.

*Stan.* Well, bid thee to thy lord ; I kiss his hand :  
My letter will resolve him of my mind.  
Farewell. [*Exeunt.*]

---

ACT V.

SCENE I. *Salisbury. An open place.*

*Enter the Sheriff, and Guard, with BUCKINGHAM, led to execution.*

*Buck.* Will not King Richard let me speak with him ?

*Sher.* No, my good lord ; therefore be patient.

*Buck.* Hastings, and Edward's children, Grey, and Rivers,  
Holy King Henry, and thy fair son Edward,  
Vaughan, and all that have miscarrièd  
By underhand corrupted foul injustice,—  
If that your moody discontented souls  
Do through the clouds behold this present hour,  
Even for revenge mock my destruction!—  
This is All-Souls' day, fellows,<sup>(63)</sup> is it not?

*Sher.* It is, my lord.

*Buck.* Why, then All-Souls' day is my body's doomsday.  
This is the day which, in King Edward's time,  
I wish'd might fall on me, when I was found  
False to his children or his wife's allies;  
This is the day wherein I wish'd to fall  
By the false faith of him whom most I trusted;  
This, this All-Souls' day to my fearful soul  
Is the determin'd respite of my wrongs:  
That high All-scer which I dallied with  
Hath turn'd my feign'd prayer on my head,  
And given in earnest what I begg'd in jest.  
Thus doth he force the swords of wicked men  
To turn their own points on their masters' bosoms:  
Thus Margaret's curse falls heavy on my neck,—  
"When he," quoth she, "shall split thy heart with sorrow,  
Remember Margaret was a prophetess."—  
Come, sirs, convey me to the block of shame;  
Wrong hath but wrong, and blame the due of blame.

[*Exeunt.*]

---

SCENE II. *Plain near Tamworth.*

*Enter, with drum and colours, RICHMOND, OXFORD, SIR JAMES BLUNT, SIR WALTER HERBERT, and others, with forces, marching.*

*Richm.* Fellows in arms, and my most loving friends,  
Bruis'd underneath the yoke of tyranny,  
Thus far into the bowels of the land  
Have we march'd on without impediment;  
And here receive we from our father Stanley

Lines of fair comfort and encouragement.  
The wretched, bloody, and usurping boar,  
That spoil'd your summer fields and fruitful vines,  
Swills your warm blood like wash, and makes his trough  
In your embowell'd bosoms,—this foul swine  
Lies now even in the centre of this isle,  
Near to the town of Leicester, as we learn :  
From Tamworth thither is but one day's march.  
In God's name, cheerly on, courageous friends,  
To reap the harvest of perpetual peace  
By this one bloody trial of sharp war.

*Oxf.* Every man's conscience is a thousand swords,  
To fight against that bloody homicide.

*Herb.* I doubt not but his friends will turn to us.

*Blunt.* He hath no friends but what are friends for fear,  
Which in his dearest need will fly from him.

*Richm.* All for our vantage. Then, in God's name, march :  
True hope is swift, and flies with swallow's wings ;  
Kings it makes gods, and meaner creatures kings. [*Exeunt.*

---

SCENE III. *Bosworth Field.*

*Enter King RICHARD and forces, the Duke of NORFOLK, Earl of  
SURREY, and others.*

*K. Rich.* Here pitch our tents,<sup>(51)</sup> even here in Bosworth-  
field.—

My Lord of Surrey, why look you so sad ?

*Sur.* My heart is ten times lighter than my looks.

*K. Rich.* My Lord of Norfolk,—

*Nor.* Here, most gracious liege.

*K. Rich.* Norfolk, we must have knocks ; ha ! must we  
not ?

*Nor.* We must both give and take, my loving lord.

*K. Rich.* Up with my tent ! here will I lie to-night ;

[*Soldiers begin to set up the King's tent.*

But where to-morrow ? Well, all's one for that.—

Who hath descried the number of the traitors ?

*Nor.* Six or seven thousand is their utmost power.

*K. Rich.* Why, our battalia trebles that account:  
 Besides, the king's name is a tower of strength,  
 Which they upon the adverse faction want.—  
 Up with the tent!—Come, noble gentlemen,  
 Let us survey the vantage of the ground;—  
 Call for some men of sound direction:—  
 Let's lack no discipline, make no delay;  
 For, lords, to-morrow is a busy day.

[*Exeunt.*]

*Enter, on the other side of the field, RICHMOND, SIR WILLIAM BRANDON, OXFORD, and other Lords. Some of the Soldiers pitch RICHMOND'S tent.*

*Richm.* The weary sun hath made a golden set,  
 And, by the bright track of his fiery car,  
 Gives token of a goodly day to-morrow.—  
 Sir William Brandon, you shall bear my standard.—  
 Give me some ink and paper in my tent:  
 I'll draw the form and model of our battle,  
 Limit each leader to his several charge,  
 And part in just proportion our small power.—  
 My Lord of Oxford,—you, Sir William Brandon,—  
 And you, Sir Walter Herbert,—stay with me.—  
 The Earl of Pembroke keeps his regiment:—  
 Good Captain Blunt, bear my good-night to him,  
 And by the second hour in the morning  
 Desire the earl to see me in my tent:  
 Yet one thing more, good captain, do for me,—  
 Where is Lord Stanley quarter'd, do you know?

*Blunt.* Unless I have mista'en his colours much  
 (Which well I am assur'd I have not done),  
 His regiment lies half a mile at least  
 South from the mighty power of the king.

*Richm.* If without peril it be possible,  
 Sweet Blunt, make some good means to speak with him,  
 And give him from me this most needful note.

*Blunt.* Upon my life, my lord, I'll undertake it;  
 And so, God give you quiet rest to-night!

*Richm.* Good night, good Captain Blunt.—Come, gentlemen,

Let us consult upon to-morrow's business :  
In to my tent ; the air is raw and cold.

[*They withdraw into the tent.*

*Enter, to his tent, King RICHARD, NORFOLK, RATCLIFF, and*  
*CATESBY.*

*K. Rich.* What is't o'clock ?

*Cate.* It's supper-time, my lord ;  
It's six o'clock.<sup>(35)</sup>

*K. Rich.* I will not sup to-night.—  
Give me some ink and paper.—

What, is my beaver easier than it was ?  
And all my armour laid into my tent ?

*Cate.* It is, my liege ; and all things are in readiness.

*K. Rich.* Good Norfolk, hie thee to thy charge ;  
Use careful watch, choose trusty sentinels.

*Nor.* I go, my lord.

*K. Rich.* Stir with the lark to-morrow, gentle Norfolk.

*Nor.* I warrant you, my lord. [Exit.

*K. Rich.* Ratcliff,—

*Rat.* My lord ?

*K. Rich.* Send out a pursuivant-at-arms  
To Stanley's regiment ; bid him bring his power  
Before sunrising, lest his son George fall  
Into the blind cave of eternal night.—  
Fill me a bowl of wine.—Give me a watch.—  
Saddle white Surrey for the field to-morrow.—  
Look that my staves be sound, and not too heavy.—  
Ratcliff,—

*Rat.* My lord ?

*K. Rich.* Saw'st thou the melancholy Lord Northum-  
berland ?

*Rat.* Thomas the Earl of Surrey, and himself,  
Much about cock-shut time, from troop to troop  
Went through the army, cheering up the soldiers.

*K. Rich.* So, I am satisfied.—Give me a bowl of wine :  
I have not that alacrity of spirit,  
Nor cheer of mind, that I was wont to have.  
Set it down.—Is ink and paper ready ?

*Rat.* It is, my lord.

*K. Rich.* Bid my guard watch; leave me.  
*Ratcliff*, about the mid of night come to my tent  
 And help to arm me. Leave me, I say.

*[King Richard retires into his tent. Exeunt  
 Ratcliff and Catesby.]*

*RICHMOND'S tent opens, and discovers him and his Officers, &c.  
 Enter STANLEY.*

*Stan.* Fortune and victory sit on thy helm!

*Richm.* All comfort that the dark night can afford  
 Be to thy person, noble father-in-law!  
 Tell me, how fares our loving mother?

*Stan.* I, by attorney, bless thee from thy mother,  
 Who prays continually for Richmond's good:  
 So much for that.—The silent hours steal on,  
 And flaky darkness breaks within the east.  
 In brief,—for so the season bids us be,—  
 Prepare thy battle early in the morning,  
 And put thy fortune to the arbitrement  
 Of bloody strokes and mortal-staring war.  
 I, as I may (that which I would I cannot),  
 With best advantage will deceive the time,  
 And aid thee in this doubtful shock of arms:  
 But on thy side I may not be too forward,  
 Lest, being seen, thy brother, tender George,  
 Be executed in his father's sight.  
 Farewell: the leisure and the fearful time  
 Cuts off the ceremonious vows of love  
 And ample interchange of sweet discourse,  
 Which so-long-sunder'd friends should dwell upon.  
 God give us leisure for these rites of love!  
 Once more, adieu: be valiant, and speed well!

*Richm.* Good lords, conduct him to his regiment:  
 I'll strive, with troubled thoughts, to take a nap,  
 Lest leaden slumber peise me down to-morrow,  
 When I should mount with wings of victory:  
 Once more, good night, kind lords and gentlemen.

*[Exeunt Officers, &c. with Stanley.]*

{ O Thou, whose captain I account myself,

Look on my forces with a gracious eye;  
 Put in their hands thy bruising irons of wrath,  
 That they may crush down with a heavy fall  
 The usurping helmets of our adversaries!  
 Make us thy ministers of chastisement,  
 That we may praise thee in thy victory!  
 To thee I do commend my watchful soul,  
 Ere I let fall the windows of mine eyes:  
 Sleeping and waking, O, defend me still! [Sleeps.

*The Ghost of Prince EDWARD, son to HENRY the sixth, rises between the two tents.*

*Ghost.* Let me sit heavy on thy soul to-morrow!

[*To King Richard.*

Think, how thou stabb'dst me in my prime of youth  
 At Tewksbury: despair, therefore, and die!—

Be cheerful, Richmond; for the wrong'd souls  
 Of butcher'd princes fight in thy behalf:  
 King Henry's issue, Richmond, comforts thee.

*The Ghost of King HENRY the sixth rises.*

*Ghost.* When I was mortal, my anointed body

[*To King Richard.*

By thee was punch'd full of deadly holes:  
 Think on the Tower and me: despair, and die,—  
 Harry the sixth bids thee despair and die!—

Virtuous and holy, be thou conqueror! [*To Richmond.*  
 Harry, that prophesied thou shouldst be king,  
 Doth comfort thee in sleep: live, and flourish! (50)

*The Ghost of CLARENCE rises.*

*Ghost.* Let me sit heavy on thy soul to-morrow!

[*To King Richard.*

I, that was wash'd to death with fulsome wine,  
 Poor Clarence, by thy guile betray'd to death!  
 To-morrow in the battle think on me,  
 And fall thy edgeless sword: despair, and die!—

Thou offspring of the house of Lancaster, [*To Richmond.*  
 The wrong'd heirs of York do pray for thee:  
 Good angels guard thy battle! live, and flourish!



*The Ghosts of RIVERS, GREY, and VAUGHAN, rise.*

*Ghost of R.* Let me sit heavy on thy soul to-morrow,  
[*To King Richard.*

Rivers, that died at Pomfret! despair, and die!

*Ghost of G.* Think upon Grey, and let thy soul despair!  
[*To King Richard.*

*Ghost of V.* Think upon Vaughan, and, with guilty fear,  
Let fall thy lance: despair, and die!<sup>(57)</sup> [*To King Richard.*

*All Three.* Awake, and think our wrongs in Richard's  
bosom [*To Richmond.*

Will conquer him!—awake, and win the day!

*The Ghost of HASTINGS rises.*

*Ghost.* Bloody and guilty, guiltily awake,  
[*To King Richard.*

And in a bloody battle end thy days!

Think on Lord Hastings: despair, and die!—

Quiet untroubled soul, awake, awake! [*To Richmond.*  
Arm, fight, and conquer, for fair England's sake!

*The Ghosts of the two young Princes rise.*

*Ghosts.* Dream on thy cousins smother'd in the Tower:

Let us be lead within thy bosom, Richard,

And weigh thee down to ruin, shame, and death!

Thy nephews' souls bid thee despair and die!—

Sleep, Richmond, sleep in peace, and wake in joy;

Good angels guard thee from the boar's annoy!

Live, and beget a happy race of kings!

Edward's unhappy sons do bid thee flourish.

*The Ghost of Queen Anne rises.*

*Ghost.* Richard, thy wife, that wretched Anne thy wife,

That never slept a quiet hour with thee,

Now fills thy sleep with perturbations:

To-morrow in the battle think on me,

And fall thy edgeless sword: despair, and die!—

Thou quiet soul, sleep thou a quiet sleep; [*To Richmond.*

Dream of success and happy victory;

Thy adversary's wife doth pray for thee.

*The Ghost of Buckingham rises.*

*Ghost.* The first was I that help'd thee to the crown ;

*[To King Richard.*

The last was I that felt thy tyranny :

O, in the battle think on Buckingham,

And die in terror of thy guiltiness !

Dream on, dream on, of bloody deeds and death :

Fainting, despair ; despairing, yield thy breath !—

I died for hope ere I could lend thee aid : *[To Richmond.*

But cheer thy heart, and be thou not dismay'd :

God and good angels fight on Richmond's side ;

And Richard falls in height of all his pride.

*[The Ghosts vanish. King Richard starts out of his dream.*

*K. Rich.* Give me another horse,—bind up my wounds,—

Have mercy, Jesu !—Soft ! I did but dream.—

O coward conscience, how dost thou afflict me !—

The lights burn blue.—It is now dead midnight.

Cold fearful drops stand on my trembling flesh.

What, do I fear myself ? there's none else by :

Richard loves Richard ; that is, I am I.

Is there a murderer here ? No ;—yes, I am :

'Then fly. What, from myself ? Great reason why,—

Lest I revenge. What, myself upon myself ?

Alack, I love myself. Wherefore ? for any good

That I myself have done unto myself ?

O, no ! alas, I rather hate myself

For hateful deeds committed by myself !

I am a villain : yet I lie, I am not.

Fool, of thyself speak well :—fool, do not flatter.

My conscience hath a thousand several tongues,

And every tongue brings in a several tale,

And every tale condemns me for a villain.

Perjury, perjury, in the high'st degree ;

Murder, stern murder, in the dir'st degree ;

All several sins, all us'd in each degree,

Throng to the bar, crying all, Guilty ! guilty !

I shall despair. There is no creature loves me ;

And if I die, no soul shall pity me :  
 Nay, wherefore should they,—since that I myself  
 Find in myself no pity to myself ?  
 Methought the souls of all that I had murder'd<sup>(58)</sup>  
 Came to my tent ; and every one did threat  
 To-morrow's vengeance on the head of Richard.

*Enter RATCLIFF.*

*Rat.* My lord,—

*K. Rich.* Who's there ?

*Rat.* Ratcliff, my lord ; 'tis I. The early village-cock  
 Hath twice done salutation to the morn ;  
 Your friends are up, and buckle on their armour.

*K. Rich.* O Ratcliff, I have dream'd a fearful dream !—  
 What thinkest thou,—will our friends prove all true ?

*Rat.* No doubt, my lord.

*K. Rich.* O Ratcliff, I fear, I fear,—

*Rat.* Nay, good my lord, be not afraid of shadows.

*K. Rich.* By the apostle Paul, shadows to-night  
 Have struck more terror to the soul of Richard  
 Than can the substance of ten thousand soldiers  
 Armèd in proof, and led by shallow Richmond.  
 It is not yet near day. Come, go with me ;  
 Under our tents I'll play the caves-dropper,  
 To hear if any mean to shrink from me.

*[Exeunt King Richard and Ratcliff.]*

*Enter OXFORD and others.*

*Lords.* Good morrow, Richmond !

*Richm.* Cry mercy, lords and watchful gentlemen,  
 That you have ta'en a tardy sluggard here.

*Lords.* How have you slept, my lord ?

*Richm.* The sweetest sleep, and fairest-boding dreams  
 That ever enter'd in a drowsy head,  
 Have I since your departure had, my lords.  
 Methought their souls, whose bodies Richard murder'd,  
 Came to my tent, and cried on victory :<sup>(59)</sup>  
 I promise you, my heart is very jocund  
 In the remembrance of so fair a dream.  
 How far into the morning is it, lords ?

*Lords.* Upon the stroke of four.

*Richm.* Why, then 'tis time to arm and give direction.

[*He advances to the troops.*]

More than I have said, loving countrymen,  
The leisure and enforcement of the time  
Forbids to dwell upon : yet remember this,—  
God and our good cause fight upon our side ;  
The prayers of holy saints and wrongèd souls,  
Like high-rear'd bulwarks, stand before our faces,  
Richard except, those whom we fight against  
Had rather have us win than him they follow :  
For what is he they follow ? truly, gentlemen,  
A bloody tyrant and a homicide,  
One rais'd in blood, and one in blood establish'd ;  
One that made means to come by what he hath,  
And slaughter'd those that were the means to help him ;  
A base foul stone, made precious by the foil  
Of England's chair, where he is falsely set ;  
One that hath ever been God's enemy :  
Then, if you fight against God's enemy,  
God will, in justice, ward you as his soldiers ;  
If you do sweat to put a tyrant down,  
You sleep in peace, the tyrant being slain ;  
If you do fight against your country's foes,  
Your country's fat shall pay your pains the hire ;  
If you do fight in safeguard of your wives,  
Your wives shall welcome home the conquerors ;  
If you do free your children from the sword,  
Your children's children quit it in your age.  
Then, in the name of God and all these rights,  
Advance your standards, draw your willing swords.  
For me, the ransom of my bold attempt  
Shall be this cold corpse on the earth's cold face ;  
But if I thrive, the gain of my attempt  
The least of you shall share his part thereof.  
Sound drums and trumpets boldly and cheerfully ;  
God and Saint George ! Richmond and victory ! [*Exeunt.*]

*Re-enter King RICHARD, RATCLIFF, Attendants, and Forces.*

*K. Rich.* What said Northumberland as touching Richmond?

*Rat.* That he was never trainèd up in arms.

*K. Rich.* He said the truth: and what said Surrey, then?

*Rat.* He smil'd, and said, The better for our purpose.

*K. Rich.* He was in the right; and so, indeed, it is.

[*Clock strikes.*]

Tell the clock there.—Give me a calendar.—

Who saw the sun to-day?

*Rat.* Not I, my lord.

*K. Rich.* Then he disdains to shine; for by the book  
He should have brav'd the east an hour ago:

A black day will it be to somebody.—

Ratcliff,—

*Rat.* My lord?

*K. Rich.* The sun will not be seen to-day;  
The sky doth frown and lower upon our army.  
I would these dewy tears were from the ground.  
Not shine to-day! Why, what is that to me  
More than to Richmond? for the selfsame heaven  
That frowns on me looks sadly upon him.

*Enter NORFOLK.*

*Nor.* Arm, arm, my lord; the foe vaunts in the field.

*K. Rich.* Come, bustle, bustle;—caparison my horse;—  
Call up Lord Stanley, bid him bring his power:  
I will lead forth my soldiers to the plain,  
And thus my battle shall be order'd:—  
My foreward shall be drawn out all in length,  
Consisting equally of horse and foot;  
Our archers shall be placèd in the midst:  
John Duke of Norfolk, Thomas Earl of Surrey,  
Shall have the leading of this foot and horse.  
They thus directed, we will follow<sup>(60)</sup>  
In the main battle; whose puissance on either side  
Shall be well wingèd with our chiefest horse.  
This, and Saint George to boot!—What think'st thou, Nor-  
folk?

Nor. A good direction, warlike sovereign.—

This found I on my tent this morning. [Giving a scroll.

K. Rich. [reads] "Jockey of Norfolk, be not too<sup>(61)</sup> bold,  
For Dickon thy master is bought and sold."

A thing devisèd by the enemy.—

Go, gentlemen, every man unto his charge:

Let not our babbling dreams affright our souls;

Conscience is but a word that cowards use,<sup>(62)</sup>

Devis'd at first to keep the strong in awe:

Our strong arms be our conscience, swords our law.

March on, join bravely, let us to't pell-mell;

If not to heaven, then hand in hand to hell.—

What shall I say more than I have inferr'd?

Remember whom you are to cope withal;—

A sort of vagabonds, rascals, and runaways,

A scum of Breagnes, and base lackey peasants,

Whom their o'er-cloyèd country vomits forth

To desperate adventures<sup>(63)</sup> and assur'd destruction.

You sleeping safe, they bring to you unrest;

You having lands, and bless'd with beauteous wives,

They would restrain<sup>(64)</sup> the one, distain the other.

And who doth lead them but a paltry fellow,

Long kept in Bretagne at our mother's<sup>(65)</sup> cost?

A milk-sop, one that never in his life

Felt so much cold as over shoes in snow?

Let's whip these stragglers o'er the seas again;

Lash hence these overweening rags of France,

These famish'd beggars, weary of their lives;

Who, but for dreaming on this fond exploit,

For want of means, poor rats, had hang'd themselves:

If we be conquer'd, let men conquer us,

And not these bastard Breagnes; whom our fathers

Have in their own land beaten, bobb'd, and thump'd,

And, on record, left them the heirs of shame.

Shall these enjoy our lands? lie with our wives?

Ravish our daughters?—Hark! I hear their drum.

[Drum afar off.

Fight, gentlemen of England! fight, bold yeomen!

Draw, archers, draw your arrows to the head!

Spur your proud horses hard, and ride in blood ;  
Amaze the welkin with your broken staves !

*Enter a Messenger.*

What says Lord Stanley ? will he bring his power ?

*Mess.* My lord, he doth deny to come.

*K. Rich.* Off with his son George's head !

*Nor.* My lord, the enemy is past the marsh :

After the battle let George Stanley die.

*K. Rich.* A thousand hearts are great within my bosom :

Advance our standards, set upon our foes ;

Our ancient word of courage, fair Saint George,

Inspire us with the spleen of fiery dragons !

Upon them ! Victory sits on our helms. *[Exeunt.*

-----

SCENE IV. *Another part of the field.*

*Alarum : excursions. Enter NORFOLK and Forces ; to him*  
*CATESBY.*

*Cate.* Rescue, my Lord of Norfolk, rescue, rescue !

The king enacts more wonders than a man,

Daring an opposite to every danger :

His horse is slain, and all on foot he fights,

Seeking for Richmond in the throat of death.

Rescue, fair lord, or else the day is lost !

*Alarum. Enter King RICHARD.*

*K. Rich.* A horse ! a horse ! my kingdom for a horse !

*Cate.* Withdraw, my lord ; I'll help you to a horse.

*K. Rich.* Slave, I have set my life upon a cast,

And I will stand the hazard of the die :

I think there be six Richmonds in the field ;

Five have I slain to-day instead of him.—

A horse ! a horse ! my kingdom for a horse ! *[Exeunt.*

SCENE V. *Another part of the field.*

*Alarums. Enter, from opposite sides, King RICHARD and RICHMOND, they fight, and exeunt fighting. (66) Retreat and flourish. Then re-enter RICHMOND, with STANLEY bearing the crown, and divers other Lords, and Forces*

*Richm.* God and your arms be prais'd, victorious friends;  
The day is ours, the bloody dog is dead.

*Stan.* Courageous Richmond, well hast thou acquit thee.  
Lo, here, this long-usurp'd royalty  
From the dead temples of this bloody wretch  
Have I pluck'd off, to grace thy brows withal:  
Wear it, enjoy it, and make much of it.

*Richm.* Great God of heaven, say Amen to all!—  
But, tell me, is young George Stanley living?

*Stan.* He is, my lord, and safe in Leicester town;  
Whither, if it please you, we may now withdraw us.

*Richm.* What men of name are slain on either side?

*Stan.* John Duke of Norfolk, Walter Lord Ferrers,  
Sir Robert Brakenbury, and Sir William Brandon.

*Richm.* Inter their bodies as becomes their births:  
Proclaim a pardon to the soldiers fled  
That in submission will return to us:  
And then, as we have ta'en the sacrament,  
We will unite the white rose and the red:—  
Smile heaven upon this fair conjunction,  
That long hath frown'd upon their enmity!—  
What traitor hears me, and says not Amen?  
England hath long been mad, and scarr'd herself;  
The brother blindly shed the brother's blood,  
The father rashly slaughter'd his own son,  
The son, compell'd, been butcher to the sire:  
All this divided York and Lancaster,  
Divided in their dire division,  
O, now, let Richmond and Elizabeth,  
The true succeeders of each royal house,  
By God's fair ordinance conjoin together! (67)  
And let their heirs (God, if thy will be so)



Enrich the time to come with smooth-fac'd peace,  
With smiling plenty, and fair prosperous days !  
Abate<sup>(68)</sup> the edge of traitors, gracious Lord,  
That would reduce these bloody days again,  
And make poor England weep in streams of blood !  
Let them not live to taste this land's increase  
That would with treason wound this fair land's peace !  
Now civil wounds are stopp'd, peace lives again :  
That she may long live here, God say Amen !      [*Exeunt.*

P. 307. (1) "That tempers him to this extremity."

So the quarto 1597.—The folio has "*That tempts him to this harsh extremity,*"—which I am surprised that Mr. Collier should have adopted, after the note of Malone, who has proved to demonstration that it is an erroneous lection. (In a subsequent note Malone observes: "In this play the variations between the original copy in quarto and the folio are more numerous than, I believe, in any other of our author's pieces. The alterations, it is highly probable, were made, not by Shakespeare, but by the players, many of them being very injudicious." In the present edition I have adhered to the quartos less frequently than Malone (and less frequently perhaps than I ought to have done); but oftener than Mr. Collier and Mr. Knight,—who, though the professed champions of the folio, are yet constrained to give an eclectic text of *Richard III.*)

P. 307. (2) "*Antony Woodville, her brother there,*" &c.

In this line "*Woodville*" is to be read as a trisyllable (which Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector did not perceive when he made the alteration, "*— her same brother there,*" &c.), but not to be printed, as it usually is in the recent editions, "*Woodville.*" see note (20) on *The Merchant of Venice*, vol. II. 328.

P. 309. (3)

"*Till George be pack'd with posthorse up to heaven.*"

Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector substitutes "*— with post-haste up to heaven,*"—which Mr. Singer (*Shakespeare Vindicated*, &c. p. 105) thinks "we may allow to be an admissible correction of a probable misprint."—I believe the old text is right; "*with posthorse*" meaning—with the speediest possible conveyance: in the Induction to *The Sec. Part of Henry IV.*, Rumour speaks of "*Making the wind my post-horse.*"

P. 316. (4) "*What! I, that kill'd her husband and his father,  
To take her in her heart's extremest hate;  
With curses in her mouth, tears in her eyes,  
The bleeding witness of her hatred by,*" &c.

Here Mr. Collier gives, with the folio, "*The bleeding witness of my hatred by,*" &c., which he says is "correct:" but surely the second of the above lines shows that it is quite the reverse.

P. 317 (5) "STANLEY."

"In the early part of this play Lord Stanley, who is named such in the [third,] fourth, and fifth acts, is called *Derby*. He was not created Earl of Derby till after the accession of Henry VII. The necessary correction throughout was made by Theobald." KNIGHT.—Mr. Hunter (*New Illust. of*

*Shakespeare*, ii. 82) objects, with some reason, to the expression which Theobald's alteration occasions in this scene,—“my Lord of Stanley:” but since a modern editor cannot allow the same character to figure under two names, he must either adopt Theobald's alteration, or substitute “Derby” wherever the old copies have “*Stanley*.” (If I have counted rightly, “*Stanley*” occurs thirteen times in the quartos, and nineteen times in the folio,—that is, in the text and stage-directions;—prefixes to speeches and mentions of “George Stanley” not being included.)

P. 319. (6)

“*Makes him to send; that thereby he may gather  
The ground of your ill-will, and so remove it.*”

So the quarto, except that they have “— and to remove it.”—The folio has merely “*Makes him to send, that he may learne the ground.*”

P. 319. (7)

“*That wrens make prey where eagles dare not perch.*”

The quarto of 1602 and the later quartos read “*That wrens may prey,*” &c.,—which several editors have preferred (on account of the antithesis, I suppose). But it is a very doubtful alteration: afterwards in this play, p. 363, we find the expression “to make a prey.”

P. 321. (8) “Q. Eliz. *As little joy, my lord, as you suppose*

*As little joy you may suppose in me,*

Q. Mai. *As little joy enjoys the queen thereof;*” &c.

The old copies have “Q. M. *A little ioy enjoyes the queene thereof;*” &c.

P. 323. (9) “*If heaven have* . . . .

. . . . .

*O, let them,*” &c.

Some editors print “*If heavens have,*” &c. But compare *Richard II.* act i. sc. 2, vol. iii. p. 279,—

“Put we our quarrel to the will of heaven;  
Who, when *they* see,” &c.

P. 323. (10) “*The slave of nature and the son of hell!*”

This line I believe to be quite genuine.—But Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector alters “*slave*” to “*stain*” and (with strange impropriety) “*son*” to “*scorn*.” Mr. Singer's Ms. Corrector also tries his hand on it (*Shakespeare Vindicated*, &c. p. 167); and Mr. Singer says “with better success,”—which is no great praise.

P. 326. (11)

*"And for your grace,—and you, my noble lords"*

So the two earliest quartos, except that they have "*Lo*," for "*lords*."—The folio has "*— and yours my gracious lord*," (Some editors retain "*lord*," though the context proves that it is wrong)

P. 327. (12) *"Methoughts that I had broken from the Tower,*

*Methought that Gloster stumbled*

*Methoughts I saw," &c*

The quartos have "*Methoughts*" only in the first line of this speech.—Compare a speech in *The Winter's Tale*, act i. sc. 2, vol. iii, p. 89,

*"Looking on the lines*

*Of my boy's face, methoughts I did recoil*

*Twenty-three years*

*How like, methought, I then was to this kernel," &c.*

P. 329. (13)

*"Brak. I will, my lord: God give your grace good rest!"*

[Clarence sleeps.

*Sorrow breaks seasons," &c.*

"In the folio at the beginning of this scene we find—'Enter Clarence and Keeper,' and after he has spoken this line, 'I will, my lord,' &c, we have—'Enter Brakenbury, the Lieutenant of the Tower.' But in the quarto 1597, the scenical direction at the beginning of this scene, is, 'Enter Clarence and Brakenbury;' and after Clarence reposes himself, and Brakenbury has wished him good night [not "*good night*," but "*good rest*"], he naturally makes the observation—'Sorrow breaks seasons,' &c. The Keeper and Brakenbury, who was lieutenant of the Tower, was certainly the same person. There can be no doubt, therefore, that the text, which is regulated according to the original quarto 1597, is right." MALONE.—(Mr. Hunter (*New Illustr. of Shakespeare*, ii. 83) thinks that the folio rightly represents the dialogue as being held "between Clarence and a keeper;" and observes that "it is improbable Brakenbury, who was the Lieutenant of the Tower, *should pass the night* in the sleeping-room of his prisoner." But the opening of this scene,—

*"Brak. Why looks your grace so heavily to-day?"*

*Clas. O, I have pass'd a miserable night," &c.,—*

shows distinctly that it takes place *during the day*,—in the earlier part of the day,—Brakenbury having just come to visit his prisoner: and when Clarence says to Brakenbury,—

*"Keeper, I prithee, sit by me awhile;*

[*Quartos*—*I pray thee, gentle keeper, stay by me;*]

*My soul is heavy, and I fain would sleep,"—*

he evidently means no more than that *Brakenbury should remain beside him*

while he refreshed himself by a short slumber. Hence it is, that, immediately after wishing Clarence "good rest," Brakenbury remarks,—

*"Sorrow breaks seasons and reposing hours,  
Makes the night morning, and the noon-tide night."*)

P. 330. (11)

*"my holy humour," &c.*

So the quartos.—The folio has "*this passionate humour* of mine," &c.—"The second murderer's next speech proves that '*holy*' was the author's word. The player-editors probably changed it, as they did many others, on account of the statute, 3 Jac. I c. 21. A little lower, they, from the same apprehension, omitted the word '*faith*'" MALONE.

P. 334. (18)

*"To do this deed will hate you for the deed.*

*Sec. Murd. What shall we do?" &c.*

"In the quarto 1597, after the last line of the preceding speech [*'To do this deed,' &c.*], we find only the following dialogue;

'2. What shall we do?

*Clu.* Relent, and save your souls.

1. Relent, 'tis cowardly and womanish.

*Clu.* Not to relent, is beastly, savage, and diuelish.

My friend, I spie some pittie in thy lookes.

Oh if thy eie be not a flatterer,

Come thou on my side, and intreate for me.

A begging Prince, what begger pitties not?

1. I, thus, and thus; if this will not serue,

He chop thee in the malnesey But in the next roomo.'

In the folio the passage is thus exhibited; five lines being added here, and the second murderer's speech [*'Look behind you, my lord'*];

'2. What shall we do?

*Clu.* Relent, and save your souls:

Which of you, if you were a Princes Sonne,

Being punt from Liberty, as I am now,

If two such murderers as yourselves came to you,

Would not intreat for life, as you would begge

Were you in my distresse.

1. Relent? no: 'Tis cowardly and womanish.

*Clu.* Not to relent, is beastly, savage, diuelish.

My Friend, I spy some pittie in thy lookes.

O, if thine eye be not a flatterer,

Come thou on my side, and intreate for mee,

A begging Prince, what begger pitties not.

2. Looko behinde you, my Lord.

1. Take that, and that, if all this will not do,' &c.

I think, with Mr. Tyrwhitt, that the added lines have been inserted in the

wrong place, and have therefore adopted his arrangement" MALONE.—"I have regulated the text according to Mr. Tyrwhitt's instruction," STEEVENS.

With all my dislike of transpositions, I have adopted the arrangement proposed by Tyrwhitt, because I am unable to devise any better remedy for the confusion which the carelessness of the player-editors has occasioned here: nor can I think that Mr. Collier and Mr. Knight have much cause to plume themselves on adhering to the folio throughout this portion of the dialogue, when they give, *as from Shakespeare's pen*, the following extraordinary piece of composition,—

"Which of you, if you were a prince's son,  
Being pent from liberty, as I am now,  
*If two such murderers as yourselves came to you,*  
*Would not entreat for life, as you would beg*  
*Were you in my distress?" !!!*

(Theobald attempted to get rid of such a glaring absurdity by printing,—

"*Would not entreat for life? ah! you would beg,*  
*Were you in my distress,*"—

a wretchedly feeble alteration:—and about equal in weakness is that of Mr. Singer's *Ms. Corrector* (*Shakespeare Vindicated*, &c. p. 168),—

"*Would not entreat for life? so you would beg,*  
*Were you in my distress,*"—

Mr. Collier's *Ms. Corrector* adds what Mr. Collier calls "three small words,"—

"*If two such murderers as yourselves came to you,*  
*Would not entreat for life? As you would beg,*  
*Were you in my distress, so pity me."*

But to make additions to the text is the most objectionable mode of dealing with a corrupted passage, and to be resorted to only when all other methods fail.)

P. 337. (<sup>16</sup>)

"*Of you, and you, Lord Rivers, and of Dorset,*  
*That all without desert have frown'd on me;—*  
*Of you, Lord Woodville, and Lord Scales, of you;—*  
*Dukes, earls, lords, gentlemen," &c.*

So the folio:—but whether it gives here the very words of the poet, or whether the passage has been tampered with—see note (<sup>1</sup>)—I do not pretend to determine. "The eldest son of Earl Rivers was Lord Scales; but there was no such person as Lord Woodville," says Malone; who here adopted the reading of the quartos,—

"*Of you my lord Rivers, and lord Gray of you,*  
*That all without desert have frown'd on me,*  
*Dukes, earls, lords, gentlemen," &c.*

P. 342. (<sup>17</sup>)

"*But lately splinter'd,*" &c.

Dr. Richardson (*Dict. sub Splent*, &c.) remarks, that in the present line

"*splinter'd* is by more [most ?] editors altered to *splinted*:"—but they had the authority of the quartos for the alteration.—I adhere to the spelling of the folio, because in *Othello*, act ii. sc. 3, we have "This broken joint, between you and her husband, entreat her to *splinter*," &c.

P. 343. (18)

"*Madam,—and you, my mother,—will you go,*" &c.

So the quartos.—The folio has "*Madam, and you my Sister, will you go,*" &c.—which Mr. Collier and Mr. Knight have replaced in the text but, throughout the present scene at least, Gloster evidently keeps up towards the Queen an appearance of due respect,—which would be not a little violated if here he addressed *his mother first*.

P. 345. (19) "Arch "

The folio has "Yor."—To the corresponding speech the quartos prefix "Car."—see note (21).

P. 345. (20)

"Arch. *Good madam, be not angry with the child.*"

In the folio this line is given to "Dut."; in the quartos to "Car."—see next note (I cannot agree with Mr. Hunter (*New Illust of Shakspeare*, ii. 87) that the prefix of the folio is the right one.)

P. 346. (21)

"Q. Eliz. *For what offence?*"

Mess.

*my gracious lady "*

"This question is given in the quarto to the Archbishop (or Cardinal, as he is there called), where also we have in the following speech 'my gracious lady.' The editor of the folio altered '*lady*' to '*lord*;' but it is more probable that the compositor prefixed '*Car.*' (the designation there of the Archbishop) to the words, 'For what offence?' instead of '*Qu.*' than that '*lady*' should have been printed in the subsequent speech instead of '*lord*.'" MALONE. The Messenger, in replying above to the Archbishop, calls him "*my lord*:" towards the bottom of this page, the Archbishop addresses the Queen as "*my gracious lady*."

P. 348. (22)

"*Weigh it but with the grossness of this age,*" &c.

Warburton would alter this to "*— with the greenness of his age,*" &c., and Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector (more unhappily) to "*— with the goodness of his age,*" &c.—See Johnson's note *ad l.*, and Mr. Singer's *Shakspeare Ymited*, &c. p. 170. (but, to confess the truth, their explanations of the present reading hardly satisfy me.)

P. 349. (23) "Where it seems best unto your royal self."

So the two earliest quartos.—The folio has "*Where it think'st best*," &c.—The late Mr. Sydney Walker (who has shown that in the line of *Hamlet*, act v. sc. 2, as given in the folio, "Does it not, *thinkst* thee, stand me now upon," &c., "*thinkst* thee" is to be understood as "*thinks't* thee," i.e. "*thinks it* thee") would here read "*Where it thinks best*," &c. (*Shakespeare's Versification*, &c. p. 284),—and rightly perhaps, but since Mr. Walker's reading involves *the rejection of a letter*, I have preferred, with the modern editors, that of the two earliest quartos.

P. 355. (24)

"*My lord, I hold my life as dear as you do yours*," &c.

So the quartos.—The folio has "*My Lord, I hold my Life as deare as yours*," &c.; which Steevens and some other editors maintain to be what the author wrote, and to have the same meaning as the reading of the quartos.—"The verse is, like many others, an alexandrine. [Capell's arrangement is,

"My lord,

I hold my life as dear as you do yours," &c.]

But in the folio copy this line was curtailed to the standard measure, with an entire disregard to the author's sense; for the plain and direct meaning of the words there found, and adopted by Mr. Steevens, is, 'My lord, I hold my life as dear as your life; I estimate them both at the same rate;' which is very different from what Hastings means to say,—'I hold my own life as dear as you do your life.' This latter is the assertion which the argument of Hastings requires, and no critical chymistry can extract such a meaning out of the words found in the folio copy. Calling it an elliptical expression, will certainly not serve the purpose." MALONE.

P. 356 (25) "*Come the next Sabbath, and I will content you*."

After this line the folio has,

"*Priest. He wait upon your Lordship*,"—

*the very words with which, according to the folio, Hastings soon after addresses Buckingham.* The quartos have them in neither place: and to me it is perfectly plain (as it was to Theobald, Malone, &c.) that they were inserted in the folio *twice* by mistake. (After

"Come the next Sabbath, and I will content you,"—

the quartos have the stage-direction, "*He whispers in his ear* c.")

P. 357. (26) "*Make haste; the hour of death is expiate*."

The editor of the second folio substituted "*Make haste, the houre of death is now expir'd*"—See the note of Malone *ad l.*, who cites from our author's 22d Sonnet,

"Then look I death my days should expiate."



P. 359. (27) "By any livelihood he shou'd to-day."

So the folio;—which reading Mr. Knight has supported by citing from *All's well that ends well*, act i. sc 2,—“the tyranny of her sorrows takes all livelihood from her cheek.”—The quartos have “By any likelihood he,” &c.

P. 359. (28) "*Lovel and Ratcliff, look that it be done.*"

Theobald altered this to "*Lovel and Catesby, look,*" &c.—“The scene,” he observes, “is here in the Tower, and Lord Hastings was cut off on that very day, when Rivers, Grey, and Vaughan suffered at Pomfret. How then could Ratcliff at the same instant be both in Yorkshire and the Tower? In the very scene preceding this, we find him conducting those gentlemen to the block. The players in their edition first made the blunder as to Ratcliff attending Lord Hastings to death; for in the old quarto we find it rightly, ‘*Exeunt Muncie Catesby with Hastings.*’ And in the next scene, before the Tower-walls, we find Lovel and Catesby come back from the execution, bringing the head of Hastings.”—Tyrwhitt remarks; “Mr. Theobald should have added, that, in the old quarto, no names are mentioned in Richard’s speech. He only says—‘some see it done.’ Nor, in that edition, does Lovel appear in the next scene; but only Catesby, bringing the head of Hastings. The confusion seems to have arisen, when it was thought necessary that Catesby should be employed to fetch the Mayor, who, in the quarto, is made to come without having been sent for. As some other person was then wanted to bring the head of Hastings, the poet, or the players, appointed Lovel and Ratcliff to that office, without reflecting that the latter was engaged in another service on the same day at Pomfret.”—Malone says; “I have adopted the emendation, because in one scene at least it prevents the glaring impropriety mentioned by Mr. Theobald. But unfortunately, as Mr. Tyrwhitt has observed, this very impropriety is found in the next scene, where Ratcliff is introduced, and where it cannot be corrected without taking greater liberties than perhaps are justifiable. For there, in consequence of the injudicious alteration made, I think, by the players, instead of—‘Here comes the Mayor,’ the reading of the quarto, we find in the folio—

‘But what, is Catesby gone?’

*Glo.* He is; and see, he brings the mayor along.’

Catesby being thus employed, he cannot bring in the head of Hastings; nor can that office be assigned to Lovel only, because Gloster in the folio mentions two persons,

‘Be patient, they are friends,—Ratcliff and Lovel.’”

According to Mr. Knight, “this is one of those positions in which the poet has trusted to the imagination of his audience rather than to their topographical knowledge,” &c.—See, too, Mr. Hunter’s *New Illustr. of Shakespeare*, vol. ii. 89.

P. 362. (29)

“Which now the loving haste of these our friends,  
Something against our meaning, have prevented.”

See note (15) on *Love’s Labour’s lost*, vol. ii. p. 169.

P. 362. (30) "Misconstrue," &c.

Here the old copies have "Misconster," &c. See note (10) on *The Merchant of Venice*, vol. II. p. 324.

P. 363. (31) "Even where his raging eye," &c.

So the folio, which reading was very plausibly altered by Pope to "*Even where his ranging eye,*" &c.—The quartos have "*Even where his lustfull eye,*" &c. (In Dryden's *Virgil*, *Æn.* viii., we find "*raging eyes.*")

P. 365. (32) "But, like dumb statues," &c.

The old copies have "— *dumbe statues,*" &c.—See note (11), p. 196.

P. 366 (31) "He is not lolling on a lewd day-bed," &c.

Here Mr. Knight and Mr. Collier retain the spelling of the old copies, "*He is not lolling on,*" &c., but why?—In *Troilus and Cressida*, act I. sc. 3, the old copies have "The large Achilles, on his press'd bed *lolling,*" &c.—I give, with the quartos, "*a lewd day-bed,*" &c., because I feel convinced that the alteration in the folio, "*a lewd Louc-Bed,*" &c., was not made by the poet.

P. 366. (31) "But, sure, I fear," &c.

Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector gives "*But sure I fear,*" &c., which is perhaps right. at the conclusion of *The Merchant of Venice* we have,—

"I'll fear no other thing  
So sore," &c.

P. 367. (32)

"May. See, where his grace stands 'tween two elegymen!  
Buck. Two props of virtue for a Christian prince,  
To stay him from the fall of vanity:  
And, see, a book of prayer in his hand,—  
True ornament to know a holy man."

The last two lines are only in the folio;—which has "*True Ornaments to know,*" &c., a most palpable error. (At p. 371, the folio makes Richard call Buckingham, "*My Consins:*" and see the next note.)

P. 370. (33) "I am not made of stone"

The old copies have "— *of stones.*"

P. 371. (37) "Now, for my life, she's wandering to the Tower,  
On pure heart's love, to greet the tender princes."

These lines are only in the folio, which has "— *the tender Prince.*" The slight correction which I have made is obviously necessary. Anne herself presently declares that she is going to the Tower,—

"To gratulate the gentle *princes* there

[*The quartos* 'To gratulate the *tender* *princes* there']."

(Let no one object to the alteration on metrical grounds: we have had before, p. 363,

"Have any time recourse unto the *princes*.")

P. 373. (28) "And be thy wife (*if any be so mad*)

*More miserable by the life of thee,*" &c.

"The quartos read 'by the *death* of thee,' which corresponds with Anne's words in A. i. sc. 2." COLLIER.

P. 373 (32)

"O, Eliz. *Farewell, thou woful welcomer of glory!*

Anne. *Adieu, poor soul, that tak'st thy leave of it!*"

I have given, with the quartos, the first of these speeches to the Queen.—The folio assigns it to "Doris."—The second speech is evidently *addressed by Anne to the person who spoke the first*: but, according to the folio, Anne, instead of replying to Dorset, *addresses the Queen*,—for the "*glory*" here mentioned is the *regal glory*, which Anne is "wofully welcoming," and which, in consequence of Anne's approaching coronation, Queen Elizabeth is "taking leave of." (Possibly, indeed, the player-editors, or whoever else put the prefix "Dors." to the first speech, may have intended us to understand the second one as addressed to Dorset; they perhaps thought that because Dorset was about to fly from the English court to Richmond, he might be said to be taking his leave of glory! Nor is it improbable that they were led to the alteration by finding that the immediately following speech of the Duchess of York commences with an address to Dorset.)

P. 374 (36) "*So foolish sorrow bids your stones farewell.*"

The folio has "*So foolish Sorrowes bid,*" &c.; and Mr. Collier says "It may be doubted whether we ought to read *sorrow bids* or *sorrowes bid*;"—but surely there can be no doubt; see notes (28), (36).—This speech is not in the quartos.

P. 380. (41)

"*I had an Edward, till a Richard kill'd him;*

*I had a Henry, till a Richard kill'd him;*

*Thou hadst an Edward, till a Richard kill'd him;*

*Thou hadst a Richard, till a Richard kill'd him.*"

"[In the second line] the quarto has, 'I had a *Richard*,' which the editor of the folio corrected by substituting 'I had a *husband*.' In a subsequent speech in this scene, p. 390, '*my brother*' being printed in the quarto by mistake, instead of '*thy brother*,' the editor of the folio corrected the wrong word, and

printed '*my husband*.'—It is clear that a Christian name was intended here, though by a mistake in the original copy *Richard* was substituted for *Henry*" MALONE.—See also Capell's *Notes*, &c. vol. II 186.

P. 381. (12) " *That foul defacer of God's handiwork ;  
That excellent grand tyrant of the earth,  
That reigns in galled eyes of weeping souls,*" &c.

The two last lines are only in the folio, where, through carelessness, they are transposed.—Capell first arranged them as above;—"for what reason," says Mr. Knight, "we know not." I would hope, however, that the reader knows.

P. 381. (13) " *Match not,*" &c.

So the quartos.—The folio has "*Match't not,*" &c. (I notice this only because Mr. Hunter (*New Illustr. of Shakespeare*, ii. 92) mentions the latter reading as that "of the old copies.")

P. 382. (14) " *For joyful mother, one that wails the name;  
For one being su'd to, one that humbly sues;  
For queen, a very cattif' crown'd with care;  
For one that scorn'd at me, now scorn'd of me,  
For one being fear'd of all, now fearing one,  
For one commanding all, obey'd of none*"

Here, as Mr Collier observes, "the folio has '*For she*' in two places where the quartos have '*For one*,' which, consistently with the line in the folio, '*For one being su'd to, one that humbly sues,*' is no doubt the correct reading."

The quartos, omitting the fifth of the above lines, give the passage in the following form,—which was preferred by Capell, and I would not say wrongly,

" *For ioyfull mother, one that wails the name,  
For queene, a very cattine crownd with care,  
For one being sued too, one that humble sues,  
For one commanding all, obeyed of none,  
For one that scorn'd at me, now scorn'd of me.*"

P. 384. (15) " *Then patiently hear my impatience.*"

Mr Collier's MS. Corrector changes "*hear*" to "*bear*," but (without laying any stress on Mr. Singer's objection to the change (*Shakespeare Vindicated*, &c. p 174),—viz. that "accent of reproof" in the next speech shows it to be wrong) the old reading may certainly stand.

P. 387. (16) " *K Rich. I, even I: what think you of it, madam?*"

So the quartos; and perhaps the first "*I*" [qq. for "*Ay*"?] ought to be

omitted, that this speech with the preceding "What, thou?" might make up a line.—The folio has "*Euen so. How thinke you of it?*"

P. 387. (47)

"*The purple sap from her sweet brothers' bodies.*"

The folio has "— *Brothers body.*"—This is not in the quartos.

P. 387 (48)

"*Nay, then indeed she cannot choose but hate thee,*" &c.

Tyrwhitt conjectures "— *but love thee,*" &c.—Mason agrees with Tyrwhitt that this is spoken ironically, but proposes "— *but hate thee,*" &c. (which offends Mr. Knight as being a "low phrase"). In spite of Boswell's profound remark, that "a virtuous woman would hate the man who thought to purchase her love by the commission of crimes,"—the old reading appears to me very suspicious: Tyrwhitt's conjecture, though it disregards the *ductus literarum*, seems to suit the context better than Mason's.

P. 388. (49) "*Advantaging their loan with interest,*" &c.

The folio has "*Aduantaging their Loue,*" &c.—This is not in the quartos.

P. 390. (50) "*The unity the king thy brother made  
Had not been broken, nor my brother slain.*"

"The quarto, by an error of the press, has [in the first of these lines] '*my brother,*' which the editor of the folio corrected thus:

'The unity the king, *my husband*, made,  
'Thou hadst not broken, nor my *brothers* slain.'

MALONE.

P. 392. (61) "*Ratcliff, come hither*"

The folio has, by mistake, "*Catesby, come,*" &c.—This is not in the quartos.

P. 393 (62)

"Stan. *Unless for that, my liege, I cannot guess.*

K Rich. *Unless for that he comes to be your liege,*

*You cannot guess wherefore the Welshman comes.*"

Mr. Hunter (*New Illust. of Shakespeare*, ii. 93) says that Stanley's speech,

"Unless for that, my liege, I cannot guess,"

is "in fact a broken sentence. Richard interrupting him." Not so, surely Stanley has previously told Richard his *guess* in the matter; and Richard having again put to him the question, what Richmond "makes upon the seas,"

Stanley now replies "Unless *for that* [i.e. for the reason already given], I cannot guess." Richard immediately catches up the words "Unless *for that*," &c., using "*for that*" in a different sense.

P. 396. (62) " *This is All-Souls' day, fellows, is it not ?*  
 Sher. *It is, my lord* "

So the quartos (except that, according to them, the interlocutors in this scene are Buckingham and Ratchiff),—the word "*fellows*" being addressed by the Duke to the Guard generally.—The folio has,

" *This is All-soules day (Fellow) is it not ?*  
 Sher. *It is,*"—

which Mr. Collier and Mr. Knight have brought back into the text: but it seems rather odd that Buckingham should call the Sheriff "*fellow*," and as odd that the Sheriff (see his preceding speech) should reply so civilly.

P. 397. (64) " *Here pitch our tents,*" &c.

In this line the folio has "*tent*," but the quartos have "*tents*," and rightly, —Richard speaking of *the tents* for himself and his officers. Presently he speaks of his own particular tent—"Up with *my tent*!" and "Up with *the tent*!"

P. 399 (65) " *It's supper-time, my lord,*  
*It's six o'clock* "

So the folio, except that it has "*nine*" instead of "*six*" (which I have introduced from the quartos,—where Catesby replies, less respectfully, "*It is sixe of clocke [and sixe of the clocke], full supper time*").—Steevens, I apprehend, is right in observing that "*a supper at so late an hour as nine o'clock, in the year 1485, would have been a prodigy.*"

P. 401. (66) " *Doth comfort thee in sleep · live, and flourish !*"

The quartos have " — *in thy sleepe,*" &c.—Pope printed "*Doth comfort thee in sleep : live thou and flourish !*" which is also given by Mr. Collier's Mr. Corrector.

P. 402 (67) " *Let fall thy lance · despair, and die !*"

Here, in all probability, an epithet to "*lance*" has dropped out. (A little before we have, according to the folio, a line imperfect from the same cause,—

" *By thee was punched full of holes :*"—

there, however, the quartos assist us by giving " — *full of deadly holes.*" )—Capell printed "*Let fall thy hurtless lance,*" &c.—Mr. Collier's Mr. Corrector reads, more happily, "*Let fall thy pointless lance,*" &c. (Mr. Singer asks

"Why *pointless* lances?" *Shakespeare Vindicated*, &c. p. 176. But Mr. Singer might as well ask why both the ghost of Clarence and the ghost of Anne wish Richard's sword to fall "edgeless.")

P. 104. (58)

"*Methought the souls of all that I had murder'd  
Came to my tent, and every one did thrut  
To-morrow's vengeance on the head of Richard.*"

There can be no doubt (though Ritson is pleased to think otherwise) that these lines come in here most awkwardly—the audience, who had seen and heard the eleven ghosts, did not need to be told the cause of Richard's terror, Mason conjectures that the lines ought to be introduced as a continuation of what Richard says to Ratcliff—"O Ratcliff, I fear, I fear—." and it would almost seem as if the editors of the folio had intended, but forgot, to place them there; for in Richard's dialogue with Ratcliff, the folio entirely omits,—

"*R. Rich.* O Ratcliff, I have dream'd a fearful dream!—  
What thinkest thou,—will our friends prove all true?  
*Rat.* No doubt, my lord,—"

and makes Ratcliff say, very absurdly,

"Nay, my good lord, be not afraid of shadows,"—

though Richard has not spoken to him a word about his dream.

P. 404. (59) "*Came to my tent, and cried on victory.*"

This has been altered to "—*cried out Victory*;" and the more recent editors print "—*cried—On! victory!*"—Compare, for the expression, "Thus quary *cries on havoc*," *Hamlet*, act v. sc. 2; and "whose noise is this that *cries on murder*?" *Othello*, act v. sc. 1.

P. 406. (60) "*They thus directed, we will follow,*" &c.

Pope printed "—*we ourself will follow,*" &c.

P. 407. (61) "*Jockey of Norfolk, be not too bold,*" &c.

Mr. Collier observes, "The early copies, including the folio 1623, have 'be not so bold,' but the quarto of 1634 reads, 'be not too bold,' which is consistent with the words in Hall and Holinshed."

This couplet is not marked in the old copies as read by Richard but the stage-direction in the quartos, "*He* [Northumberland] *sheweth him a paper,*" would be alone sufficient to prove that the king, not Northumberland, reads it.

P. 107. (62) "*Conscience is but a word that cowards use.*"

"So the quartos 1597 and 1598. 'But' being accidentally omitted in a later

quarto, the editor of the folio supplied the omission by reading, "For conscience is a word," &c." MALONE.

P. 407. (62) "To desperate adventures," &c.

According to Steevens and Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector, we ought to change "adventures" to "ventures" but the sense at least is not affected by the alteration.

P. 407. (61) "They would restrain the one," &c.

Walburton and Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector would read "—— restrain the one," &c. but see Malone's note *ad l.*

P. 407. (61) "at our mother's cost"

This should be "*at our brother's cost*," but Shakespeare was led into the mistake by following a particular edition of Holinshed. See Malone's and Douce's notes *ad l.*

P. 409. (66) "—— and exeunt fighting," &c.

Mr. Knight retains the stage-direction of the old copies "—— they fight; Richard is slain," &c., and says in his note, "it is important to preserve it, as showing the course of the dramatic action." How Mr. Knight understands "the dramatic action" to be carried on here, I cannot conceive. If, after Richard is killed in the sight of the audience, Stanley enters bearing the crown which he has plucked off from his "dead temples," there must have been two Richards in the field — The fact is, that here, as frequently elsewhere, in the old copies, the stage-direction is a piece of mere confusion: Richard and Richmond were evidently intended by the author *to go off the stage, fighting*. (Towards the end of *Macbeth*, the folio has "*Exeunt [Macbeth and Macduff] fighting*;" then, immediately after, "*Enter Fighting, and Macbeth slain*;" and presently, "*Enter Macduff, with Macbeth's head*"!) — It seems strange that the modern editors should have neglected to mark a change of scene here,—which the audience of Shakespeare's days were evidently intended to imagine.

P. 409. (67) "All this divided York and Lancaster,

By God's fair ordinance conjoin together."

I have adopted here the punctuation which was recommended by Johnson; and which is also that of Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector. (Dryden has,—

"which thing all-powerfull Fate  
So happily produc't out of that prosperous Bed,  
Whose marriages conjoin'd the White-rose and the Red," &c.  
*Poly-olbion, Fifth Song*, p. 76, ed. 1622.)



P. 410. (63) "Abate the edge of traitors," &c.

Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector reads "Rebate *the edge*," &c., an alteration which occurred to myself long ago, but in this passage "*Abate*" may be equivalent to "Rebate;" for it is certain that our early writers sometimes use "rebate" where we might expect "*abate*."

KING HENRY THE EIGHTH.

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

— ♦ —

KING HENRY the Eighth.  
CARDINAL WOLSEY  
CARDINAL CAMPEIUS.  
CARVARIUS, Ambassador from the Emperor Charles V  
CRANMER, Archbishop of Canterbury.  
DUKE OF NORFOLK.  
DUKE OF BUCKINGHAM.  
DUKE OF SUTFOLK.  
EARL OF SURREY.  
Lord Chamberlain.  
Lord Chancellor.  
GARDINER, Bishop of Winchester.  
Bishop of Lincoln.  
LORD ABERGAVENNY.  
LORD SANDS  
SIR HENRY GUILDFORD.  
SIR THOMAS LOVELL.  
SIR ANTHONY DENNY.  
SIR NICHOLAS VAUX.  
Secretaries to Wolsey.  
CROWWELL, Servant to Wolsey.  
GRIFFITH, Gentleman-usher to Queen Katharine.  
Three Gentlemen.  
DOCTOR BUTTS, Physician to the King.  
Garter King-at-Arms.  
Surveyor to the Duke of Buckingham.  
BRANDON, and a Sergeant-at-Arms.  
Door-keeper of the Council-chamber. Porter, and his Man.  
Page to Gardiner. A Crier.  
  
QUEEN KATHARINE, wife to King Henry, afterwards divorced.  
ANNE BULLEN, her Maid of Honour, afterwards Queen.  
An old Lady, friend to Anne Bullen.  
PATIENCE, woman to Queen Katharine.

Several Lords and Ladies in the dumb Shows, Women attending upon the  
Queen, Scribes, Officers, Guards, and other Attendants.

Spirits.

SCENE—*Chiefly in London and Westminster, once at Kimbolton*

## PROLOGUE.

I COME no more to make you laugh : things now,  
That bear a weighty and a serious brow,  
Sad, high, and working, full of state and woe,  
Such noble scenes as draw the eye to flow,  
We now present. Those that can pity, here  
May, if they think it well, let fall a tear ;  
The subject will deserve it. Such as give  
Their money out of hope they may believe,  
May here find truth too. Those that come to see  
Only a show or two, and so agree  
The play may pass, if they be still and willing,  
I'll undertake may see away their shilling  
Richly in two short hours. Only they  
That come to hear a merry bawdy play,  
A noise of targets, or to see a fellow  
In a long motley coat guarded with yellow,  
Will be deceiv'd ; for, gentle hearers, know,  
To rank our chosen truth with such a show  
As fool and fight is, beside forfeiting  
Our own brains, and the opinion that we bring,  
To make that only true we now intend,  
Will leave us never an understanding friend.  
Therefore, for goodness' sake, and as you are known  
The first and happiest hearers of the town,  
Be sad, as we would make ye : think ye see  
The very persons of our noble story  
As they were living ; think you, see them great,  
And follow'd with the general throng and sweat  
Of thousand friends ; then, in a moment, see  
How soon this mightiness meets misery :  
And, if you can be merry then, I'll say  
A man may weep upon his wedding-day.

## KING HENRY VIII.

---

### ACT I.

SCENE I. *London. An ante-chamber in the palace.*

*Enter, on one side, the Duke of NORFOLK; on the other, the Duke of BUCKINGHAM and the Lord ABERGAVENNY.*

*Buck.* Good morrow, and well met. How have ye done  
Since last we saw in France?

*Nor.* I thank your grace,  
Healthful; and ever since a fresh admirer  
Of what I saw there.

*Buck.* An untimely ague  
Stay'd me a prisoner in my chamber, when  
Those suns of glory, those two lights of men,  
Met in the vale of Andren.<sup>(1)</sup>

*Nor.* 'Twixt Guynes and Arde:  
I was then present, saw them salute on horseback;  
Beheld them, when they lighted, how they clung  
In their embracement, as they grew together;  
Which had they, what four thron'd ones could have weigh'd  
Such a compounded one?

*Buck.* All the whole time  
I was my chamber's prisoner.

*Nor.* Then you lost  
The view of earthly glory: men might say,  
Till this time pomp was single, but now married  
To one above itself. Each following day  
Became the next day's master, till the last  
Made former wonders it's: to-day, the French,

All clinquant, all in gold, like heathen gods,  
Shone down the English; and, to-morrow, they  
Made Britain India: every man that stood  
Show'd like a mine. Their dwarfish pages were  
As cherubins, all gilt: the madams too,  
Not us'd to toil, did almost sweat to bear  
The pride upon them, that their very labour  
Was to them as a painting: now this masque  
Was eried incomparable; and the ensuing night  
Made it a fool and beggar. The two kings,  
Equal in lustre, were now best, now worst,  
As presence did present them; him in eye,  
Still him in praise: and, being present both,  
'Twas said they saw but one; and no discernor  
Durst wag his tongue in censure. When these suns  
(For so they phrase 'em) by their heralds challeng'd  
The noble spirits to arms, they did perform  
Beyond thought's compass; that former fabulous story,  
Being now seen possible enough, got credit,  
That Bevis was believ'd.

*Buck.* O, you go far.

*Nor.* As I belong to worship, and affect  
In honour honesty, the tract of every thing  
Would by a good discourser lose some life,  
Which action's self was tongue to.<sup>(2)</sup> All was royal;  
To the disposing of it naught rebell'd,  
Order gave each thing view; the office did  
Distinctly his full function.

*Buck.* Who did guide,  
I mean, who set the body and the limbs  
Of this great sport together, as you guess?

*Nor.* One, certes, that promises no element  
In such a business.

*Buck.* I pray you, who, my lord?

*Nor.* All this was order'd by the good discretion  
Of the right-reverend Cardinal of York.

*Buck.* The devil speed him! no man's pie is freed  
From his ambitious finger. What had he  
'To do in these fierce vanities? I wonder

That such a keech can with his very bulk  
Take up the rays o' the beneficial sun,  
And keep it from the earth.

*Nor.* Surely, sir,  
There's in him stuff that puts him to these ends ;  
For, being not propp'd by ancestry, whose grace  
Chalks successors their way ; nor call'd upon  
For high feats done to the crown ; neither allied  
To eminent assistants ; but, spider-like,  
Out of his self-drawing web, he<sup>(3)</sup> gives us note,  
The force of his own merit makes his way ;  
A gift that heaven gives for him, which buys  
A place next to the king.

*Aber.* I cannot tell  
What heaven hath given him,—let some graver eye  
Pierce into that ; but I can see his pride  
Peep through each part of him : whence has he that ?  
If not from hell, the devil is a niggard ;  
Or has given all before, and he begins  
A new hell in himself.

*Buck.* Why the devil,  
Upon this French going-out, took he upon him,  
Without the privy o' the king, to appoint  
Who should attend on him ? He makes up the file  
Of all the gentry ; for the most part such  
To whom as great a charge as little honour  
He meant to lay upon : and his own letter,  
The honourable board of council out,  
Must fetch him in he papers.

*Aber.* I do know  
Kinsmen of mine, three at the least, that have  
By this so sicken'd their estates, that never  
They shall abound as formerly.

*Buck.* O, many  
Have broke their backs with laying manors on 'em  
For this great journey. What did this vanity  
But minister communication of  
A most poor issue ?

*Nor.* Grievingly I think,

The peace between the French and us not values  
The cost that did conclude it.

*Buck.* Every man,  
After the hideous storm that follow'd, was  
A thing inspir'd; and, not consulting, broke  
Into a general prophecy,—That this tempest,  
Dashing the garment of this peace, aboded  
The sudden breach on't.

*Nor.* Which is budded out;  
For France hath flaw'd the league, and hath attach'd  
Our merchants' goods at Bourdeaux.

*Aber.* Is it therefore  
The ambassador is silenc'd?

*Nor.* Marry, is't.

*Aber.* A proper title of a peace; and purchas'd  
At a superfluous rate!

*Buck.* Why, all this business  
Our reverend cardinal carried.

*Nor.* Like it your grace,  
The state takes notice of the private difference  
Betwixt you and the cardinal. I advise you  
(And take it from a heart that wishes towards you  
Honour and plenteous safety), that you read  
The cardinal's malice and his potency  
Together; to consider further, that  
What his high hatred would effect wants not  
A minister in his power. You know his nature,  
That he's revengeful; and I know his sword  
Hath a sharp edge: it's long, and, 't may be said,  
It reaches far; and where 'twill not extend,  
Thither he darts it. Bosom up my counsel,  
You'll find it wholesome.—Lo, where comes that rock  
That I advise your shunning.

*Enter Cardinal WOLSEY (the purse borne before him), certain of the  
Guard, and two Secretaries with papers* The Cardinal in his  
passage fixeth his eye on BUCKINGHAM, and BUCKINGHAM on  
him, both full of disdain.

*Wol.* The Duke of Buckingham's surveyor, ha?



Where's his examination?

*First Secr.* Here, so please you.

*Wol.* Is he in person ready?

*First Secr.* Ay, please your grace.

*Wol.* Well, we shall then know more; and Buckingham  
Shall lessen this big look. [*Exeunt Wolsey and Train.*]

*Buck.* This butcher's cur is venom-mouth'd,<sup>(4)</sup> and I  
Have not the power to muzzle him; therefore best  
Not wake him in his slumber. A beggar's book  
Outworths a noble's blood.

*Nor.* What, are you chaf'd?  
Ask God for temperance; that's the appliance only  
Which your disease requires.

*Buck.* I read in's looks  
Matter against me; and his eye revil'd  
Me, as his abject object: at this instant  
He bores me with some trick: he's gone to the king;  
I'll follow, and outstare him.

*Nor.* Stay, my lord,  
And let your reason with your choler question  
What 'tis you go about: to climb steep hills  
Requires slow pace at first: anger is like  
A full-hot horse, who being allow'd his way,  
Self-mettle tires him. Not a man in England  
Can advise me like you: be to yourself  
As you would to your friend.

*Buck.* I'll to the king;  
And from a mouth of honour quite cry down  
This Ipswich fellow's insolence; or proclaim  
There's difference in no persons.

*Nor.* Be advis'd;  
Heat not a furnace for your foe so hot  
That it do singe yourself: we may outrun,  
By violent swiftness, that which we run at,  
And lose by over-running. Know you not,  
The fire that mounts the liquor till't run o'er,  
In seeming to augment it wastes it? Be advis'd:  
I say again, there is no English soul  
More stronger to direct you than yourself,

If with the sap of reason you would quench,  
Or but allay, the fire of passion.

*Buck.*

*Sir,*

I am thankful to you ; and I'll go along  
By your prescription : but this top-proud fellow  
(Whom from the flow of gall I name not, but  
From sincere motions), by intelligence,  
And proofs as clear as founts in July, when  
We see each grain of gravel, I do know  
To be corrupt and treasonous.

*Nor.*

Say not, treasonous.

*Buck.* To the king I'll say't; and make my vouch as strong  
As shore of rock. Attend. This holy fox,  
Or wolf, or both (for he is equal ravenous  
As he is subtle, and as prone to mischief  
As able to perform't; his mind and place  
Infecting one another, yea, reciprocally),  
Only to show his pomp as well in France  
As here at home, suggests the king our master  
To this last costly treaty, the interview,  
That swallow'd so much treasure, and like a glass  
Did break i' the rinsing.<sup>(6)</sup>

*Nor.*

Faith, and so it did.

*Buck.* Pray, give me favour, sir. This cunning cardinal  
The articles o' the combination drew  
As himself pleas'd; and they were ratified  
As he cried, *Thus let be: to as much end*  
As give a crutch to the dead: but our count-cardinal  
Has done this, and 'tis well; for worthy Wolsey,  
Who cannot err, he did it. Now this follows  
(Which, as I take it, is a kind of puppy  
To the old dam, treason),—Charles the emperor,  
Under pretence to see the queen his aunt  
(For 'twas indeed his colour, but he came  
To whisper Wolsey), here makes visitation:  
His fears were, that the interview betwixt  
England and France might, through their amity,  
Breed him some prejudice; for from this league  
Peep'd harms that menac'd him: he<sup>(6)</sup> privily

Deals with our cardinal; and, as I trow,—  
Which I do well; for, I am sure, the emperor  
Paid ere he promis'd; whereby his suit was granted  
Ere it was ask'd;—but when the way was made,  
And pay'd with gold, the emperor thus desir'd,—  
That he would please to alter the king's course,  
And break the foresaid peace. Let the king know  
(As soon he shall by me), that thus the cardinal  
Does buy and sell his honour as he pleases,  
And for his own advantage.

*Nor.* I am sorry  
To hear this of him; and could wish he were  
Something mistaken in't.

*Buck.* No, not a syllable:  
I do pronounce him in that very shape  
He shall appear in proof.

*Enter BRANDON, a Sergeant-at-arms before him, and two or three of  
the Guard.*

*Bran.* Your office, sergeant; execute it.  
*Serg.* Sir,  
My lord the Duke of Buckingham, and Earl  
Of Hereford, Stafford, and Northampton, I  
Arrest thee of high treason, in the name  
Of our most sovereign king.

*Buck.* Lo, you, my lord,  
The net has fall'n upon me! I shall perish  
Under device and practice.

*Bran.* I am sorry  
To see you ta'en from liberty, to look on  
The business present: 'tis his highness' pleasure  
You shall to the Tower.

*Buck.* It will help me nothing  
To plead mine innocence; for that dye is on me  
Which makes my whit'st part black. The will of heaven  
Be done in this and all things!—I obey.—  
O my Lord Aberga'ny, fare you well!

*Bran.* Nay, he must bear you company.—The king  
[*To Abergavenny.*

Is pleas'd you shall to the Tower, till you know  
How he determines further.

*Aber.* As the duke said,  
The will of heaven be done, and the king's pleasure  
By me obey'd!

*Bran.* Here is a warrant from  
The king to attach Lord Montacute; and the bodies  
Of the duke's confessor, John de la Car,  
One Gilbert Peck, his chancellor,—(7)

*Buck.* So, so;  
These are the limbs o' the plot:—no more, I hope.

*Bran.* A monk o' the Chartreux.

*Buck.* O, Nicholas Hopkins? (8)

*Bran.* He.

*Buck.* My surveyor is false; the o'er-great cardinal  
Hath show'd him gold; my life is spann'd already:  
I am the shadow of poor Buckingham,  
Whose figure even this instant cloud puts on,  
By darkening my clear sun.—My lord, farewell. (9) [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II. *The same. The council-chamber.*

*Cornets.* Enter King HENRY, Cardinal WOLSEY, the Lords of the  
Council, Sir THOMAS LOVELL, Officers, and Attendants. *The*  
*King enters leaning on the Cardinal's shoulder.*

*K. Hen.* My life itself, and the best heart of it,  
Thanks you for this great care: I stood i' the level  
Of a full-charg'd confederacy, and give thanks  
To you that chok'd it.—Let be call'd before us  
That gentleman of Buckingham's: in person  
I'll hear him his confessions justify;  
And point by point the treasons of his master  
He shall again relate.

[*The King takes his state. The Lords of the Coun-  
cil take their several places. The Cardinal  
places himself under the King's feet, on his  
right side.*

*A noise within, crying "Room for the Queen!" Enter Queen KATHARINE, ushered by the Dukes of NORFOLK and SUFFOLK: she kneels. The King riseth from his state, takes her up, kisses, and placeth her by him.*

*Q. Kath.* Nay, we must longer kneel: I am a suitor.

*K. Hen.* Arise, and take place by us:—half your suit  
Never name to us; you have half our power:  
The other moiety, ere you ask, is given;  
Repeat your will, and take it.

*Q. Kath.* Thank your majesty.  
That you would love yourself, and in that love  
Not unconsider'd leave your honour, nor  
The dignity of your office, is the point  
Of my petition.

*K. Hen.* Lady mine, proceed.

*Q. Kath.* I am solicited, not by a few,  
And those of true condition, that your subjects  
Are in great grievance: there have been commissions  
Sent down among 'em, which hath slaw'd the heart  
Of all their loyalties:—wherein, although,  
My good lord cardinal, they vent reproaches  
Most bitterly on you, as putter-on  
Of these exactions, yet the king our master  
(Whose honour heaven shield from soil!), even he escapes not  
Language unmannerly, yea, such which breaks  
The sides of loyalty, and almost appears  
In loud rebellion.

*Nor.* Not almost appears,—  
It doth appear; for, upon these taxations,  
The clothiers all, not able to maintain  
The many to them longing, have put off  
The spinsters, carders, fullers, weavers, who,  
Unfit for other life, compell'd by hunger  
And lack of other means, in desperate manner  
Daring the event to the teeth, are all in uproar,  
And danger serves among them.

*K. Hen.* Taxation!  
Wherein? and what taxation?—My lord cardinal,

You that are blam'd for it alike with us,  
Know you of this taxation?

*Vol.* Please you, sir,  
I know but of a single part, in aught  
Pertains to the state; and front but in that file  
Where others tell steps with me.

*Q. Kath.* No, my lord,  
You know no more than others; but you frame  
Things that are known alike; which are not wholesome  
'To those which would not know them, and yet must  
Perforce be their acquaintance. These exactions,  
Whereof my sovereign would have note, they are  
Most pestilent to the hearing; and, to bear 'em,  
'The back is sacrifice to the load. They say  
They are devis'd by you; or else you suffer  
Too hard an exclamation.

*K. Hen.* Still exaction!  
'The nature of it? in what kind, let's know,  
Is this exaction?

*Q. Kath.* I am much too venturous  
In tempting of your patience; but am bolden'd  
Under your promis'd pardon. 'The subjects' grief  
Comes through commissions, which compel from each  
The sixth part of his substance, to be levied  
Without delay; and the pretence for this  
Is nam'd, your wars in France: this makes bold mouths:  
Tongues spit their duties out, and cold hearts freeze  
Allegiance in them; their curses now  
Live where their prayers did: and it's come to pass,  
This<sup>(10)</sup> tractable obedience is a slave  
To each incensèd will. I would your highness  
Would give it quick consideration, for  
'There is no primer business.'<sup>(11)</sup>

*K. Hen.* By my life,  
This is against our pleasure.

*Vol.* And for me,  
I have no further gone in this than by  
A single voice; and that not pass'd me but  
By learnèd approbation of the judges. If I am

Traduc'd by ignorant tongues, which neither know  
 My faculties nor person, yet will be  
 The chronicles of my doing,—let me say  
 'Tis but the fate of place, and the rough brake  
 That virtue must go through. We must not stint  
 Our necessary actions, in the fear  
 To cope malicious censurers; which ever,  
 As ravenous fishes, do a vessel follow  
 That is new-trimm'd, but benefit no further  
 Than vainly longing. What we oft do best,  
 By sick interpreters, once weak ones, is  
 Not ours, or not allow'd; what worst, as oft,  
 Hitting a grosser quality, is cried up  
 For our best act.<sup>(13)</sup> If we shall stand still,  
 In fear our motion will be mock'd or carp'd at,  
 We should take root here where we sit, or sit  
 State-statues only.

*K. Hen.* Things done well,  
 And with a care, exempt themselves from fear;  
 Things done without example, in their issue  
 Are to be fear'd. Have you a precedent  
 Of this commission? I believe, not any.  
 We must not rend our subjects from our laws,  
 And stick them in our will. Sixth part of each?  
 A trembling<sup>(13)</sup> contribution! Why, we take  
 From every tree lop, bark, and part o' the timber;  
 And, though we leave it, with a root, thus hack'd,  
 The air will drink the sap. To every county  
 Where this is question'd send our letters, with  
 Free pardon to each man that has denied  
 The force of this commission: pray, look to't;  
 I put it to your care.

*Wol.* A word with you. [*To the Secretary.*  
 Let there be letters writ to every shire,  
 Of the king's grace and pardon. The griev'd commons  
 Hardly conceive of me; let it be nois'd  
 That through our intercession this revokement  
 And pardon comes: I shall anon advise you  
 Further in the proceeding. [*Exit Secretary.*

*Enter Surveyor.*

*Q. Kath.* I am sorry that the Duke of Buckingham  
Is run in your displeasure.

*K. Hen.*

It grieves many :

The gentleman is learn'd, and a most rare speaker ;  
To nature none more bound ; his training such,  
That he may furnish and instruct great teachers,  
And never seek for aid out of himself. Yet see,  
When these so noble benefits shall prove  
Not well dispos'd, the mind growing once corrupt,  
They turn to vicious forms, ten times more ugly  
Than ever they were fair. This man so complete,  
Who was enroll'd 'mongst wonders, and when we,  
Almost with ravish'd listening, could not find  
His hour of speech a minute ; he, my lady,  
Hath into monstrous habits put the graces  
That once were his, and is become as black  
As if besmear'd in hell. Sit by us ; you shall hear  
(This was his gentleman in trust) of him  
Things to strike honour sad.—Bid him recount  
The fore-recited practices ; whereof  
We cannot feel too little, hear too much.

*Vol.* Stand forth, and with bold spirit relate what you,  
Most like a careful subject, have collected  
Out of the Duke of Buckingham.

*K. Hen.*

Speak freely.

*Surv.* First, it was usual with him, every day  
It would infect his speech,—that if the king  
Should without issue die, he'll<sup>(14)</sup> carry it so  
To make the sceptre his : these very words  
I've heard him utter to his son-in-law,  
Lord Abergavenny ; to whom by oath he menac'd  
Revenge upon the cardinal.

*Vol.*

Please your highness, note

This dangerous conception in this point.  
Not friended by his wish, to your high person  
His will is most malignant ; and it stretches  
Beyond you, to your friends.



*Q. Kath.* My learn'd lord cardinal,  
Deliver all with charity.

*K. Hen.* Speak on :  
How grounded he his title to the crown,  
Upon our fail ? to this point hast thou heard him  
At any time speak aught ?

*Surv.* He was brought to this  
By a vain prophecy of Nicholas Hopkins.<sup>(15)</sup>

*K. Hen.* What was that Hopkins ?

*Surv.* Sir, a Chartreux friar,  
His confessor ; who fed him every minute  
With words of sovereignty.

*K. Hen.* How know'st thou this ?

*Surv.* Not long before your highness sped to France,  
The duke being at the Rose, within the parish  
Saint Lawrence Poultney, did of me demand  
What was the speech among the Londoners  
Concerning the French journey : I replied,  
Men fear'd<sup>(16)</sup> the French would prove perfidious,  
To the king's danger. Presently the duke  
Said, 'twas the fear, indeed ; and that he doubted  
'Twould prove the verity of certain words  
Spoke by a holy monk ; " that oft," says he,  
" Hath sent to me, wishing me to permit  
John de la Car, my chaplain, a choice hour  
To hear from him a matter of some moment ;  
Whom after under the confession's seal<sup>(17)</sup>  
He solemnly had sworn, that what he spoke  
My chaplain to no creature living, but  
To me, should utter, with demure confidence  
Thus pausingly ensu'd,—Neither the king nor 's heirs  
(Tell you the duke) shall prosper : bid him strive  
To gain<sup>(18)</sup> the love o' the commonalty : the duke  
Shall govern England."

*Q. Kath.* If I know you well,  
You were the duke's surveyor, and lost your office  
On the complaint o' the tenants : take good heed  
You charge not in your spleen a noble person,  
And spoil your nobler soul : I say, take heed ;

Yes, heartily beseech you.

*K. Hen.*

Let him on,—

Go forward.

*Surv.*

On my soul, I'll speak but truth.

I told my lord the duke, by the devil's illusions

The monk might be deceiv'd; and that 'twas dangerous for  
him<sup>(19)</sup>

To ruminate on this so far, until

It forg'd him some design, which, being believ'd,

It was much like to do: he answer'd, "Tush,

It can do me no damage;" adding further,

That, had the king in his last sickness fail'd,

The cardinal's and Sir Thomas Lovell's heads

Should have gone off.

*K. Hen.*

Ha! what, so rank? Ah-ha!

There's mischief in this man:—canst thou say further?

*Surv.* I can, my liege.

*K. Hen.*

Proceed.

*Surv.*

Being at Greenwich,

After your highness had reprov'd the duke

About Sir William Blomer,—

*K. Hen.*

I remember

Of such a time:—being my sworn servant,

The duke retain'd him his.—But on; what hence?

*Surv.* "If," quoth he, "I for this had been committed,

As, to the Tower, I thought,—I would have play'd

The part my father meant to act upon

The usurper Richard; who, being at Salisbury,

Made suit to come in 's presence; which if granted,

As he made semblance of his duty, would

Have put his knife into him."

*K. Hen.*

A giant traitor!

*Vol.* Now, madam, may his highness live in freedom,

And this man out of prison?

*Q. Kath.*

God mend all!

*K. Hen.* There's something more would out of thee; what  
say'st?

*Surv.* After "the duke his father," with "the knife,"

He stretch'd him, and, with one hand on his dagger,

Another spread on 's breast, mounting his eyes,  
 He did discharge a horrible oath; whose tenour  
 Was,—were he evil us'd, he would outgo  
 His father by as much as a performance  
 Does an irresolute purpose.

*K. Hen.* There's his period,  
 To sheathe his knife in us. He is attach'd;  
 Call him to present trial: if he may  
 Find mercy in the law, 'tis his; if none,  
 Let him not seek 't of us: by day and night,  
 He's traitor to the height.<sup>(20)</sup> [*Exeunt.*

SCENE III. *The same. A room in the palace.*

*Enter the Lord Chamberlain and Lord SANDS.*

*Cham.* Is't possible the spells of France should juggle  
 Men into such strange mysteries?

*Sands.* New customs,  
 Though they be never so ridiculous,  
 Nay, let 'em be unmanly, yet are follow'd.

*Cham.* As far as I see, all the good our English  
 Have got by the late voyage is but merely  
 A fit or two o' the face; but they are shrewd ones;  
 For when they hold 'em, you would swear directly  
 Their very noses had been counsellors  
 To Pepin or Clotharius, they keep state so.

*Sands.* They have all new legs, and lame ones: one would  
 take it,  
 That never saw 'em pace before, the spavin  
 Or springhalt reign'd among 'em.<sup>(21)</sup>

*Cham.* Death! my lord,  
 Their clothes are after such a pagan cut too,<sup>(22)</sup>  
 That, sure, they've worn out Christendom.

*Enter Sir THOMAS LOVELL.*

How now!  
 What news, Sir Thomas Lovell?

*Lov.* Faith, my lord,  
 I hear of none, but the new proclamation

That's clapp'd upon the court-gate.

*Cham.*

What is't for?

*Lov.* The reformation of our travell'd gallants,  
That fill the court with quarrels, talk, and tailors.

*Cham.* I'm glad 'tis there: now I would pray our mon-  
sieurs

To think an English courtier may be wise,  
And never see the Louvre.

*Lov.*

They must either

(For so run the conditions) leave those remnants  
Of fool and feather, that they got in France,  
With all their honourable points of ignorance  
Pertaining thereunto (as fights and fireworks ;  
Abusing better men than they can be,  
Out of a foreign wisdom), renouncing clean  
The faith they have in tennis, and tall stockings,  
Short blister'd breeches, and those types of travel,  
And understand again like honest men ;  
Or pack to their old playfellows: there, I take it,  
They may, *cum privilegio*, wear<sup>(23)</sup> away  
The lag end of their lewdness, and be laugh'd at.

*Sands.* 'Tis time to give 'em physick, their diseases  
Are grown so catching.

*Cham.*

What a loss our ladies

Will have of these trim vanities!

*Lov.*

Ay, marry,

There will be woe indeed, lords: the sly whoresons  
Have got a speeding trick to lay down ladies ;  
A French song and a fiddle has no fellow.

*Sands.* The devil fiddle 'em! I am glad they are going  
(For, sure, there's no converting of 'em): now  
An honest country lord, as I am, beaten  
A long time out of play, may bring his plain-song,  
And have an hour of hearing; and, by'r lady,  
Held current music too.

*Cham.*

Well said, Lord Sands;

Your colt's tooth is not cast yet.

*Sands.*

No, my lord;

Nor shall not, while I have a stump.

*Cham.* Sir Thomas,  
Whither were you a-going?

*Lov.* To the cardinal's:  
Your lordship is a guest too.

*Cham.* O, 'tis true:  
This night he makes a supper, and a great one,  
To many lords and ladies; there will be  
The beauty of this kingdom, I'll assure you.

*Lov.* That churchman bears a bounteous mind indeed,  
A hand as fruitful as the land that feeds us;  
His dews fall every where.

*Cham.* No doubt he's noble;  
He had a black mouth that said other of him.

*Sands.* He may, my lord,—has<sup>(24)</sup> wherewithal; in him  
Sparing would show a worse sin than ill doctrine;  
Men of his way should be most liberal;  
They are set here for examples.

*Cham.* True, they are so;  
But few now give so great ones. My barge stays;  
Your lordship shall along.—Come, good Sir Thomas,  
We shall be late else; which I would not be,  
For I was spoke to, with Sir Henry Guildford  
This night to be comptrollers.

*Sands.* I am your lordship's. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV. *The same. The presence-chamber in York-Place.*

*Hautboys.* A small table under a state for the Cardinal, a longer  
table for the guests. Enter, on one side, ANNE BULLEN and  
divers Lords, Ladies, and Gentlewomen, as guests; on the  
other, enter Sir HENRY GUILDFORD.

*Guild.* Ladies, a general welcome from his grace  
Salutes ye all; this night he dedicates  
To fair content and you: none here, he hopes,  
In all this noble bevy, has brought with her  
One care abroad; he would have all as merry  
As, first, good company, good wine, good welcome,  
Can make good people.—O, my lord, you're tardy:

*Enter Lord Chamberlain, Lord SANDS, and Sir THOMAS LOVELL.*  
 The very thought of this fair company  
 Clapp'd wings to me.

*Cham.* You are young, Sir Harry Guildford.

*Sands.* Sir Thomas Lovell, had the cardinal  
 But half my lay thoughts in him, some of these  
 Should find a running banquet ere they rested,  
 I think would better please 'em : by my life,  
 They are a sweet society of fair ones.

*Lov.* O, that your lordship were but now confessor  
 To one or two of these !

*Sands.* I would I were ;  
 They should find easy penance.

*Lov.* Faith, how easy ?

*Sands.* As easy as a down-bed would afford it.

*Cham.* Sweet ladies, will it please you sit ?—Sir Harry,  
 Place you that side ; I'll take the charge of this :  
 His grace is entering.—Nay, you must not freeze ;  
 Two women plac'd together makes cold weather :—  
 My Lord Sands, you are one will keep 'em waking ;  
 Pray, sit between these ladies.

*Sands.* By my faith,  
 And thank your lordship.—By your leave, sweet ladies :

*[Seats himself between Anne Bullen and another Lady.]*  
 If I chance to talk a little wild, forgive me ;  
 I had it from my father.

*Anne.* Was he mad, sir ?

*Sands.* O, very mad, exceeding mad, in love too :  
 But he would bite none ; just as I do now,—  
 He would kiss you twenty with a breath. *[Kisses her.]*

*Cham.* Well said, my lord.—  
 So, now you're fairly seated.—Gentlemen,  
 The penance lies on you, if these fair ladies  
 Pass away frowning.

*Sands.* For my little curc,  
 Let me alone.

*Haulboys.* *Enter Cardinal WOLSEY, attended, and takes his state.*

*Wol.* Ye're welcome, my fair guests : that noble lady,

Or gentleman, that is not freely merry,  
Is not my friend: this, to confirm my welcome;  
And to you all, good health. [Drinks.

*Sands.* Your grace is noble:—  
Let me have such a bowl may hold my thanks,  
And save me so much talking.

*Wol.* My Lord Sands,  
I am beholding to you: cheer your neighbours.—  
Ladies, you are not merry:—gentlemen,  
Whose fault is this?

*Sands.* The red wine first must rise  
In their fair cheeks, my lord; then we shall have 'em  
Talk us to silence.

*Anne.* You are a merry gamester,  
My Lord Sands.

*Sands.* Yes, if I make my play.  
Here's to your ladyship: and pledge it, madam,  
For 'tis to such a thing,—

*Anne.* You cannot show me.

*Sands.* I told your grace they would talk anon.

[Drum and trumpets, chambers discharged, within.]

*Wol.* What's that?

*Cham.* Look out there, some of ye. [Exit a Servant.]

*Wol.* What warlike voice,

And to what end, is this?—Nay, ladies, fear not;  
By all the laws of war ye're privileg'd.

*Re-enter Servant.*

*Cham.* How now! what is't?

*Serv.* A noble troop of strangers,—  
For so they seem: they 've left their barge, and landed;  
And hither make, as great ambassadors  
From foreign princes.

*Wol.* Good lord chamberlain,  
Go, give 'em welcome; you can speak the French tongue;  
And, pray, receive 'em nobly, and conduct 'em  
Into our presence, where this heaven of beauty  
Shall shine at full upon them.—Some attend him.

[Exit Chamberlain, attended. All rise, and tables removed.]

You have now a broken banquet ; but we'll mend it.  
 A good digestion to you all : and once more  
 I shower a welcome on ye ;—welcome all.

*Hautboys. Enter the King and others, as masquers, habited like shepherds, ushered by the Lord Chamberlain. They pass directly before the Cardinal, and gracefully salute him.*

A noble company ! what are their pleasures ?

*Cham.* Because they speak no English, thus they pray'd  
 To tell your grace,—that, having heard by fame  
 Of this so noble and so fair assembly  
 'This night to meet here, they could do no less,  
 Out of the great respect they bear to beauty,  
 But leave their flocks ; and, under your fair conduct,  
 Crave leave to view these ladies, and entreat  
 An hour of revels with 'em.

*Wol.* Say, lord chamberlain,  
 They have done my poor house grace ; for which I pay 'em  
 A thousand thanks, and pray 'em take their pleasures.

*[Ladies chosen for the dance. The King chooses Anne Bullen.]*

*K. Hen.* The fairest hand I ever touch'd ! O beauty,  
 Till now I never knew thee ! *[Music. Dance.]*

*Wol.* My lord,—

*Cham.* Your grace ?

*Wol.* Pray, tell 'em thus much from me :—  
 There should be one amongst 'em, by his person,  
 More worthy this place than myself ; to whom,  
 If I but knew him, with my love and duty  
 I would surrender it.

*Cham.* I will, my lord.

*[Goes to the Masquers, and returns.]*

*Wol.* What say they ?

*Cham.* Such a one, they all confess,  
 There is indeed ; which they would have your grace  
 Find out, and he will take it.

*Wol.* Let me see, then.

*[Comes from his state.]*



By all your good leaves, gentlemen ;—here I'll make  
My royal choice.

*K. Hen.* Ye have found him, cardinal : [*Unmasking.*  
You hold a fair assembly ; you do well, lord :  
You are a churchman, or, I'll tell you, cardinal,  
I should judge now unhappily.

*Wol.* I am glad  
Your grace is grown so pleasant.

*K. Hen.* My lord chamberlain,  
Prithce, come hither : what fair lady's that ?

*Cham.* An't please your grace, Sir Thomas Bullen's  
daughter,—

The Viscount Rochford,—one of her highness' women.

*K. Hen.* By heaven, she is a dainty one.—Sweetheart,  
I were unmannerly, to take you out,  
And not to kiss you.—A health, gentlemen !  
Let it go round.

*Wol.* Sir Thomas Lovell, is the banquet ready  
I' the privy chamber ?

*Lov.* Yes, my lord.

*Wol.* Your grace,  
I fear, with dancing is a little heated.

*K. Hen.* I fear, too much.

*Wol.* There's fresher air, my lord,  
In the next chamber.

*K. Hen.* Lead in your ladies, every one :—sweet partner,  
*I must not yet forsake you :—let's be merry :—*  
Good my lord cardinal, I have half a dozen healths  
To drink to these fair ladies, and a measure  
To lead 'em once again ; and then let's dream  
Who's best in favour.—Let the music knock it.

[*Exeunt with trumpets.*]

## ACT II.

SCENE I. *London. A street.*

*Enter two Gentlemen, meeting.*

*First Gent.* Whither away so fast ?

*Sec. Gent.* O,—God save ye!  
E'en to the hall, to hear what shall become  
Of the great Duke of Buckingham.

*First Gent.* I'll save you  
That labour, sir. All's now done, but the ceremony  
Of bringing back the prisoner.

*Sec. Gent.* Were you there?

*First Gent.* Yes, indeed, was I.

*Sec. Gent.* Pray, speak what has happen'd.

*First Gent.* You may guess quickly what.

*Sec. Gent.* Is he found guilty?

*First Gent.* Yes, truly is he, and condemn'd upon 't.

*Sec. Gent.* I am sorry for 't.

*First Gent.* So are a number more.

*Sec. Gent.* But, pray, how pass'd it?

*First Gent.* I'll tell you in a little. The great duke  
Came to the bar; where to his accusations  
He pleaded still, not guilty, and alleg'd  
Many sharp reasons to defeat the law.  
The king's attorney, on the contrary,  
Urg'd on the examinations, proofs, confessions  
Of divers witnesses; which the duke desir'd  
To have<sup>(25)</sup> brought, *vivâ voce*, to his face:  
At which appear'd against him his surveyor;  
Sir Gilbert Peck his chancellor; and John Car,  
Confessor to him; with that devil-monk,  
Hopkins, that made this mischief.

*Sec. Gent.* That was he  
That fed him with his prophecies?

*First Gent.* The same.  
All these accus'd him strongly; which he fain  
Would have flung from him, but, indeed, he could not:  
And so his peers, upon this evidence,  
Have found him guilty of high treason. Much  
He spoke, and learnedly, for life; but all  
Was either pitied in him or forgotten.

*Sec. Gent.* After all this, how did he bear himself?

*First Gent.* When he was brought again to the bar, to  
hear

His knell rung out, his judgment,—he was stirr'd  
 With such an agony, he swet extremely,  
 And something spoke in choler, ill, and hasty :  
 But he fell to himself again, and sweetly  
 In all the rest show'd a most noble patience.

*Sec. Gent.* I do not think he fears death.

*First Gent.*

Sure, he does not,—

He never was so womanish ; the cause  
 He may a little grieve at.

*Sec. Gent.*

Certainly

The cardinal is the end of this.

*First Gent.*

'Tis likely,

By all conjectures : first, Kildare's attainder,  
 Then deputy of Ireland ; who remov'd,  
 Earl Surrey was sent thither, and in haste too,  
 Lest he should help his father.

*Sec. Gent.*

That trick of state

Was a deep envious one.

*First Gent.*

At his return

No doubt he will requite it. This is noted,  
 And generally,—whoever the king favours,  
 The cardinal instantly will find employment,  
 And far enough from court too.

*Sec. Gent.*

All the commons

Hate him perniciously, and, o' my conscience,  
 Wish him ten fathom deep : this duke as much  
 They love and dote on ; call him bounteous Buckingham,  
 The mirror of all courtesies,—

*First Gent.*

Stay there, sir,

And see the noble ruin'd man you speak of.

*Enter BUCKINGHAM from his arraignment, tipstaves before him; the  
 axe with the edge towards him, halberds on each side with him  
 Sir THOMAS LOVELL, Sir NICHOLAS VAUX, Sir WILLIAM SANDS,  
 and common people.*

*Sec. Gent.* Let's stand close, and behold him.

*Buck.*

All good people,

You that thus far have come to pity me,  
 Hear what I say, and then go home and lose me.

I have this day receiv'd a traitor's judgment,  
And by that name must die: yet, heaven bear witness,  
And if I have a conscience, let it sink me,  
Even as the axe falls, if I be not faithful!  
The law I bear no malice for my death;  
'T has done, upon the premises, but justice:  
But those that sought it I could wish more Christians:  
*Be what they will, I heartily forgive 'em:*  
Yet let 'em look they glory not in mischief,  
Nor build their evils on the graves of great men;  
For then my guiltless blood must cry against 'em.  
For further life in this world I ne'er hope,  
Nor will I sue, although the king have mercies  
More than I dare make faults. You few that lov'd me,  
And dare be bold to weep for Buckingham,  
His noble friends and fellows, whom to leave  
Is only bitter to him, only dying,  
Go with me, like good angels, to my end;  
And, as the long divorce of steel falls on me,  
Make of your prayers one sweet sacrifice,  
And lift my soul to heaven.—Lead on, o' God's name.

*Lov.* I do beseech your grace, for charity,  
If ever any malice in your heart  
Were hid against me, now to forgive me frankly.

*Buck.* Sir Thomas Lovell, I as free forgive you  
As I would be forgiven: I forgive all;  
There cannot be those numberless offences  
'Gainst me, that I cannot take<sup>(26)</sup> peace with: no black envy  
Shall mark<sup>(27)</sup> my grave.—Commend me to his grace;  
And, if he speak of Buckingham, pray, tell him  
You met him half in heaven: my vows and prayers  
Yet are the king's; and, till my soul forsake,  
Shall cry for blessings on him: may he live  
Longer than I have time to tell his years!  
Ever belov'd and loving may his rule be!  
And when old time shall lead him to his end,  
Goodness and he fill up one monument!

*Lov.* To the water side I must conduct your grace;

Then give my charge up to Sir Nicholas Vaux,  
Who undertakes you to your end.

*Vaux.* Prepare there,  
The duke is coming: see the barge be ready;  
And fit it with such furniture as suits  
The greatness of his person.

*Buck.* Nay, Sir Nicholas,  
Let it alone; my state now will but mock me.  
When I came hither, I was lord high constable  
And Duke of Buckingham; now, poor Edward Bohun:  
Yet I am richer than my base accusers,  
That never knew what truth meant: I now seal it;  
And with that blood will make 'em one day groan for't.  
My noble father, Henry of Buckingham,  
Who first rais'd head against usurping Richard,  
Flying for succour to his servant Banister,  
Being distress'd, was by that wretch betray'd,  
And without trial fell; God's peace be with him!  
Henry the Seventh succeeding, truly pitying  
My father's loss, like a most royal prince,  
Restor'd me to my honours, and, out of ruins,  
Made my name once more noble. Now his son,  
Henry the Eighth, life, honour, name, and all  
That made me happy, at one stroke has taken  
For ever from the world. I had my trial,  
And, must needs say, a noble one; which makes me  
A little happier than my wretched father:  
Yet thus far we are one in fortunes,—both  
Fell by our servants, by those men we lov'd most;  
A most unnatural and faithless service!  
Heaven has an end in all: yet, you that hear me,  
This from a dying man receive as certain:—  
Where you are liberal of your loves and counsels  
Be sure you be not loose; for those you make friends  
And give your hearts to, when they once perceive  
The least rub in your fortunes, fall away  
Like water from ye, never found again  
But where they mean to sink ye. All good people,

Pray for me! I must now forsake ye: the last hour  
Of my long weary life is come upon me.  
Farewell:

And when you would say something that is sad,  
Speak how I fell.—I have done; and God forgive me!

[*Exeunt Buckingham and Train.*]

*First Gent.* O, this is full of pity!—Sir, it calls,  
I fear, too many curses on their heads  
That were the authors.

*Sec. Gent.* If the duke be guiltless,  
'Tis full of woe: yet I can give you inkling  
Of an ensuing evil, if it fall,  
Greater than this.

*First Gent.* Good angels keep it from us!  
Where may it be? You do not doubt my faith, sir?

*Sec. Gent.* This secret is so weighty, 'twill require  
A strong faith to conceal it.

*First Gent.* Let me have it;  
I do not talk much.

*Sec. Gent.* I am confident;  
You shall, sir: did you not of late days hear  
A buzzing of a separation  
Between the king and Katharine?

*First Gent.* Yes, but it held not:  
For when the king once heard it, out of anger  
He sent command to the lord mayor straight  
To stop the rumour, and allay those tongues  
That durst disperse it.

*Sec. Gent.* But that slander, sir,  
Is found a truth now: for it grows again,  
Fresher than e'er it was; and held for certain  
The king will venture at it. Either the cardinal,  
Or some about him near, have, out of malice  
To the good queen, possess'd him with a scruple  
That will undo her: to confirm this too,  
Cardinal Campeius is arriv'd, and lately;  
As all think, for this business.

*First Gent.* 'Tis the cardinal;  
And merely to revenge him on the emperor

For not bestowing on him, at his asking,  
The archbishopric of Toledo, this is purpos'd.

*Sec. Gent.* I think you have hit the mark: but is't not  
cruel

That she should feel the smart of this? The cardinal  
Will have his will, and she must fall.

*First Gent.* 'Tis woful.

We are too open here to argue this;  
Let's think in private more.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. *The same. An ante-chamber in the palace.*

*Enter the Lord Chamberlain, reading a letter*

*Cham.* "My lord,—The horses your lordship sent for, with all the care I had, I saw well chosen, ridden, and furnished. They were young and handsome, and of the best breed in the north. When they were ready to set out for London, a man of my lord cardinal's, by commission and main power, took 'em from me; with this reason,—His master would be served before a subject, if not before the king; which stopped our mouths, sir."

I fear he will indeed: well, let him have them:  
He will have all, I think.

*Enter the Dukes of NORFOLK and SUFFOLK.*

*Nor.* Well met, my lord chamberlain.

*Cham.* Good day to both your graces.

*Suf.* How is the king employ'd?

*Cham.* I left him private,  
Full of sad thoughts and troubles.

*Nor.* What's the cause?

*Cham.* It seems the marriage with his brother's wife  
Has crept too near his conscience.

*Suf.* No, his conscience  
Has crept too near another lady.

*Nor.* 'Tis so:  
This is the cardinal's doing, the king-cardinal:

That blind priest, like the eldest son of fortune,  
Turns what he list. The king will know him one day.

*Suf.* Pray God he do! he'll never know himself else.

*Nor.* How holily he works in all his business!

And with what zeal! for, now he has crack'd the league  
Between us and the emperor, the queen's great-nephew,  
He dives into the king's soul, and there scatters  
Dangers, doubts, wringing of the conscience,  
Fears, and despairs,—and all these for his marriage:  
And out of all these to restore the king,  
He counsels a divorce; a loss of her  
That, like a jewel, has hung twenty years  
About his neck, yet never lost her lustre;  
Of her that loves him with that excellence  
That angels love good men with; even of her  
That, when the greatest stroke of fortune falls,  
Will bless the king: and is not this course pious?

*Cham.* Heaven keep me from such counsel! 'Tis most  
true

These news are every where; every tongue speaks 'em,  
And every true heart weeps for't: all that dare  
Look into these affairs see this main end,—  
The French king's sister. Heaven will one day open  
The king's eyes, that so long have slept upon  
This bold bad man.

*Suf.* And free us from his slavery.

*Nor.* We had need pray,

And heartily, for our deliverance;  
Or this imperious man will work us all  
From princes into pages: all men's honours  
Lie like one lump before him, to be fashion'd  
Into what pitch he please.

*Suf.* For me, my lords,

I love him not, nor fear him; there's my creed:  
As I am made without him, so I'll stand,  
If the king please; his curses and his blessings  
Touch me alike, they're breath I not believe in.  
I knew him, and I know him; so I leave him  
To him that made him proud, the pope.



*Nor.* Let's in;  
And with some other business put the king  
From these sad thoughts, that work too much upon him :—  
My lord, you'll bear us company?

*Cham.* Excuse me;  
The king has sent me elsewhere: besides,  
You'll find a most unfit time to disturb him:  
Health to your lordships.

*Nor.* Thanks, my good lord chamberlain.

[*Exit Lord Chamberlain. Norfolk opens a folding-door. The King is discovered sitting, and reading pensively.* (28)]

*Suf.* How sad he looks! sure, he is much afflicted.

*K. Hen.* Who's there, ha?

*Nor.* Pray God he be not angry.

*K. Hen.* Who's there, I say? How dare you thrust  
yourselves

Into my private meditations?

Who am I, ha?

*Nor.* A gracious king that pardons all offences  
Malice ne'er meant: our breach of duty this way  
Is business of estate; in which we come  
To know your royal pleasure.

*K. Hen.* Ye are too bold:  
Go to; I'll make ye know your times of business:  
Is this an hour for temporal affairs, ha?

*Enter WOLSEY and CAMPEIUS.*

Who's there? my good lord cardinal?—O my Wolsey,  
The quiet of my wounded conscience;  
Thou art a cure fit for a king.—You're welcome,

[*To Campeius.*

Most learnèd reverend sir, into our kingdom:  
Use us and it.—My good lord, have great care  
I be not found a talker.

[*To Wolsey.*

*Wol.* Sir, you cannot.  
I would your grace would give us but an hour  
Of private conference.

*K. Hen.* We are busy; go. [*To Norfolk and Suffolk.*

*Nor.* [*aside to Suf.*] This priest has no pride in him !

*Suf.* [*aside to Nor.*] Not to speak of :

I would not be so sick though for his place :

But this cannot continue.

*Nor.* [*aside to Suf.*] If it do,

I'll venture one have-at-him.

*Suf.* [*aside to Nor.*] I another.

[*Exeunt Norfolk and Suffolk.*]

*Wol.* Your grace has given a precedent of wisdom

Above all princes, in committing freely

Your scruple to the voice of Christendom :

Who can be angry now ? what envy reach you ?

The Spaniard, tied by blood and favour to her,

Must now confess, if they have any goodness,

The trial just and noble, All the clerks,

I mean the learnèd ones, in Christian kingdoms

Have their free voices : Rome, the nurse of judgment,

Invited by your noble self, hath sent

One general tongue unto us, this good man,

This just and learnèd priest, Cardinal Campeius,—

Whom once more I present unto your highness.

*K. Hen.* And once more in mine arms I bid him welcome,

And thank the holy conclave for their loves :

They have sent me such a man I would have wish'd for.

*Cam.* Your grace must needs deserve all strangers' loves,

You are so noble. 'To your highness' hand

I tender my commission ;—by whose virtue

(The court of Rome commanding), you, my lord

Cardinal of York, are join'd with me their servant

In the impartial judging of this business.

*K. Hen.* Two equal men. The queen shall be acquainted  
Forthwith for what you come.—Where's Gardmer ?

*Wol.* I know your majesty has always lov'd her

So dear in heart, not to deny her that

A woman of less place might ask by law,—

Scholars allow'd freely to argue for her.

*K. Hen.* Ay, and the best she shall have ; and my favour  
To him that does best : God forbid else. Cardinal,

Prithee, call Gardiner to me, my new secretary :

I find him a fit fellow.

[*Exit Wolsey.*]

*Re-enter WOLSEY, with GARDINER.*

*Wol.* [*aside to Gard.*] Give me your hand : much joy and  
favour to you ;

You are the king's now.

*Gard.* [*aside to Wol.*] But to be commanded  
For ever by your grace, whose hand has rais'd me.

*K. Hen.* Come hither, Gardiner. [*They converse apart.*]

*Cam.* My Lord of York, was not one Doctor Pace  
In this man's place before him ?

*Wol.* Yes, he was.

*Cam.* Was he not held a learn'd man ?

*Wol.* Yes, surely.

*Cam.* Believe me, there's an ill opinion spread, then,  
Even of yourself, lord cardinal.

*Wol.* How ! of me ?

*Cam.* They will not stick to say you envied him ;  
And fearing he would rise, he was so virtuous,  
Kept him a foreign man still ; which so griev'd him,  
That he ran mad and died.

*Wol.* Heaven's peace be with him !  
That's Christian care enough : for living murmurers  
There's places of rebuke. He was a fool ;  
For he would needs be virtuous : that good fellow,  
If I command him, follows my appointment :  
I will have none so near else. Learn this, brother,  
We live not to be grip'd by meaner persons.

*K. Hen.* Deliver this with modesty to the queen.

[*Exit Gardiner.*]

The most convenient place that I can think of  
For such receipt of learning is Black-Friars ;  
There ye shall meet about this weighty business :—  
My Wolsey, see it furnish'd.—O, my lord,  
Would it not grieve an able man to leave  
So sweet a bedfellow ? But, conscience, conscience,—  
O, 'tis a tender place ! and I must leave her. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. *The same. An ante-chamber in the Queen's apartments.*

*Enter ANNE BULLEN and an old Lady.*

*Anne.* Not for that neither: here's the pang that pinches:—  
His highness having liv'd so long with her, and she  
So good a lady that no tongue could ever  
Pronounce dishonour of her,—by my life,  
She never knew harm-doing;—O, now, after  
So many courses of the sun enthron'd,  
Still growing in a majesty and pomp,—the which  
To leave a thousand-fold more bitter than  
'Tis sweet at first to acquire,—after this process,  
To give her the avaunt! it is a pity  
Would move a monster.

*Old L.* Hearts of most hard temper  
Melt and lament for her.

*Anne.* O, God's will! much better  
She ne'er had known pomp: though 't be temporal,  
Yet, if that quarrel, fortune, do divorce  
It from the bearer, 'tis a sufferance panging  
As soul and body's severing.

*Old L.* Alas, poor lady!  
She's a stranger now again.

*Anne.* So much the more  
Must pity drop upon her. Verily,  
I swear, 'tis better to be lowly born,  
And range with humble livers in content,  
Than to be perk'd up in a glistening grief,  
And wear a golden sorrow.

*Old L.* Our content  
Is our best having.

*Anne.* By my troth and maidenhead,  
I would not be a queen.

*Old L.* Beshrew me, I would,  
And venture maidenhead for't; and so would you,  
For all this spice of your hypocrisy:  
You, that have so fair parts of woman on you,  
Have too a woman's heart; which ever yet

Affected eminence, wealth, sovereignty;  
Which, to say sooth, are blessings; and which gifts  
(Saving your mincing) the capacity  
Of your soft cheveril conscience would receive,  
If you might please to stretch it.

*Anne.* Nay, good troth,—

*Old L.* Yes, troth, and troth;—you would not be a queen?

*Anne.* No, not for all the riches under heaven.

*Old L.* 'Tis strange: a three-pence bow'd would hire me,<sup>(29)</sup>  
Old as I am, to queen it: but, I pray you,  
What think you of a duchess? have you limbs  
To bear that load of title?

*Anne.* No, in truth.

*Old L.* Then you are weakly made: pluck off a little;  
I would not be a young count in your way,  
For more than blushing comes to: if your back  
Cannot vouchsafe this burden, 'tis too weak  
Ever to get a boy.

*Anne.* How you do talk!  
I swear again, I would not be a queen  
For all the world.

*Old L.* In faith, for little England  
You'd venture an emballing: I myself  
Would for Carnarvonshire, although there long'd  
No more to the crown but that.—Lo, who comes here?

*Enter the Lord Chamberlain.*

*Cham.* Good morrow, ladies. What were't worth to know  
The secret of your conference?

*Anne.* My good lord,  
Not your demand; it values not your asking:  
Our mistress' sorrows we were pitying.

*Cham.* It was a gentle business, and becoming  
The action of good women: there is hope  
All will be well.

*Anne.* Now, I pray God, amen!

*Cham.* You bear a gentle mind, and heavenly blessings  
Follow such creatures. That you may, fair lady,  
Perceive I speak sincerely, and high note's

Ta'en of your many virtues, the king's majesty  
 Commends his good opinion of you<sup>(30)</sup> to you, and  
 Does purpose honour to you no less flowing  
 Than Marchioness of Pembroke; to which title  
 A thousand pound a year, annual support,  
 Out of his grace he adds.

*Anne.* I do not know  
 What kind of my obedience I should tender;  
 More than my all is nothing: nor my prayers  
 Are not words duly hallow'd, nor my wishes  
 More worth than empty vanities; yet prayers and wishes  
 Are all I can return. Beseech your lordship,  
 Vouchsafe to speak my thanks and my obedience,  
 As from a blushing handmaid, to his highness;  
 Whose health and royalty I pray for.

*Cham.* Lady,  
 I shall not fail to approve the fair conceit  
 The king hath of you.—I have perus'd her well; [*Aside.*  
 Beauty and honour in her are so mingled,  
 That they have caught the king: and who knows yet  
 But from this lady may proceed a gem  
 To lighten all this isle?—I'll to the king,  
 And say I spoke with you.

*Anne.* My honour'd lord.  
 [*Exit Lord Chamberlain.*]

*Old L.* Why, this it is; see, see!  
 I have been begging sixteen years in court  
 (Am yet a courtier beggarly), nor could  
 Come pat betwixt too early and too late  
 For any suit of pounds; and you, O fate!  
 A very fresh-fish here (*fic, fie, fie* upon  
 This compell'd fortune!), have your mouth fill'd up  
 Before you open it.

*Anne.* This is strange to me.

*Old L.* How tastes it? is it bitter? forty pence, no.  
 There was a lady once ('tis an old story),  
 That would not be a queen, that would she not,  
 For all the mud in Egypt:—have you heard it?

*Anne.* Come, you are pleasant.

*Old L.* With your theme, I could  
O'er mount the lark. The Marchioness of Pembroke !  
A thousand pounds a year for pure respect !  
No other obligation ! By my life,  
That promises more thousands : honour's train  
Is longer than his foreskirt. By this time  
I know your back will bear a duchess :—say,  
Are you not stronger than you were ?

*Anne.* Good lady,  
Make yourself mirth with your particular fancy,  
And leave me out on't. Would I had no being,  
If this salute my blood a jot : it faints me,  
To think what follows.  
The queen is comfortless, and we forgetful  
In our long absence : pray, do not deliver  
What here you've heard to her.

*Old L.* What do you think me ?

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV. *The same. A hall in Black-Friars.*

*Trumpets, sennet, and cornets. Enter two Vergers, with short silver wands, next them, two Scribes, in the habits of doctors, after them, the Archbishop of CANTERBURY alone; after him, the Bishops of LINCOLN, ELY, ROCHESTER, and SAINT ASAPH; next them, with some small distance, follows a Gentleman bearing the purse, with the great seal, and a cardinal's hat, then two Priests, bearing each a silver cross; then a Gentleman-usher bare-headed, accompanied with a Sergeant-at-arms bearing a silver mace; then two Gentlemen bearing two great silver pillars; after them, side by side, the two Cardinals, WOLSEY and CAMPEIUS, two Noblemen with the sword and mace. Then enter the King and Queen, and their trains. The King takes place under the cloth of state; the two Cardinals sit under him as judges. The Queen takes place at some distance from the King. The Bishops place themselves on each side the court, in manner of a consistory; between them, the Scribes. The Lords sit next the Bishops. The Crier and the rest of the Attendants stand in convenient order about the hall*

*Vol.* Whilst our commission from Rome is read,  
Let silence be commanded.

*K. Hen.* What's the need?  
It hath already publicly been read,  
And on all sides the authority allow'd;  
You may, then, spare that time.

*Vol.* Be't so.—Proceed.

*Scribe.* Say, Henry King of England, come into the court.

*Crier.* Henry King of England, &c.

*K. Hen.* Here.

*Scribe.* Say, Katharine Queen of England, come into the court.

*Crier.* Katharine Queen of England, &c.

*[The Queen makes no answer, rises out of her chair, goes about the court, comes to the King, and kneels at his feet; then speaks.]*

*Q. Kath.* Sir, I desire you do me right and justice;  
And to bestow your pity on me: for  
I am a most poor woman, and a stranger,  
Born out of your dominions; having here  
No judge indifferent, nor no more assurance  
Of equal friendship and proceeding. Alas, sir,  
In what have I offended you? what cause  
Hath my behaviour given to your displeasure,  
That thus you should proceed to put me off,  
And take your good grace from me? Heaven witness,  
I have been to you a true and humble wife,  
At all times to you will conformable;  
Ever in fear to kindle your dislike,  
Yea, subject to your countenance,—glad or sorry,  
As I saw it inclin'd. When was the hour  
I ever contradicted your desire,  
Or made it not mine too? Or which of your friends  
Have I not strove to love, although I knew  
He were mine enemy? what friend of mine  
That had to him deriv'd your anger, did I  
Continue in my liking? nay, gave notice  
He was from thence discharg'd? Sir, call to mind



That I have been your wife, in this obedience,  
 Upward of twenty years, and have been blest  
 With many children by you: if, in the course  
 And process of this time, you can report,  
 And prove it too, against mine honour aught,  
 My bond to wedlock, or my love and duty,  
 Against your sacred person, in God's name,  
 Turn me away; and let the foul'st contempt  
 Shut door upon me, and so give me up  
 To the sharp'st kind of justice. Please you, sir,  
 The king, your father, was reputed for  
 A prince most prudent, of an excellent  
 And unmatched wit and judgment: Ferdinand,  
 My father, king of Spain, was reckon'd one  
 The wisest prince that there had reign'd by many  
 A year before: it is not to be question'd  
 That they had gather'd a wise council to them  
 Of every realm, that did debate this business,  
 Who deem'd our marriage lawful: wherefore I humbly  
 Beseech you, sir, to spare me, till I may  
 Be by my friends in Spain advis'd; whose counsel  
 I will implore: if not, i' the name of God,  
 Your pleasure be fulfill'd!

*Wol.* You have here, lady  
 (And of your choice), these reverend fathers; men  
 Of singular integrity and learning,  
 Yea, the elect o' the land, who are assembled  
 To plead your cause: it shall be therefore bootless  
 That longer you desire<sup>(91)</sup> the court; as well  
 For your own quiet, as to rectify  
 What is unsettled in the king.

*Cam.* His grace  
 Hath spoken well and justly: therefore, madam,  
 It's fit this royal session do proceed;  
 And that, without delay, their arguments  
 Be now produc'd and heard.

*Q. Kath.* Lord cardinal,—  
 To you I speak.

*Wol.* Your pleasure, madam?

*Q. Kath.*

Sir,

I am about to weep ; but, thinking that  
We are a queen (or long have dream'd so), certain  
The daughter of a king, my drops of tears  
I'll turn to sparks of fire.

*Wol.*

Be patient yet.

*Q. Kath.* I will, when you are humble ; nay, before,  
Or God will punish me. I do believe,  
Induc'd by potent circumstances, that  
You are mine enemy ; and make my challenge  
You shall not be my judge : for it is you  
Have blown this coal betwixt my lord and me,—  
Which God's dew quench ! Therefore I say again,  
I utterly abhor, yea, from my soul  
Refuse you for my judge ; whom, yet once more,  
I hold my most malicious foe, and think not  
At all a friend to truth.

*Wol.*

I do profess

You speak not like yourself ; who ever yet  
Have stood to charity, and display'd the effects  
Of disposition gentle, and of wisdom  
O'ertopping woman's power. Madam, you do me wrong :  
I have no spleen against you ; nor injustice  
For you or any : how far I have proceeded,  
Or how far further shall, is warranted  
By a commission from the consistory,  
Yea, the whole consistory of Rome. You charge me  
That I have blown this coal : I do deny it :  
The king is present : if it be known to him  
That I gainsay my deed, how may he wound,  
And worthily, my falsehood ! yea, as much  
As you have done my truth. If he know  
That I am free of your report, he knows  
I am not of your wrong. Therefore in him  
It lies to cure me : and the cure is, to  
Remove these thoughts from you : the which before  
His highness shall speak in, I do beseech  
You, gracious madam, to unthink your speaking,  
And to say so no more.

*Q. Kath.* My lord, my lord,  
I am a simple woman, much too weak  
To oppose your cunning. You're meek and humble-  
mouth'd;

You sign your place and calling, in full seeming,  
With meekness and humility; but your heart  
Is cramm'd with arrogancy, spleen, and pride.  
You have, by fortune and his highness' favours,  
Gone slightly o'er low steps, and now are mounted  
Where powers are your retainers; and your words,  
Domestics to you, serve your will as't please  
Yourself pronounce their office. I must tell you,  
You tender more your person's honour than  
Your high profession spiritual: that again  
I do refuse you for my judge; and here,  
Before you all, appeal unto the pope,  
To bring my whole cause 'fore his holiness,  
And to be judg'd by him.

[*She curtsies to the King, and offers to depart.*]

*Cam.* The queen is obstinate,  
Stubborn to justice, apt to accuse it, and  
Disdainful to be tried by't: 'tis not well.  
She's going away.

*K. Hen.* Call her again.

*Crier.* Katharine Queen of England, come into the court.

*Grif.* Madam, you are call'd back.

*Q. Kath.* What need you note it? pray you, keep your  
way:

When you are call'd, return.—Now, the Lord help,  
They vex me past my patience!—Pray you, pass on:  
I will not tarry; no, nor ever more  
Upon this business my appearance make  
In any of their courts.

[*Exeunt Queen, Griffith, and her other Attendants.*]

*K. Hen.* Go thy ways, Kate:  
That man i' the world who shall report he has  
A better wife, let him in naught be trusted,  
For speaking false in that: thou art, alone  
(If thy rare qualities, sweet gentleness,

Thy meekness saint-like, wife-like government,—  
 Obeying in commanding,—and thy parts  
 Sovereign and pious else, could speak thee out),  
 The queen of earthly queens:—she's noble born;  
 And, like her true nobility, she has  
 Carried herself towards me.

*Wol.* Most gracious sir,  
 In humblest manner I require your highness,  
 That it shall please you to declare, in hearing  
 Of all these ears (for where I am robb'd and bound,  
 There must I be unloos'd; although not there  
 At once and fully satisfied), whether ever I  
 Did broach this business to your highness; or  
 Laid any scruple in your way, which might  
 Induce you to the question on't? or ever  
 Have to you,—but with thanks to God for such  
 A royal lady,—spake one the least word that might  
 Be to the prejudice of her present state,  
 Or touch of her good person?

*K. Hen.* My lord cardinal,  
 I do excuse you; yea, upon mine honour,  
 I free you from't. You are not to be taught  
 That you have many enemies, that know not  
 Why they are so, but, like to village-curs,  
 Bark when their fellows do: by some of these  
 The queen is put in anger. You're excus'd:  
 But will you be more justified? you ever  
 Have wish'd the sleeping of this business; never  
 Desir'd it to be stirr'd; but oft have hinder'd, oft,  
 The passages made toward it:—on my honour,  
 I speak my good lord cardinal to this point,  
 And thus far clear him. Now, what mov'd me to't,  
 I will be bold with time and your attention:—  
 Then mark the inducement. Thus it came;—give heed  
 to't:—

My conscience first receiv'd a tenderness,  
 Scruple, and prick, on certain speeches utter'd  
 By the Bishop of Bayonne, then French ambassador;  
 Who had been hither sent on the debating

A <sup>(32)</sup> marriage 'twixt the Duke of Orleans and  
 Our daughter Mary: i' the progress of this business,  
 Ere a determinate resolution, he  
 (I mean the bishop) did require a respite;  
 Wherein he might the king his lord advértese  
 Whether our daughter were legitimate,  
 Respecting this our marriage with the dowager,  
 Sometimes our brother's wife. This respite shook  
 The bosom of my conscience, enter'd me,  
 Yea, with a splitting<sup>(33)</sup> power, and made to tremble  
 The region of my breast; which forc'd such way,  
 That many maz'd considerings did throng,  
 And press'd in with this caution. First, methought  
 I stood not in the smile of heaven; who had  
 Commanded nature, that my lady's womb,  
 If it conceiv'd a male child by me, should  
 Do no more offices of life to't than  
 The grave does to the dead; for her male issue  
 Or died where they were made, or shortly after  
 This world had air'd them: hence I took a thought,  
 This was a judgment on me; that my kingdom,  
 Well worthy the best heir o' the world, should not  
 Be gladdened in't by me: then follows, that  
 I weigh'd the danger which my realms stood in  
 By this my issue's fail; and that gave to me  
 Many a groaning throe. Thus hulling in  
 The wild sea of my conscience, I did steer  
 Toward this remedy, whereupon we are  
 Now present here together; that's to say,  
 I meant to rectify my conscience,—which  
 I then did feel full sick, and yet not well,—  
 By all the reverend fathers of the land  
 And doctors learn'd:—first I began in private  
 With you, my Lord of Lincoln; you remember  
 How under my oppression I did reckon,  
 When I first mov'd you.

*Lin.* Very well, my liege.

*K. Hen.* I have spoke long: be pleas'd yourself to say  
 How far you satisfied me.

*Lin.* So please your highness,  
The question did at first so stagger me,—  
Bearing a state of mighty moment in't,  
And consequence of dread,—that I committed  
The daring'st counsel which I had to doubt;  
And did entreat your highness to this course  
Which you are running here.

*K. Hen.* I then mov'd you,  
My Lord of Canterbury; and got your leave  
To make this present summons:—unsolicited  
I left no reverend person in this court;  
But by particular consent proceeded  
Under your hands and seals: therefore, go on;  
For no dislike i' the world against the person  
Of the good queen, but the sharp thorny points  
Of my allegèd reasons, drive this forward:  
Prove but our marriage lawful, by my life  
And kingly dignity, we are contented  
To wear our mortal state to come with her,  
Katharine our queen, before the primest creature  
That's paragon'd o' the world.

*Cam.* So please your highness,  
The queen being absent, 'tis a needful fitness  
That we adjourn this court till further day:  
Meanwhile must be an earnest motion  
Made to the queen, to call back her appeal  
She intends unto his holiness. [*They rise to depart.*

*K. Hen.* I may perceive [*Aside.*  
These cardinals trifle with me: I abhor  
This dilatory sloth and tricks of Rome.  
My learn'd and well-belovèd servant, Crammer,  
Prithee, return: with thy approach, I know,  
My comfort comes along.—Break up the court:  
I say, set on.

[*Exeunt in manner as they entered.*

## ACT III.

SCENE I. *London. Palace at Bridewell: a room in the Queen's apartment.*

*The Queen and some of her Women at work.*

*Q. Kath.* Take thy lute, wench: my soul grows sad with troubles;  
Sing, and disperse 'em, if thou canst: leave working.

*SONG.*

Orpheus with his lute made trees,  
And the mountain-tops that freeze,  
Bow themselves, when he did sing:  
To his music plants and flowers  
Ever sprung; as sun and showers  
There had made a lasting spring.  
Every thing that heard him play,  
Even the billows of the sea,  
Hung their heads, and then lay by.  
In sweet music is such art,  
Killing care and grief of heart  
Fall asleep, or hearing, die.

*Enter a Gentleman.*

*Q. Kath.* How now!

*Gent.* An't please your grace, the two great cardinals  
Wait in the presence.

*Q. Kath.* Would they speak with me?

*Gent.* They will'd me say so, madam.

*Q. Kath.* Pray their graces  
To come near. [*Exit Gent.*] What can be their business  
With me, a poor weak woman, fall'n from favour?  
I do not like their coming, now I think on't.  
They should be good men; their affairs as righteous:  
But all hoods make not monks.

*Enter WOLSEY and CAMPEIUS*

*Wol.*

Peace to your highness!

*Q. Kath.* Your graces find me here part of a housewife;  
I would be all, against the worst may happen.  
What are your pleasures with me, reverend lords?

*Wol.* May it please you, noble madam, to withdraw  
Into your private chamber, we shall give you  
The full cause of our coming.

*Q. Kath.* Speak it here;  
'There's nothing I have done yet, o' my conscience,  
Deserves a corner: would all other women  
Could speak this with as free a soul as I do!  
My lords, I care not (so much I am happy  
Above a number), if my actions  
Were tried by every tongue, every eye saw 'em,  
Envy and base opinion set against 'em,  
I know my life so even. If your business  
Seek me out, and that way I am wife in,  
Out with it boldly: truth loves open dealing.

*Wol.* *Tanta est erga te mentis integritas, regina serenissima,—*

*Q. Kath.* O, good my lord, no Latin;  
I am not such a truant since my coming,  
As not to know the language I have liv'd in:  
A strange tongue makes my cause more strange, suspicious;  
Pray, speak in English: here are some will thank you,  
If you speak truth, for their poor mistress' sake,—  
Believe me, she has had much wrong: lord cardinal,  
The willing'st sin I ever yet committed  
May be absolv'd in English.

*Wol.* Noble lady,  
I am sorry my integrity should breed  
(And service to his majesty and you)  
So deep suspicion, where all faith was meant.  
We come not by the way of accusation,  
'To taint that honour every good tongue blesses,  
Nor to betray you any way to sorrow,—  
You have too much, good lady; but to know  
How you stand mudded in the weighty difference  
Between the king and you; and to deliver,



Like free and honest men, our just opinions,  
And comforts to your<sup>(31)</sup> cause.

*Cam.* Most honour'd madam,  
My Lord of York,—out of his noble nature,  
Zeal and obedience he still bore your grace,—  
Forgetting, like a good man, your late censure  
Both of his truth and him (which was too far),—  
Offers, as I do, in a sign of peace,  
His service and his counsel.

*Q. Kath.* To betray me. [*Aside.*  
My lords, I thank you both for your good wills;  
Ye speak like honest men (pray God, ye prove so!) :  
But how to make ye suddenly an answer,  
In such a point of weight, so near mine honour  
(More near my life, I fear), with my weak wit,  
And to such men of gravity and learning,  
In truth, I know not. I was set at work  
Among my maids; full little, God knows, looking  
Either for such men or such business.  
For her sake that I have been (for I feel  
The last fit of my greatness), good your graces,  
Let me have time and counsel for my cause :  
Alas, I am a woman, friendless, hopeless !

*Vol.* Madam, you wrong the king's love with these fears :  
Your hopes and friends are infinite.

*Q. Kath.* In England  
But little for my profit: can you think, lords,  
That any Englishman dare give me counsel?  
Or be a known friend, 'gainst his highness' pleasure  
(Though he be grown so desperate to be honest),  
And live a subject? Nay, forsooth, my friends,  
They that must weigh out my afflictions,  
They that my trust must grow to, live not here :  
They are, as all my other comforts, far hence,  
In mine own country, lords.

*Cam.* I would your grace  
Would leave your griefs, and take my counsel.

*Q. Kath.* How, sir?

*Cam.* Put your main cause into the king's protection;  
 He's loving and most gracious: 'twill be much  
 Both for your honour better and your cause;  
 For if the trial of the law o'ertake ye,  
 You'll part away disgrac'd.

*Wol.* He tells you rightly.

*Q. Kath.* Ye tell me what ye wish for both,—my ruin:  
 Is this your Christian counsel? out upon ye!  
 Heaven is above all yet; there sits a Judge  
 That no king can corrupt.

*Cam.* Your rage mistakes us.

*Q. Kath.* The more shame for ye: holy men I thought ye,  
 Upon my soul, two reverend cardinal virtues;  
 But cardinal sins and hollow hearts I fear ye:  
 Mend 'em, for shame, my lords. Is this your comfort?  
 The cordial that ye bring a wretched lady,—  
 A woman lost among ye, laugh'd at, scorn'd?  
 I will not wish ye half my miseries;  
 I have more charity: but say, I warn'd ye;  
 Take heed, for heaven's sake, take heed, lest at once  
 The burden of my sorrows fall upon ye.

*Wol.* Madam, this is a mere distraction;  
 You turn the good we offer into envy.

*Q. Kath.* Ye turn me into nothing: woe upon ye,  
 And all such false professors! would you have me  
 (If you have any justice, any pity;  
 If ye be any thing but churchmen's habits)  
 Put my sick cause into his hands that hates me?  
 Alas, has<sup>(35)</sup> banish'd me his bed already,—  
 His love, too long ago! I am old, my lords,  
 And all the fellowship I hold now with him  
 Is only my obedience. What can happen  
 'To me above this wretchedness? all your studies  
 Make me a curse like this.

*Cam.* Your fears are worse.

*Q. Kath.* Have I liv'd thus long—(let me speak myself,  
 Since virtue finds no friends)—a wife, a true one?  
 A woman (I dare say, without vain-glory,  
 Never yet branded with suspicion?

Have I with all my full affections  
 Still met the king? lov'd him next heaven? obey'd him?  
 Been, out of fondness, superstitious to him?  
 Almost forgot my prayers to content him?  
 And am I thus rewarded? 'tis not well, lords.  
 Bring me a constant woman to her husband,  
 One that ne'er dream'd a joy beyond his pleasure;  
 And to that woman, when she has done most,  
 Yet will I add an honour,—a great patience.

*Vol.* Madam, you wander from the good we aim at.

*Q. Kath.* My lord, I dare not make myself so guilty,  
 To give up willingly that noble title  
 Your master wed me to: nothing but death  
 Shall e'er divorce my dignities.

*Vol.* Pray, hear me.

*Q. Kath.* Would I had never trod this English earth,  
 Or felt the flatteries that grow upon it!  
 Ye have angels' faces, but heaven knows your hearts.  
 What will become of me now, wretched lady!  
 I am the most unhappy woman living.—  
 Alas, poor wenches, where are now your fortunes!

[*To her Women.*]

Shipwreck'd upon a kingdom, where no pity,  
 No friends, no hope; no kindred weep for me;  
 Almost no grave allow'd me:—like the lily,  
 That once was mistress of the field and flourish'd,  
 I'll hang my head and perish.

*Vol.* If your grace

Could but be brought to know our ends are honest,  
 You'd feel more comfort: why should we, good lady,  
 Upon what cause, wrong you? alas, our places,  
 The way of our profession is against it:  
 We are to cure such sorrows, not to sow 'em.  
 For goodness' sake, consider what you do;  
 How you may hurt yourself, ay, utterly  
 Grow from the king's acquaintance, by this carriage.  
 The hearts of princes kiss obedience,  
 So much they love it; but to stubborn spirits  
 They swell, and grow as terrible as storms.

I know you have a gentle, noble temper,  
 A soul as even as a calm: pray, think us  
 Those we profess, peace-makers, friends, and servants.

*Cam.* Madam, you'll find it so. You wrong your virtues  
 With these weak women's fears: a noble spirit,  
 As yours was put into you, ever casts  
 Such doubts, as false coin, from it. The king loves you;  
 Beware you lose it not: for us, if you please  
 To trust us in your business, we are ready  
 To use our utmost studies in your service.

*Q. Kath.* Do what ye will, my lords: and, pray, forgive  
 me,

If I have us'd myself unmannerly;  
 You know I am a woman, lacking wit  
 To make a seemly answer to such persons.  
 Pray, do my service to his majesty:  
 He has my heart yet; and shall have my prayers  
 While I shall have my life. Come, reverend fathers,  
 Bestow your counsels on me: she now begs,  
 That little thought, when she set footing here,  
 She should have bought her dignities so dear. [Exeunt.

---

SCENE II. *The same. Ante-chamber to the King's apartment  
 in the palace.*

*Enter the Duke of Norfolk, the Duke of Suffolk, the Earl of  
 Surrey, and the Lord Chamberlain.*

*Nor.* If you will now unite in your complaints,  
 And force them with a constancy, the cardinal  
 Cannot stand under them: if you omit  
 The offer of this time, I cannot promise  
 But that you shall sustain more new disgraces,  
 With these you bear already.

*Sur.* I am joyful  
 To meet the least occasion that may give me  
 Remembrance of my father-in-law, the duke,  
 To be reveng'd on him.

*Suf.* Which of the peers

Have uncontain'd gone by him, or at least  
 Strangely neglected? when did he regard  
 The stamp of nobleness in any person  
 Out of himself?

*Cham.* My lords, you speak your pleasures :  
 What he deserves of you and me I know ;  
 What we can do to him (though now the time  
 Gives way to us) I much fear. If you cannot  
 Bar his access to the king, never attempt  
 Any thing on him ; for he hath a witchcraft  
 Over the king in's tongue.

*Nor.* O, fear him not ;  
 His spell in that is out : the king hath found  
 Matter against him that for ever mars  
 The honey of his language. No, he's settled,  
 Not to come off, in his displeasure.

*Sur.* Sir,  
 I should be glad to hear such news as this  
 Once every hour.

*Nor.* Believe it, this is true :  
 In the divorce his contrary proceedings  
 Are all unfolded ; wherein he appears  
 As I would wish mine enemy.

*Sur.* How came  
 His practices to light?

*Suf.* Most strangely.

*Sur.* O, how, how?

*Suf.* The cardinal's letters to the pope miscarried,  
 And came to the eye o' the king : wherein was read,  
 How that the cardinal did entreat his holiness  
 To stay the judgment o' the divorce ; for if  
 It did take place, " I do," quoth he, " perceive  
 My king is tangled in affection to  
 A creature of the queen's, Lady Anne Bullen."

*Sur.* Has the king this?

*Suf.* Believe it.

*Sur.* Will this work?

*Cham.* The king in this perceives him, how he coasts  
 And hedges his own way. But in this point

All his tricks founder, and he brings his physic  
After his patient's death: the king already  
Hath married the fair lady.

*Sur.* Would he had!

*Suf.* May you be happy in your wish, my lord!  
For, I profess, you have it.

*Sur.* Now, all my joy<sup>(36)</sup>  
Trace the conjunction!

*Suf.* My amen to't!

*Nor.* All men's!

*Suf.* There's order given for her coronation:  
Marry, this is yet but young, and may be left  
To some ears unrecounted.—But, my lords,  
She is a gallant creature, and complete  
In mind and feature: I persuade me, from her  
Will fall some blessing to this land, which shall  
In it be memoriz'd.

*Sur.* But, will the king  
Digest this letter of the cardinal's?  
The Lord forbid!

*Nor.* Marry, amen!

*Suf.* No, no;  
There be more wasps that buzz about his nose  
Will make this sting the sooner. Cardinal Campeius  
Is stol'n away to Rome; hath ta'en no leave;  
Has left the cause o' the king unhandled; and  
Is posted, as the agent of our cardinal,  
To second all his plot. I do assure you  
The king cried Ha! at this.

*Cham.* Now, God incense him,  
And let him cry Ha! louder!

*Nor.* But, my lord,  
When returns Cranmer?

*Suf.* He is return'd, in his opinions; which  
Have satisfied the king for his divorce,  
Together with all famous colleges  
Almost in Christendom: shortly, I believe,  
His second marriage shall be publish'd, and  
Her coronation. Katharine no more

Shall be call'd queen, but princess dowager  
And widow to Prince Arthur.

*Nor.* This same Crammer's  
A worthy fellow, and hath ta'en much pain  
In the king's business.

*Suf.* He has; and we shall see him  
For it an archbishop.

*Nor.* So I hear.

*Suf.* 'Tis so.—  
The cardinal!

*Enter WOLSEY and CROMWELL.*

*Nor.* Observe, observe, he's moody.

*Wol.* The packet, Cromwell,  
Gave 't you the king? (37)

*Crom.* To his own hand, in's bedchamber.

*Wol.* Look'd he o' the inside of the paper?

*Crom.* Presently  
He did unseal them: and the first he view'd,  
He did it with a serious mind; a heed  
Was in his countenance. You he bade  
Attend him here this morning.

*Wol.* Is he ready  
To come abroad?

*Crom.* I think, by this he is.

*Wol.* Leave me awhile. *[Exit Cromwell.]*

It shall be to the Duchess of Alençon,  
The French king's sister: he shall marry her.—  
Anne Bullen! No; I'll no Anne Bullens for him:  
There's more in't than fair visage.—Bullen!  
No, we'll no Bullens.—Speedily I wish  
To hear from Rome.—The Marchioness of Pembroke!

*Nor.* He's discontented.

*Suf.* May be, he hears the king  
Does whet his anger to him.

*Sur.* Sharp enough,  
Lord, for thy justice!

*Wol.* The late queen's gentlewoman, a knight's daughter,  
To be her mistress' mistress! the queen's queen!—

This candle burns not clear: 'tis I must snuff it;  
 Then out it goes.—What though I know her virtuous  
 And well deserving? yet I know her for  
 A spleeny Lutheran; and not wholesome to  
 Our cause, that she should lie i' the bosom of  
 Our hard-rul'd king. Again, there is sprung up  
 An heretic, an arch one, Cranmer; one  
 Hath crawl'd into the favour of the king,  
 And is his oracle.

*Nor.* He is vex'd at something.

*Sur.* I would 'twere something that would fret the string,  
 The master-cord on's heart!

*Suf.* The king, the king!

*Enter the King, reading a schedule, and Lovell*

*K. Hen.* What piles of wealth hath he accumulated  
 To his own portion! and what expense by the hour  
 Seems to flow from him! How, i' the name of thrift,  
 Does he rake this together!—Now, my lords,—  
 Saw you the cardinal?

*Nor.* My lord, we have  
 Stood here observing him: some strange commotion  
 Is in his brain: he bites his lip, and starts;  
 Stops on a sudden, looks upon the ground,  
 Then lays his finger on his temple; straight  
 Springs out into fast gait; then stops again,  
 Strikes his breast hard; and anon he casts  
 His eye against the moon: in most strange postures  
 We have seen him set himself.

*K. Hen.* It may well be;  
 There is a mutiny in's mind. This morning  
 Papers of state he sent me to peruse,  
 As I requir'd: and wot you what I found  
 There,—on my conscience, put unwittingly?  
 Forsooth, an inventory, thus importing,—  
 The several parcels of his plate, his treasure,  
 Rich stuffs, and ornaments of household; which  
 I find at such proud rate, that it out-speaks  
 Possession of a subject.



*Nor.* It's heaven's will :  
Some spirit put this paper in the packet,  
To bless your eye withal.

*K. Hen.* If we did think  
His contemplation were above the earth,  
And fix'd on spiritual object, he should still  
Dwell in his musings : but I am afraid  
His thinkings are below the moon, not worth  
His serious considering.

*[He takes his seat, and whispers Lovell, who goes to Wolsey.]*

*Wol.* Heaven forgive me !—  
Ever God bless your highness !

*K. Hen.* Good my lord,  
You are full of heavenly stuff, and bear the inventory  
Of your best graces in your mind ; the which  
You were now running o'er : you have scarce time  
To steal from spiritual leisure<sup>(36)</sup> a brief span  
To keep your earthly audit : sure, in that  
I deem you an ill husband, and am glad  
To have you therein my companion.

*Wol.* Sir,  
For holy offices I have a time ; a time  
To think upon the part of business which  
I bear i' the state ; and nature does require  
Her times of preservation, which perforce  
I, her frail son, amongst my brethren mortal,  
Must give my tendence to.

*K. Hen.* You have said well.

*Wol.* And ever may your highness yoke together,  
As I will lend you cause, my doing well  
With my well saying !

*K. Hen.* 'Tis well said again ;  
And 'tis a kind of good deed to say well :  
And yet words are no deeds. My father lov'd you :  
He said he did ; and with his deed did crown  
His word upon you. Since I had my office,  
I have kept you next my heart ; have not alone  
Employ'd you where high profits might come home,

But par'd my present havings, to bestow  
My bounties upon you.

*Wol.* What should this mean? [*Aside.*

*Sur.* The Lord increase this business! [*Aside to others.*

*K. Hen.* Have I not made you

'The prime man of the state? I pray you, tell me,  
If what I now pronounce you have found true :  
And, if you may confess it, say withal,  
If you are bound to us or no. What say you?

*Wol.* My sovereign, I confess your royal graces,  
Shower'd on me daily, have been more than could  
My studied purposes requite ; which went  
Beyond all man's endeavours :—my endeavours  
Have ever come too short of my desires,  
Yet fil'd<sup>(39)</sup> with my abilities : mine own ends  
Have been mine so, that evermore they pointed  
To the good of your most sacred person and  
The profit of the state. For your great graces  
Heap'd upon me, poor undeserver, I  
Can nothing render but allegiant thanks ;  
My prayers to heaven for you ; my loyalty,  
Which ever has and ever shall be growing,  
Till death, that winter, kill it.

*K. Hen.* Fairly answer'd ;

A loyal and obedient subject is  
Therein illustrated : the honour of it  
Does pay the act of it ; as, i' the contrary,  
The foulness is the punishment. I presume  
That, as my hand has open'd bounty to you,  
My heart dropp'd love, my power rain'd honour, more  
On you than any ; so your hand and heart,  
Your brain, and every function of your power,  
Should, notwithstanding that your bond of duty,  
As 'twere in love's particular, be more  
To me, your friend, than any.

*Wol.* I do profess

That for your highness' good I ever labour'd  
More than mine own ; that am, have, and will be,—<sup>(40)</sup>  
Though all the world should crack their duty to you,

And throw it from their soul; though perils did  
 Abound, as thick as thought could make 'em, and  
 Appear in forms more horrid,—yet my duty,  
 As doth a rock against the chiding flood,  
 Should the approach of this wild river break,  
 And stand unshaken yours.

*K. Hen.* 'Tis nobly spoken :—  
 Take notice, lords, he has a loyal breast,  
 For you have seen him open't.—Read o'er this ;

[*Giving him papers.*]

And after, this: and then to breakfast with  
 What appetite you have.

[*Exit, frowning upon Cardinal Wolsey: the Nobles  
 throng after him, smiling and whispering.*]

*Wol.* What should this mean?  
 What sudden anger's this? how have I reap'd it?  
 He parted frowning from me, as if ruin  
 Leap'd from his eyes: so looks the chafed lion  
 Upon the daring huntsman that has gall'd him;  
 Then makes him nothing. I must read this paper;  
 I fear, the story of his anger.—'Tis so;  
 This paper has undone me.—'tis the account  
 Of all that world of wealth I have drawn together  
 For mine own ends; indeed, to gain the popedom,  
 And see my friends in Rome. O negligence,  
 Fit for a fool to fall by! what cross devil  
 Made me put this main secret in the packet  
 I sent the king?—Is there no way to cure this?  
 No new device to beat this from his brains?  
 I know 'twill stir him strongly; yet I know  
 A way, if it take right, in spite of fortune  
 Will bring me off again.—What's this—"To the Pope?"  
 The letter, as I live, with all the business  
 I writ to 's holiness. Nay then, farewell!  
 I have touch'd the highest point of all my greatness;  
 And, from that full meridian of my glory,  
 I haste now to my setting: I shall fall  
 Like a bright exhalation in the evening,  
 And no man see me more.

*Re-enter the Dukes of NORFOLK and SUFFOLK, the Earl of SURREY,  
and the Lord Chamberlain.*

*Nor.* Hear the king's pleasure, cardinal: who commands  
you

To render up the great seal presently  
Into our hands; and to confine yourself  
To Asher-house, my Lord of Winchester's,  
Till you hear further from his highness.

*Vol.*

Stay,—

Where's your commission, lords? words cannot carry  
Authority so weighty.

*Suf.*

Who dare cross 'em,

Bearing the king's will from his mouth expressly?

*Vol.* Till I find more than will or words to do it

(I mean your malice), know, officious lords,

I dare and must deny it. Now I feel

Of what coarse metal ye are moulded,—envy:

How eagerly ye follow my disgraces,

As if it fed ye! and how sleek and wanton

Ye appear in every thing may bring my ruin!

Follow your envious courses, men of malice;

You have Christian warrant for 'em, and, no doubt,

In time will find their fit rewards. That seal,

You ask with such a violence, the king

(Mine and your master) with his own hand gave me;

Bade me enjoy it, with the place and honours,

During my life; and, to confirm his goodness,

Tied it by letters-patents:<sup>(41)</sup>—now, who'll take it?

*Sur.* The king, that gave it.

*Vol.*

It must be himself, then.

*Sur.* Thou art a proud traitor, priest.

*Vol.*

Proud lord, thou liest:

Within these forty hours Surrey durst better

Have burnt that tongue than said so.

*Sur.*

Thy ambition,

Thou scarlet sin, robb'd this bewailing land

Of noble Buckingham, my father-in-law:

The heads of all thy brother cardinals

(With thee and all thy best parts bound together)  
 Weigh'd not a hair of his. Plague of your policy !  
 You sent me deputy for Ireland ;  
 Far from his succour, from the king, from all  
 That might have mercy on the fault thou gav'st him ;  
 Whilst your great goodness, out of holy pity,  
 Absolv'd him with an axe,

*Wol.* This, and all else  
 This talking lord can lay upon my credit,  
 I answer is most false. The duke by law  
 Found his deserts : how innocent I was  
 From any private malice in his end,  
*His noble jury and foul cause can witness.*  
 If I lov'd many words, lord, I should tell you  
 You have as little honesty as honour,<sup>(42)</sup>  
 That in the way of loyalty and truth  
 Toward the king, my ever royal master,  
 Dare mate a sounder man than Surrey can be,  
 And all that love his follies.

*Sur.* By my soul,  
 Your long coat, priest, protects you ; thou shouldst feel  
 My sword i' the life-blood of thee else.—My lords,  
 Can ye endure to hear this arrogance ?  
 And from this fellow ? If we live thus tamely,  
 To be thus jaded by a piece of scarlet,  
 Farewell nobility ; let his grace go forward,  
 And dare us with his cap like larks.

*Wol.* All goodness  
 Is poison to thy stomach.

*Sur.* Yes, that goodness  
 Of gleaning all the land's wealth into one,  
 Into your own hands, cardinal, by extortion ;  
 The goodness of your intercepted packets  
 You writ to the pope against the king : your goodness,  
 Since you provoke me, shall be most notorious.—  
 My Lord of Norfolk,—as you are truly noble,  
 As you respect the common good, the state  
 Of our despis'd nobility, our issues,  
 Who,<sup>(43)</sup> if he live, will scarce be gentlemen,—

Produce the grand sum of his sins, the articles  
Collected from his life :—I'll startle you  
Worse than the sacring bell, when the brown wench  
Lay kissing in your arms, lord cardinal.

*Vol.* How much, methinks, I could despise this man,  
But that I am bound in charity against it!

*Nor.* Those articles, my lord, are in the king's hand :  
But, thus much, they are foul ones.

*Vol.* So much fairer  
And spotless shall mine innocence arise,  
When the king knows my truth.

*Sur.* This cannot save you :  
I thank my memory, I yet remember  
Some of these articles ; and out they shall.  
Now, if you can blush, and cry guilty, cardinal,  
You'll show a little honesty.

*Vol.* Speak on, sir ;  
I dare your worst objections : if I blush,  
It is to see a nobleman want manners.

*Sur.* I had rather want those than my head.—Have at you !  
First, that, without the king's assent or knowledge,  
You wrought to be a legate ; by which power  
You maim'd the jurisdiction of all bishops.

*Nor.* Then, that in all you writ to Rome, or else  
To foreign princes, *Ego et Rex meus*  
Was still inscrib'd ; in which you brought the king  
To be your servant.

*Suf.* Then, that, without the knowledge  
Either of king or council, when you went  
Ambassador to the emperor, you made bold  
To carry into Flanders the great seal.

*Sur.* Item, you sent a large commission  
To Gregory de Cassalis,<sup>(44)</sup> to conclude,  
Without the king's will or the state's allowance,  
A league between his highness and Ferrara.

*Suf.* That, out of mere ambition, you have caus'd  
Your holy hat to be stamp'd on the king's coin.

*Sur.* Then, that you have sent innumerable substance  
(By what means got, I leave to your own conscience),

To furnish Rome, and to prepare the ways  
 You have for dignities; to the mere undoing  
 Of all the kingdom. Many more there are;  
 Which, since they are of you, and odious,  
 I will not taint my mouth with.

*Cham.* O my lord,  
 Press not a falling man too far! 'tis virtue:  
 His faults lie open to the laws; let them,  
 Not you, correct him. My heart weeps to see him  
 So little of his great self.

*Sur.* I forgive him.  
*Suf.* Lord cardinal, the king's further pleasure is,—  
 Because all those things you have done of late,  
 By your power legatine,<sup>(45)</sup> within this kingdom,  
 Fall into the compass of a *premunire*,—  
 That therefore such a writ be su'd against you;  
 To forfeit all your goods, lands, tenements,  
 Chattels,<sup>(46)</sup> and whatsoever, and to be  
 Out of the king's protection:—this is my charge.

*Nor.* And so we'll leave you to your meditations  
 How to live better. For your stubborn answer  
 About the giving back the great seal to us,  
 The king shall know it, and, no doubt, shall thank you.  
 So fare you well, my little good lord cardinal.

[*Exeunt all except Wolsey.*]

*Wol.* So farewell to the little good you bear me.  
 Farewell, a long farewell, to all my greatness!<sup>(47)</sup>  
 This is the state of man: to-day he puts forth  
 The tender leaves of hope;<sup>(48)</sup> to-morrow blossoms,  
 And bears his blushing honours thick upon him;  
 The third day comes a frost, a killing frost,  
 And,—when he thinks, good easy man, full surely  
 His greatness is a-ripening,—nips his root,  
 And then he falls, as I do. I have ventur'd,  
 Like little wanton boys that swim on bladders,  
 This many summers in a sea of glory;  
 But far beyond my depth: my high-blown pride  
 At length broke under me, and now has left me,  
 Weary and old with service, to the mercy

Of a rude stream, that must for ever hide me.  
 Vain pomp and glory of this world, I hate ye :  
 I feel my heart new open'd. O, how wretched  
 Is that poor man that hangs on princes' favours !  
 There is, betwixt that smile we would aspire to,  
 That sweet aspect of princes, and their ruin,  
 More pangs and fears than wars or women have :  
 And when he falls, he falls like Lucifer,  
 Never to hope again.

*Enter CROMWELL, amazedly.*

Why, how now, Cromwell !

*Crom.* I have no power to speak, sir.

*Wol.*

What, amaz'd

At my misfortunes ? can thy spirit wonder  
 A great man should decline ? Nay, an you weep,  
 I am fall'n indeed.

*Crom.*

How does your grace ?

*Wol.*

Why, well ;

Never so truly happy, my good Cromwell.  
 I know myself now ; and I feel within me  
 A peace above all earthly dignities,  
 A still and quiet conscience. The king has cur'd me,  
 I humbly thank his grace ; and from these shoulders,  
 These ruin'd pillars, out of pity, taken  
 A load would sink a navy,—too much honour :  
 O, 'tis a burden, Cromwell, 'tis a burden  
 'Too heavy for a man that hopes for heaven !

*Crom.* I am glad your grace has made that right use of it.

*Wol.* I hope I have : I am able now, methinks

(Out of a fortitude of soul I feel),  
 To endure more miseries and greater far  
 Than my weak-hearted enemies dare offer.—  
 What news abroad ?

*Crom.*

The heaviest and the worst

Is your displeasure with the king.

*Wol.*

God bless him !

*Crom.* The next is, that Sir Thomas More is chosen  
 Lord chancellor in your place.



*Wol.*

That's somewhat sudden;

But he's a learnèd man. May he continue  
Long in his highness' favour, and do justice  
For truth's sake and his conscience; that his bones,  
When he has run his course and sleeps in blessings,  
May have a tomb of orphans' tears wept on 'em!—<sup>(19)</sup>  
What more?

*Crom.* That Cranner is return'd with welcome,  
Install'd lord archbishop of Canterbury.

*Wol.* That's news indeed.

*Crom.* Last, that the Lady Anne,  
Whom the king hath in secrecy long married,  
This day was view'd in open as his queen,  
Going to chapel; and the voice is now  
Only about her coronation.

*Wol.* There was the weight that pull'd me down. O

Cromwell,

The king has gone beyond me: all my glories  
In that one woman I have lost for ever:  
No sun shall ever usher forth mine honours,  
Or gild again the noble troops that waited  
Upon my smiles. Go, get thee from me, Cromwell;  
I am a poor fall'n man, unworthy now  
To be thy lord and master: seek the king;  
That sun, I pray, may never set! I have told him  
What and how true thou art: he will advance thee;  
Some little memory of me will stir him  
(I know his noble nature) not to let  
Thy hopeful service perish too: good Cromwell,  
Neglect him not; make use now, and provide  
For thine own future safety.

*Crom.*

O my lord,

Must I, then, leave you? must I needs forego  
So good, so noble, and so true a master?  
Bear witness, all that have not hearts of iron,  
With what a sorrow Cromwell leaves his lord.  
The king shall have my service; but my prayers  
For ever and for ever shall be yours.

*Wol.* Cromwell, I did not think to shed a tear

In all my miseries; but thou hast forc'd me,  
Out of thy honest truth, to play the woman.  
Let's dry our eyes: and thus far hear me, Cromwell;  
And,—when I am forgotten, as I shall be,  
And sleep in dull cold marble, where no mention  
Of me more must be heard of,—say, I taught thee,  
Say, Wolsey,—that once trod the ways of glory,  
And sounded all the depths and shoals of honour,—  
Found thee a way, out of his wreck, to rise in;  
A sure and safe one, though thy master miss'd it.  
Mark but my fall, and that that ruin'd me.  
Cromwell, I charge thee, fling away ambition:  
By that sin fell the angels; how can man, then,  
The image of his Maker, hope to win by it?  
Love thyself last: cherish those hearts that hate thee;  
Corruption wins not more than honesty.  
Still in thy right hand carry gentle peace,  
To silence envious tongues. Be just, and fear not:  
Let all the ends thou aim'st at be thy country's,  
Thy God's, and truth's; then if thou fall'st, O Cromwell,  
Thou fall'st a blessèd martyr! Serve the king;  
And,—prithce, lead me in:  
There take an inventory of all I have,  
To the last penny; 'tis the king's: my robe,  
And my integrity to heaven, is all  
I dare now call mine own. O Cromwell, Cromwell!  
Had I but serv'd my God with half the zeal  
I serv'd my king, he would not in mine age  
Have left me naked to mine enemies.

*Crom.* Good sir, have patience.

*Vol.*

So I have. Farewell

'The hopes of court! my hopes in heaven do dwell.

[*Exeunt.*

## ACT IV.

SCENE I. *A street in Westminster.**Enter two Gentlemen, meeting.**First Gent.* You're well met once again.*Sec. Gent.* So are you.*First Gent.* You come to take your stand here, and behold

The Lady Anne pass from her coronation?

*Sec. Gent.* 'Tis all my business. At our last encounter,  
The Duke of Buckingham came from his trial.*First Gent.* 'Tis very true: but that time offer'd sorrow;  
This, general joy.*Sec. Gent.* 'Tis well: the citizens,  
I am sure, have shown at full their royal minds;  
As, let 'em have their rights, they are ever forward  
In celebration of this day with shows,  
Pageants, and sights of honour.*First Gent.* Never greater,  
Nor, I'll assure you, better taken, sir.*Sec. Gent.* May I be bold to ask what that contains,  
That paper in your hand?*First Gent.* Yes; 'tis the list  
Of those that claim their offices this day  
By custom of the coronation.  
'The Duke of Suffolk is the first, and claims  
To be high-steward; next, the Duke of Norfolk,  
He to be earl marshal: you may read the rest.*Sec. Gent.* I thank you, sir: had I not known those customs,  
I should have been beholding to your paper.  
But, I beseech you, what's become of Katharine,  
The princess dowager? how goes her business?*First Gent.* That I can tell you too. The Archbishop  
Of Canterbury, accompanied with other  
Learn'd and reverend fathers of his order,  
Held a late court at Dunstable, six miles off

From Ampthill, where the princess lay; to which  
 She was often cited by them, but appear'd not:  
 And, to be short, for not appearance and  
 The king's late scruple, by the main assent  
 Of all these learnèd men she was divorce'd,  
 And the late marriage made of none effect:  
 Since which she was remov'd to Kimbolton,  
 Where she remains now sick.

*Sec. Gent.*

Alas, good lady!—

[*A lively flourish of trumpets.*]<sup>(60)</sup>

The trumpets sound: stand close, the queen is coming.

THE ORDER OF THE PROCESSION.

*Enter*

1. *Two Judges*
2. *Lord Chancellor, with the purse and mace before him.*
3. *Choristers, singing.* [Music.]
4. *Mayor of London, bearing the mace. Then Carter, in his coat of arms, and on his head a gilt copper crown.*
5. *Marquis DORSET, bearing a sceptre of gold, on his head a demi-coronal of gold. With him, the Earl of SURREY, bearing the rod of silver with the dove, crowned with an earl's coronet. Collars of SS.*
6. *Duke of SUFFOLK, in his robe of estate, his coronet on his head, bearing a long white wand, as high-steward. With him, the Duke of NORFOLK, with the rod of marshalship, a coronet on his head. Collars of SS.*
7. *A canopy borne by four of the Cinque-ports, under it, the Queen in her robe; in her hair richly adorned with pearl, crowned. On each side of her, the Bishops of London and Winchester.*
8. *The old Duchess of NORFOLK, in a coronal of gold, wrought with flowers, bearing the Queen's train.*
9. *Certain Ladies or Countesses, with plain circlets of gold without flowers*

A royal train, believe me.—These I know:—

Who's that that bears the sceptre?

*First Gent.*

Marquis Dorset:

And that the Earl of Surrey, with the rod.

*Sec. Gent.* A bold brave gentleman. That should be  
 The Duke of Suffolk?

*First Gent.* 'Tis the same,—high-steward.

*Sec. Gent.* And that my Lord of Norfolk?

*First Gent.* Yes.

*Sec. Gent.* Heaven bless thee!

[*Looking on the Queen.*]

Thou hast the sweetest face I ever look'd on.—

Sir, as I have a soul, she is an angel;

Our king has all the Indies in his arms,

And more and richer, when he strains that lady;

I cannot blame his conscience.

*First Gent.* They that bear  
The cloth of honour over her, are four barons  
Of the Cinque-ports.

*Sec. Gent.* Those men are happy; and so are all are  
near her.

I take it, she that carries up the train

Is that old noble lady, Duchess of Norfolk.

*First Gent.* It is; and all the rest are countesses.

*Sec. Gent.* Their coronets say so. These are stars indeed;  
And sometimes falling ones.

*First Gent.* No more of that.

[*Exit procession, with a great flourish of trumpets.*]

*Enter a third Gentleman.*

God save you, sir! where have you been broiling?

*Third Gent.* Among the crowd i' the abbey; where a  
finger

Could not be wedg'd in more: I am stifled

With the mere rankness of their joy.

*Sec. Gent.* You saw

The ceremony?

*Third Gent.* That I did.

*First Gent.* How was it?

*Third Gent.* Well worth the seeing.

*Sec. Gent.* Good sir, speak it to us.

*Third Gent.* As well as I am able. The rich stream  
Of lords and ladies, having brought the queen  
To a prepar'd place in the choir, fell off  
A distance from her; while her grace sat down

To rest awhile, some half an hour or so,  
 In a rich chair of state, opposing freely  
 The beauty of her person to the people.  
 Believe me, sir, she is the goodliest woman  
 That ever lay by man: which when the people  
 Had the full view of, such a noise arose  
 As the shrouds make at sea in a stiff tempest,  
 As loud, and to as many tunes: hats, cloaks,  
 (Doublets, I think,) flew up; and had their faces  
 Been loose, this day they had been lost. Such joy  
 I never saw before. Great-bellied women,  
 That had not half a week to go, like rams  
 In the old time of war, would shake the press,  
 And make 'em reel before 'em. No man living  
 Could say, "This is my wife," there; all were woven  
 So strangely in one piece.

*Sec. Gent.* But, what follow'd?

*Third Gent.* At length her grace rose, and with modest paces  
 Came to the altar; where she kneel'd, and, saintlike,  
 Cast her fair eyes to heaven, and pray'd devoutly.  
 Then rose again, and bow'd her to the people:  
 When by the Archbishop of Canterbury  
 She had all the royal makings of a queen;  
 As holy oil, Edward Confessor's crown,  
 The rod, and bird of peace, and all such emblems  
 Laid nobly on her: which perform'd, the choir,  
 With all the choicest music of the kingdom,  
 Together sung *Te Deum*. So she parted,  
 And with the same full state pac'd back again  
 To York-place, where the feast is held.

*First Gent.* Sir,  
 You must no more call it York-place, that's past;  
 For, since the cardinal fell, that title's lost:  
 'Tis now the king's, and call'd Whitehall.

*Third Gent.* I know it;  
 But 'tis so lately alter'd, that the old name  
 Is fresh about me.

*Sec. Gent.* What two reverend bishops  
 Were those that went on each side of the queen?

*Third Gent.* Stokesly and Gardiner; the one of Winchester

(Newly preferr'd from the king's secretary),  
The other, London.

*Sec. Gent.* He of Winchester  
Is held no great good lover of the archbishop's,  
The virtuous Cranmer.

*Third Gent.* All the land knows that:  
However, yet there is no great breach; when it comes,  
Cranmer will find a friend will not shrink from him.

*Sec. Gent.* Who may that be, I pray you?

*Third Gent.* Thomas Cromwell;  
A man in much esteem with the king, and truly  
A worthy friend. The king  
Has made him master o' the jewel-house,  
And one, already, of the privy-council.

*Sec. Gent.* He will deserve more.

*Third Gent.* Yes, without all doubt.—  
Come, gentlemen, ye shall go my way, which  
Is to the court, and there ye shall be my guests;  
Something I can command. As I walk thither,  
I'll tell ye more.

*Both.* You may command us, sir. [Exeunt.]

SCENE II. *Kimbolton.*

*Enter KATHARINE, Dowager, sick; led between GRIFFITH and  
PATIENCE.*

*Grif.* How does your grace?

*Kath.* O Griffith, sick to death!  
My legs, like loaden branches, bow to the earth,  
Willing to leave their burden. Reach a chair:—  
So,—now, methinks, I feel a little ease.  
Didst thou not tell me, Griffith, as thou ledd'st me,  
That the great child of honour, Cardinal Wolsey,  
Was dead?

*Grif.* Yes, madam; but I think<sup>(51)</sup> your grace,  
Out of the pain you suffer'd, gave no ear to't.

*Kath.* Prithee, good Griffith, tell me how he died :  
If well, he stepp'd before me, happily,  
For my example.

*Grif.* Well, the voice goes, madam :  
For after the stout Earl Northumberland  
Arrested him at York, and brought him forward  
(As a man sorely tainted) to his answer,  
He fell sick suddenly, and grew so ill  
He could not sit his mule.

*Kath.* Alas, poor man !

*Grif.* At last, with easy roads, he came to Leicester,  
Lodg'd in the abbey ; where the reverend abbot,  
With all his convent,<sup>(62)</sup> honourably receiv'd him ;  
To whom he gave these words,—“ O, father abbot,  
An old man, broken with the storms of state,  
Is come to lay his weary bones among ye ;  
Give him a little earth for charity !”  
So went to bed ; where eagerly his sickness  
Pursu'd him still : and, three nights after this,  
About the hour of eight (which he himself  
Foretold should be his last), full of repentance,  
Continual meditations, tears, and sorrows,  
He gave his honours to the world again,  
His bless'd part to heaven, and slept in peace.

*Kath.* So may he rest ; his faults lie gently on him !  
Yet thus far, Griffith, give me leave to speak him,  
And yet with charity. He was a man  
Of an unbounded stomach, ever ranking  
Himself with princes ; one that, by suggestion,  
Tied<sup>(63)</sup> all the kingdom : simony was fair-play ;  
His own opinion was his law : 1' the presence  
He would say untruths ; and be ever double  
Both in his words and meaning ; he was never,  
But where he meant to run, pitiful :  
His promises were, as he then was, mighty ;  
But his performance, as he is now, nothing :  
Of his own body he was ill, and gave  
The clergy ill example.

*Grif.* Noble madam,



Men's evil manners live in brass; their virtues  
We write in water. May it please your highness  
To hear me speak his good now?

*Kath.* Yes, good Griffith;

I were malicious else.

*Grif.* This cardinal,  
Though from an humble stock, undoubtedly  
Was fashion'd to much honour from his cradle.  
He was a scholar, and a ripe and good one;  
Exceeding wise, fair-spoken, and persuading:  
Lofty and sour to them that lov'd him not;  
But to those men that sought him sweet as summer.  
And though he were unsatisfied in getting  
(Which was a sin), yet in bestowing, madam,  
He was most princely: ever witness for him  
Those twins of learning that he rais'd in you,  
Ipswich and Oxford! one of which fell with him,  
Unwilling to outlive the good that did it;  
The other, though unfinish'd, yet so famous,  
So excellent in art, and still so rising,  
That Christendom shall ever speak his virtue.  
His overthrow heap'd happiness upon him;  
For then, and not till then, he felt himself,  
And found the blessedness of being little:  
And, to add greater honours to his age  
Than man could give him, he died fearing God.

*Kath.* After my death I wish no other herald,  
No other speaker of my living actions,  
To keep mine honour from corruption,  
But such an honest chronicler as Griffith,  
Whom I most hated living, thou hast made me,  
With thy religious truth and modesty,  
Now in his ashes honour: peace be with him!—  
Patience, be near me still; and set me lower;  
I have not long to trouble thee.—Good Griffith,  
Cause the musicians play me that sad note  
I nam'd my knell, whilst I sit meditating  
On that celestial harmony I go to.

[*Sad and solemn music.*

*Grif.* She is asleep : good wench, let's sit down quiet,  
For fear we wake her :—softly, gentle Patience.

*The vision.* Enter, solemnly tripping one after another, six person-  
ages, clad in white robes, wearing on their heads garlands of  
bays, and golden visards on their faces; branches of bays or  
palm in their hands. They first congee unto her, then dance;  
and, at certain changes, the first two hold a spare garland over  
her head, at which the other four make reverend curtsies; then  
the two that held the garland deliver the same to the other next  
two, who observe the same order in their changes, and holding the  
garland over her head; which done, they deliver the same gar-  
land to the last two, who likewise observe the same order: at  
which (as it were by inspiration) she makes in her sleep signs of  
rejoicing, and holdeth up her hands to heaven: and so in their  
dancing they vanish, carrying the garland with them. The  
music continues.

*Kath.* Spirits of peace, where are ye? are ye all gone,  
And leave me here in wretchedness behind ye?

*Grif.* Madam, we are here.

*Kath.* It is not you I call for :  
Saw ye none enter since I slept?

*Grif.* None, madam.

*Kath.* No? Saw you not, even now, a blessèd troop  
Invite me to a banquet; whose bright faces  
Cast thousand beams upon me, like the sun?  
They promis'd me eternal happiness;  
And brought me garlands, Griffith, which I feel  
I am not worthy yet to wear: I shall, assuredly.

*Grif.* I am most joyful, madam, such good dreams  
Possess your fancy.

*Kath.* Bid the music leave,  
They are harsh and heavy to me. [Music ceases.

*Pat.* Do you note  
How much her grace is alter'd on the sudden?  
How long her face is drawn? how pale she looks,  
And of an earthy cold? Mark her eyes!

*Grif.* She is going, wench: pray, pray.

*Pat.* Heaven comfort her!

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* An't like your grace,—

*Kath.* You are a saucy fellow :  
Deserve we no more reverence ?

*Grif.* You are to blame,  
Knowing she will not lose her wonted greatness,  
To use so rude behaviour : go to, kneel.

*Mess.* I humbly do entreat your highness' pardon ;  
My haste made me unmannerly. There is staying  
A gentleman, sent from the king, to see you.

*Kath.* Admit him entrance, Griffith : but this fellow  
Let me ne'er see again. [*Exeunt Griffith and Messenger.*]

*Re-enter GRIFFITH, with CAPUCIUS.*

If my sight fail not,  
You should be lord ambassador from the emperor,  
My royal nephew, and your name Capucius.

*Cap.* Madam, the same,—your servant.

*Kath.* O, my lord,  
The times and titles now are alter'd strangely  
With me since first you knew me. But, I pray you,  
What is your pleasure with me ?

*Cap.* Noble lady,  
First, mine own service to your grace ; the next,  
The king's request that I would visit you ;  
Who grieves much for your weakness, and by me  
Sends you his princely commendations,  
And heartily entreats you take good comfort.

*Kath.* O my good lord, that comfort comes too late ;  
'Tis like a pardon after execution :  
That gentle physic, given in time, had cur'd me ;  
But now I am past all comforts here, but prayers.  
How does his highness ?

*Cap.* Madam, in good health.

*Kath.* So may he ever do ! and ever flourish,  
When I shall dwell with worms, and my poor name  
Banish'd the kingdom !—Patience, is that letter,  
I caus'd you write, yet sent away ?

*Pat.*

No, madam.

[*Giving it to Katharine.*]

*Kath.* Sir, I most humbly pray you to deliver  
This to my lord the king.

*Cap.*

Most willing, madam.

*Kath.* In which I have commended to his goodness  
The model of our chaste loves, his young daughter,—  
'The dews of heaven fall thick in blessings on her!—  
Beseeching him to give her virtuous breeding  
(She is young, and of a noble modest nature,—  
I hope she will deserve well); and a little  
'To love her for her mother's sake, that lov'd him,  
Heaven knows how dearly. My next poor petition  
Is, that his noble grace would have some pity  
Upon my wretched women, that so long  
Have follow'd both my fortunes faithfully:  
Of which there is not one, I dare avow  
(And now I should not lie), but will deserve,  
For virtue and true beauty of the soul,  
For honesty and decent carriage,  
A right good husband, let him be a noble;  
And, sure, those men are happy that shall have 'em.  
'The last is, for my men;—they are the poorest,  
But poverty could never draw 'em from me;—  
That they may have their wages duly paid 'em,  
And something over to remember me by:  
If heaven had pleas'd to have given me longer life  
And able means, we had not parted thus.  
'These are the whole contents:—and, good my lord,  
By that you love the dearest in this world,  
As you wish Christian peace to souls departed,  
Stand these poor people's friend, and urge the king  
'To do me this last right.

*Cap.*

By heaven, I will,

Or let me lose the fashion of a man!

*Kath.* I thank you, honest lord. Remember me  
In all humility unto his highness:  
Say his long trouble now is passing<sup>(54)</sup>  
Out of this world; tell him, in death I bless'd him,

For so I will.—Mine eyes grow dim.—Farewell,  
 My lord.—Griffith, farewell.—Nay, Patience,  
 You must not leave me yet: I must to bed;  
 Call in more women.—When I am dead, good wench,  
 Let me be us'd with honour: strew me over  
 With maiden flowers, that all the world may know  
 I was a chaste wife to my grave: embalm me,  
 Then lay me forth: although unqueen'd, yet like  
 A queen, and daughter to a king, inter me.  
 I can no more. [*Exeunt, leading Katharine.*]

## ACT V.

SCENE I. *London. A gallery in the palace.*

*Enter GARDINER, Bishop of Winchester, a Page with a torch  
 before him.*

*Gar.* It's one o'clock, boy, is't not?

*Boy.* It hath struck.

*Gar.* These should be hours for necessities,  
 Not for delights; times to repair our nature  
 With comforting repose, and not for us  
 To waste these times.

*Enter Sir THOMAS LOVELL.*

Good hour of night, Sir Thomas!

Whither so late?

*Lov.* Came you from the king, my lord?

*Gar.* I did, Sir Thomas; and left him at primero  
 With the Duke of Suffolk.

*Lov.* I must to him too,  
 Before he go to bed. I'll take my leave.

*Gar.* Not yet, Sir Thomas Lovell. What's the matter?  
 It seems you are in haste: an if there be  
 No great offence belongs to't, give your friend  
 Some touch of your late business; affairs, that walk  
 (As they say spirits do) at midnight, have  
 In them a wilder nature than the business  
 That seeks dispatch by day.

*Lov.* My lord, I love you ;  
And durst commend a secret to your ear  
Much weightier than this work. The queen's in labour,  
They say, in great extremity ; and fear'd  
She'll with the labour end.

*Gar.* The fruit she goes with  
I pray for heartily, that it may find  
Good time, and live : but for the stock, Sir Thomas,  
I wish it grubb'd up now.

*Lov.* Methinks I could  
Cry the amen ; and yet my conscience says  
She's a good creature, and, sweet lady, does  
Deserve our better wishes.

*Gar.* But, sir, sir,—  
Hear me, Sir Thomas : you're a gentleman  
Of mine own way ; I know you wise, religious ;  
And, let me tell you, it will ne'er be well,—  
'Twill not, Sir Thomas Lovell, take 't of me,—  
Till Crammer, Cromwell, her two hands, and she,  
Sleep in their graves.

*Lov.* Now, sir, you speak of two  
The most remark'd i' the kingdom. As for Cromwell,—  
Beside that of the jewel-house, is made master  
O' the rolls, and the king's secretary ; further, sir,  
Stands in the gap and trade of more preferments,  
With which the time<sup>(65)</sup> will load him. The archbishop  
Is the king's hand and tongue ; and who dare speak  
One syllable against him ?

*Gar.* Yes, yes, Sir Thomas,  
There are that dare ; and I myself have ventur'd  
To speak my mind of him : and indeed this day,  
Sir (I may tell it you), I think I have  
Incens'd the lords o' the council, that he is  
(For so I know he is, they know he is,)  
A most arch heretic, a pestilence  
That does infect the land : with which they mov'd,  
Have broken with the king ; who hath so far  
Given ear to our complaint (of his great grace  
And princely care, foreseeing those fell mischiefs

Our reasons laid before him), hath commanded  
 To-morrow morning to the council-board  
 He be converted. He's a rank weed, Sir Thomas,  
 And we must root him out. From your affairs  
 I hinder you too long : good night, Sir Thomas.

*Lov.* Many good nights, my lord : I rest your servant.

[*Exeunt Gardiner and Page.*]

*As LOVELL is going out, enter the King and the Duke of Suffolk.*

*K. Hen.* Charles, I will play no more to-night ;  
 My mind's not on't ; you are too hard for me.

*Suf.* Sir, I did never win of you before.

*K. Hen.* But little, Charles ;  
 Nor shall not, when my fancy's on my play.—  
 Now, Lovell, from the queen what is the news ?

*Lov.* I could not personally deliver to her  
 What you commanded me, but by her woman  
 I sent your message ; who return'd her thanks  
 In the great'st humbleness, and desir'd your highness  
 Most heartily to pray for her.

*K. Hen.* What say'st thou, ha ?  
 To pray for her ? what, is she crying out ?

*Lov.* So said her woman ; and that her sufferance made  
 Almost each pang a death.

*K. Hen.* Alas, good lady !

*Suf.* God safely quit her of her burden, and  
 With gentle travail, to the gladding of  
 Your highness with an heir !

*K. Hen.* 'Tis midnight, Charles ;  
 Prithce, to bed ; and in thy prayers remember  
 The estate of my poor queen. Leave me alone ;  
 For I must think of that which company  
 Would not be friendly to.

*Suf.* I wish your highness  
 A quiet night ; and my good mistress will  
 Remember in my prayers.

*K. Hen.* Charles, good night. [*Exit Suffolk.*]

*Enter SIR ANTHONY DENNY.*

Well, sir, what follows ?

*Den.* Sir, I have brought my lord the archbishop,  
As you commanded me.

*K. Hen.* Ha! Canterbury?

*Den.* Ay, my good lord.

*K. Hen.* 'Tis true: where is he, Denny?

*Den.* He attends your highness' pleasure.

*K. Hen.* Bring him to us.

[*Exit Denny.*]

*Lov.* This is about that which the bishop spake:  
I am happily come hither. [Aside.]

*Re-enter DENNY, with CRANMER.*

*K. Hen.* Avoid the gallery. [*Lovell seems to stay.*] Ha!  
I have said. Be gone.

What! [*Exeunt Lovell and Denny.*]

*Cran.* I am fearful:—wherefore frowns he thus?

'Tis his aspect of terror. All's not well. [Aside.]

*K. Hen.* How now, my lord! you do desire to know  
Wherefore I sent for you.

*Cran.* It is my duty

To attend your highness' pleasure.

*K. Hen.* Pray you, arise,

My good and gracious Lord of Canterbury.  
Come, you and I must walk a turn together;  
I have news to tell you: come, come, give me your hand.  
Ah, my good lord, I grieve at what I speak,  
And am right sorry to repeat what follows:  
I have, and most unwillingly, of late  
Heard many grievous, I do say, my lord,  
Grievous complaints of you; which, being consider'd,  
Have mov'd us and our council, that you shall  
This morning come before us; where, I know,  
You cannot with such freedom purge yourself,  
But that, till further trial in those charges  
Which will require your answer, you must take  
Your patience to you, and be well contented  
To make your house our 'Tower. you a brother of us,  
It fits we thus proceed, or else no witness  
Would come against you.



*Cran.* I humbly thank your highness;  
And am right glad to catch this good occasion  
Most thoroughly to be winnow'd, where my chaff  
And corn shall fly asunder: for, I know,  
There's none stands under more calumnious tongues  
Than I myself, poor man.

*K. Hen.* Stand up, good Canterbury:  
Thy truth and thy integrity is rooted  
In us, thy friend: give me thy hand, stand up:  
Prithee, let's walk. Now, by my holidame,  
What manner of man are you? My lord, I look'd  
You would have given me your petition, that  
I should have ta'en some pains to bring together  
Yourself and your accusers; and to have heard you,  
Without indurance, further.

*Cran.* Most dread liege,  
The good I stand on is my truth and honesty:  
If they shall fail, I, with mine enemies,  
Will triumph o'er my person; which I weigh not,  
Being of those virtues vacant. I fear nothing  
What can be said against me.

*K. Hen.* Know you not  
How your state stands i' the world, with the whole world?  
Your enemies are many, and not small; their practices  
Must bear the same proportion; and not over  
The justice and the truth o' the question carries  
The due o' the verdict with it: at what case  
Might corrupt minds procure knaves as corrupt  
To swear against you? such things have been done.  
You are potently oppos'd; and with a malice  
Of as great size. Ween you of better luck,  
I mean, in perjur'd witness, than your master,  
Whose minister you are, whiles here he liv'd  
Upon this naughty earth? Go to, go to;  
You take a precipice for no leap of danger,  
And woo your own destruction.

*Cran.* God and your majesty  
Protect mine innocence, or I fall into  
The trap is laid for me!

*K. Hen.* Be of good cheer;  
 They shall no more prevail than we give way to.  
 Keep comfort to you; and this morning see  
 You do appear before them: if they shall chance,  
 In charging you with matters, to commit you,  
 The best persuasions to the contrary  
 I fail not to use, and with what vehemency  
 The occasion shall instruct you: if entreaties  
 Will render you no remedy, this ring  
 Deliver them, and your appeal to us  
 There make before them.—Look, the good man weeps!  
 He's honest, on mine honour. God's bless'd mother!  
 I swear he is true-hearted; and a soul  
 None better in my kingdom.—Get you gone,  
 And do as I have bid you. [*Exit Cranmer.*] He has stran-  
 gled  
 His language in his tears.

*Enter old Lady.*

*Gent. [within]* Come back: what mean you?

*Old L.* I'll not come back; the tidings that I bring  
 Will make my boldness manners.—Now, good angels  
 Fly o'er thy royal head, and shade thy person  
 Under their blessèd wings!

*K. Hen.* Now, by thy looks  
 I guess thy message. Is the queen deliver'd?  
 Say, ay; and of a boy.

*Old L.* Ay, ay, my liege;  
 And of a lovely boy: the God of heaven  
 Both now and ever bless her!—'tis a girl,—  
 Promises boys hereafter. Sir, your queen  
 Desires your visitation, and to be  
 Acquainted with this stranger: 'tis as like you  
 As cherry is to cherry.

*K. Hen.* Lovell,

*Re-enter LOVELL.*

*Lov.* Sir?

*K. Hen.* Give her an hundred marks. I'll to the queen.  
 [*Exit.*]

*Old L.* An hundred marks ! By this light, I'll ha' more.  
 An ordinary groom is for such payment.  
 I will have more, or scold it out of him.  
 Said I for this, the girl was like to him ?  
 I will have more, or else unsay 't ; and now,  
 While it is hot, I'll put it to the issue. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE II. *Lobby before the council-chamber.*

*Enter CRANMER ; Servants, Door-keeper, &c. attending.*

*Cran.* I hope I am not too late ; and yet the gentleman,  
 That was sent to me from the council, pray'd me  
 To make great haste.—All fast ? what means this ?—Ho !  
 Who waits there ?—Sure, you know me ?

*D. Keep.* Yes, my lord ;

But yet I cannot help you.

*Cran.* Why ?

*D. Keep.* Your grace must wait till you be call'd for.

*Enter Doctor BUTTS.*

*Cran.* So.

*Butts [aside].* This is a piece of malice. I am glad  
 I came this way so happily : the king  
 Shall understand it presently. *[Exit.]*

*Cran. [aside.]* 'Tis Butts,  
 The king's physician : as he pass'd along,  
 How earnestly he cast his eyes upon me !  
 Pray heaven, he sound not my disgrace ! For certain,  
 This is of purpose laid by some that hate me  
 (God turn their hearts ! I never sought their malice),  
 To quench mine honour : they would shame to make me  
 Wait else at door, a fellow-counsellor,  
 'Mong boys, grooms, and lackeys. But their pleasures  
 Must be fulfill'd, and I attend with patience.

*The King and BUTTS appear at a window above.*

*Butts.* I'll show your grace the strangest sight,—

*K. Hen.* What's that, Butts ?

*Butts.* I think your highness saw this many a day.

*K. Hen.* Body o' me, where is it?

*Butts.* There, my lord:

The high promotion of his grace of Canterbury;  
Who holds his state at door, 'mongst pursuivants,  
Pages, and footboys.

*K. Hen.* Ha! 'tis he, indeed:

Is this the honour they do one another?

'Tis well there's one above 'em yet. I had thought

They had parted so much honesty among 'em

(At least, good manners), as not thus to suffer

A man of his place, and so near our favour,

To dance attendance on their lordships' pleasures,

And at the door too, like a post with packets.

By holy Mary, Butts, there's knavery:

Let 'em alone, and draw the curtain close;

We shall hear more anon.

[*Exeunt.*]

THE COUNCIL-CHAMBER.<sup>(50)</sup>

*Enter the Lord Chancellor, the Duke of Suffolk, the Duke of Norfolk, Earl of Surrey, Lord Chamberlain, Gardiner, and Cromwell. The Chancellor places himself at the upper end of the table on the left hand; a seat being left void above him, as for the Archbishop of Canterbury. The rest seat themselves in order on each side. Cromwell at the lower end, as secretary.*

*Chan.* Speak to the business, master secretary:

Why are we met in council?

*Crom.* Please your honours,

The chief cause concerns his grace of Canterbury.

*Gar.* Has he had knowledge of it?

*Crom.* Yes.

*Nor.* Who waits there?

*D. Keep.* Without, my noble lords?

*Gar.* Yes.

*D. Keep.* My lord archbishop;

And has done half an hour, to know your pleasures.

*Chan.* Let him come in.

*D. Keep.* Your grace may enter now.

[*Cranmer approaches the council-table.*]

*Chan.* My good lord archbishop, I'm very sorry  
To sit here at this present, and behold  
That chair stand empty : but we all are men,  
In our own natures frail, and capable<sup>(57)</sup>  
Of our flesh ; few are angels : out of which frailty  
And want of wisdom, you, that best should teach us,  
Have misdemean'd yourself, and not a little,  
Toward the king first, then his laws, in filling  
The whole realm, by your teaching and your chaplains  
(For so we are inform'd), with new opinions,  
Divers and dangerous ; which are heresies,  
And, not reform'd, may prove pernicious.

*Car.* Which reformation must be sudden too,  
My noble lords ; for those that tame wild horses  
Pace 'em not in their hands to make 'em gentle,  
But stop their mouths with stubborn bits, and spur 'em,  
Till they obey the manage. If we suffer  
(Out of our easiness, and childish pity  
To one man's honour) this contagious sickness,  
Farewell all physic : and what follows then ?  
Commutations, uproars, with a general taint  
Of the whole state : as, of late days, our neighbours,  
The upper Germany, can dearly witness,  
Yet freshly pitied in our memories.

*Cran.* My good lords, hitherto, in all the progress  
Both of my life and office, I have labour'd,  
And with no little study, that my teaching  
And the strong course of my authority  
Might go one way, and safely ; and the end  
Was ever, to do well : nor is there living  
(I speak it with a single heart, my lords,)  
A man that more detests, more stirs against,  
Both in his private conscience and his place,  
Defacers of a<sup>(58)</sup> public peace, than I do.  
Pray heaven, the king may never find a heart  
With less allegiance in it ! Men that make  
Envy and crook'd malice nourishment  
Dare bite the best. I do beseech your lordships,  
That, in this case of justice, my accusers,

Be what they will, may stand forth face to face,  
And freely urge against me.

*Suf.* Nay, my lord,  
That cannot be: you are a counsellor,  
And, by that virtue, no man dare accuse you.

*Gar.* My lord, because we have business of more moment,  
We will be short with you. 'Tis his highness' pleasure,  
And our consent, for better trial of you,  
From hence you be committed to the Tower;  
Where, being but a private man again,  
You shall know many dare accuse you boldly,  
More than, I fear, you are provided for.

*Crom.* Ah, my good Lord of Winchester, I thank you;  
You are always my good friend; if your will pass,  
I shall both find your lordship judge and juror,  
You are so merciful: I see your end,—  
'Tis my undoing: love and meekness, lord,  
Become a churchman better than ambition:  
Win straying souls with modesty again,  
Cast none away. 'That I shall clear myself,  
Lay all the weight ye can upon my patience,  
I make as little doubt, as you do conscience  
In doing daily wrongs. I could say more,  
But reverence to your calling makes me modest.

*Gar.* My lord, my lord, you are a sectary,  
That's the plain truth: your painted gloss discovers,  
To men that understand you, words and weakness

*Crom.* My Lord of Winchester, you are a little,  
By your good favour, too sharp; men so noble,  
However faulty, yet should find respect  
For what they have been: 'tis a cruelty  
To load a falling man.

*Gar.* Good master secretary,  
I cry your honour mercy; you may, worst  
Of all this table, say so.

*Crom.* Why, my lord?

*Gar.* Do not I know you for a favourer  
Of this new sect? ye are not sound.

*Crom.* Not sound?

*Gar.* Not sound, I say.

*Crom.* Would you were half so honest!

Men's prayers then would seek you, not their fears.

*Gar.* I shall remember this bold language.

*Crom.* Do.

Remember your bold life too.

*Chan.*<sup>(60)</sup> This is too much;

Forbear, for shame, my lords.

*Gar.* I have done.

*Crom.* And I.

*Chan.* 'Then thus for you, my lord:—it stands agreed,

I take it, by all voices, that forthwith

You be convey'd to the Tower a prisoner;

There to remain till the king's further pleasure

Be known unto us:—are you all agreed, lords?

*All.* We are.

*Cran.* Is there no other way of mercy,

But I must needs to the Tower, my lords?

*Gar.* What other

Would you expect? you are strangely troublesome. —

Let some o' the guard be ready there.

*Enter Guard.*

*Cran.* For me?

Must I go like a traitor thither?

*Gar.* Receive him,

And see him safe i' the Tower.

*Cran.* Stay, good my lords,

I have a little yet to say. Look there, my lords;

By virtue of that ring, I take my cause

Out of the gripes of cruel men, and give it

To a most noble judge, the king my master.

*Chan.* This is the king's ring.

*Sur.* 'Tis no counterfeit.

*Suf.* 'Tis the right ring, by heaven: I told ye all,

When we first put this dangerous stone a-rolling,

'Twould fall upon ourselves.

*Nor.* Do you think, my lords,  
The king will suffer but the little finger  
Of this man to be vex'd?

*Chan.* 'Tis now too certain :  
How much more is his life in value with him ?  
Would I were fairly out on't !

*Crom.* My mind gave me,  
In seeking tales and informations  
Against this man (whose honesty the devil  
And his disciples only envy at),  
Ye blew the fire that burns ye : now have at ye !

*Enter the King, frowning on them ; he takes his seat.*

*Gar.* Dread sovereign, how much are we bound to heaven  
In daily thanks, that gave us such a prince ;  
Not only good and wise, but most religious :  
One that, in all obedience, makes the church  
The chief aim of his honour ; and, to strengthen  
That holy duty, out of dear respect,  
His royal self in judgment comes to hear  
The cause betwixt her and this great offender.

*K. Hen.* You were ever good at sudden commendations,  
Bishop of Winchester. But know, I come not  
To hear such flattery now, and in my presence ;  
They are too thin and bare<sup>(60)</sup> to hide offences.  
To me you cannot reach, you play the spaniel,  
And think with wagging of your tongue to win me ;  
But, whatsoe'er thou tak'st me for, I'm sure  
Thou hast a cruel nature and a bloody.—  
Good man [*to Crommer*], sit down. Now let me see the  
proudest,

He that dares most, but wag his finger at thee :  
By all that's holy, he had better starve  
Than but once think this<sup>(61)</sup> place becomes thee not.

*Sur.* May it please your grace,—

*K. Hen.* No, sir, it does not please me.  
I had thought I had had men of some understanding  
And wisdom of my council ; but I find none.  
Was it discretion, lords, to let this man,





Witness, how dear I hold this confirmation.

*K. Hen.* Good man, those joyful tears show thy true heart: <sup>(62)</sup>

The common voice, I see, is verified  
Of thee, which says thus, "Do my Lord of Canterbury  
A shrewd turn, and he is your friend for ever."—

Come, lords, we trifle time away; I long

To have this young one made a Christian.

As I have made ye one, lords, one remain;

So I grow stronger, you more honour gain. [*Exeunt.*

-----

SCENE III. *The palace-yard.*

*Noise and tumult within. Enter Porter and his Men.*

*Port.* You'll leave your noise anon, ye rascals: do you take the court for Paris-garden? <sup>(63)</sup> ye rude slaves, leave your gaping.

[*Within.*] Good master porter, I belong to the larder.

*Port.* Belong to the gallows, and be hanged, ye rogue! is this a place to roar in?—Fetch me a dozen crab-tree staves, and strong ones: these are but switches to 'em.—I'll scratch your heads: you must be seeing christenings? do you look for ale and cakes here, you rude rascals?

*Man.* Pray, sir, be patient: 'tis as much impossible  
(Unless we sweep 'em from the door with cannons)

To scatter 'em, as 'tis to make 'em sleep

On May-day morning; which will never be:

We may as well push against Paul's, as stir 'em.

*Port.* How got they in, and be hang'd?

*Man.* Alas, I know not; how gets the tide in?

As much as one sound cudgel of four foot  
(You see the poor remainder) could distribute,  
I made no spare, sir.

*Port.* You did nothing, sir.

*Man.* I am not Samson, nor Sir Guy, nor Colbrand,  
To mow 'em down before me: but if I spar'd any  
That had a head to hit, either young or old,

He or she, cuckold or cuckold-maker,  
Let me ne'er hope to see a chine again;  
And that I would not for a cow, God save her! <sup>(61)</sup>

[*Within.*] Do you hear, master porter?

*Port.* I shall be with you presently, good master puppy.  
—Keep the door close, sirrah.

*Man.* What would you have me do?

*Port.* What should you do, but knock 'em down by the dozens? Is this Moorfields to muster in? or have we some strange Indian with the great tool come to court, the women so besiege us? Bless me, what a fry of fornication is at door! On my Christian conscience, this one christening will beget a thousand; here will be father, godfather, and all together.

*Man.* The spoons will be the bigger, sir. There is a fellow somewhat near the door; he should be a brazier by his face, for, o' my conscience, twenty of the dog-days now reign in's nose; all that stand about him are under the line, they need no other penance: that fire-drake did I hit three times on the head, and three times was his nose discharged against me; he stands there, like a mortar-piece, to blow us. There was a haberdasher's wife of small wit near him, that railed upon me till her pinked porringer fell off her head, for kindling such a combustion in the state. I missed the meteor once, and hit that woman, who cried out "Clubs!" when I might see from far some forty truncheoners draw to her succour, which were the hope o' the Strand, where she was quartered. They fell on; I made good my place: at length they came to the broomstaff to <sup>(62)</sup> me; I defied 'em still: when suddenly a file of boys behind 'em, loose shot, delivered such a shower of pebbles, that I was fain to draw mine honour in, and let 'em win the work: the devil was amongst 'em, I think, surely.

*Port.* These are the youths that thunder at a playhouse, and fight for bitten apples; that no audience, but the 'Tribulation of Tower-hill, or the limbs of Limehouse, their dear brothers, are able to endure. I have some of 'em in *Limbo Patrum*, and there they are like to dance these three days; besides the running banquet of two headles that is to come.

*Enter the Lord Chamberlain.*

*Cham.* Mercy o' me, what a multitude are here!  
They grow still too; from all parts they are coming,  
As if we kept a fair here! Where are these porters,  
These lazy knaves?—Ye've made a fine hand, fellows:  
There's a trim rabble let in: are all these  
Your faithful friends o' the suburbs? We shall have  
Great store of room, no doubt, left for the ladies,  
When they pass back from the christening.

*Port.* An't please your honour,  
We are but men; and what so many may do,  
Not being torn a-pieces, we have done:  
An army cannot rule 'em.

*Cham.* As I live,  
If the king blame me for't, I'll lay ye all  
By the heels, and suddenly; and on your heads  
Clap round fines for neglect: ye're lazy knaves;  
And here ye lie baiting of bombards, when  
Ye should do service. Hark! the trumpets sound;  
They're come already from the christening:  
Go, break among the press, and find a way out  
To let the troop pass fairly; or I'll find  
A Marshalsea shall hold ye play these two months.

*Port.* Make way there for the princess.

*Man.* You great fellow,  
Stand close up, or I'll make your head ache.

*Port.* You i' the camlet, get up o' the rail;  
I'll pick you o'er the pales else.<sup>(00)</sup> [*Exeunt.*

#### SCENE IV. *The palace.*

*Enter trumpets, sounding; then two Aldermen, Lord Mayor, Garter, CRANMER, Duke of NORFOLK with his marshal's staff, Duke of SUFFOLK, two Noblemen bearing great stunting-bowls for the christening-gifts; then four Noblemen bearing a canopy, under which the Duchess of NORFOLK, godmother, bearing the child richly habited in a mantle, &c., train borne by a Lady; then*

*follows the Marchioness of Dorset, the other godmother, and Ladies. The troop pass once about the stage, and Garter speaks.*

*Gart.* Heaven, from thy endless goodness, send prosperous life, long, and ever happy, to the high and mighty princess of England, Elizabeth!

*Flourish. Enter King and train.*

*Cran.* [*kneeling*] And to your royal grace, and the good queen,

My noble partners, and myself, thus pray ;—  
All comfort, joy, in this most gracious lady,  
Heaven ever laid up to make parents happy,  
May hourly fall upon ye!

*K. Hen.* Thank you, good lord archbishop :  
What is her name?

*Cran.* Elizabeth.

*K. Hen.* Stand up, lord.—

*[The King kisses the Child.]*

With this kiss take my blessing : God protect thee!  
Into whose hand I give thy life.

*Cran.* Amen.

*K. Hen.* My noble gossips, ye've been too prodigal :  
I thank ye heartily ; so shall this lady,  
When she has so much English.

*Cran.* Let me speak, sir,  
For heaven now bids me ; and the words I utter  
Let none think flattery, for they'll find 'em truth.  
This royal infant (heaven still move about her!),  
Though in her cradle, yet now promises  
Upon this land a thousand thousand blessings,  
Which time shall bring to ripeness : she shall be  
(But few now living can behold that goodness)  
A pattern to all princes living with her,  
And all that shall succeed : Saba<sup>(67)</sup> was never  
More covetous of wisdom and fair virtue  
Than this pure soul shall be : all princely graces,  
That mould up such a mighty piece as this is,  
With all the virtues that attend the good,  
Shall still be doubled on her : truth shall nurse her,

Holy and heavenly thoughts still counsel her :  
 She shall be lov'd and fear'd : her own shall bless her ;  
 Her foes shake like a field of beaten corn,  
 And hang their heads with sorrow : good grows with her :  
 In her days every man shall eat in safety,  
 Under his own vine, what he plants ; and sing  
 The merry songs of peace to all his neighbours :  
 God shall be truly known ; and those about her  
 From her shall read the perfect ways<sup>(68)</sup> of honour,  
 And by those claim their greatness, not by blood.  
 Nor shall this peace sleep with her : but as when  
 The bird of wonder dies, the maiden phoenix,  
 Her ashes new create another heir,  
 As great in admiration as herself ;  
 So shall she leave her blessedness to one  
 (When heaven shall call her from this cloud of darkness),  
 Who from the sacred ashes of her honour  
 Shall star-like rise, as great in fame as she was,  
 And so stand fix'd : peace, plenty, love, truth, terror,  
 That were the servants to this chosen infant,  
 Shall then be his, and like a vine grow to him :  
 Wherever the bright sun of heaven shall shine,  
 His honour and the greatness of his name  
 Shall be, and make new nations : he shall flourish,  
 And, like a mountain cedar, reach his branches  
 To all the plains about him :—our children's children  
 Shall see this, and bless heaven.

*K. Hen.* Thou speakest wonders.

*Cran.* She shall be, to the happiness of England,  
 An aged princess ; many days shall see her,  
 And yet no day without a deed to crown it.  
 Would I had known no more ! but she must die,—  
 She must, the saints must have her,—yet a virgin ;  
 A most unspotted lily shall she pass  
 To the ground, and all the world shall mourn her.

*K. Hen.* O lord archbishop,  
 Thou hast made me now a man ! never, before  
 This happy child, did I get any thing :  
 This oracle of comfort has so pleas'd me,

That when I am in heaven I shall desire  
To see what this child does, and praise my Maker.—  
I thank ye all.—To you, my good lord mayor,  
And you,<sup>(60)</sup> good brethren, I am much beholding;  
I have receiv'd much honour by your presence,  
And ye shall find me thankful.—Lead the way, lords:—  
Ye must all see the queen, and she must thank ye,  
She will be sick else. This day, no man think  
Has business at his house; for all shall stay:  
This little one shall make it holiday. [Exeunt.]

## EPILOGUE.

'Tis ten to one this play can never please  
All that are here: some come to take their ease,  
And sleep an act or two; but those, we fear,  
We've frighted with our trumpets; so, 'tis clear,  
They'll say 'tis naught: others, to hear the city  
Abus'd extremely, and to cry, "That's witty!"  
Which we have not done neither: that, I fear,  
All the expected good we're like to hear  
For this play at this time, is only in  
The merciful construction of good women;  
For such a one we show'd 'em: if they smile,  
And say 'twill do, I know, within a while  
All the best men are ours; for 'tis ill hap,  
If they hold when their ladies bid 'em clap.

P. 430. (1) "Met in the vale of Andren."

In modern editions "*Andren*" is generally altered to "*Ardo*;" but Shakespeare gave the word as he found it in Holinshed's *Cron.*: "The daie of the meeting was appointed to be on the thursdaie the seauenth of Iune, vpon which daie the two kings met in the vale of *Andren*," &c., vol. iii. 649, ed. 1808: again, p. 654, "in the vallis of *Anderne*," &c.

P. 431. (2)

"Which action's self was tongue to. All was royall," &c.

Stands thus in the folio,—

"Which Actions selfe, was tongue too

*Buc.* All was Royall,

'To the disposing of it nought rebell'd,

Order gaue each thing view. The Office did

Distinctly his full Function: who did guide,

I meane who set the Body, and the Limbes

Of this great Sport together ?

*Nor.* As you guesse.

One certes, that promises no Element

In such a businesse.

*Buc.* I pray you," &c.

Here Theobald arranged the dialogue as the author evidently intended it to be distributed.—Mr. Knight prefers (and defends in a note) the arrangement of the folio!

P. 432. (2) "Out of his self-drawing web, he gives us note,  
The force of his own merit makes his way;  
A gift that heaven gives for him, which buys  
A place next to the king."

The folio has,—

"Out of his Selfe-drawing Web. O gives vs note," &c.,—

the Ms., as Mr. Collier observes, having most probably had "a [i.e. he] gives," &c, which the compositor mistook for "O gives," &c. (Mr. Knight accuses the modern editors of having "corrupted" this passage: he prints "Out of his self-drawing web,—O ! give us note!—" ;—calls "O ! give us note!—" "THE ORIGINAL READING," and "one of Shakespeare's happy parentheses," &c. &c.) The third line has been questioned; and it certainly seems somewhat suspicious.

P. 431. (1) "is venom-mouth'd," &c.

The folio has "is venom'd-mouth'd," &c.

P. 435. (2) "i' the ransmy,"

The folio has "ith' wrenching," (See my *Remarks on Mr. Collier's and Mr. Knight's eds. of Shakespeare*, p. 164.)



P. 435. (6) "he *privily*," &c.

The "*he*" was added by the editor of the second folio.

P. 437. (7) "*his chancellor*,—"

Here the folio has "*his Councellour*;" but afterwards (p. 451) rightly, "Sir Gilbert Pecke his *Chancellour*," &c.

P. 437. (8) "*Nicholas Hopkins?*"

The folio has "*Michaell Hopkins?*"—"In the Ms. '*Nich.*' only was probably set down, and mistaken for '*Mich.*'" MALON.

P. 437. (9) "*I am the shadow of poor Buckingham,  
Whose figure even this instant cloud puts on,  
By darkening my clear sun.—My lord, farewell*"

In this obscurely expressed passage Johnson proposed to read "*— cloud puts out*," &c., but he was not satisfied with his own conjecture; and perhaps he had no reason to be so.—The folio has "*My Lords, farewell*;" which is retained by Mr. Knight, who quite forgets that Abergavenny is going to the Tower along with Buckingham.

P. 439. (10) "*This tractable obedience*," &c.

Rowe printed "*That tractable*," &c.; and Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector gives "*Their tractable*," &c. But the original reading is right, in our old writers "*this*" and "*these*" are sometimes little else than redundant.

P. 439. (11) "*There is no primer business*."

The folio has "*— no primer baseness*,"—a sheer misprint, and the next thing to nonsense; yet Steevens thought that it afforded a "meaning sufficiently clear;" Mr. Knight prefers it to the "much feebler" modern reading, and Mr. Collier was content with it, till he had his Ms. Corrector's *imprimatur* for "*business*."

P. 440. (12) "*For our best act*."

Probably we ought to read "*— best action*." Compare the ninth line above.

P. 440. (13) "*A trembling contribution*?"

Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector changes "*trembling*" to "*trebling*;" which alteration, since Mr. Collier expresses no opinion on it, we may conclude that he does not, like some of his critics, consider as entitled to a place in the text.

P. 441. (11) "that if the king  
Should without issue die, he'll," &c.

Here the modern editors alter "*he'll*" to "*he'd*" but in such sentences we not unfrequently find our early writers using *will* where we now should use *would*. so our author again, in *Coriolanus*, act i. sc. 9,

"If I should tell thee o'er this thy day's work,  
Thou'lt not believe thy deeds."

So, too, Cowley in *Love's Riddle*, act i. sc. 2,

"I'd see you hung up for a thing to scare  
The crows away, before I'll spend my breath  
To teach you any." *Works*, vol. iii. 75, ed. 1708.

P. 442. (12) "*Hoplus*"

Here, and in the next speech, the folio has "*Henton*" (and we know that the person in question belonged to the convent of *Henton*, near Bristol); but, as previously in this play, p. 437, and subsequently, p. 451, he is called "*Hoplus*," the modern editors, to prevent confusion, have adopted the latter name here; and they seem quite justified in adopting it.

P. 442. (13) "*Men fear'd*," &c.

The folio has "*Men feare*," &c.

P. 442. (14) "*the confession's scale*," &c.

Thobald's correction.—The folio has "*the Commissions Scale*," &c.

P. 442. (15) "*To gain the love*," &c.

The word "*gain*" was first added in the fourth folio.

P. 442. (16) "*dangerous for him*," &c.

The folio has "*dangerous for this*," &c.

P. 444. (20) "by day and night,  
*He's traitor to the height*"

Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector gives "*He is a daring traitor to the height*."

P. 444. (21) "*That never saw 'em pace before, the spawn  
Or springhalt reign'd among 'em.*"

The folio has,

"*That never see 'em pace before, the Spawen  
A Spring-halt rain'd among 'em.*"—

and Malone thinks that "*A springhalt*," &c. has been altered "without any necessity"—Pope printed "*And springhalt*," &c., but I prefer "*Or springhalt*," &c., which I had substituted in my copy long before I knew that such was the reading of Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector.

P. 444. (22) "cut too," &c.

The folio has "*cut too't*," &c.

P. 445. (23) "*wear away*," &c.

So the second folio.—The first folio has "*wear away*," &c.

P. 446. (24) "*has wherewithal*," &c.

The modern editors print "*he has wherewithal*,"—the folio having "*If's wherewithall*," &c.; but see note (30).

P. 451. (25) "*To have brought*," &c.

The folio has "*To him brought*," &c.—The correction was made in the fourth folio.

P. 453. (26) "*'Gainst me, that I cannot take peace with*," &c.

The usual modern alteration is "*'Gainst me, I can't take peace with*," &c.

P. 453. (27) "*no black envy*  
Shall mark my grave."

The folio has "*Shall make my grave*,"

P. 458. (28) "*Exit Lord Chamberlain*," &c.

The stage-direction in the folio is "*Exit Lord Chamberlaine*, and the King draws the Curtaine and sits reading pensively."

P. 462. (29) "*'Tis strange. a three-pence how'd would hire me*," &c.

The editor of the second folio reads "*— how'd now would*," &c.; and several modern editors print "*bowed*;" but "*huc*" is to be read as a dissyllable.

P. 463. (30) "*and high note's*  
*Tu'en of your many virtues, the king's majesty*  
*Commends his good opinion of you to you, and*," &c.

Some editors print, with the folio, "*and high notes*," &c.; but "*notes*" can

hardly be a plural here.—afterwards in act v, sc. 1 (p. 504), the folio has,—

"*King.* Charles, I will play no more to night,  
My *mindes* [i.e. mind's] not on't.

Nor shall not when my *Fancies* [i.e. fancy's] on my play."

Here, in most modern editions, the words "*of you*" are omitted.

P. 166. (31) "*That longer you desire the count,*" &c.

In the fourth folio "*desire*" is substituted for "*desire*," and so reads Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector: but see Malone's note *ad l.*

P. 470. (32) "*A marriage,*" &c.

The folio has "*And Marriage,*" &c

P. 470. (43) "*Yea, with a spitting power,*" &c.

So the second folio.—The first folio has "— *a spitting power,*" &c.

P. 474. (31) "*to your cause,*"

So the second folio.—The first folio has "*to our cause.*"

P. 475. (31) "*Alas, has banish'd me his bed already,*" &c.

Here the modern editors print "*Alas, h'as banish'd,*" &c., and "*Alas, he has banish'd,*" &c.,—because the folio has "*Alas, ha's banish'd,*" &c.: but the pronoun is to be understood from what precedes. That they were not warranted in substituting "h'as" and "he has" for "ha's," as they have done here and in various other passages of Shakespeare, is quite certain:—the folio, in an earlier speech of the Queen's in this scene (p. 473) has "*Believe me sho ha's had much wrong;*" and in a later one (p. 477), "*He ha's my heart yet, and shall have my prayers.*" so too in the next scene, according to the folio,—

"*Sur. Ha's the King this?*" (p. 478.)

"*Cardinall Campeius,*  
*Is stolne away to Rome, hath 'tane no leave,*  
*Ha's left the cause o' th' King vnhandled, and*  
*Is posted,*" &c. (p. 479.)

"*Suf. He ha's, and we shall see him*  
*For it an Arch-bishop.*" (p. 480.)

"*my Loyaltie*  
*Which euer ha's, and euer shall be growing,*  
*Till death,*" &c. (p. 483.)

" I presume,  
That as my hand *ha's* open'd Bounty to you," &c.  
(p. 483.)  
" Take notice Lords, he *ha's* a Loyall breast,"  
(p. 484.)  
" This paper *ha's* vndone me " (Ibid.)

P. 479. (80) " Sur. *Now, all my joy*  
*Trace the conjunction ?*

Pope printed "*Now, all joy,*" &c.—Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector reads "*Now, may all joy,*" &c.; and Mr. Singer (*Shakespeare Vindicated*, &c. p. 186) says it "is a good conjecture, and may, I think, be safely adopted" But is any alteration necessary? does not Surrey's joy at the marriage arise from his belief that it will hasten the Cardinal's ruin? Previously in this scene he has declared,—

" *I am joyful*  
*To meet the least occasion that may give me*  
*Remembrance of my father-in-law, the duke,*  
*To be reveng'd on him."*

again,—

" Sir,  
*I should be glad to hear such news as this*  
*Once every hour."*

The speech, too, which draws forth the present exclamation of Surrey,—

" *Suf. May you be happy in your wish, my lord !*  
*For, I profess, you have it,"—*

seems to forbid our disturbing the text. ("This '*my*' is emphatical, and meant to express the greatest joy possible, the speaker's mind being capable of conceiving no greater than that he is now filled with on hearing so much good news." GARRICK.)

P. 480. (81)  
" *The cardinal !*

Enter WORREY and CROMWELL.

Nor. *Observe, observe, he's moody.*

Wol. *The packet, Cromwell,*  
*Gave't you the king ?*

Crom. *To his own hand, in's bedchamber."*

Here the more recent editors print,

" Wol. *The packet, Cromwell, gave it you the king ?*  
Crom. *To his own hand, in his bedchamber."*

But I have let these speeches stand as they do in the folio,—Compare, in p. 457,—

"This bold bad man,

*Suf.* And free us from his slavery.

*Nov.* We had need pray,

And heartily, for our deliverance," &c.

and in p 463,—

"And say I have spoke with you.

*Anne.* My honour'd lord

[*Exit Lord Chamberlain*]

*Old L.* Why, this it is, see, see!

I have been begging sixteen years in court," &c.

again, in page 480,—

"To come abroad.

*Crom.* I think, by this he is.

*Vol.* Leave me awhile. [*Exit Cromwell.*]

It shall be to the Duchess of Alençon," &c.

P. 482. (48)

"To steal from spiritual leisure a brief span," &c.

Here Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector substitutes "labour" for "*leisure*,"—most erroneously.—"*Spiritual leisure* means occupation with religious matters, just as *learned leisure* means occupation with literary matters. Leisure does not necessarily signify idleness, as boys at *school* (σχολη—*leisure*) know full well. It is a polite synonym, perhaps slightly tinged with irony, for labour of an unmenial and unprofessional character. It stands opposed, not to every kind of work, but only to the work of 'men of business,' as they are called." *Blackwood's Magazine* for Sept. 1853, p. 317.—Mr. Grant White illustrates the use of the word "*leisure*" in the present passage by the following quotation from Chaucer's translation of Terminus's *Praise of Folly*, 1549, sig. I. ii.: "Whereas, taking no grete *leisure* in penninge of theyr mattier, naie, rather whatsover toy lighteth in theyr head," &c. *Shakespeare's Scholar*, &c. p. 60.—A speech of the Duke in our author's *Measure for Measure*, act iii. sc. 2, may be cited here: "He professes to have received no sinister measure from his judge, but most willingly humbles himself to the determination of justice: yet had he framed to himself, by the instruction of his frailty, many deceiving promises of life, which I, by my good *leisure*, have discredited to him, and now is he resolved to die."

P. 483. (39)

"Yet fill'd with my abilities," &c.

The folio has "Yet fill'd with," &c.

P. 483. (40)

"I do profess

That for your highness' good I ever labour'd

More than mine own; that am, have, and will be,—

Though all the world," &c.

The folio has no point after "and will be."—For the following note by the late

Mr. Sydney Walker I am indebted to Mr. W. N. Lettson: "If there be no other corruption, the period after '*be*' ought to be replaced by a comma; otherwise the words appear unintelligible. Even so, however, this will be a most harsh instance of *ἀνακολουθία*. But I rather think that a line is lost, somewhat to the following effect:

*"That I am, have, and will be,  
[In heart and not, tied to your service; yea,]  
Though all the world should," &c.—*

Mr. Singer (*Shakespeare Vindicated*, &c. p. 187) says that all is made "congruous and clear," if we read,—

*"More than mine own: that I am true, and will be,  
Though all the world," &c.*

But there is not the slightest reason for supposing that any error lies in the words "*am, have, and will be*" (i.e. *am, have been, and will be*): a similar ellipsis occurs in the preceding speech of the Cardinal;

*"Which ever has and ever shall be growing,  
Till death, that winter, kill it."*

P. 485. (11)

*"Tied it by letters-patents."*

Mr. Knight and Mr. Collier print "*— by letters patent:*" but the folio is right, according to the phraseology of Shakespeare's time: and compare *Richard II.* vol. iii. pp. 297, 307.

P. 486. (12)

*"If I lov'd many words, lord, I should tell you  
You have as little honesty as honour,  
That in the way of loyalty and truth  
Toward the king, my ever royal master,  
Dare make a sounder man than Surrey can be,  
And all that love his follies."*

"Mr. Theobald reads:

*'That I, in the way,' &c.*

and this unnecessary emendation has been adopted by all the subsequent editors. The construction is, '*I, that dare make a sounder man than Surrey, tell you, you have as little honesty as honour.*'" MALONE.

"A line is assuredly lost:

*'I should tell you,  
You have as little honesty as honour,  
[To rail in such irreverent wise on me,]  
That in the way of loyalty,' &c.*

'*Honesty*' is '*decency*.'" SYDNEY WALKER (a note communicated to me by Mr. W. N. Lettson).

P. 486. (13)

*"Who, if he live, will scarce be gentlemen."*

So the second folio.—The first folio has "*Whom, if he live,*" &c.; and so per-

haps the author wrote here: but it is one of those passages in which I do not venture to retain "whom."

P. 487. (11) "To Gregory de Cassalis," &c.

The folio has "To Gregory de Cassado," &c.

P. 488. (45) "By your power legatine," &c.

The folio has "— power Legatine," &c.

P. 488. (46) "Chattels, and," &c.

The folio has "Castles, and," &c.

P. 488. (47) "Farewell, a long farewell, to all my greatness!"

The punctuation in the folio is "Farewell? A long farewell to all my Greatness,"—which Mr. Hunter (*New Illust. of Shakespeare*, ii. 108) would retain, interpreting the line thus: "Norfolk has said, in a strain of high familiarity [rather, of deep insult], 'So fare you well, my little good lord cardinal;' Wolsey says, taking up the words Norfolk had used, 'So *farewell* to the little good you bear me,' when, the conviction of his lost estate flashing across his mind, he proceeds, 'Farewell,'—did I say 'Farewell?' did I repeat the word after the man?—Yes, it is too surely so—'a long farewell to all my greatness!'" But I cannot believe that any such recoudite meaning was intended here by the author:—and it is certain, 1st, that in the folio the interrogation-point is frequently equivalent to an exclamation-point; 2dly, that in the folio the interrogation-point is sometimes found where it can have no place,—e.g. thus, in an earlier speech of the present play (p. 439),

"No, my Lord?

You know no more then others? But you frame," &c.

P. 488. (49) "The tender leaves of hope," &c.

The folio has "— Leaves of hopes," &c.

P. 490. (49) "wept on 'em!"

The folio has "wept on him."

P. 493 (60)

"Sec. Gent.

Alas, good lady!—

[A lively flourish of trumpets,

The trumpets sound; stand close, the queen is coming."

In the folio, the words, "*A lively flourish of trumpets,*" are given at the commencement of "THE ORDER OF THE PROCESSION:" but it is evident that they



ought properly to stand where I have placed them—Here the folio has a stage-direction, "*Ho-boys;*" which seems to have crept in from the prompter's book, and refers, I suppose, to the "haubays" which were presently to accompany the singing of the Chorists.

P. 496. (41) "but I think your grace," &c.

The folio has "*but I thanke your grace,*" &c.

P. 497. (2) "With all his covert," &c.

So in *Measure for Measure*, act iv. sc. iii., "One of our *covert*, and his confessor," &c., where see note

P. 497 (3) "Tied all the kingdom," &c.

Here "*Tyth'd*" has been substituted for "*Tied*."

P. 501. (61) "Say his long trouble now is passing," &c.

More than one attempt has been made to amend this line,—from which something has apparently dropped out.

P. 503. (23) "With which the time will," &c.

The folio has "— the lame will," &c.

P. 509. (58) "Exount.

THE COUNCIL-CHAMBER," &c.

The folio has "A Councell Table brought in with Chayres and Stooles, and placed vnder the State. Enter Lord Chawcellour," &c.

P. 510. (17) "but we all are men,

*In our own natures frail, and capable  
Of our flesh; few are angels,"* &c.

Malone printed

*"In our own natures frail, incapable;  
Of our flesh, few are angels,"* &c.

Mason and Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector would alter "*capable*" to "*culpable*,"—the former putting a colon after it, the latter connecting it with "*Of our flesh*."

P. 510 (58) "Defacers of a public peace," &c.

Boys printed "*Defacers of the public peace,*" &c.; and so reads Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector.

P. 512. (49) "Chan."

To this speech, and to the next three speeches of the Chancellor, the folio prefixes "*Cham.*"

P. 513. (60)

"*They are too thin and bare to hide offences,*" &c.

The folio has "— *thin, and base to hule,*" &c.

P. 513. (61)

"*Than but once think this place becomes thee not.*"

The folio has "— *thinke his place,*" &c.,—which Malone brings back into the text, and explains—"Who dares to suppose that the place or situation in which he is, is not suitable to thee also?"—forgetting, it would seem, the previous stage-direction (p. 509) about the "*seat being left void*" for the Archbishop of Canterbury, and that Cranmer has just taken that "seat" or "place" at the bidding of the king,—"Good man, *sit down.*"—(The misprint of "his" for "this" (as I have shown in my *Remarks on Mr Collier's and Mr. Knight's eds. of Shakespeare*, p. 149) is of frequent occurrence.)

P. 515. (52)

"*thy true heart,*"

So the second folio.—The first folio has "*thy true hearts.*"

P. 515. (63)

"*Paris-garden.*"

The folio has "*Parish Garden,*"—which, as a vulgar corruption, might suit the Porter: but if we retain it, we must also presently retain "*Powles.*"

P. 516. (91) "*Let me ne'er hope to see a chine again;*

*And that I would not for a cow, God save her!*"

Mr. Collier's MS. Corrector reads

"*Let me ne'er hope to see a queon again,*

*And that I would not for a crown, God save her!*"—

"which," observes a critic in *Blackwood's Magazine* for Sept. 1853, p. 318, "is certainly entitled to consideration; but it is quite possible that the Porter's Man's language, being that of a clown, may be designedly nonsensical."—Qy, are we to understand that the Porter's Man was "a huge feeder,"—resembling in that respect the Guard, who were notorious for their consumption of beef? Cowley, in one of his early poems, says,—

"*And chins of beef innumerable send me,*

*Or from the stomach of the Guard defend me."*

*The Wish,—Works*, vol. iii. p. 44, ed. 1708.

P. 516. (65)

"*came to the broomstaff to me*"

Has been altered to "— *broomstaff* with me"

P. 517. (66) "You i' the camlet, get up o' the rail;  
I'll pick you o'er the pales else"

Here the folio has "He pecke you," &c., but in *Cominius*, act i. sc. 1., it has  
"As I could *pecke* my Lance."

(Mr. Knight prints, by the advice of a friend, "I'll *peck* you o'er the pales else,"—which supposes that the intruder "i' the camlet" was furnished with more heads than one.)

In the speeches throughout this scene which now stand as prose there are such traces of metre as might lead us to suspect that the author originally intended them for verse, but that they will not admit of a satisfactory metrical arrangement may be seen in Capoll's edition.

P. 518. (67) "Suba," &c.

This has been improperly altered to "Shoba," &c. see my *Remarks on Mr Collier's and Mr. Knight's eds. of Shakespeare*, p. 144.

P. 519. (68) "ways of honom," &c.

The folio has "way of honow," &c.

P. 520. (69) "And you, good brethren," &c.

Theobald printed, at Thirlby's suggestion, "And your good *brethren*," &c.,—because "the *aldermen* were never called brethren to the king;" but still, "good *brethren*" may be equivalent to "good *brethren* of the Mayor."

TROILUS AND CRESSIDA.



## ADDRESS

PREFIXED TO SOME COPIES OF THE EDITION OF 1609, 110

-- -- --

*A never writer to an ever reader:—News*

ETERNAL reader, you have here a new play, never staled with the stage, never clapper-clawed with the palms of the vulgar, and yet passing full of the palm comical; for it is a birth of your brain that never undertook any thing comical vainly; and were but the vain names of comedies changed for the titles of commodities, or of plays for pleas, you should see all those grand censors, that now style them such vanities, flock to them for the main grace of their gravities; especially this author's comedies, that are so framed to the life, that they serve for the most common commentaries of all the actions of our lives, showing such a dexterity and power of wit, that the most displeased with plays are pleased with his comedies. And all such dull and heavy-witted worldlings as were never capable of the wit of a comedy, coming by report of them to his representations, have found that wit there that they never found in themselves, and have parted better-witted than they came; feeling an edge of wit set upon them, more than ever they dreamed they had brain to grind it on. So much and such savoured salt of wit is in his comedies, that they seem (for their height of pleasure) to be born in that sea that brought forth Venus. Amongst all there is none more witty than this: and had I time, I would comment upon it, though I know it needs not, (for so much as will make you think your testern well bestowed,) but for so much worth as even poor I know to be stuffed in it. It deserves such a labour, as well as the best comedy in Terence or Plautus and believe this, that when he is gone, and his comedies out of sale, you will scramble for them, and set up a new English inquisition. Take this for a warning, and, at the peril of your pleasure's loss and judgment's, refuse not nor like this the less for not being sullied with the smoky breath of the multitude; but thank fortune for the scape it hath made amongst you; since by the grand possessors' wills, I believe, you should have prayed for them, rather than been prayed. And so I leave all such to be prayed for (for the states of their wits' healths) that will not praise it. *Vale.*

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

— ♦ —

PRIAM, king of Troy.

HECTOR,	}	his sons.
TROILUS,		
PARIS,		
DIOMEDES,		
HUCCENUS,		

MARGARELON, a bastard son of Priam.

ÆNEAS,	}	Trojan commanders.
ANTHON,		

CALECHAS, a Trojan priest, taking part with the Greeks.

PANDARUS, uncle to Cressida.

AGAMEMNON, the Grecian general.

MENECLAUS, his brother.

AQUILLES,	}	Grecian commanders.
AXAN,		
ULYSSES,		
NESTOR,		
DIOMEDES,		
PATROCLUS,		

THESISTES, a deformed and scurrilous Grecian

ALEXANDER, servant to Cressida.

Servant to Troilus.

Servant to Paris.

Servant to Diomedes.

HELEN, wife to Menelaus.

ANDROMACHE, wife to Hector.

CASSANDRA, daughter to Priam; a prophetess.

CRESSIDA, daughter to Calchas.

Trojan and Greek Soldiers, and Attendants.

SCENE—*Troy, and the Grecian camp before it*

## PROLOGUE.

IN Troy, there lies the scene. From isles of Greece  
The princes orgulous, their high blood chaf'd,  
Have to the port of Athens sent their ships,  
Fraught with the ministers and instruments  
Of cruel war: sixty and nine, that wore  
Their crownets regal, from the Athenian bay  
Put forth toward Phrygia: and their vow is made  
To ransack Troy; within whose strong immures  
The ravish'd Helen, Menelaus' queen,  
With wanton Paris sleeps; and that's the quarrel.  
To Tenedos they come;  
And the deep-drawing barks do there disgorge  
Their warlike fraughtage: now on Dardan plains  
The fresh and yet unbruised Greeks do pitch  
Their brave pavilions: Priam's six-gated city,  
Dardan, and Tymbria, Helias, Chetas, Troien,  
And Antenorides,<sup>(1)</sup> with massy staples,  
And corresponsive and fulfilling bolts,  
Sperr<sup>(2)</sup> up the sons of Troy.  
Now expectation, tickling skittish spirits,  
On one and other side, Trojan and Greek,  
Sets all on hazard:—and hither am I come  
A prologue arm'd,—but not in confidence  
Of author's pen or actor's voice; but suited  
In like conditions as our argument,—  
To tell you, fair beholders, that our play  
Leaps o'er the vaunt and firstlings of those broils,  
Beginning in the middle; starting thence away  
To what may be digested in a play.  
Like, or find fault; do as your pleasures are;  
Now good or bad, 'tis but the chance of war.



# TROILUS AND CRESSIDA.

## ACT I.

SCENE I. *Troy. Before PRIAM's palace.*

*Enter TROILUS armed, and PANDARUS.*

*Tro.* Call here my varlet; I'll unarm again :  
Why should I war without the walls of Troy,  
That find such cruel battle here within ?  
Each Trojan that is master of his heart,  
Let him to field; 'Troilus, alas, hath none!

*Pan.* Will this gear ne'er be mended ?

*Tro.* The Greeks are strong, and skilful to their strength,  
Fierce to their skill, and to their fierceness valiant;  
But I am weaker than a woman's tear,  
Tamer than sleep, fonder than ignorance,  
Less valiant than the virgin in the night,  
And skillless as unpractis'd infancy.

*Pan.* Well, I have told you enough of this: for my part,  
I'll not meddle nor make no further. He that will have a  
cake out of the wheat must needs tarry the grinding.

*Tro.* Have I not tarried ?

*Pan.* Ay, the grinding; but you must tarry the bolting.

*Tro.* Have I not tarried ?

*Pan.* Ay, the bolting; but you must tarry the leavening.

*Tro.* Still have I tarried.

*Pan.* Ay, to the leavening; but here's yet in the word  
"hereafter," the kneading, the making of the cake, the heat-  
ing of the oven, and the baking; nay, you must stay the  
cooling too, or you may chance to burn your lips.

*Tro.* Patience herself, what goddess e'er she be,  
Doth lesser blench at sufferance than I do.  
At Priam's royal table do I sit;  
And when fair Cressid comes into my thoughts,—  
So, traitor!—when she comes!—When is she thence? <sup>(3)</sup>

*Pan.* Well, she looked yesternight fairer than ever I saw  
her look, or any woman else.

*Tro.* I was about to tell thee,—when my heart,  
As wedg'd with a sigh, would rive in twain;  
Lest Hector or my father should perceive me,  
I have (as when the sun doth light a storm) <sup>(4)</sup>  
Buried this sigh in wrinkle of a smile:  
But sorrow, that is couch'd in seeming gladness,  
Is like that mirth fate turns to sudden sadness.

*Pan.* An her hair were not somewhat darker than Helen's  
(well, go to), there were no more comparison between the  
women,—but, for my part, she is my kinswoman; I would  
not, as they term it, praise her,—but I would somebody had  
heard her talk yesterday, as I did. I will not dispraise your  
sister Cassandra's wit; but—

*Tro.* O Pandarus! I tell thee, Pandarus,—  
When I do tell thee, there my hopes lie drown'd,  
Reply not in how many fathoms deep  
They lie indrench'd. I tell thee, I am mad  
In Cressid's love: thou answer'st, she is fair;  
Pour'st in the open ulcer of my heart  
Her eyes, her hair, her cheek, her gait, her voice;  
Handlest in thy discourse, O, that her hand,  
In whose comparison all whites are ink,  
Writing their own reproach; to whose soft seizure  
The cygnet's down is harsh, and spirit of sense  
Hard as the palm of ploughman!—this thou tell'st me,  
As true thou tell'st me, when I say I love her;  
But, saying thus, instead of oil and balm,  
Thou lay'st in every gash that love hath given me  
The knife that made it.

*Pan.* I speak no more than truth.

*Tro.* Thou dost not speak so much.

*Pan.* Faith, I'll not meddle in't. Let her be as she is: if

she be fair, 'tis the better for her; an she be not, she has the mends in her own hands.

*Tro.* Good Pandarus,—how now, Pandarus!

*Pan.* I have had my labour for my travail; ill-thought on of her, and ill-thought on of you: gone between and between, but small thanks for my labour.

*Tro.* What, art thou angry, Pandarus? what, with me?

*Pan.* Because she's kin to me, therefore she's not so fair as Helen: an she were not kin to me, she would be as fair on Friday as Helen is on Sunday. But what care I? I care not an she were a black-a-moor; 'tis all one to me.

*Tro.* Say I she is not fair?

*Pan.* I do not care whether you do or no. She's a fool to stay behind her father; let her to the Greeks; and so I'll tell her the next time I see her: for my part, I'll meddle nor make no more i' the matter.

*Tro.* Pandarus,—

*Pan.* Not I.

*Tro.* Sweet Pandarus,—

*Pan.* Pray you, speak no more to me: I will leave all as I found it, and there an end.

[*Exit Pandarus. An alarm.*]

*Tro.* Peace, you ungracious clamours! peace, rude sounds! Fools on both sides! Helen must needs be fair, When with your blood you daily paint her thus. I cannot fight upon this argument; It is too starv'd a subject for my sword. But Pandarus,—O gods, how do you plague me! I cannot come to Cressid but by Pandar; And he's as tetchy to be woo'd to woo, As she is stubborn-chaste against all suit. Tell me, Apollo, for thy Daphne's love, What Cressid is, what Pandar, and what we? Her bed is India; there she lies, a pearl: Between our Ilum and where she resides, Let it be call'd the wild and wandering flood; Ourself the merchant; and this sailing Pandar, Our doubtful hope, our convoy, and our bark.

*Alarum. Enter ÆNEAS.*

*Æne.* How now, Prince Troilus! wherefore not afield?

*Tro.* Because not there: this woman's answer sorts,  
For womanish it is to be from thence.

What news, Æneas, from the field to-day?

*Æne.* That Paris is return'd home, and hurt.

*Tro.* By whom, Æneas?

*Æne.* Troilus, by Menelaus.

*Tro.* Let Paris bleed: 'tis but a scar to scorn;  
Paris is gor'd with Menelaus' horn. [*Alarum.*

*Æne.* Hark, what good sport is out of town to-day!

*Tro.* Better at home, if "would I might" were "may."—  
But to the sport abroad;—are you bound thither?

*Æne.* In all swift haste.

*Tro.* Come, go we, then, together. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II. *The same. A street.*

*Enter CRESSIDA and ALEXANDER*

*Cres.* Who were those went by?

*Alex.* Queen Hecuba and Helen.

*Cres.* And whither go they?

*Alex.* Up to the eastern tower,  
Whose height commands as subject all the vale,  
To see the battle. Hector, whose patience  
Is, as a virtue, fix'd, to-day was mov'd:  
H<sup>o</sup> chid Andromache, and struck his armorer;  
And, like as there were husbandry in war,  
Before the sun rose, he was harness'd light,  
And to the field goes he; where every flower  
Did, as a prophet, weep what it foresaw  
In Hector's wrath.

*Cres.* What was his cause of anger?

*Alex.* The noise goes, this: there is among the Greeks  
A lord of Trojan blood, nephew to Hector;  
They call him Ajax.

*Cres.* Good; and what of him?

*Alex.* They say he is a very man *per se*,  
And stands alone.

*Cres.* So do all men,—unless they are drunk, sick, or  
have no legs.

*Alex.* This man, lady, hath robbed many beasts of their  
particular additions; he is as valiant as the lion, churlish as  
the bear, slow as the elephant: a man into whom nature hath  
so crowded humours, that his valour is crushed into folly, his  
folly sauced with discretion: there is no man hath a virtue  
that he hath not a glimpse of; nor any man an attain, but  
he carries some stain of it: he is melancholy without cause,  
and merry against the hair: he hath the joints of every  
thing; but every thing so out of joint, that he is a gouty  
Briareus, many hands and no use; or purblind Argus, all  
eyes and no sight.

*Cres.* But how should this man, that makes me smile,  
make Hector angry?

*Alex.* They say he yesterday coped Hector in the battle,  
and struck him down; the disdain and shame whereof hath  
ever since kept Hector fasting and waking.

*Cres.* Who comes here?

*Alex.* Madam, your uncle Pandarus.

*Enter PANDARUS.*

*Cres.* Hector's a gallant man.

*Alex.* As may be in the world, lady.

*Pan.* What's that? what's that?

*Cres.* Good morrow, uncle Pandarus.

*Pan.* Good morrow, cousin Cressid: what do you talk  
of?—Good morrow, Alexander.—How do you, cousin?  
When were you at Ilium?

*Cres.* This morning, uncle.

*Pan.* What were you talking of when I came? Was  
Hector armed and gone, ere ye came to Ilium? Helen was  
not up, was she?

*Cres.* Hector was gone; but Helen was not up.

*Pan.* E'en so: Hector was stirring early.

*Cres.* That were we talking of, and of his anger.

*Pan.* Was he angry?

*Cres.* So he says here.

*Pan.* True, he was so; I know the cause too; he'll lay about him to-day, I can tell them that: and there's Troilus will not come far behind him; let them take heed of Troilus, I can tell them that too.

*Cres.* What, is he angry too?

*Pan.* Who, Troilus? Troilus is the better man of the two.

*Cres.* O Jupiter! there's no comparison.

*Pan.* What, not between Troilus and Hector? Do you know a man if you see him?

*Cres.* Ay, if I ever saw him before, and knew him.

*Pan.* Well, I say Troilus is Troilus.

*Cres.* Then you say as I say; for, I am sure, he is not Hector.

*Pan.* No, nor Hector is not Troilus in some degrees.

*Cres.* 'Tis just to each of them; he is himself.

*Pan.* Himself! Alas, poor Troilus! I would he were,—

*Cres.* So he is.

*Pan.* Condition, I had gone barefoot to India.

*Cres.* He is not Hector.

*Pan.* Himself! no, he's not himself,—would 'a were himself! Well, the gods are above; time must friend or end: well, Troilus, well,—I would my heart were in her body!—No, Hector is not a better man than Troilus.

*Cres.* Excuse me.

*Pan.* He is elder.

*Cres.* Pardon me, pardon me.

*Pan.* Th' other's not come to't; you shall tell me another tale, when th' other's come to't. Hector shall not have his wit<sup>(5)</sup> this year,—

*Cres.* He shall not need it, if he have his own.

*Pan.* Nor his qualities,—

*Cres.* No matter.

*Pan.* Nor his beauty.

*Cres.* 'Twould not become him,—his own's better.

*Pan.* You have no judgment, niece: Helen herself swore th' other day, that Troilus, for a brown favour (for so 'tis, I must confess),—not brown neither,—

*Cres.* No, but brown.

*Pan.* Faith, to say truth, brown and not brown.

*Cres.* To say the truth, true and not true.

*Pan.* She praised his complexion above Paris.

*Cres.* Why, Paris hath colour enough.

*Pan.* So he has.

*Cres.* Then Troilus should have too much: if she praised him above, his complexion is higher than his; he having colour enough, and the other higher, is too flaming a praise for a good complexion. I had as lief Helen's golden tongue had commended Troilus for a copper nose.

*Pan.* I swear to you, I think Helen loves him better than Paris.

*Cres.* Then she's a merry Greek indeed.

*Pan.* Nay, I am sure she does. She came to him the other day into the compassed window,—and, you know, he has not past three or four hairs on his chin,—

*Cres.* Indeed, a tapster's arithmetic may soon bring his particulars therein to a total.

*Pan.* Why, he is very young: and yet will he, within three pound, lift as much as his brother Hector.

*Cres.* Is he so young a man, and so old a lifter?

*Pan.* But, to prove to you that Helen loves him,—she came, and puts me her white hand to his cloven chin,—

*Cres.* Juno have mercy! how came it cloven?

*Pan.* Why, you know, 'tis dimpled: I think his smiling becomes him better than any man in all Phrygia.

*Cres.* O, he smiles valiantly.

*Pan.* Does he not?

*Cres.* O yes, an 'twere a cloud in autumn.

*Pan.* Why, go to, then:—but to prove to you that Helen loves Troilus,—

*Cres.* Troilus will stand to the proof, if you'll prove it so.

*Pan.* Troilus! why, he esteems her no more than I esteem an addle egg.

*Cres.* If you love an addle egg as well as you love an idle head, you would eat chickens i' the shell.

*Pan.* I cannot choose but laugh, to think how she tickled

his chin;—indeed, she has a marvel's white hand, I must needs confess,—

*Cres.* Without the rack.

*Pan.* And she takes upon her to spy a white hair 'ón his chin.

*Cres.* Alas, poor chin! many a wart is richer.

*Pan.* But there was such laughing!—Queen Hecuba laughed, that her eyes ran o'er,—

*Cres.* With mill-stones.

*Pan.* And Cassandra laughed,—

*Cres.* But there was more temperate fire under the pot of her eyes:—did her eyes run o'er too?

*Pan.* And Hector laughed.

*Cres.* At what was all this laughing?

*Pan.* Marry, at the white hair that Helen spied on Troilus' chin.

*Cres.* An't had been a green hair, I should have laughed too.

*Pan.* They laughed not so much at the hair as at his pretty answer.

*Cres.* What was his answer?

*Pan.* Quoth she, "Here's but one<sup>(6)</sup> and fifty hairs on your chin, and one of them is white."

*Cres.* This is her question.

*Pan.* That's true; make no question of that. "One and fifty hairs," quoth he, "and one white: that white hair is my father, and all the rest are his sons." "Jupiter!" quoth she, "which of these hairs is Paris my husband?" "The forked one," quoth he; "pluck't out, and give it him." But there was such laughing! and Helen so blushed, and Paris so chafed, and all the rest so laughed, that it passed.

*Cres.* So let it now; for it has been a great while going by.

*Pan.* Well, cousin, I told you a thing yesterday; think on't.

*Cres.* So I do.

*Pan.* I'll be sworn 'tis true; he will weep you, an 'twere a man born in April.

*Cres.* And I'll spring up in his tears, an 'twere a nettle against May.

[*A retreat sounded.*]



*Pan.* Hark! they are coming from the field: shall we stand up here, and see them as they pass toward Ilium? good niece, do; sweet niece Cressida.

*Cres.* At your pleasure.

*Pan.* Here, here, here's an excellent place; here we may see most bravely: I'll tell you them all by their names as they pass by; but mark Troilus above the rest.

*Cres.* Speak not so loud.

*ÆNEAS passes.*

*Pan.* That's Æneas: is not that a brave man? he's one of the flowers of Troy, I can tell you: but mark Troilus; you shall see anon.

*ANTENOR passes.*

*Cres.* Who's that?

*Pan.* That's Antenor; he has a shrewd wit, I can tell you; and he's a man good enough: he's one o' the soundest judgments in Troy, whosoever, and a proper man of person.--When comes Troilus?--I'll show you Troilus anon: if he see me, you shall see him nod at me.

*Cres.* Will he give you the nod?

*Pan.* You shall see.

*Cres.* If he do, the rich shall have more.

*HECTOR passes.*

*Pan.* That's Hector, that, that, look you, that; there's a fellow!--Go thy way, Hector!--There's a brave man, niece.--O brave Hector!--Look how he looks! there's a countenance! is't not a brave man?

*Cres.* O, a brave man!

*Pan.* Is 'a not? it does a man's heart good;--look you what hacks are on his helmet! look you yonder, do you see? look you there: there's no jesting; there's laying on, take't off who will, as they say: there be hacks!

*Cres.* Be those with swords?

*Pan.* Swords! any thing, he cares not; an the devil come to him, it's all one: by God's lid, it does one's heart good.--Yonder comes Paris, yonder comes Paris.

PARIS *passes.*

look ye yonder, niece; is't not a gallant man too, is't not?—Why, this is brave now.—Who said he came hurt home to-day? he's not hurt: why, this will do Helen's heart good now, ha!—Would I could see Troilus now!—you shall see Troilus anon.

HELENUS *passes.*

*Cres.* Who's that?

*Pan.* That's Helenus:—I marvel where Troilus is:—that's Helenus:—I think he went not forth to-day:—that's Helenus.

*Cres.* Can Helenus fight, uncle?

*Pan.* Helenus! no;—yes, he'll fight indifferent well.—I marvel where Troilus is.—Hark! do you not hear the people cry "Troilus"?—Helenus is a priest.

*Cres.* What sneaking fellow comes yonder?

TROIUS *passes.*

*Pan.* Where? yonder? that's Deiphobus:—'tis Troilus! there's a man, niece!—Hem!—Brave Troilus! the prince of chivalry!

*Cres.* Peace, for shame, peace!

*Pan.* Mark him; note him:—O brave Troilus!—look well upon him, niece; look you how his sword is bloodied, and his helm more hacked than Hector's; and how he looks, and how he goes!—O admirable youth! he ne'er saw three-and-twenty.—Go thy way, Troilus, go thy way!—Had I a sister were a grace, or a daughter a goddess, he should take his choice. O admirable man! Paris?—Paris is dirt to him; and, I warrant, Helen, to change, would give an eye to boot.

*Cres.* Here come more.

FORCES *pass.*

*Pan.* Asses, fools, dolts! chaff and bran, chaff and bran! porridge after meat!—I could live and die i' the eyes of Troilus.—Ne'er look, ne'er look; the eagles are gone: crows and daws, crows and daws!—I had rather be such a man as Troilus than Agamemnon and all Greece.

*Cres.* There is among the Greeks Achilles,—a better man than Troilus.

*Pan.* Achilles ! a drayman, a porter, a very camel.

*Cres.* Well, well.

*Pan.* Well, well !—Why, have you any discretion ? have you any eyes ? do you know what a man is ? Is not birth, beauty, good shape, discourse, manhood, learning, gentleness, virtue, youth, liberality, and such like, the spice and salt that season a man ?

*Cres.* Ay, a minced man : and then to be baked with no date in the pie,—for then the man's date's out.

*Pan.* You are such a woman ! one knows not at what ward you lie.

*Cres.* Upon my back, to defend my belly ; upon my wit, to defend my wiles ; upon my secrecy, to defend mine honesty ; my mask, to defend my beauty ; and you, to defend all these : and at all these wards I lie, at a thousand watches.

*Pan.* Say one of your watches.

*Cres.* Nay, I'll watch you for that ; and that's one of the chiefest of them too : if I cannot ward what I would not have hit, I can watch you for telling how I took the blow ; unless it swell past hiding, and then it's past watching.

*Pan.* You are such another !

*Enter Troilus' Boy.*

*Boy.* Sir, my lord would instantly speak with you.

*Pan.* Where ?

*Boy.* At your own house ; there he unarms him.

*Pan.* Good boy, tell him I come. [*Exit Boy.*] I doubt he be hurt.—Fare ye well, good niece.

*Cres.* Adieu, uncle.

*Pan.* I'll be with you, niece, by and by.

*Cres.* To bring, uncle.<sup>(7)</sup>

*Pan.* Ay, a token from Troilus.

*Cres.* By the same token—you are a hawk.

[*Exit Pandarus.*]

Words, vows, gifts, tears, and love's full sacrifice,  
He offers in another's enterprise :  
But more in Troilus thousand fold I see  
Than in the glass of Pandar's praise may be ;  
Yet hold I off. Women are angels, wooing :

Things won are done ; joy's soul lies in the doing :  
 That she belov'd knows naught that knows not this,—  
 Men prize the thing ungain'd more than it is :  
 'That she was never yet that ever knew  
 Love got so sweet as when desire did sue :  
 Therefore this maxim out of love I teach,—  
 Achievement is command ; ungain'd, beseech :<sup>(8)</sup>  
 Then though my heart's content firm love doth bear,  
 Nothing of that shall from mine eyes appear. *[Exeunt.]*

— — — — —

SCENE III. *The Grecian camp. Before AGAMEMNON's tent.*

*Sennet. Enter AGAMEMNON, NESTOR, ULYSSES, MENELAUS,  
 and others.*

*Agam.* Princes,

What grief hath set the jaundice on your cheeks ?  
 The ample proposition that hope makes  
 In all designs begun on earth below  
 Fails in the promis'd largeness : checks and disasters  
 Grow in the veins of actions highest rear'd ;  
 As knots, by the conflux of meeting sap,  
 Infect the sound pine, and divert his grain  
 Tortive and errant from his course of growth.  
 Nor, princes, is it matter new to us,  
 That we come short of our suppose so far,  
 'That, after seven years' siege, yet Troy walls stand ;  
 Sith every action that hath gone before,  
 Whereof we have record, trial did draw  
 Bias and thwart, not answering the aim,  
 And that unbodied figure of the thought  
 That gave't surmis'd shape. Why, then, you princes,  
 Do you with cheeks abash'd behold our works ;<sup>(9)</sup>  
 And call them shames, which are, indeed, naught else  
 But the protractive trials of great Jove  
 To find persistive constancy in men ?  
 The fineness of which metal is not found  
 In fortune's love ; for then the bold and coward,

The wise and fool, the artist and unread,  
 The hard and soft, seem all affin'd and kin :  
 But, in the wind and tempest of her frown,  
 Distinction, with a broad and powerful fan,  
 Puffing at all, winnows the light away ;  
 And what hath mass or matter, by itself  
 Lies rich in virtue and unmingled.

*Nest.* With due observance of thy godlike seat,  
 Great Agamemnon, Nestor shall apply  
 Thy latest words. In the reproof of chance  
 Lies the true proof of men : the sea being smooth,  
 How many shallow hauble boats dare sail  
 Upon her patient breast, making their way  
 With those of nobler bulk !  
 But let the ruffian Boreas once enrage  
 The gentle Thetis, and, anon, behold  
 The strong-ribb'd bark through liquid mountains cut,  
 Bounding between the two moist elements,  
 Like Perseus' horse : where's then the saucy boat,  
 Whose weak untimber'd sides but even now  
 Co-rivall'd greatness ? either to harbour fled,  
 Or made a toast for Neptune. Even so  
 Doth valour's show and valour's worth divide  
 In storms of fortune : for in her ray and brightness  
 The herd hath more annoyance by the breeze  
 Than by the tiger ; but when the splitting wind  
 Makes flexible the knees of knotted oaks,  
 And flies fled under shade, why, then the thing of courage,  
 As rous'd with rage, with rage doth sympathize,  
 And with an accent tun'd in selfsame key  
 Retorts<sup>(10)</sup> to chiding fortune.

*Ulyss.* Agamemnon,—  
 Thou great commander, nerve and bone of Greece,  
 Heart of our numbers, soul and only spirit,  
 In whom the tempers and the minds of all  
 Should be shut up,—hear what Ulysses speaks.  
 Besides the applause and approbation  
 The which,—most mighty for thy place and sway,—  
[To Agamemnon.]

And thou most reverend for thy stretch'd-out life,—

[*To Nestor.*]

I give to both your speeches,—which were such  
As Agamemnon and the hand of Greece  
Should hold up high in brass; and such again  
As venerable Nestor, hatch'd in silver,  
Should with a bond of air (strong as the axletree  
On which heaven rides) knit all the Greekish ears  
To his experienc'd tongue,—yet let it please both,—  
Thou great,—and wise,—to hear Ulysses speak.

*Agam.* Speak, Prince of Ithaca; and be't of less expect  
That matter needless, of importless burden,  
Divide thy lips, than we are confident,  
When rank Thersites oyes his mastiff<sup>(1)</sup> jaws,  
We shall hear music, wit, and oracle.

*Ulyss.* Troy, yet upon his basis, had been down,  
And the great Hector's sword had lack'd a master,  
But for these instances.  
The specialty of rule hath been neglected:  
And, look, how many Grecian tents do stand  
Hollow upon this plain, so many hollow factions.  
When that the general is not like the hive,  
To whom the foragers shall all repair,  
What honey is expected? Degree being vizarded,  
The unworthiest shows as fairly in the mask.  
The heavens themselves, the planets, and this centre,  
Observe degree, priority, and place,  
Insisture, course, proportion, season, form,  
Office, and custom, in all line of order:  
And therefore is the glorious planet Sol  
In noble eminence enthron'd and spher'd  
Amidst the other;<sup>(2)</sup> whose med'cinable eye  
Corrects the ill aspècts of planets evil,  
And posts, like the commandment of a king,  
Sans check, to good and bad: but when the planets,  
In evil mixture, to disorder wander,  
What plagues and what portents! what mutiny!  
What raging of the sea! shaking of earth!  
Commotion in the winds! frights, changes, horrors,

Divert and crack, rend and deracinate  
 The unity and married calm of states  
 Quite from their fixure! O, when degree is shak'd,  
 Which is the ladder to all high designs,  
 The<sup>(13)</sup> enterprise is sick! How could communities,  
 Degrees in schools, and brotherhoods in cities,  
 Peaceful commerce from dividable shores,  
 The primogenitive<sup>(14)</sup> and due of birth,  
 Prerogative of age, crowns, sceptres, laurels,  
 But by degree, stand in authentic place?  
 Take but degree away, untune that string,  
 And, hark, what discord follows! each thing meets  
 In mere oppugnancy: the bounded waters  
 Should lift their bosoms higher than the shores,  
 And make a sop of all this solid globe:  
 Strength should be lord of imbecility,  
 And the rude son should strike his father dead:  
 Force should be right; or rather, right and wrong  
 (Between whose endless jar justice resides)  
 Should lose their names, and so should justice too.  
 Then every thing includes itself in power,  
 Power into will, will into appetite;  
 And appetite, an universal wolf,  
 So doubly seconded with will and power,  
 Must make perforce an universal prey,  
 And last eat up himself. Great Agamemnon,  
 This chaos, when degree is suffocate,  
 Follows the choking.  
 And this neglect of degree it is,  
 That by a pace goes backward, with a purpose  
 It hath to climb. The general's disdain'd  
 By him one step below; he, by the next;  
 That next, by him beneath: so every step,  
 Exemplified by the first pace that is sick  
 Of his superior, grows to an envious fever  
 Of pale and bloodless emulation:  
 And 'tis this fever that keeps Troy on foot,  
 Not her own sinews. To end a tale of length,  
 Troy in our weakness stands, not in her strength.

*Nest.* Most wisely hath Ulysses here discover'd  
The fever whereof all our power is sick.

*Agam.* The nature of the sickness found, Ulysses,  
What is the remedy?

*Ulyss.* The great Achilles,—whom opinion crowns  
The sinew and the forehead of our host,—  
Having his ear full of his airy fame,  
Grows dainty of his worth, and in his tent  
Lies mocking our designs: with him, Patroclus,  
Upon a lazy bed, the livelong day  
Breaks scurril jests;  
And with ridiculous and awkward action  
(Which, slanderer, he imitation calls)  
He pageants us. Sometime, great Agamemnon,  
Thy topless deputation he puts on;  
And, like a strutting player,—whose conceit  
Lies in his hamstring, and doth think it rich  
To hear the wooden dialogue and sound  
'Twixt his stretch'd footing and the scaffoldage,—  
Such to-be-plied and o'er-wrested seeming  
He acts thy greatness in: and when he speaks,  
'Tis like a chime a-mending; with terms unsquar'd,  
Which, from the tongue of roaring Typhon dropp'd,  
Would seem hyperboles. At this fusty stuff,  
The large Achilles, on his press'd bed lolling,  
From his deep chest laughs out a loud applause;  
Cries, "Excellent! 'tis Agamemnon just.  
Now play me Nestor; hem, and stroke thy beard,  
As he being drest to some oration."  
'That's done;—as near as the extremest ends  
Of parallels; as like as Vulcan and his wife:  
Yet god Achilles still cries, "Excellent!  
'Tis Nestor right. Now play him me, Patroclus,  
Arming to answer in a night-alarm."  
And then, forsooth, the faint defects of age  
Must be the scene of mirth; to cough and spit,  
And, with a palsy-fumbling on his gorget,  
Shake in and out the rivet:—and at this sport  
Sir Valour dies; cries, "O, enough, Patroclus,



Or give me ribs of steel! I shall split all  
 In pleasure of my spleen." And in this fashion,  
 All our abilities, gifts, natures, shapes,  
 Severals and generals of grace exact,  
 Achievements, plots, orders, preventions,  
 Excitements to the field, or speech for truce,  
 Success or loss, what is or is not, serves  
 As stuff for these two to make paradoxes.

*Nest.* And in the imitation of these twain  
 (Who, as Ulysses says, opinion crowns  
 With an imperial voice,) many are infect.  
 Ajax is grown self-will'd; and bears his head  
 In such a rein, in full as proud a place<sup>(15)</sup>  
 As broad Achilles; keeps his tent like him;  
 Makes factious feasts; rails on our state of war,  
 Bold as an oracle; and sets Thersites  
 (A slave whose gall coins slanders like a mint)  
 To match us in comparisons with dirt,  
 To weaken and discredit our exposure,  
 How rank soever rounded-in with danger.

*Ulyss.* They tax our policy, and call it cowardice;  
 Count wisdom as no member of the war;  
 Foretell prescience, and esteem no act  
 But that of hand: the still and mental parts,—  
 That do contrive how many hands shall strike,  
 When fitness calls them on; and know, by measure  
 Of their observant toil, the enemies' weight,—  
 Why, this hath not a finger's dignity:  
 They call this bed-work, mappery, closet-war;  
 So that the ram that batters down the wall,  
 For the great swing and rudeness of his poise,  
 They place before his hand that made the engine,  
 Or those that with the fineness of their souls  
 By reason guide his execution.

*Nest.* Let this be granted, and Achilles' horse  
 Makes many 'Thetis' sons.

[*A tucket.*

*Agam.* What trumpet? look, Menelaus,

*Men.* From Troy.

*Enter ÆNEAS.*

*Agam.* What would you 'fore our tent?

*Æne.* Is this great Agamemnon's tent, I pray you?

*Agam.* Even this.

*Æne.* May one, that is a herald and a prince,  
Do a fair message to his kingly ears?

*Agam.* With surety stronger than Achilles' arm  
'Fore all the Greekish heads, which with one voice  
Call Agamemnon head and general.

*Æne.* Fair leave and large security. How may  
A stranger to those most imperial looks  
Know them from eyes of other mortals?

*Agam.* How!

*Æne.* Ay;

I ask, that I might waken reverence,  
And bid the cheek be ready with a blush  
Modest as morning when she coldly eyes  
The youthful Phœbus:

Which is that god in office, guiding men?  
Which is the high and mighty Agamemnon?

*Agam.* This Trojan scorns us; or the men of Troy  
Are ceremonious courtiers.

*Æne.* Courtiers as free, as debonair, unarm'd,  
As bending angels; that's their fame in peace:  
But when they would seem soldiers, they have galls,  
Good arms, strong joints, true swords; and, Jove's accord,  
Nothing so full of heart. But peace, Æneas,  
Peace, Trojan; lay thy finger on thy lips!  
The worthiness of praise distains his worth,  
If that the prais'd himself bring the praise forth:  
But what the repining enemy commends,  
That breath fame blows; that praise, sole pure,<sup>(16)</sup> transcends.

*Agam.* Sir, you of Troy, call you yourself Æneas?

*Æne.* Ay, Greek, that is my name.

*Agam.* What's your affair, I pray you?

*Æne.* Sir, pardon; 'tis for Agamemnon's ears.

*Agam.* He hears naught privately that comes from Troy.

*Ene.* Nor I from 'Troy come not to whisper him :  
 I bring a trumpet to awake his ear ;  
 To set his sense on the attentive bent,  
 And then to speak.

*Agam.* Speak frankly as the wind ;  
 It is not Agamemnon's sleeping hour :  
 That thou shalt know, Trojan, he is awake,  
 He tells thee so himself.

*Ene.* Trumpet, blow loud,  
 Send thy brass voice through all these lazy tents ;  
 And every Greek of mettle, let him know,  
 What 'Troy means fairly shall be spok'd aloud.

[*Trumpet sounds.*]

We have, great Agamemnon, here in 'Troy  
 A prince call'd Hector,—Priam is his father,—  
 Who in this dull and long-continu'd truce  
 Is rusty grown : he bade me take a trumpet,  
 And to this purpose speak. Kings, princes, lords !  
 If there be one among the fair'st of Greece,  
 That holds his honour higher than his ease ;  
 That seeks his praise more than he fears his peril ;  
 That knows his valour, and knows not his fear ;  
 That loves his mistress more than in confession  
 (With truant vows to her own lips he loves),  
 And dare avow her beauty and her worth  
 In other arms than hers,—to him this challenge.  
 Hector, in view of 'Trojans and of 'Greeks,  
 Shall make it good, or do his best to do it,  
 He hath a lady, wiser, fairer, truer,  
 Than ever Greek did compass in his arms ;  
 And will to-morrow with his trumpet call  
 Midway between your tents and walls of 'Troy,  
 To rouse a Grecian that is true in love :  
 If any come, Hector shall honour him ;  
 If none, he'll say in 'Troy when he retires,  
 The Grecian dames are sunburnt, and not worth  
 The splinter of a lance. Even so much.

*Agam.* This shall be told our lovers, Lord 'Aeneas ;

If none of them have soul in such a kind,  
We left them all at home: but we are soldiers;  
And may that soldier a mere recreant prove,  
That means not, hath not, or is not in love!  
If then one is, or hath, or means to be,  
That one meets Hector; if none else, I am he.

*Nest.* Tell him of Nestor, one that was a man  
When Hector's grandsire suck'd: he is old now;  
But if there be not in our Grecian host  
One noble man that hath one spark of fire,  
To answer for his love, tell him from me,—  
I'll hide my silver beard in a gold beaver,  
And in my vaultrace put this wither'd brawn;  
And, meeting him, will tell him that my lady  
Was fairer than his grandame, and as chaste  
As may be in the world: his youth in flood,  
I'll prove this truth with my three drops of blood.

*Æne.* Now heavens forbid such scarcity of youth!

*Ulyss.* Amen.

*Agam.* Fair Lord Æneas, let me touch your hand;  
To our pavilion shall I lead you, sir.  
Achilles shall have word of this intent;  
So shall each lord of Greece, from tent to tent:  
Yourself shall feast with us before you go,  
And find the welcome of a noble foe.

*[Exeunt all except Ulysses and Nestor.]*

*Ulyss.* Nestor,—

*Nest.* What says Ulysses?

*Ulyss.* I have a young conception in my brain;  
Be you my time to bring it to some shape.

*Nest.* What is't?

*Ulyss.* This 'tis:—

Blunt wedges rive hard knots: the seeded pride  
That hath to this maturity blown up  
In rank Achilles must or now be cropp'd,  
Or, shedding, breed a nursery of like evil,  
To overbulk us all.

*Nest.* Well, and how?

*Ulyss.* This challenge that the gallant Hector sends,

However it is spread in general name,  
Relates in purpose only to Achilles.

*Nest.* The purpose is perspicuous even as substance,  
Whose grossness little characters sum up :  
And, in the publication, make no strain,  
But that Achilles, were his brain as barren  
As banks of Libya,—though, Apollo knows,  
'Tis dry enough,—will, with great speed of judgment,  
Ay, with celerity, find Hector's purpose  
Pointing on him.

*Ulyss.* And wake him to the answer, think you ?

*Nest.* Yes, 'tis most meet : whom may you else oppose,  
That can from Hector bring his honour off,  
If not Achilles ? Though't be a sportful combat,  
Yet in the trial much opinion dwells ;  
For here the Trojans taste our dear'st repute  
With their fin'st palate : and trust to me, Ulysses,  
Our imputation shall be oddly pois'd  
In this wild action ; for the success,  
Although particular, shall give a scantling  
Of good or bad unto the general ;  
And in such indexes, although small pricks  
To their subsequent volumes, there is seen  
The baby figure of the giant mass  
Of things to come at large. It is suppos'd,  
He that meets Hector issues from our choice :  
And choice, being mutual act of all our souls,  
Makes merit her election ; and doth boil,  
As 'twere from forth us all, a man distill'd  
Out of our virtues ; who miscarrying,  
What heart receives from hence the conquering part,  
To steel a strong opinion to themselves ?  
Which entertain'd, limbs are his instruments,<sup>(17)</sup>  
In no less working than are swords and bows  
Directive by the limbs.

*Ulyss.* Give pardon to my speech ;—  
Therefore 'tis meet Achilles meet not Hector.  
Let us, like merchants, show our foulest wares,  
And think, perchance, they'll sell ; if not,<sup>(18)</sup>

The lustre of the better shall exceed,  
By showing the worse first. Do not consent  
That ever Hector and Achilles meet;  
For both our honour and our shame in this  
Are dogg'd with two strange followers.

*Nest.* I see them not with my old eyes: what are they?

*Ulyss.* What glory our Achilles shares from Hector,  
Were he not proud, we all should share with him:  
But he already is too insolent;  
And we were better parch in Afric sun  
Than in the pride and salt scorn of his eyes,  
Should he scape Hector fair: if he were foil'd,  
Why, then we did our main opinion crush  
In taint of our best man. No, make a lottery;  
And, by device, let blockish Ajax draw  
The sort to fight with Hector: among ourselves  
Give him allowance for the better man;  
For that will physic the great Myrmidon  
Who broils in loud applause, and make him fall  
His crest that prouder than blue Iris bends.  
If the dull brainless Ajax come safe off,  
We'll dress him up in voices: if he fail,  
Yet go we under our opinion still  
That we have better men. But, hit or miss,  
Our project's life this shape of sense assumes,—  
Ajax employ'd plucks down Achilles' plumes.

*Nest.* Now, Ulysses, I begin to relish thy advice;<sup>(19)</sup>  
And I will give a taste of it forthwith  
To Agamemnon: go we to him straight.  
Two curs shall tame each other: pride alone  
Must tarre the mastiffs on, as 'twere their bone.

[*Exeunt.*

## ACT II.

SCENE I. *A part of the Grecian camp.**Enter AJAX and THERSITES.**Ajax.* Thersites,—*Ther.* Agamemnon,—how if he had boils,—full, all over, generally?—*Ajax.* Thersites,—*Ther.* And those boils did run?—Say so,—did not the general run then? were not that a botchy coro?—*Ajax.* Dog,—*Ther.* Then would come some matter from him; I see none now.*Ajax.* Thou bitch-wolf's son, canst thou not hear? Feel, then. *[Beating him.]**Ther.* The plague of Greece upon thee, thou mongrel beef-witted lord!*Ajax.* Speak, then, thou vinewedst<sup>(20)</sup> leaven, speak: I will beat thee into handsomeness.*Ther.* I shall sooner rail thee into wit and holiness: but, I think, thy horse will sooner con an oration than thou learn a prayer without book. 'Thou canst strike, canst thou? a red murrain o' thy jade's tricks!*Ajax.* Toadstool, learn me the proclamation.*Ther.* Dost thou think I have no sense, thou strikest me thus?*Ajax.* The proclamation,—*Ther.* Thou art proclaimed a fool, I think.*Ajax.* Do not, porpentine, do not; my fingers itch.*Ther.* I would thou didst itch from head to foot, and I had the scratching of thee; I would make thee the loathisomest scab in Greece. When thou art forth in the incursions, thou strikest as slow as another.*Ajax.* I say, the proclamation,—*Ther.* Thou grumblest and railest every hour on Achilles; and thou art as full of envy at his greatness as Cerberus is at Proserpina's beauty, ay, that thou barkest at him.

*Ajax.* Mistress Thersites!

*Ther.* Thou shouldst strike him.

*Ajax.* Cobloaf!

*Ther.* He would pun thee into shivers with his fist, as a sailor breaks a biscuit.

*Ajax.* You whoreson cur! [Beating him.]

*Ther.* Do, do.

*Ajax.* Thou stool for a witch!

*Ther.* Ay, do, do; thou sodden-witted lord! thou hast no more brain than I have in mine elbows; an assinego may tutor thee; thou scurvy-valiant ass! thou art here but to thrash Trojans; and thou art bought and sold among those of any wit, like a Barbarian slave. If thou use to beat me, I will begin at thy heel, and tell what thou art by inches, thou thing of no bowels, thou!

*Ajax.* You dog!

*Ther.* You scurvy lord!

*Ajax.* You cur! [Beating him.]

*Ther.* Mars his idiot! do, rudeness; do, camel; do, do.

*Enter ACHILLES and PATROCLUS.*

*Achil.* Why, how now, Ajax! wherefore do you thus?—  
How now, Thersites! what's the matter, man?

*Ther.* You see him there, do you?

*Achil.* Ay; what's the matter?

*Ther.* Nay, look upon him.

*Achil.* So I do: what's the matter?

*Ther.* Nay, but regard him well.

*Achil.* Well! why, I do so.

*Ther.* But yet you look not well upon him; for, whosoever you take him to be, he is Ajax.

*Achil.* I know that, fool.

*Ther.* Ay, but that fool knows not himself.

*Ajax.* Therefore I beat thee.

*Ther.* Lo, lo, lo, lo, what modicums of wit he utters! his evasions have ears thus long. I have bobbed his brain more than he has beat my bones: I will buy nine sparrows for a penny, and his *pia mater* is not worth the ninth part of a sparrow. 'This lord, Achilles, Ajax,—who wears his wit in



his belly, and his guts in his head,—I'll tell you what I say of him.

*Achil.* What?

*Ther.* I say, this Ajax,—

*[Ajax offers to beat him, Achilles interposes.]*

*Achil.* Nay, good Ajax.

*Ther.* Has not so much wit,—

*Achil.* Nay, I must hold you.

*Ther.* As will stop the eye of Helen's needle, for whom he comes to fight.

*Achil.* Peace, fool!

*Ther.* I would have peace and quietness, but the fool will not: he there; that he; look you there.

*Ajax.* O thou damned cur! I shall,—

*Achil.* Will you set your wit to a fool's?

*Ther.* No, I warrant you; for a fool's will shame it.

*Patr.* Good words, Thersites.

*Achil.* What's the quarrel?

*Ajax.* I bade the vile owl go learn me the tenour of the proclamation, and he rails upon me.

*Ther.* I serve thee not.

*Ajax.* Well, go to, go to.

*Ther.* I serve here voluntary.

*Achil.* Your last service was sufferance, 'twas not voluntary,—no man is beaten voluntary: Ajax was here the voluntary, and you as under an impress.

*Ther.* E'en so; a great deal of your wit, too, lies in your sinews, or else there be liars. Hector shall have a great catch, if he knock out either of your brains: 'a were as good crack a fusty nut with no kernel.

*Achil.* What, with me too, Thersites?

*Ther.* There's Ulysses and old Nestor,—whose wit was mouldy ere your<sup>(41)</sup> grandsires had nails on their toes,—yoke you like draught-oxen, and make you plough up the wars.

*Achil.* What, what?

*Ther.* Yes, good sooth: to, Achilles! to, Ajax! to!

*Ajax.* I shall cut out your tongue.

*Ther.* 'Tis no matter; I shall speak as much as thou afterwards.

*Patr.* No more words, Thersites; peace!

*Ther.* I will hold my peace when Achilles' brach<sup>(23)</sup> bids no, shall I?

*Achil.* There's for you, Patroclus.

*Ther.* I will see you hanged, like clotpoles, ere I come any more to your tents: I will keep where there is wit stirring, and leave the faction of fools. [*Exit.*

*Patr.* A good riddance.

*Achil.* Marry, this, sir, is proclaim'd through all our host:—

That Hector, by the fifth<sup>(23)</sup> hour of the sun,  
Will, with a trumpet, 'twixt our tents and Troy,  
To-morrow morning call some knight to arms,  
That hath a stomach; and such a one, that dare  
Maintain,—I know not what; 'tis trash. Farewell.

*Ajax.* Farewell. Who shall answer him?

*Achil.* I know not,—'tis put to lottery; otherwise  
He knew his man.

*Ajax.* O, meaning you.—I will go learn more of it.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE II. *Troy. A room in PRIAM'S palace.*

*Enter PRIAM, HECTOR, TROILUS, PARIS, and HELENUS.*

*Pri.* After so many hours, lives, speeches spent,  
Thus once again says Nestor from the Greeks:—  
“Deliver Helen, and all damage else,—  
As honour, loss of time, travail, expense,  
Wounds, friends, and what else dear that is consum'd  
In hot digestion of this cormorant war,—  
Shall be struck off.”—Hector, what say you to't?

*Hect.* Though no man lesser fears the Greeks than I  
As far as toucheth my particular,  
Yet, dread Priam,  
There is no lady of more softer bowels,  
More spongy to suck in the sense of fear,  
More ready to cry out, “Who knows what follows?”  
Than Hector is: the wound of peace is surety,  
Surety secure; but modest doubt is call'd



*Hect.* But value dwells not in particular will ;  
 It holds his estimate and dignity  
 As well wherein 'tis precious of itself  
 As in the prizer : 'tis mad idolatry  
 To make the service greater than the god ;  
 And the will dotes, that is attributive  
 To what infectiously itself affects,  
 Without some image of the affected merit.

*Tho.* I take to-day a wife, and my election  
 Is led on in the conduct of my will ;  
 My will enkindled by mine eyes and ears,  
 Two traded pilots 'twixt the dangerous shores  
 Of will and judgment : how may I avoid,  
 Although my will distaste what it elected,  
 The wife I chose ? there can be no evasion  
 To blench from this, and to stand firm by honour :  
 We turn not back the silks upon the merchant,  
 When we have soil'd them ; nor the remainder viands  
 We do not throw in unrespective sieve,  
 Because we now are full. It was thought meet  
 Paris should do some vengeance on the Greeks :  
 Your breath of full consent bellied his sails ;  
 'The seas and winds (old wranglers) took a truce,  
 And did him service : he touch'd the ports desir'd ;  
 And, for an old aunt, whom the Greeks held captive,  
 He brought a Grecian queen, whose youth and freshness  
 Wrinkles Apollo's, and makes stale<sup>(21)</sup> the morning.  
 Why keep we her ? the Grecians keep our aunt :  
 Is she worth keeping ? why, she is a pearl,  
 Whose price hath launch'd above a thousand ships,  
 And turn'd crown'd kings to merchants.  
 If you'll avouch 'twas wisdom Paris went  
 (As you must needs, for you all cried, "Go, go,"),  
 If you'll confess he brought home noble prize  
 (As you must needs, for you all clapp'd your hands,  
 And cried, "Inestimable !"),—why do you now  
 'The issue of your proper wisdoms rate,  
 And do a deed that fortune never did,—  
 Beggar the estimation which you priz'd

Richer than sea and land? O, theft most base,  
 That we have stol'n what we do fear to keep!  
 But, thieves, unworthy of a thing so stol'n,  
 That in their country did them that disgrace,  
 We fear to warrant in our native place!

*Cas.* [*within*] Cry, Trojans, cry!

*Pri.* What noise? what shriek is this?

*Tro.* 'Tis our mad sister, I do know her voice.

*Cas.* [*within*] Cry, Trojans!

*Hect.* It is Cassandra.

*Enter CASSANDRA, raving.*

*Cas.* Cry, Trojans, cry! lend me ten thousand eyes,  
 And I will fill them with prophetic tears.

*Hect.* Peace, sister, peace!

*Cas.* Virgins and boys, mid-age and wrinkled old,<sup>(26)</sup>  
 Soft infancy, that nothing canst but cry,  
 Add to my clamours! let us pay betimes  
 A moiety of that mass of moan to come.  
 Cry, Trojans, cry! practise your eyes with tears!  
 Troy must not be, nor goodly Ilion stand;  
 Our firebrand brother, Paris, burns us all.  
 Cry, Trojans, cry! a Helen and a woe:  
 Cry, cry! Troy burns, or else let Helen go. [*Exit.*]

*Hect.* Now, youthful Troilus, do not these high strains  
 Of divination in our sister work  
 Some touches of remorse? or is your blood  
 So madly hot, that no discourse of reason,  
 Nor fear of bad success in a bad cause,  
 Can qualify the same?

*Tro.* Why, brother Hector,  
 We may not think the justness of each act  
 Such and no other than event doth form it;  
 Nor once deject the courage of our minds,  
 Because Cassandra's mad: her brain-sick raptures  
 Cannot distaste the goodness of a quarrel  
 Which hath our several honours all engag'd  
 To make it gracious. For my private part,  
 I am no more touch'd than all Priam's sons:

And Jove forbid there should be done amongst us  
Such things as might offend the weakest spleen  
To fight for and maintain !

*Par.* Else might the world convince of levity  
As well my undertakings as your counsels :  
But I attest the gods, your full consent  
Gave wings to my propension, and cut off  
All fears attending on so dire a project.  
For what, alas, can these my single arms ?  
What propugnation is in one man's valour,  
To stand the push and enmity of those  
This quarrel would excite ? Yet, I protest,  
Were I alone to pass the difficulties,  
And had as ample power as I have will,  
Paris should ne'er retract what he hath done,  
Nor faint in the pursuit.

*Pri.* Paris, you speak  
Like one besotted on your sweet delights :  
You have the honey still, but these the gall ;  
So to be valiant is no praise at all.

*Par.* Sir, I propose not merely to myself  
The pleasures such a beauty brings with it ;  
But I would have the soil of her fair rape  
Wip'd off, in honourable keeping her.  
What treason were it to the ransack'd queen,  
Disgrace to your great worths, and shame to me,  
Now to deliver her possession up  
On terms of base compulsion ! Can it be  
That so degenerate a strain as this  
Should once set footing in your generous bosoms ?  
There's not the meanest spirit on our party,  
Without a heart to dare, or sword to draw,  
When Helen is defended ; nor none so noble,  
Whose life were ill bestow'd, or death unfam'd,  
Where Helen is the subject : then, I say,  
Well may we fight for her, whom, we know well,  
The world's large spaces cannot parallel.

*Heet.* Paris and Troilus, you have both said well ;  
And on the cause and question now in hand

Have glaz'd,—but superficially; not much  
 Unlike young men, whom Aristotle thought  
 Unfit to hear moral philosophy:  
 The reasons you allege do more conduce  
 To the hot passion of distemper'd blood  
 Than to make up a free determination  
 'Twixt right and wrong; for pleasure and revenge  
 Have ears more deaf than adders to the voice  
 Of any true decision. Nature craves  
 All dues be render'd to their owners: now,  
 What nearer debt in all humanity  
 Than wife is to the husband? If this law  
 Of nature be corrupted through affection;  
 And that great minds, of partial indulgence  
 To their benumb'd wills, resist the same;  
 There is a law in each well-order'd nation,  
 To curb those raging appetites that are  
 Most disobedient and refractory.  
 If Helen, then, be wife to Sparta's king,—  
 As it is known she is,—those moral laws  
 Of nature and of nations speak aloud  
 To have her back return'd: thus to persist  
 In doing wrong extenuates not wrong,  
 But makes it much more heavy. Hector's opinion  
 Is this, in way of truth: yet, ne'ertheless,  
 My spritely brethren, I propend to you  
 In resolution to keep Helen still;  
 For 'tis a cause that hath no mean dependance  
 Upon our joint and several dignities.

*Tro.* Why, there you touch'd the life of our design:  
 Were it not glory that we more affected  
 Than the performance of our heaving spleens,  
 I would not wish a drop of Trojan blood  
 Spent more in her defence. But, worthy Hector,  
 She is a theme of honour and renown;  
 A spur to valiant and magnanimous deeds;  
 Whose present courage may beat down our foes,  
 And fame in time to come canonize us:  
 For, I presume, brave Hector would not lose

So rich advantage of a promis'd glory,  
As smiles upon the forehead of this action,  
For the wide world's revenue.

*Hect.* I am yours,  
You valiant offspring of great Priamus,—  
I have a roisting challenge sent amongst  
The dull and factious nobles of the Greeks  
Will strike amazement to their drowsy spirits:  
I was advertis'd their great general slept,  
Whilst emulation in the army crept:  
'This, I presume, will wake him. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE III. *The Grecian camp. Before ACHILLES' tent.*

*Enter* THERSITES.

*Ther.* How now, Thersites! what, lost in the labyrinth of thy fury! Shall the elephant Ajax carry it thus? he beats me, and I rail at him: O, worthy satisfaction! would it were otherwise; that I could beat him, whilst he railed at me: 'sfoot, I'll learn to conjure and raise devils, but I'll see some issue of my spiteful execrations. 'Then there's Achilles,—a rare engineer. If Troy be not taken till these two undermine it, the walls will stand till they fall of themselves. O thou great thunder-darter of Olympus, forget that thou art Jove, the king of gods; and, Mercury, lose all the serpentine craft of thy caduceus; if ye take not that little little less-than-little wit from them that they have! which short-aimed<sup>(\*)</sup> ignorance itself knows is so abundant scarce, it will not in circumvention deliver a fly from a spider, without drawing their massy irons and cutting the web. After this, the vengeance on the whole camp! or, rather, the bone-ache! for that, methinks, is the curse dependant on those that war for a placket. I have said my prayers; and devil envy, say Amen.—What, ho! my Lord Achilles!

*Enter* PATROCLUS.

*Patr.* Who's there? Thersites! Good Thersites, come in and rail.



*Ther.* If I could have remembered a gilt counterfeit, thou wouldst not have slipped out of my contemplation: but it is no matter; thyself upon thyself! The common curse of mankind, folly and ignorance, be thine in great revenue! heaven bless thee from a tutor, and discipline come not near thee! Let thy blood be thy direction till thy death! then if she that lays thee out says thou art a fair corse, I'll be sworn and sworn upon't she never shrouded any but lazars. Amen.  
—Where's Achilles?

*Patr.* What, art thou devout? wast thou in prayer?

*Ther.* Ay; the heavens hear me!

*Enter* **ACHILLES.**

*Achil.* Who's there?

*Patr.* Thersites, my lord.

*Achil.* Where, where?—Art thou come? why, my cheese, my digestion, why hast thou not served thyself in to my table so many meals? Come,—what's Agamemnon?

*Ther.* Thy commander, Achilles:—then tell me, Patroclus, what's Achilles?

*Patr.* Thy lord, Thersites: then tell me, I pray thee, what's thyself?

*Ther.* Thy knower, Patroclus: then tell me, Patroclus, what art thou?

*Patr.* Thou mayst tell that knowest.

*Achil.* O, tell, tell.

*Ther.* I'll decline the whole question. Agamemnon commands Achilles; Achilles is my lord; I am Patroclus' knower; and Patroclus is a fool.

*Patr.* You rascal!

*Ther.* Peace, fool! I have not done.

*Achil.* He is a privileged man.—Proceed, Thersites.

*Ther.* Agamemnon is a fool; Achilles is a fool; Thersites is a fool; and, as aforesaid, Patroclus is a fool.

*Achil.* Derive this; come.

*Ther.* Agamemnon is a fool to offer to command Achilles; Achilles is a fool to be commanded of Agamemnon; Thersites is a fool to serve such a fool; and Patroclus is a fool positive.

*Patr.* Why am I a fool?

*Ther.* Make that demand of the prover. It suffices me thou art.—Look you, who comes here?

*Achil.* Patroclus, I'll speak with nobody.—Come in with me, Thersites. [*Exit.*

*Ther.* Here is such patchery, such juggling, and such knavery! all the argument is a cuckold and a whore; a good quarrel to draw emulous factions and bleed to death upon. Now, the dry serpigo on the subject! and war and lechery confound all! [*Exit.*

*Enter* AGAMEMNON, ULYSSES, NESTOR, DIOMEDES, and AJAX.

*Agam.* Where is Achilles?

*Patr.* Within his tent; but ill-dispos'd, my lord.

*Agam.* Let it be known to him that we are here.

He shent<sup>(27)</sup> our messengers; and we lay by

Our appertainments, visiting of him:

Let him be told so; lest perchance he think

We dare not move the question of our place,

Or know not what we are.

*Patr.* I shall say so to him. [*Exit.*

*Ulyss.* We saw him at the opening of his tent:

He is not sick.

*Ajax.* Yes, lion-sick, sick of proud heart: you may call it melancholy, if you will favour the man; but, by my head, 'tis pride: but why, why? let him show us the cause.—A word, my lord. [*Takes Agamemnon aside.*

*Nest.* What moves Ajax thus to bay at him?

*Ulyss.* Achilles hath inveigled his fool from him.

*Nest.* Who, Thersites?

*Ulyss.* He.

*Nest.* Then will Ajax lack matter, if he have lost his argument.

*Ulyss.* No, you see, he is his argument that has his argument,—Achilles.

*Nest.* All the better; their fraction is more our wish than their faction: but it was a strong composure a fool could disunite.

*Ulyss.* The amity that wisdom knits not, folly may easily untie.—Here comes Patroclus.

*Nest.* No Achilles with him.

*Ulyss.* The elephant hath joints, but none for courtesy : his legs are legs for necessity, not for flexure.

*Re-enter PATROCLUS.*

*Patr.* Achilles bids me say, he is much sorry,  
If any thing more than your sport and pleasure  
Did move your greatness and this noble state  
To call upon him ; he hopes it is no other  
But for your health and your digestion sake,—  
An after-dinner's breath.

*Agam.* Hear you, Patroclus :—  
We are too well acquainted with these answers :  
But his evasion, wing'd thus swift with scorn,  
Cannot outfly our apprehensions.  
Much attribute he hath ; and much the reason  
Why we ascribe it to him : yet all his virtues,—  
Not virtuously on his own part beheld,—  
Do in our eyes begin to lose their gloss ;  
Yea, like fair fruit in an unwholesome dish,  
Are like to rot untasted. Go and tell him,  
We come to speak with him ; and you shall not sin,  
If you do say we think him over-proud  
And under-honest ; in self-assumption greater  
Than in the note of judgment ; and worthier than himself  
Here tend the savage strangeness he puts on,  
Disguise the holy strength of their command,  
And underwrite in an observing kind  
His humorous predominance ; yea, watch  
His pettish luns, <sup>(28)</sup> his ebbs, his flows, as if  
The passage and whole carriage of this action  
Rode on his tide. Go tell him this ; and add,  
That if he overhold his price so much,  
We'll none of him ; but let him, like an engine  
Not portable, lie under this report,—  
Bring action hither, this cannot go to war :

A stirring dwarf we do allowance give  
Before a sleeping giant:—tell him so.

*Patr.* I shall; and bring his answer presently. [*Exit.*]

*Agam.* In second voice we'll not be satisfied;  
We come to speak with him.—Ulysses, enter you.

[*Exit Ulysses.*]

*Ajax.* What is he more than another?

*Agam.* No more than what he thinks he is.

*Ajax.* Is he so much? Do you not think he thinks himself a better man than I am?

*Agam.* No question.

*Ajax.* Will you subscribe his thought, and say he is?

*Agam.* No, noble Ajax; you are as strong, as valiant, as wise, no less noble, much more gentle, and altogether more tractable.

*Ajax.* Why should a man be proud? How doth pride grow? I know not what pride is.

*Agam.* Your mind is the clearer, Ajax, and your virtues the fairer. He that is proud eats up himself: pride is his own glass, his own trumpet, his own chronicle; and whatever praises itself but in the deed, devours the deed in the praise.

*Ajax.* I do hate a proud man, as I hate the engendering of toads.

*Nest.* Yet he loves himself: is't not strange? [*Aside.*]

*Re-enter ULYSSES.*

*Ulyss.* Achilles will not to the field to-morrow.

*Agam.* What's his excuse?

*Ulyss.* He doth rely on none;  
But carries on the stream of his dispose,  
Without observance or respect of any,  
In will peculiar and in self-admission.

*Agam.* Why will he not, upon our fair request,  
Untent his person, and share the air with us?

*Ulyss.* Things small as nothing, for request's sake only,  
He makes important: possess'd he is with greatness;  
And speaks not to himself, but with a pride

That quarrels at self-breath : imagin'd worth  
 Holds in his blood such swollen and hot discourse,  
 That 'twixt his mental and his active parts  
 Kingdom'd Achilles in commotion rages,  
 And batters down himself : what should I say ?  
 He is so plaguy proud, that the death-tokens of it  
 Cry "No recovery."

*Agam.* Let Ajax go to him.—

Dear lord, go you and greet him in his tent :  
 'Tis said he holds you well ; and will be led,  
 At your request, a little from himself.

*Ulyss.* O Agamemnon, let it not be so !  
 We'll consecrate the steps that Ajax makes  
 When they go from Achilles : shall the proud lord,  
 That hastes his arrogance with his own scam,  
 And never suffers matter of the world  
 Enter his thoughts,—save such as do revolve  
 And ruminate himself,—shall he be worshipp'd  
 Of that we hold an idol more than he ?  
 No, this thrice-worthy and right-valiant lord  
 Must not so stale his palm, nobly acquir'd ;  
 Nor, by my will, assubjugate his merit,  
 As amply titled as Achilles is,  
 By going to Achilles :  
 That were to enlard his fat-already pride,  
 And add more coals to Cancer when he burns  
 With entertaining great Hyperion.  
 This lord go to him ! Jupiter forbid ;  
 And say in thunder, " Achilles go to him."

*Nest.* O, this is well ; he rubs the vein of him. [*Aside.*

*Dio.* And how his silence drinks up this applause !

[*Aside.*

*Ajax.* If I go to him, with my arm'd fist  
 I'll pash him o'er the face.

*Agam.* O, no, you shall not go.

*Ajax.* An 'a be proud with me, I'll pheeze his pride :  
 Let me go to him.

*Ulyss.* Not for the worth that hangs upon our quarrel.

*Ajax.* A paltry, insolent fellow!

*Nest.* How he describes himself! [Aside.

*Ajax.* Can he not be sociable?

*Ulyss.* The raven chides blackness. [Aside.

*Ajax.* I'll let his humours blood.

*Agam.* He will be the physician that should be the patient. [Aside.

*Ajax.* An all men were o' my mind,—

*Ulyss.* Wit would be out of fashion. [Aside.

*Ajax.* 'A should not bear it so, 'a should eat swords first: shall pride carry it?

*Nest.* An 'twould, you'd carry half, [Aside.

*Ulyss.* 'A would have ten shares. [Aside.

*Ajax.* I will knead him, I'll make him supple.

*Nest.* He's not yet through warm: <sup>(29)</sup> force him with praises: pour in, pour in; his ambition is dry. [Aside.

*Ulyss.* My lord, you feed too much on this dislike.

[To Agamemnon.

*Nest.* Our noble general, do not do so.

*Dio.* You must prepare to fight without Achilles.

*Ulyss.* Why, 'tis this naming of him does him harm.

Here is a man—but 'tis before his face;

I will be silent.

*Nest.* Wherefore should you so?

He is not emulous, as Achilles is.

*Ulyss.* Know the whole world, he is as valiant.

*Ajax.* A whoreson dog, that shall palter thus with us! Would he were a Trojan!

*Nest.* What a vice were it in Ajax now,—

*Ulyss.* If he were proud,—

*Dio.* Or covetous of praise,—

*Ulyss.* Ay, or surly borne,—

*Dio.* Or strange, or self-affected!

*Ulyss.* Thank the heavens, lord, thou art of sweet composure;

Praise him that got thee, she that gave thee suck:

Fam'd be thy tutor, and thy parts of nature

Thrice-fam'd, beyond all erudition: <sup>(30)</sup>

But he that disciplin'd thy arms to fight,  
 Let Mars divide eternity in twain,  
 And give him half: and, for thy vigour,  
 Bull-bearing Milo his addition yield  
 To sinewy Ajax. I will not praise thy wisdom,  
 Which, like a bourn, a pale, a shore, confines  
 Thy spacious and dilated parts: here's Nestor,—  
 Instructed by the antiquary times,  
 He must, he is, he cannot but be wise;—  
 But pardon, father Nestor, were your days  
 As green as Ajax', and your brain so temper'd,  
 You should not have the eminence of him,  
 But be as Ajax.

*Ajax.* Shall I call you father?

*Nest.* Ay, my good son.<sup>(31)</sup>

*Dio.* Be rul'd by him, Lord Ajax.

*Ulyss.* There is no tarrying here; the hart Achilles  
 Keeps thicket. Please it our great general  
 To call together all his state of war;  
 Fresh kings are come to Troy: to-morrow  
 We must with all our main of power stand fast:  
 And here's a lord,—come knights from east to west,  
 And cull their flower, Ajax shall cope the best.

*Agam.* Go we to council. Let Achilles sleep:  
 Light boats sail swift, though greater hulks draw deep.

*[Exeunt.]*

### ACT III.

SCENE I. *Troy. A room in PRIAM's palace.*

*Enter a Servant and PANDARUS.*

*Pan.* Friend, you,—pray you, a word: do not you follow  
 the young Lord Paris?

*Serv.* Ay, sir, when he goes before me.

*Pan.* You depend upon him, I mean?

*Serv.* Sir, I do depend upon the lord.

*Pan.* You depend upon a noble gentleman; I must needs praise him.

*Serv.* The lord be praised!

*Pan.* You know me, do you not?

*Serv.* Faith, sir, superficially.

*Pan.* Friend, know me better; I am the Lord Pandarus.

*Serv.* I hope I shall know your honour better.

*Pan.* I do desire it.

*Serv.* You are in the state of grace. [*Music within.*]

*Pan.* Grace! not so, friend; honour and lordship are my titles.—What music is this?

*Serv.* I do but partly know, sir: it is music in parts.

*Pan.* Know you the musicians?

*Serv.* Wholly, sir.

*Pan.* Who play they to?

*Serv.* To the hearers, sir.

*Pan.* At whose pleasure, friend?

*Serv.* At mine, sir, and theirs that love music.

*Pan.* Command, I mean, friend.

*Serv.* Who shall I command, sir?

*Pan.* Friend, we understand not one another: I am too courtly, and thou art too cunning. At whose request do these men play?

*Serv.* That's to't, indeed, sir: marry, sir, at the request of Paris my lord, who's there in person; with him, the mortal Venus, the heart-blood of beauty, love's invisible soul,—

*Pan.* Who, my cousin Cressida?

*Serv.* No, sir, Helen: could you not find out that by her attributes?

*Pan.* It should seem, fellow, that thou hast not seen the Lady Cressida. I come to speak with Paris from the Prince Troilus: I will make a complimentary assault upon him, for my business seeths.

*Serv.* Sudden business! there's a stewed phrase indeed!



*Enter PARIS and HELEN, attended.*

*Pan.* Fair be to you, my lord, and to all this fair company! fair desires, in all fair measure, fairly guide them!—especially to you, fair queen! fair thoughts be your fair pillow!

*Helen.* Dear lord, you are full of fair words.

*Pan.* You speak your fair pleasure, sweet queen.—Fair prince, here is good broken music.

*Par.* You have broke it, cousin; and, by my life, you shall make it whole again; you shall piece it out with a piece of your performance.—Nell, he is full of harmony.

*Pan.* Truly, lady, no.

*Helen.* O, sir,—

*Pan.* Rude, in sooth; in good sooth, very rude.

*Par.* Well said, my lord! well, you say so in fits.

*Pan.* I have business to my lord, dear queen.—My lord, will you vouchsafe me a word?

*Helen.* Nay, this shall not hedge us out: we'll hear you sing, certainly.

*Pan.* Well, sweet queen, you are pleasant with me.—But, marry, thus, my lord,—My dear lord, and most esteemed friend, your brother Troilus,—

*Helen.* My Lord Pandarus; honey-sweet lord,—

*Pan.* Go to, sweet queen, go to:—commends himself most affectionately to you,—

*Helen.* You shall not bob us out of our melody: if you do, our melancholy upon your head!

*Pan.* Sweet queen, sweet queen; that's a sweet queen, i' faith.

*Helen.* And to make a sweet lady sad is a sour offence.

*Pan.* Nay, that shall not serve your turn; that shall it not, in truth, la. Nay, I care not for such words; no, no.—And, my lord, he desires you,<sup>(32)</sup> that if the king call for him at supper, you will make his excuse.

*Helen.* My Lord Pandarus,—

*Pan.* What says my sweet queen,—my very very sweet queen?

*Par.* What exploit's in hand? where sups he to-night?

*Helen.* Nay, but, my lord,—

*Pan.* What says my sweet queen?—My cousin will fall out with you. You must not know where he sups.<sup>(33)</sup>

*Par.* I'll lay my life, with my disposer Cressida.<sup>(34)</sup>

*Pan.* No, no, no such matter; you are wide: come, your disposer is sick.

*Par.* Well, I'll make excuse.

*Pan.* Ay, good my lord. Why should you say Cressida? no, your poor disposer's sick.

*Par.* I spy.

*Pan.* You spy! what do you spy?—Come, give me an instrument.—Now, sweet queen.

*Helen.* Why, this is kindly done.

*Pan.* My niece is horribly in love with a thing you have, sweet queen.

*Helen.* She shall have it, my lord, if it be not my lord Paris.

*Pan.* He! no, she'll none of him; they two are twain.

*Helen.* Falling in, after falling out, may make them three.

*Pan.* Come, come, I'll hear no more of this; I'll sing you a song now.

*Helen.* Ay, ay, prithee now. By my troth, sweet lord, thou hast a fine forehead.

*Pan.* Ay, you may, you may.

*Helen.* Let thy song be love: this love will undo us all. O Cupid, Cupid, Cupid!

*Pan.* Love! ay, that it shall, i'faith.

*Par.* Ay, good now, love, love, nothing but love.

*Pan.* In good troth, it begins so. [*Sings.*

Love, love, nothing but love, still more!

For, O, love's bow

Shoots buck and doe:

The shaft confounds,

Not that it wounds,

But tickles still the sore.

These lovers cry—Oh! oh! they die!

Yet that which seems the wound to kill,

Doth turn oh! oh! to ha! ha! he!

So dying love lives still:

Oh ! oh ! a while, but ha ! ha ! ha !

Oh ! oh ! groans out for ha ! ha ! ha !

Heigh-ho !

*Helen.* In love, i'faith, to the very tip of the nose.

*Par.* He eats nothing but doves, love ; and that breeds hot blood, and hot blood begets hot thoughts, and hot thoughts beget hot deeds, and hot deeds is love.

*Pan.* Is this the generation of love ? hot blood, hot thoughts, and hot deeds ? Why, they are vipers : is love a generation of vipers ?—Sweet lord, who's a-field to-day ?

*Par.* Hector, Deiphobus, Hecubus, Antenor, and all the gallantry of Troy : I would fain have armed to-day, but my Nell would not have it so. How chance my brother Troilus went not ?

*Helen.* He hangs the lip at something :—you know all, Lord Pandarus.

*Pan.* Not I, honey-sweet queen.—I long to hear how they sped to-day.—You'll remember your brother's excuse ?

*Par.* To a hair.

*Pan.* Farewell, sweet queen.

*Helen.* Commend me to your niece.

*Pan.* I will, sweet queen.

[*Exit.*

[*A retreat sounded.*

*Par.* They're come from field : let us to Priam's hall,  
To greet the warriors. Sweet Helen, I must woo you  
To help unarm our Hector : his stubborn buckles,  
With these your white enchanting fingers touch'd,  
Shall more obey than to the edge of steel  
Or force of Greckish sinews ; you shall do more  
Than all the island kings,—disarm great Hector.

*Helen.* 'Twill make us proud to be his servant, Paris ;  
Yea, what he shall receive of us in duty  
Gives us more palm in beauty than we have,  
Yea, overshines ourself.

*Par.* Sweet, above thought I love thee.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE II. *The same.* PANDARUS' orchard.

*Enter PANDARUS and TROILUS' Boy,<sup>(35)</sup> meeting.*

*Pan.* How now! where's thy master? at my cousin Cressida's?

*Boy.* No, sir; he stays for you to conduct him thither.

*Pan.* O, here he comes.

*Enter TROILUS*

How now, how now!

*Tro.* Sirrah, walk off.

[*Exit Boy.*]

*Pan.* Have you seen my cousin?

*Tro.* No, Pandarus: I stalk about her door,  
Like a strange soul upon the Stygian banks  
Staying for waftage. O, be thou my Charon,  
And give me swift transportance to those fields  
Where I may wallow in the lily-beds  
Propos'd for the deserver! O gentle Pandarus,  
From Cupid's shoulder pluck his painted wings,  
And fly with me to Cressid!

*Pan.* Walk here i' the orchard, I'll bring her straight.

[*Exit.*]

*Tro.* I am giddy; expectation whirls me round.  
The imaginary relish is so sweet  
That it enchants my sense: what will it be,  
When that the watery palate tastes indeed  
*Love's thrice-repur'd nectar? death, I fear me;*  
Swooning destruction; or some joy too fine,  
Too subtle-potent, tun'd too sharp in sweetness,  
For the capacity of my ruder powers:  
I fear it much; and I do fear besides,  
That I shall lose distinction in my joys;  
As doth a battle, when they charge on heaps  
The enemy flying.

*Re-enter PANDARUS*

*Pan.* She's making her ready, she'll come straight: you must be witty now. She does so blush, and fetches her wind so short, as if she were frayed with a sprite: I'll fetch her.

It is the prettiest villain : she fetches her breath as short as a new-ta'en sparrow. [Exit.

*Tro.* Even such a passion doth embrace my bosom :  
My heart beats thicker than a feverous pulse ;  
And all my powers do their bestowing lose,  
Like vassalage at unawares encountering  
The eye of majesty.

*Re-enter PANDARUS with CRESSIDA.*

*Pan.* Come, come, what need you blush ? shame's a baby.  
—Here she is now : swear the oaths now to her that you  
have sworn to me.—What, are you gone again ? you must be  
watched ere you be made tame, must you ? Come your  
ways, come your ways ; an you draw backward, we'll put  
you i' the fills.—Why do you not speak to her ?—Come,  
draw this curtain, and let's see your picture. Alas the day,  
how loth you are to offend daylight ! an 'twere dark, you'd  
close sooner. So, so ; rub on, and kiss the mistress. How  
now ! a kiss in fee-farm ! build there, carpenter ; the air is  
sweet. Nay, you shall fight your hearts out ere I part you.  
The falcon as the tercel, for all the ducks i' the river : go to,  
go to.

*Tro.* You have bereft me of all words, lady.

*Pan.* Words pay no debts, give her deeds : but she'll be-  
reave you o' the deeds too, if she call your activity in ques-  
tion. What, billing again ? Here's—"In witness whereof  
the parties interchangeably"—Come in, come in : I'll go get  
a fire. [Exit.

*Cres.* Will you walk in, my lord ?

*Tro.* O Cressida, how often have I wished me thus !

*Cres.* Wished, my lord !—The gods grant,—O my lord !

*Tro.* What should they grant ? what makes this pretty  
abruption ? What too curious dreg espies my sweet lady in  
the fountain of our love ?

*Cres.* More dregs than water, if my fears have eyes.

*Tro.* Fears make devils of cherubins ; they never see truly.

*Cres.* Blind fear, that seeing reason leads, finds safer foot-  
ing than blind reason stumbling without fear : to fear the  
worst oft cures the worse.

*Tro.* O, let my lady apprehend no fear: in all Cupid's pageant there is presented no monster.

*Cres.* Nor nothing monstrous neither?

*Tro.* Nothing, but our undertakings; when we vow to weep seas, live in fire, eat rocks, tame tigers; thinking it harder for our mistress to devise imposition enough than for us to undergo any difficulty imposed. This is the monstruosity in love, lady,—that the will is infinite, and the execution confined; that the desire is boundless, and the act a slave to limit.

*Cres.* They say, all lovers swear more performance than they are able, and yet reserve an ability that they never perform; vowing more than the perfection of ten, and discharging less than the tenth part of one. They that have the voice of lions and the act of hares, are they not monsters?

*Tro.* Are there such? such are not we: praise us as we are tasted, allow us as we prove; our head shall go bare till merit crown it: no perfection in reversion shall have a praise in present: we will not name desert before his birth; and, being born, his addition shall be humble. Few words to fair faith: Troilus shall be such to Cressid, as what envy can say worst, shall be a mock for his truth; and what truth can speak truest, not truer than Troilus.

*Cres.* Will you walk in, my lord?

*Re-enter PANDARUS.*

*Pan.* What, blushing still? have you not done talking yet?

*Cres.* Well, uncle, what folly I commit, I dedicate to you.

*Pan.* I thank you for that: if my lord get a boy of you, you'll give him me. Be true to my lord: if he flinch, chide me for it.

*Tro.* You know now your hostages; your uncle's word and my firm faith.

*Pan.* Nay, I'll give my word for her too: our kindred, though they be long ere they are wooed, they are constant being won: they are burs, I can tell you; they'll stick where they are thrown.

*Cres.* Boldness comes to me now, and brings me heart:—  
Prince Troilus, I have lov'd you night and day  
For many weary months.

*Tro.* Why was my Cressid, then, so hard to win?

*Cres.* Hard to seem won: but I was won, my lord,  
With the first glance that ever—pardon me,—  
If I confess much, you will play the tyrant.  
I love you now; but not, till now, so much  
But I might master it:—in faith, I lie;  
My thoughts were like unbridled children, grown  
Too headstrong for their mother:—see, we fools!  
Why have I blabb'd? who shall be true to us,  
When we are so unsecret to ourselves?—  
But, though I lov'd you well, I woo'd you not;  
And yet, good faith, I wish'd myself a man,  
Or that we women had men's privilege  
Of speaking first. Sweet, bid me hold my tongue;  
For, in this rapture, I shall surely speak  
The thing I shall repent. See, see, your silence,  
Cunning<sup>(36)</sup> in dumbness, from my weakness draws  
My very soul of counsel!—stop my mouth.

*Tro.* And shall, albeit sweet music issues thence.

*Pan.* Pretty, i' faith.

*Cres.* My lord, I do beseech you, pardon me;  
'Twas not my purpose, thus to beg a kiss:  
I am asham'd;—O heavens! what have I done?  
For this time will I take my leave, my lord.

*Tro.* Your leave, sweet Cressid!

*Pan.* Leave! an you take leave till to-morrow morning,—

*Cres.* Pray you, content you.

*Tro.* What offends you, lady?

*Cres.* Sir, mine own company.

*Tro.* You cannot shun  
Yourself.

*Cres.* Let me go and try:  
I have a kind of self resides with you;  
But an unkind self, that itself will leave,  
To be another's fool. I would be gone:—  
Where is my wit? I know not what I speak.

*Tro.* Well know they what they speak that speak so wisely.

*Cres.* Perchance, my lord, I show more craft than love;  
And fell so roundly to a large confession,  
To angle for your thoughts: but you are wise;  
Or else you love not; for to be wise and love  
Exceeds man's might; that dwells with gods above.

*Tro.* O that I thought it could be in a woman,  
(As, if it can, I will presume in you,)  
To feed for aye her lamp and flames of love;  
To keep her constancy in plight and youth,  
Outliving beauty's outward, with a mind  
That doth renew swifter than blood decays!  
Or, that persuasion could but thus convince me,—  
That my integrity and truth to you  
Might be affronted with the match and weight  
Of such a winnow'd purity in love,  
How were I then uplifted! but, alas!  
I am as true as truth's simplicity,  
And simpler than the infancy of truth.

*Cres.* In that I'll war with you.

*Tro.* O virtuous fight,  
When right with right wars who shall be most right!  
True swains in love shall, in the world to come,  
Approve their truths by Troilus: when their rhymes,  
Full of protest, of oath, and big compare,  
*Want similes, truth fir'd with iteration,—*  
As true as steel, as plantage to the moon,  
As sun to day, as turtle to her mate,  
As iron to adamant, as earth to the centre,—  
Yet, after all comparisons of truth,  
As truth's authentic author to be cited,  
As true as Troilus shall crown up the verse,  
And sanctify the numbers.

*Cres.* Prophet may you be!  
If I be false, or swerve a hair from truth,  
When time is old and hath forgot itself,  
When waterdrops have worn the stones of Troy,  
And blind oblivion swallow'd cities up,



And mighty states characterless are grated  
 To dusty nothing; yet let memory,  
 From false to false, among false maids in love,  
 Upbraid my falsehood! when they've said—as false  
 As air, as water, wind, or sandy earth,  
 As fox to lamb, as wolf to heifer's calf,  
 Pard to the hind, or stepdame to her son;  
 Yea, let them say, to stick the heart of falsehood,  
 As false as Cressid.

*Pan.* Go to, a bargain made: seal it, seal it; I'll be the witness. Here I hold your hand; here my cousin's. If ever you prove false one to another, since I have taken such pains to bring you together, let all pitiful goers-between be called to the world's end after my name, call them all Pandars; let all constant<sup>(37)</sup> men be Troiluses, all false women Cressids, and all brokers-between Pandars! say, amen.

*Tro.* Amen.

*Cres.* Amen.

*Pan.* Amen. Whereupon I will show you a chamber and a bed; <sup>(38)</sup> which bed, because it shall not speak of your pretty encounters, press it to death: away!  
 And Cupid grant all tongue-tied maidens here  
 Bed, chamber, Pandar to provide this gear! [Exeunt.]

---

SCENE III. *The Grecian camp.*

*Enter* AGAMEMNON, ULYSSES, DIOMEDES, NESTOR, AJAX, MENELAUS, *and* CALCHAS.

*Cal.* Now, princes, for the service I have done you,  
 The advantage of the time prompts me aloud  
 To call for recompense. Appear it to your mind  
 That, through the sight I bear in things to Jove,<sup>(39)</sup>  
 I have abandon'd Troy, left my possession,  
 Incurr'd a traitor's name; expos'd myself,  
 From certain and possess'd conveniences,  
 To doubtful fortunes; sequestering from me all  
 That time, acquaintance, custom, and condition,

Made tame and most familiar to my nature ;  
And here, to do you service, am become  
As new into the world, strange, unacquainted :  
I do beseech you, as in way of taste,  
To give me now a little benefit,  
Out of those many register'd in promise,  
Which, you say, live to come in my behalf.

*Agam.* What wouldst thou of us, Trojan ? make demand.

*Cal.* You have a Trojan prisoner, call'd Antenor,  
Yesterday took : Troy holds him very dear.  
Oft have you (often have you thanks therefore)  
Desir'd my Cressid in right great exchange,  
Whom Troy hath still denied : but this Antenor,  
I know, is such a wrest in their affairs,  
That their negotiations all must slack,  
Wanting his manage ; and they will almost  
Give us a prince of blood, a son of Priam,  
In change of him : let him be sent, great princes,  
And he shall buy my daughter ; and her presence  
Shall quite strike off all service I have done,  
In most accepted pain.

*Agam.* Let Diomedes bear him,  
And bring us Cressid hither : Calchas shall have  
What he requests of us.—Good Diomed,  
Furnish you fairly for this interchange :  
Withal, bring word if Hector will to-morrow  
Be answer'd in his challenge : Ajax is ready.

*Dio.* This shall I undertake ; and 'tis a burden  
Which I am proud to bear. [*Exeunt Diomedes and Calchas.*]

*Enter ACHILLES and PATROCLUS, before their tent.*

*Ulyss.* Achilles stands i' the entrance of his tent :—  
Please it our general to pass strangely by him,  
As if he were forgot ; and, princes all,  
Lay negligent and loose regard upon him :  
I will come last. 'Tis like he'll question me  
Why such unplausible eyes are bent, why turn'd on him : (<sup>10</sup>)  
If so, I have derision med'cinable,  
'To use between your strangeness and his pride,

Which his own will shall have desire to drink :  
It may do good : pride hath no other glass  
To show itself but pride ; for supple knees  
Feed arrogance, and are the proud man's fees.

*Agam.* We'll execute your purpose, and put on  
A form of strangeness as we pass along ;—  
So do each lord ; and either greet him not,  
Or else disdainfully, which shall shake him more  
Than if not look'd on. I will lead the way.

*Achil.* What, comes the general to speak with me ?  
You know my mind, I'll fight no more 'gainst Troy.

*Agam.* What says Achilles ? would he aught with us ?

*Nest.* Would you, my lord, aught with the general ?

*Achil.* No.

*Nest.* Nothing, my lord.

*Agam.* The better. [*Exeunt Agamemnon and Nestor.*]

*Achil.* Good day, good day.

*Men.* How do you ? how do you ? [*Exit.*]

*Achil.* What, does the cuckold scorn me ?

*Ajax.* How now, Patroclus !

*Achil.* Good morrow, Ajax.

*Ajac.* Ha !

*Achil.* Good morrow.

*Ajax.* Ay, and good next day too. [*Exit.*]

*Achil.* What mean these fellows ? Know they not  
Achilles ?

*Patr.* They pass by strangely : they were us'd to bend,  
To send their smiles before them to Achilles ;  
To come as humbly as they us'd to creep  
To holy altars.

*Achil.* What, am I poor of late ?  
'Tis certain, greatness, once fall'n out with fortune,  
Must fall out with men too : what the declin'd is,  
He shall as soon read in the eyes of others  
As feel in his own fall : for men, like butterflies,  
Show not their mealy wings but to the summer ;  
And not a man, for being simply man,  
Hath any honour ; but honour for those honours  
That are without him, as place, riches, and<sup>(41)</sup> favour,

Prizes of accident as oft as merit :  
 Which when they fall, as being slippery standers,  
 The love that lean'd on them as slippery too,  
 Do one pluck down another, and together  
 Die in the fall. But 'tis not so with me :  
 Fortune and I are friends : I do enjoy  
 At ample point all that I did possess,  
 Save these men's looks ; who do, methinks, find out  
 Something not worth in me such rich beholding  
 As they have often given. Here is Ulysses :  
 I'll interrupt his reading.—  
 How now, Ulysses !

*Ulyss.* Now, great Thetis' son !

*Achil.* What are you reading ?

*Ulyss.* A strange fellow here  
 Writes me, That man,—how dearly ever parted,  
 How much in having, or without or in,—  
 Cannot make boast to have that which he hath,  
 Nor feels not what he owes, but by reflection ;  
 As when his virtues shining upon others  
 Heat them, and they retort that heat again  
 To the first giver.

*Achil.* This is not strange, Ulysses.  
 The beauty that is borne here in the face  
 The bearer knows not, but commends itself  
 To others' eyes : nor doth the eye itself  
 (That most pure spirit of sense) behold itself,  
 Not going from itself ; but eye to eye oppos'd  
 Salutes each other with each other's form :  
 For speculation turns not to itself,  
 Till it hath travell'd, and is mirror'd<sup>(42)</sup> there  
 Where it may see itself. This is not strange at all.

*Ulyss.* I do not strain at the position,—  
 It is familiar,—but at the author's drift ;  
 Who, in his circumstance, expressly proves  
 That no man is the lord of any thing  
 (Though in and of him there be much consisting)  
 Till he communicate his parts to others ;  
 Nor doth he of himself know them for aught

Till he behold them form'd in the applause  
 Where they're extended; who, like an arch, reverberates<sup>(43)</sup>  
 The voice again; or, like a gate of steel  
 Fronting the sun, receives and renders back  
 His figure and his heat. I was much rapt in this;  
 And apprehended here immediately  
 The unknown Ajax.  
 Heavens, what a man is there! a very horse;  
 That has he knows not what. Nature, what things there are,  
 Most abject in regard, and dear in use!  
 What things again most dear in the esteem,  
 And poor in worth! Now shall we see to-morrow  
 An act that very chance doth throw upon him,  
 Ajax renown'd. O heavens, what some men do,  
 While some men leave to do!  
 How some men creep in skittish fortune's hall,  
 Whiles others play the idiots in her eyes!  
 How one man eats into another's pride,  
 While pride is fasting in his wantonness!  
 To see these Grecian lords!—why, even already  
 They clap the lubber Ajax on the shoulder,  
 As if his foot were on brave Hector's breast,  
 And great Troy shrieking.

*Achil.* I do believe it; for they pass'd by me  
 As misers do by beggars,—neither gave to me  
 Good word nor look: what, are my deeds forgot?

*Ulyss.* Time hath, my lord, a wallet at his back,  
 Wherein he puts alms for oblivion,  
 A great-siz'd monster of ingratiitudes:  
 Those scraps are good deeds past; which are devour'd  
 As fast as they are made, forgot as soon  
 As done: persévérance, dear my lord,  
 Keeps honour bright: to have done, is to hang  
 Quite out of fashion, like a rusty mail  
 In monumental mockery. Take the instant way;  
 For honour travels in a strait so narrow,  
 Where one but goes abreast: keep, then, the path;  
 For emulation hath a thousand sons,  
 That one by one pursue: if you give way,

Or hedge aside from the direct forthright,  
 Like to an enter'd tide, they all rush by,  
 And leave you hindmost ;  
 Or, like a gallant horse fall'n in first rank,  
 Lie there for pavement to the abject rear,<sup>(44)</sup>  
 O'er-run and trampled on : then what they do in present,  
 Though less than yours in past, must o'ertop yours ;  
 For time is like a fashionable host,  
 That slightly shakes his parting guest by the hand ;  
 And with his arms outstretch'd, as he would fly,  
 Grasps-in the comer : welcome<sup>(45)</sup> ever smiles,  
 And farewell goes out sighing. O, let not virtue seek  
 Remuneration for the thing it was ;  
 For beauty, wit,  
 High birth, vigour of bone, desert in service,  
 Love, friendship, charity, are subjects all  
 To envious and calumniating time.  
 One touch of nature makes the whole world kin,—  
 That all, with one consent, praise new-born gawds,  
 Though they are made and moulded of things past ;  
 And give<sup>(46)</sup> to dust, that is a little gilt,  
 More laud than gilt o'er-dusted.  
 The present eye praises the present object :  
 Then marvel not, thou great and complete man,  
 That all the Greeks begin to worship Ajax ;  
 Since things in motion sooner catch the eye  
 Than what not stirs. The cry went once on thee,  
 And still it might ; and yet it may again,  
 If thou wouldst not entomb thyself alive,  
 And ease thy reputation in thy tent ;  
 Whose glorious deeds, but in these fields of late,  
 Made emulous missions 'mongst the gods themselves,  
 And drove great Mars to faction.

*Achil.*

Of this my privacy

I have strong reasons.

*Ulyss.*

But 'gainst your privacy

The reasons are more potent and heroical :

'Tis known, Achilles, that you are in love

With one of Priam's daughters.

*Achil.*

Ha! known!

*Ulyss.* Is that a wonder?

The providence that's in a watchful state  
Knows almost every grain of Plutus<sup>(17)</sup> gold;  
Finds bottom in the uncomprehensive deeps;  
Keeps place with thought, and almost, like the gods,  
Does thoughts unveil in their dumb cradles.<sup>(18)</sup>  
There is a mystery (with whom relation  
Durst never meddle) in the soul of state;  
Which hath an operation more divine  
Than breath or pen can give expressure to:  
All the commerce that you have had with Troy,  
As perfectly is ours, as yours, my lord;  
And better would it fit Achilles much  
To throw down Hector than Polyxena:  
But it must grieve young Pyrrhus now at home,  
When fame shall in our islands sound her trump;  
And all the Greekish girls shall tripping sing,  
"Great Hector's sister did Achilles win;  
But our great Ajax bravely beat down him."  
Farewell, my lord: I as your lover speak;  
The fool slides o'er the ice that you should break. [Exit.

*Patr.* To this effect, Achilles, have I mov'd you:  
A woman impudent and mannish grown  
Is not more loath'd than an effeminate man  
In time of action. I stand condemn'd for this;  
They think, my little stomach to the war,  
And your great love to me, restrains you thus:  
Sweet, rouse yourself; and the weak wanton Cupid  
Shall from your neck unloose his amorous fold,  
And, like a dew-drop from the lion's mane,  
Be shook to air.<sup>(19)</sup>

*Achil.* Shall Ajax fight with Hector?

*Patr.* Ay, and perhaps receive much honour by him.

*Achil.* I see my reputation is at stake;  
My fame is shrewdly gor'd.

*Patr.* O, then, beware;  
Those wounds heal ill that men do give themselves:  
Omission to do what is necessary

Scals a commission to a blank of danger;  
And danger, like an ague, subtly taints  
Even then when we sit idly in the sun.

*Achil.* Go call Thersites hither, sweet Patroclus:  
I'll send the fool to Ajax, and desire him  
To invite the Trojan lords, after the combat  
To see us here unarm'd: I have a woman's longing,  
An appetite that I am sick withal,  
To see great Hector in his weeds of peace;  
To talk with him, and to behold his visage,  
Even to my full of view.—A labour sav'd!

*Enter THERSITES.*

*Ther.* A wonder!

*Achil.* What?

*Ther.* Ajax goes up and down the field, asking for himself.

*Achil.* How so?

*Ther.* He must fight singly to-morrow with Hector; and is so prophetically proud of an heroicall cudgelling, that he raves in saying nothing.

*Achil.* How can that be?

*Ther.* Why, he stalks up and down like a peacock,—a stride and a stand: ruminates like an hostess that hath no arithmetic but her brain to set down her reckoning: bites his lip with a politic regard, as who should say, There were wit in this head, an 'twould out; and so there is; but it lies as coldly in him as fire in a flint, which will not show without knocking. The man's undone for ever; for if Hector break not his neck i' the combat, he'll break 't himself in vain-glory. He knows not me: I said, "Good morrow, Ajax;" and he replies, "Thanks, Agamemnon." What think you of this man, that takes me for the general? He's grown a very land-fish, languageless, a monster. A plague of opinion! a man may wear it on both sides, like a leather jerkin.

*Achil.* Thou must be my ambassador to him, Thersites.

*Ther.* Who, I? why, he'll answer nobody; he professes not answering: speaking is for beggars; he wears his tongue in's arms. I will put on his presence: let Patroclus make demands to me, you shall see the pageant of Ajax.



*Achil.* To him, Patroclus: tell him,—I humbly desire the valiant Ajax to invite the most valorous Hector to come unarmed to my tent; and to procure safe-conduct for his person of the magnanimous and most illustrious six-or-seven-times-honoured captain-general of the Grecian army, Agamemnon.<sup>(60)</sup> Do this.

*Patr.* Jove bless great Ajax!

*Ther.* Hum!

*Patr.* I come from the worthy Achilles,—

*Ther.* Ha!

*Patr.* Who most humbly desires you to invite Hector to his tent,—

*Ther.* Hum!

*Patr.* And to procure safe-conduct from Agamemnon.

*Ther.* Agamemnon!

*Patr.* Ay, my lord.

*Ther.* Ha!

*Patr.* What say you to 't?

*Ther.* God b' wi' you, with all my heart.

*Patr.* Your answer, sir.

*Ther.* If to-morrow be a fair day, by eleven o'clock it will go one way or other: howsoever, he shall pay for me ere he has me.

*Patr.* Your answer, sir.

*Ther.* Fare you well, with all my heart.

*Achil.* Why, but he is not in this tune, is he?

*Ther.* No, but he's out o' tune thus. What music will be in him when Hector has knocked out his brains, I know not; but, I am sure, none,—unless the fiddler Apollo get his sinews to make catlings on.

*Achil.* Come, thou shalt bear a letter to him straight.

*Ther.* Let me bear another to his horse; for that's the more capable creature.

*Achil.* My mind is troubled, like a fountain stirr'd;  
And I myself see not the bottom of it.

[*Exeunt Achilles and Patroclus.*]

*Ther.* Would the fountain of your mind were clear again, that I might water an ass at it! I had rather be a tick in a sheep than such a valiant ignorance.

[*Exit.*]

## ACT IV.

SCENE I. *Troy. A street.*

*Enter, from one side, ÆNEAS, and Servant with a torch; from the other, PARIS, DEIPHOBUS, ANTENOR, DIOMEDES, and others, with torches.*

*Par.* See, ho! who is that there?

*Dei.* It is the Lord Æneas.

*Æne.* Is the prince there in person?—

Had I so good occasion to lie long  
As you, Prince Paris, nothing but heavenly business  
Should rob my bed-mate of my company.

*Dio.* That's my mind too.—Good morrow, Lord Æneas.

*Par.* A valiant Greek, Æneas,—take his hand,—  
Witness the process of your speech, wherein  
You told how Diomed, a whole week by days,  
Did haunt you in the field.

*Æne.* Health to you, valiant sir,  
During all question of the gentle truce;  
But when I meet you arm'd, as black defiance  
As heart can think or courage execute.

*Dio.* The one and other Diomed embraces.  
Our bloods are now in calm; and, so long, health;  
But when contention and occasion meet,  
By Jove, I'll play the hunter for thy life  
With all my force, pursuit, and policy.

*Æne.* And thou shalt hunt a lion, that will fly  
With his face backward.—In humane gentleness,  
Welcome to Troy! now, by Anchises' life,  
Welcome, indeed! By Venus' hand I swear,  
No man alive can love, in such a sort,  
The thing he means to kill, more excellently.

*Dio.* We sympathise:—Jove, let Æneas live,  
If to my sword his fate be not the glory,  
A thousand complete courses of the sun!  
But, in mine emulous honour, let him die,  
With every joint a wound, and that to-morrow!

*Æne.* We know each other well.

*Dio.* We do; and long to know each other worse.

*Par.* This is the most despitel<sup>(51)</sup> gentle greeting,  
The noblest hateful love, that e'er I heard of,—  
What business, lord, so early?

*Ænc.* I was sent for to the king; but why, I know not.

*Par.* His purpose meets you: 'twas to bring this Greek  
To Calchas' house; and there to render him,  
For the enfréed Antenor, the fair Cressid:  
Let's have your company; or, if you please,  
Haste there before us: I constantly do think  
(Or, rather, call my thought a certain knowledge)  
My brother Troilus lodges there to-night:  
Rouse him, and give him note of our approach,  
With the whole quality wherefore: I fear  
We shall be much unwelcome.

*Æne.* That I assure you:  
Troilus had rather Troy were borne to Greece  
Than Cressid borne from Troy.

*Par.* There is no help;  
The bitter disposition of the time  
Will have it so. On, lord; we'll follow you.

*Æne.* Good morrow, all. [*Exit with Servant.*]

*Par.* And tell me, noble Diomed,—faith, tell me true,  
Even in the soul of sound good-fellowship,—  
Who, in your thoughts, merits fair Helen best,  
Myself or Menelaus?

*Dio.* Both alike:  
He merits well to have her, that doth seek her  
(Not making any scruple of her soilure)  
With such a hell of pain and world of charge;  
And you as well to keep her, that defend her  
(Not palating the taste of her dishonour)  
With such a costly loss of wealth and friends:  
He, like a puling cuckold, would drink up  
The lees and dregs of a flat tamèd piece;  
You, like a lecher, out of whorish loins  
Are pleas'd to breed out your inheritors:  
Both merits pois'd, each weighs nor less nor more;  
But he as he, each heavier for a whore.<sup>(52)</sup>

*Par.* You are too bitter to your countrywoman.

*Dio.* She's bitter to her country: hear me, Paris:—

For every false drop in her bawdy veins  
A Grecian's life hath sunk; for every scruple  
Of her contaminated carrion weight,  
A Trojan hath been slain: since she could speak,  
She hath not given so many good words breath  
As for her Greeks and Trojans suffer'd death.

*Par.* Fair Diomed, you do as chapmen do,  
Dispraise the thing that you desire to buy:  
But we in silence hold this virtue well,—  
We'll not commend what we intend to sell.<sup>(53)</sup>  
Here lies our way.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE II. *The same. Court of PANDARUS' house.*

*Enter TROILUS and CRESSIDA.*

*Tro.* Dear, trouble not yourself: the morn is cold.

*Cres.* Then, sweet my lord, I'll call mine uncle down;  
He shall unbolt the gates.

*Tro.* Trouble him not,  
To bed, to bed: sleep kill those pretty eyes,  
And give as soft attachment to thy senses  
As infants' empty of all thought!

*Cres.* Good morrow, then.

*Tro.* I prithee now, to bed.

*Cres.* Are you a-weary of me?

*Tro.* O Cressida! but that the busy day,  
Wak'd by the lark, hath rous'd the ribald crows,  
And dreaming night will hide our joys no longer,  
I would not from thee.

*Cres.* Night hath been too brief.

*Tro.* Beshrew the witch! with venomous wights she stays  
As tediously as hell; but flies the grasps of love,  
With wings more momentary-swift than thought.  
You will catch cold, and curse me.

*Cres.* Prithee, tarry;—  
You men will never tarry.—

O foolish Cressid!—I might have still held off,  
And then you would have tarried.—Hark! there's one up.

*Pan.* [*within*] What, 's all the doors open here?

*Tro.* It is your uncle.

*Cres.* A pestilence on him! now will he be mocking:  
I shall have such a life!

*Enter PANDARUS.*

*Pan.* How now, how now! how go maidenheads?—Here,  
you maid! where's my cousin Cressid?

*Cres.* Go hang yourself, you naughty mocking uncle!  
You bring me to do, and then you flout me too.

*Pan.* To do what? to do what?—let her say what:—what  
have I brought you to do?

*Cres.* Come, come, beshrew your heart! you'll ne'er be  
good,  
Nor suffer others.

*Pan.* Ha, ha! Alas, poor wretch! ah, poor capocchio! (<sup>61</sup>)  
hast not slept to-night? would he not,—a naughty man,—let  
it sleep? a bugbear take him!

*Cres.* Did not I tell you?—would he were knock'd i' the  
head!—

[*Knocking.*]

Who's that at door? good uncle, go and see.—

My lord, come you again into my chamber:

You smile, and mock me, as if I meant naughtily.

*Tro.* Ha, ha!

*Cres.* Come, you are decciv'd, I think of no such thing.—

[*Knocking.*]

How earnestly they knock!—Pray you, come in:

I would not for half Troy have you seen here.

[*Exeunt Troilus and Cressida.*]

*Pan.* [*going to the door*] Who's there? what's the matter?  
will you beat down the door? How now! what's the matter?

*Enter ÆNEAS.*

*Æne.* Good morrow, lord, good morrow.

*Pan.* Who's there? my Lord Æneas! By my troth,  
I knew you not: what news with you so early?

*Æne.* Is not Prince Troilus here?

*Pan.* Here! what should he do here?

*Æne.* Come, he is here, my lord; do not deny him:  
It doth import him much to speak with me.

*Pan.* Is he here, say you? 'tis more than I know, I'll be sworn:—for my own part, I came in late. What should he do here?

*Æne.* Who!—nay, then:—come, come, you'll do him wrong ere you're ware: you'll be so true to him, to be false to him; do not you know of him, but yet go fetch him hither; go.

*As PANDARUS is going out, re-enter TROILUS.*

*Tro.* How now! what's the matter?

*Æne.* My lord, I scarce have leisure to salute you,  
My matter is so rash: there is at hand  
Paris your brother, and Deiphobus,  
The Grecian Diomed, and our Antenor  
Deliver'd to us; and for him forthwith,  
Ere the first sacrifice, within this hour,  
We must give up to Diomedes' hand  
The Lady Cressida.

*Tro.* Is it so concluded?

*Æne.* By Priam, and the general state of Troy:  
They are at hand, and ready to effect it.

*Tro.* How my achievements mock me!  
I will go meet them:—and, my Lord Æneas,  
We met by chance; you did not find me here.

*Æne.* Good, good, my lord; the secrets<sup>(55)</sup> of nature  
Have not more gift in taciturnity.

*[Exeunt Troilus and Æneas.]*

*Pan.* Is't possible? no sooner got but lost? The devil  
take Antenor! the young prince will go mad: a plague  
upon Antenor! I would they had broke's neck!

*Re-enter CRESSIDA.*

*Cres.* How now! what's the matter? who was here?

*Pan.* Ah, ah!

*Cres.* Why sigh you so profoundly? where's my lord?  
gone! Tell me, sweet uncle, what's the matter?

*Pan.* Would I were as deep under the earth as I am above!

*Cres.* O the gods!—what's the matter?

*Pan.* Prithee, get thee in: would thou hadst ne'er been born! I knew thou wouldst be his death:—O, poor gentleman!—a plague upon Antenor!

*Cres.* Good uncle, I beseech you, on my knees I beseech you, what's the matter?

*Pan.* Thou must be gone, wench, thou must be gone; thou art changed for Antenor: thou must to thy father, and be gone from Troilus: 'twill be his death; 'twill be his bane; he cannot bear it.

*Cres.* O you immortal gods!—I will not go.

*Pan.* Thou must.

*Cres.* I will not, uncle: I have forgot my father; I know no touch of consanguinity;  
No kin, no love, no blood, no soul so near me  
As the sweet Troilus.—O you gods divine!  
Make Cressid's name the very crown of falsehood,  
If ever she leave Troilus! Time, force, and death,  
Do to this body what extremes you can;  
But the strong base and building of my love  
Is as the very centre of the earth,  
Drawing all things to it.—I'll go in and weep,—

*Pan.* Do, do.

*Cres.* Tear my bright hair, and scratch my praisèd cheeks;  
Crack my clear voice with sobs, and break my heart  
With sounding Troilus. I will not go from Troy. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE III. *The same. Street before PANDARUS' house.*

*Enter PARIS, TROILUS, ÆNEAS, DEIPHOBUS, ANTINOR, and  
DIOMEDES.*

*Par.* It is great morning; and the hour prefix'd  
Of her delivery to this valiant Greek  
Comes fast upon:—good my brother Troilus,  
Tell you the lady what she is to do,  
And haste her to the purpose.

*Tro.* Walk into her house ;  
 I'll bring her to the Grecian presently :  
 And to his hand when I deliver her,  
 Think it an altar ; and thy brother Troilus  
 A priest, there offering to it his own heart. [*Exit.*

*Par.* I know what 'tis to love ;  
 And would, as I shall pity, I could help !—  
 Please you walk in, my lords. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV. *The same. A room in PANDARUS' house.*

*Enter PANDARUS and CRESSIDA*

*Pan.* Be moderate, be moderate.

*Cres.* Why tell you me of moderation ?  
 The grief is fine, full, perfect, that I taste,  
 And violenteth in a sense as strong  
 As that which causeth it : how can I moderate it ?  
 If I could temporise with my affection,  
 Or brew it to a weak and colder palate,  
 The like allayment could I give my grief :  
 My love admits no qualifying dross ;  
 No more my grief, in such a precious loss.

*Pan.* Here, here, here he comes.

*Enter TROILUS.*

Ah, sweet ducks !<sup>(66)</sup>

*Cres.* O Troilus ! Troilus ! [*Embracing him.*

*Pan.* What a pair of spectacles is here ! Let me embrace  
 too. "O heart," as the goodly saying is,—

" — O heart, heavy heart,  
 Why sigh'st thou without breaking ?"

where he answers again,

"Because thou canst not ease thy smart  
 By friendship<sup>(67)</sup> nor by speaking."

There was never a truer rhyme. Let us cast away nothing,  
 for we may live to have need of such a verse : we see it, we  
 see it.—How now, lambs !

*Tro.* Cressid, I love thee in so strain'd a purity,



That the bless'd gods,—as angry with my fancy,  
More bright in zeal than the devotion which  
Cold lips blow to their deities,—take thee from me.

*Cres.* Have the gods envy?

*Pan.* Ay, ay, ay, ay; 'tis too plain a case.

*Cres.* And is it true that I must go from Troy?

*Tro.* A hateful truth.

*Cres.* What, and from Troilus too?

*Tro.* From Troy and Troilus.

*Cres.* Is it possible?

*Tro.* And suddenly; where injury of chance  
Puts back leave-taking, justles roughly by  
All time of pause, rudely beguiles our lips  
Of all rejoindure, forcibly prevents  
Our lock'd embrasures, strangles our dear vows  
Even in the birth of our own labouring breath:  
We two, that with so many thousand sighs  
Did buy each other, must poorly sell ourselves  
With the rude brevity and discharge of one.  
Injurious time now, with a robber's haste,  
Crams his rich thievery up, he knows not how:  
As many farewells as be stars in heaven,  
With distinct breath and consign'd kisses to them,  
He fumbles up into a loose adieu;  
And scants us with a single famish'd kiss,  
Distasted with the salt of broken tears.

*Æne.* [*within*] My lord, is the lady ready?

*Tro.* Hark! you are call'd: some say the Genius so  
Cries, "Come!" to him that instantly must die.—  
Bid them have patience; she shall come anon.

*Pan.* Where are my tears? rain, to lay this wind, or my  
heart will be blown up by the root. [*Exit.*]

*Cres.* I must, then, to the Grecians?

*Tro.* No remedy.

*Cres.* A woeful Cressid 'mongst the merry Greeks!  
When shall we see again?

*Tro.* Hear me, my love: be thou but true of heart,—

*Cres.* I true! how now! what wicked deem is this?

*Tro.* Nay, we must use expostulation kindly,

For it is parting from us :  
I speak not "be thou true," as fearing thee ;  
For I will throw my glove to Death himself,  
That there's no maculation in thy heart :  
But, "be thou true," say I, to fashion in  
My sequent protestation ; be thou true,  
And I will see thee.

*Cres.* O, you shall be expos'd, my lord, to dangers  
As infinite as imminent ! but I'll be true.

*Tro.* And I'll grow friend with danger. Wear this sleeve.

*Cres.* And you this glove. When shall I see you ?

*Tro.* I will corrupt the Grecian sentinels,  
To give thee nightly visitation.  
But yet, be true.

*Cres.* O heavens !—be true, again !

*Tro.* Hear why I speak it, love :  
The Grecian youths are full of quality ;  
They're<sup>(ss)</sup> loving, well compos'd, with gifts of nature flowing,  
And swelling o'er with arts and exercise :  
How novelty may move, and parts with person,  
Alas, a kind of godly jealousy  
(Which, I beseech you, call a virtuous sin)  
Makes me afraid.

*Cres.* O heavens ! you love me not.

*Tro.* Die I a villain, then !  
In this I do not call your faith in question,  
So mainly as my merit : I cannot sing,  
Nor heel the high lavolt, nor sweeten talk,  
Nor play at subtle games ; fair virtues all,  
To which the Grecians are most prompt and pregnant :  
But I can tell, that in each grace of these  
There lurks a still and dumb-discoursive devil  
That tempts most cunningly : but be not tempted.

*Cres.* Do you think I will ?

*Tro.* No.

But something may be done that we will not :  
And sometimes we are devils to ourselves,  
When we will tempt the frailty of our powers,  
Presuming on their changeful potency.

*Æne.* [*within*] Nay, good my lord,—

*Tro.* Come, kiss; and let us part.

*Par.* [*within*] Brother Troilus!

*Tro.* Good brother, come you hither;  
And bring Æneas and the Grecian with you.

*Cres.* My lord, will you be true?

*Tro.* Who, I? alas, it is my vice, my fault:  
Whiles others fish with craft for great opinion,  
I with great truth catch mere simplicity;  
Whilst some with cunning gild their copper crowns,  
With truth and plainness I do wear mine bare.  
Fear not my truth: the moral of my wit  
Is—plain and true; there's all the reach of it.

*Enter ÆNEAS, PARIS, ANTENOR, DEIPHOBUS, and DIOMEDES.*

Welcome, Sir Diomed! here is the lady  
Which for Antenor we deliver you:  
At the port, lord, I'll give her to thy hand;  
And by the way possess thee what she is.  
Entreat her fair; and, by my soul, fair Greek,  
If e'er thou stand at mercy of my sword,  
Name Cressid, and thy life shall be as safe  
As Priam is in Ilion.

*Dio.* Fair Lady Cressid,  
So please you, save the thanks this prince expects:  
The lustre in your eye, heaven in your cheek,  
Pleads your fair usage; and to Diomed  
You shall be mistress, and command him wholly.

*Tro.* Grecian, thou dost not use me courteously,  
To shame the zeal<sup>(59)</sup> of my petition to thee  
In praising her: I tell thee, lord of Greece,  
She is as far high-soaring o'er thy praises  
As thou unworthy to be call'd her servant.  
I charge thee use her well, even for my charge;  
For, by the dreadful Pluto, if thou dost not,  
Though the great bulk Achilles be thy guard,  
I'll cut thy throat.

*Dio.* O, be not mov'd, Prince Troilus:  
Let me be privileg'd by my place and message,

To be a speaker free; when I am hence,  
 I'll answer to my lust: and know you, lord,  
 I'll nothing do on charge: to her own worth  
 She shall be priz'd; but that you say, Be't so,  
 I'll speak it in my spirit and honour, No.

*Tho.* Come, to the port.—I'll tell thee, Diomed,  
 This brave shall oft make thee to hide thy head.—  
 Lady, give me your hand; and, as we walk,  
 To our own selves bend we our needful talk.

[*Exeunt Troilus, Cressida, and Diomedes.*

[*Trumpet within.*

*Par.* Hark! Hector's trumpet.

*Æne.* How have we spent this morning!  
 The prince must think me tardy and remiss,  
 That swore to ride before him to the field.

*Par.* 'Tis 'Troilus' fault: come, come, to field with him.

*Dei.*<sup>(60)</sup> Let us make ready straight.

*Æne.* Yea, with a bridegroom's fresh alacrity,  
 Let us address to tend on Hector's heels:  
 The glory of our Troy doth this day lie  
 On his fair worth and single chivalry.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE V. *The Grecian camp. Lists set out.*

*Enter AJAX, armed; AGAMEMNON, ACHILLES, PATROCLUS, MENE-  
 LAUS, ULYSSES, NESTOR, and others.*

*Agam.* Here art thou in appointment fresh and fair,  
 Anticipating time<sup>(61)</sup> with starting courage.  
 Give with thy trumpet a loud note to Troy,  
 Thou dreadful Ajax; that the appallèd air  
 May pierce the head of the great combatant,  
 And hale him hither.

*Ajax.* Thou, trumpet, there's my purse.  
 Now crack thy lungs, and split thy brazen pipe:  
 Blow, villain, till thy spherèd bias check  
 Outswell the colic of puff'd Aquilon:  
 Come, stretch thy chest, and let thy eyes spout blood;  
 Thou blow'st for Hector.

[*Trumpet sounds.*

*Ulyss.* No trumpet answers.

*Achil.* 'Tis but early days.

*Agam.* Is not yond Diomed, with Calchas' daughter?

*Ulyss.* 'Tis he, I ken the manner of his gait;  
He rises on the toe: that spirit of his  
In aspiration lifts him from the earth.

*Enter DIOMEDES, with CRESSIDA*

*Agam.* Is this the Lady Cressid?

*Dio.* Even she.

*Agam.* Most dearly welcome to the Greeks, sweet lady.

*Nest.* Our general doth salute you with a kiss.

*Ulyss.* Yet is the kindness but particular;  
'Twere better she were kiss'd in general.

*Nest.* And very courtly counsel: I'll begin,—  
So much for Nestor.

*Achil.* I'll take that winter from your lips, fair lady:  
Achilles bids you welcome.

*Men.* I had good argument for kissing once.

*Patr.* But that's no argument for kissing now;  
For thus popp'd Paris in his hardiment,  
And parted thus you and your argument.

*Ulyss.* O deadly gall, and theme of all our scorns!  
For which we lose our heads to gild his horns.

*Patr.* The first was Menelaus' kiss;—this, mine:  
Patroclus kisses you.

*Men.* O, this is trim!

*Patr.* Paris and I kiss evermore for him.

*Men.* I'll have my kiss, sir.—Lady, by your leave.

*Cres.* In kissing, do you render or receive?

*Patr.* Both take and give.

*Cres.* I'll make my match to live,  
The kiss you take is better than you give;  
Therefore no kiss.

*Men.* I'll give you boot, I'll give you three for one.

*Cres.* You're an odd man; give even, or give none.

*Men.* An odd man, lady! every man is odd.

*Cres.* No, Paris is not; for, you know, 'tis true,  
That you are odd, and he is even with you.

*Men.* You fillip me o' the head.

*Cres.* No, I'll be sworn.

*Ulyss.* It were no match, your nail against his horn.—  
May I, sweet lady, beg a kiss of you?

*Cres.* You may.

*Ulyss.* I do desire it.

*Cres.* Why, beg, then.<sup>(62)</sup>

*Ulyss.* Why, then, for Venus' sake, give me a kiss,  
When Helen is a maid again, and his.

*Cres.* I am your debtor, claim it when 'tis due.

*Ulyss.* Never's my day, and then a kiss of you.

*Dio.* Lady, a word:—I'll bring you to your father.

[*Exit with Cressida.*]

*Nest.* A woman of quick sense.

*Ulyss.* Fie, fie upon her!

There's language in her eye, her cheek, her lip,  
Nay, her foot speaks; her wanton spirits look out  
At every joint and motive of her body.  
O, these encounterers, so glib of tongue,  
That give a coasting<sup>(63)</sup> welcome ere it comes,  
And wide unclasp the tables of their thoughts  
To every ticklish reader! set them down  
For sluttish spoils of opportunity,  
And daughters of the game. [*Trumpet within.*]

*All.* The Trojans' trumpet.

*Agam.* Yonder comes the troop.

*Enter* HECTOR, *armed*; ÆNEAS, TROILUS, and other Trojans,  
with Attendants.

*Æne.* Hail, all you state of Greece! what shall be done  
To him that victory commands? or do you purpose  
A victor shall be known? will you, the knights  
Shall to the edge of all extremity  
Pursue each other; or shall be divided  
By any voice or order of the field?  
Hector bade ask.

*Agam.* Which way would Hector have it?

*Æne.* He cares not; he'll obey conditions.

*Achil.*<sup>(64)</sup> 'Tis done like Hector; but securely done,

A little proudly, and great deal misprizing  
The knight oppos'd.

*Æne.* If not Achilles, sir,

What is your name?

*Achil.* If not Achilles, nothing.

*Æne.* Therefore Achilles: but, whate'er, know this:—

In the extremity of great and little,  
Valour and pride excel themselves in Hector,  
The one almost as infinite as all,  
The other blank as nothing. Weigh him well,  
And that which looks like pride is courtesy.  
This Ajax is half made of Hector's blood:  
In love whereof, half Hector stays at home;  
Half heart, half hand, half Hector comes to seek  
This blended knight, half Trojan and half Greek.

*Achil.* A maiden battle, then?—O, I perceive you.

*Re-enter DIOMEDES.*

*Agam.* Here is Sir Diomed.—Go, gentle knight,  
Stand by our Ajax: as you and Lord Æneas  
Consent upon the order of their fight,  
So be it; either to the uttermost,  
Or else a breath: the combatants being kin  
Half stints their strife before their strokes begin.

*[Ajax and Hector enter the lists.]*

*Ulyss.* They are oppos'd already.

*Agam.* What Trojan is that same that looks so heavy?

*Ulyss.* The youngest son of Priam, a true knight;  
Not yet mature, yet matchless: firm of word;  
Speaking in deeds, and deedless in his tongue;  
Not soon provok'd, nor being provok'd soon calm'd:  
His heart and hand both open and both free;  
For what he has he gives, what thinks he shows;  
Yet gives he not till judgment guide his bounty,  
Nor dignifies an impure<sup>(65)</sup> thought with breath:  
Manly as Hector, but more dangerous;  
For Hector, in his blaze of wrath, subscribes  
To tender objects; but he, in heat of action,  
Is more vindicative than jealous love:

They call him Troilus; and on him erect  
 A second hope, as fairly built as Hector.  
 Thus says Æneas; one that knows the youth  
 Even to his inches, and, with private soul,  
 Did in great Ilion thus translate him to me.

[*Alarum. Hector and Ajax fight.*

*Agam.* They are in action.

*Nest.* Now, Ajax, hold thine own!

*Tro.* Hector, thou sleep'st;

Awake thee!

*Agam.* His blows are well dispos'd:—there, Ajax!

*Dio.* You must no more. [*Trumpets cease.*

*Æne.* Princes, enough, so please you.

*Ajax.* I am not warm yet; let us fight again.

*Dio.* As Hector pleases.

*Hect.* Why, then will I no more:—

Thou art, great lord, my father's sister's son,  
 A cousin-german to great Priam's seed;  
 The obligation of our blood forbids  
 A gory emulation 'twixt us twain:  
 Were thy commixtion Greek and Trojan so,  
 That thou couldst say, "This hand is Grecian all,  
 And this is Trojan; the sinews of this leg  
 All Greek, and this all Troy, my mother's blood  
 Runs on the dexter cheek, and this sinister  
 Bounds in my father's;" by Jove multipotent,  
 Thou shouldst not bear from me a Greekish member  
 Wherein my sword had not impressure made  
 Of our rank feud: but the just gods gainsay  
 That any drop thou borrow'dst from thy mother,  
 My sacred aunt, should by my mortal sword  
 Be drain'd! Let me embrace thee, Ajax:  
 By him that thunders, thou hast lusty arms;  
 Hector would have them fall upon him thus:  
 Cousin, all honour to thee!

*Ajax.* I thank thee, Hector:

Thou art too gentle and too free a man:  
 I came to kill thee, cousin, and bear hence  
 A great addition earn'd in thy death.



*Hect.* Not Neoptolemus so mirable  
(On whose bright crest Fame with her loud'st Oyes  
Cries, "This is he") could promise to himself  
A thought of added honour torn from Hector.

*Æne.* There is expectance here from both the sides,  
What further you will do.

*Hect.* We'll answer it;  
The issue is embracement:—Ajax, farewell.

*Ajax.* If I might in entreaties find success  
(As sold I have the chance,) I would desire  
My famous cousin to our Grecian tents.

*Di.* 'Tis Agamemnon's wish; and great Achilles  
Doth long to see unarm'd the valiant Hector.

*Hect.* Æneas, call my brother Troilus to me;  
And signify this loving interview  
To the expecters of our Trojan part;  
Desire them home.—Give me thy hand, my cousin;  
I will go eat with thee, and see your knights.

*Ajax.* Great Agamemnon comes to meet us here.

*Hect.* The worthiest of them tell me name by name;  
But for Achilles, mine own searching eyes  
Shall find him by his large and portly size.

*Agam.* Worthy of arms! as welcome as to one  
That would be rid of such an enemy;  
But that's no welcome: understand more clear,  
What's past and what's to come is strew'd with husks  
And formless ruin of oblivion;  
But in this extant moment, faith and troth,  
Strain'd purely from all hollow bias-drawing,  
Bids thee, with most divine integrity,  
From heart of very heart, great Hector, welcome.

*Hect.* I thank thee, most imperious Agamemnon.

*Agam.* My well-fam'd lord of Troy, no less to you.

[To Troilus.]

*Men.* Let me confirm my princely brother's greeting;—  
You brace of warlike brothers, welcome hither.

*Hect.* Who must we answer?

*Æne.* The noble Menelaus.

*Hect.* O, you, my lord? by Mars his gauntlet, thanks!

Mock not, that I affect the untraded oath;  
Your *quondam* wife swears still by Venus' glove:  
She's well, but bade me not commend her to you.

*Men.* Name her not now, sir; she's a deadly theme.

*Hect.* O, pardon; I offend.

*Nest.* I have, thou gallant Trojan, seen thee oft,  
Labouring for destiny, make cruel way  
Through ranks of Greekish youth; and I have seen thee,  
As hot as Persens, spur thy Phrygian steed,  
Despising many forfeits and subduements,  
When thou hast hung thy advanced sword i' the air,  
Not letting it decline on the declin'd,  
That I have said to some my standers-by,  
"Lo, Jupiter is yonder, dealing life!"  
And I have seen thee pause, and take thy breath,  
When that a ring of Greeks have hemm'd thee in,  
Like an Olympian wrestling: this have I seen;  
But this thy countenance, still lock'd in steel,  
I never saw till now. I knew thy grandsire,  
And once fought with him: he was a soldier good;  
But, by great Mars, the captain of us all,  
Never like thee. Let an old man embrace thee;  
And, worthy warrior, welcome to our tents.

*Ens.* 'Tis the old Nestor.

*Hect.* Let me embrace thee, good old chronicle,  
That hast so long walk'd hand in hand with time:—  
Most reverend Nestor, I am glad to clasp thee.

*Nest.* I would my arms could match thee in contention,  
As they contend with thee in courtesy.

*Hect.* I would they could.

*Nest.* Ha!

By this white beard, I'd fight with thee to-morrow:—  
Well, welcome, welcome!—I have seen the time.

*Ulyss.* I wonder now how yonder city stands  
When we have here her base and pillar by us.

*Hect.* I know your favour, Lord Ulysses, well.  
Ah, sir, there's many a Greek and Trojan dead,  
Since first I saw yourself and Diomed  
In Ilion, on your Greekish embassy.

*Ulyss.* Sir, I foretold you then what would ensue :  
 My prophecy is but half his journey yet ;  
 For yonder walls, that portly front your town,  
 Yond towers, whose wanton tops do buss the clouds,  
 Must kiss their own feet.

*Hect.* I must not believe you :  
 There they stand yet ; and modestly I think,  
 The fall of every Phrygian stone will cost  
 A drop of Grecian blood : the end crowns all ;  
 And that old common arbitrator, time,  
 Will one day end it.

*Ulyss.* So to him we leave it.  
 Most gentle and most valiant Hector, welcome :  
 After the general, I beseech you next  
 To feast with me, and see me at my tent.

*Achil.* I shall forestall thee, Lord Ulysses, thou !—  
 Now, Hector, I have fed mine eyes on thee ;  
 I have with exact view perus'd thee, Hector,  
 And quoted joint by joint.

*Hect.* Is this Achilles ?

*Achil.* I am Achilles.

*Hect.* Stand fair, I pray thee : let me look on thee.

*Achil.* Behold thy fill.

*Hect.* Nay, I have done already.

*Achil.* Thou art too brief : I will the second time,  
 As I would buy thee, view thee limb by limb.

*Hect.* O, like a book of sport thou'lt read me o'er ;  
 But there's more in me than thou understand'st.  
 Why dost thou so oppress me with thine eye ?

*Achil.* Tell me, you heavens, in which part of his body  
 Shall I destroy him ? whether there, or there, or there ?  
 That I may give the local wound a name,  
 And make distinct the very breach whereout  
 Hector's great spirit flew : answer me, heavens !

*Hect.* It would discredit the bless'd gods, proud man,  
 To answer such a question : stand again :  
 Thinkst thou to catch my life so pleasantly,  
 As to prenominate in nice conjecture  
 Where thou wilt hit me dead ?

*Achil.* I tell thee, yea.

*Hect.* Wert thou an oracle to tell me so,  
I'd not believe thee. Henceforth guard thee well;  
For I'll not kill thee there, nor there, nor there;  
But, by the forge that stithied Mars his helm,  
I'll kill thee every where, yea, o'er and o'er.—  
You wisest Grecians, pardon me this brag,  
His insolence draws folly from my lips;  
But I'll endeavour deeds to match these words,  
Or may I never,—

*Ajax.* Do not chafe thee, cousin:—  
And you, Achilles, let these threats alone,  
Till accident or purpose bring you to't:  
You may have every day enough of Hector,  
If you have stomach; the general state, I fear,  
Can scarce entreat you to be odd with him.

*Hect.* I pray you, let us see you in the field:  
We have had pelting wars, since you refus'd  
The Grecians' cause.

*Achil.* Dost thou entreat me, Hector?  
To-morrow do I meet thee, fell as death;  
To-night all friends.

*Hect.* Thy hand upon that match.

*Agam.* First, all you peers of Greece, go to my tent;  
There in the full convive we: afterwards,  
As Hector's leisure and your bounties shall  
Concur together, severally entreat him.—  
Beat loud the tabourines, let the trumpets blow,  
That this great soldier may his welcome know.

[*Exeunt all except Troilus and Ulysses.*]

*Tro.* My Lord Ulysses, tell me, I beseech you,  
In what place of the field doth Calchas keep?

*Ulyss.* At Menelaus' tent, most princely Troilus:  
There Diomed doth feast with him to-night;  
Who neither looks upon the heaven nor earth,  
But gives all gaze and bent of amorous view  
On the fair Cressid.

*Tro.* Shall I, sweet lord, be bound to you so much,

After we part from Agamemnon's tent,  
To bring me thither?

*Ulyss.* You shall command me, sir.  
As gentle tell me, of what honour was  
This Cressida in 'Troy? Had she no lover there  
That wails her absence?

*Tro.* O, sir, to such as boasting show their scars,  
A mock is due. Will you walk on, my lord?  
She was lov'd, she lov'd; she is, and doth:  
But, still, sweet love is food for fortune's tooth. [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT V.

SCENE I. *The Grecian camp. Before ACHILLES' tent.*

*Enter ACHILLES and PATROCLUS.*

*Achil.* I'll heat his blood with Greekish wine to-night,  
Which with my scimitar I'll cool to-morrow.—  
Patroclus, let us feast him to the height.

*Patr.* Here comes Thersites.

*Enter THERSITES.*

*Achil.* How now, thou core of envy!  
Thou crusty batch of nature, what's the news?

*Ther.* Why, thou picture of what thou seemest, and idol  
of idiot-worshippers, here's a letter for thee.

*Achil.* From whence, fragment?

*Ther.* Why, thou full dish of fool, from Troy.

*Patr.* Who keeps the tent now?

*Ther.* The surgeon's box, or the patient's wound.

*Patr.* Well said, adversity! and what need these tricks?

*Ther.* Prithee, be silent, boy; I profit not by thy talk:  
thou art thought to be Achilles' male varlet.

*Patr.* Male varlet, you rogue! what's that?

*Ther.* Why, his masculine whore. Now, the rotten dis-

eases of the south, the guts-griping, ruptures, catarrhs, loads o' gravel i' the back, lethargies, cold palsies, raw eyes, dirt-rotten livers, wheezing lungs, bladders full of imposthume, sciaticas, limekilns i' the palm, incurable bone-ache, and the rivelled fec-simple of the tetter, take and take again such preposterous discoveries!

*Patr.* Why, thou damnable box of envy, thou, what meanest thou to curse thus?

*Ther.* Do I curse thee?

*Patr.* Why, no, you ruinous butt; you whoreson indistinguishable cur, no.

*Ther.* No! why art thou, then, exasperate, thou idle immaterial skein of sleeve-silk, thou green sarcenet flap for a sore eye, thou tassel of a prodigal's purse, thou? Ah, how the poor world is pestered with such waterflies,—diminutives of nature!

*Patr.* Out, gall!

*Ther.* Finch-egg!

*Achil.* My sweet Patroclus, I am thwarted quite  
From my great purpose in to-morrow's battle.  
Here is a letter from Queen Hecuba;  
A token from her daughter, my fair love;  
Both taxing me and gaging me to keep  
An oath that I have sworn. I will not break it:  
Fall Greeks; fail fame; honour or go or stay;  
My major vow lies here, this I'll obey.—  
Come, come, Thersites, help to trim my tent;  
This night in banquetting must all be spent.—  
Away, Patroclus! [*Exeunt Achilles and Patroclus.*]

*Ther.* With too much blood and too little brain, these two may run mad; but, if with too much brain and too little blood they do, I'll be a curer of madmen. Here's Agamemnon,—an honest fellow enough, and one that loves quails; but he has not so much brain as ear-wax: and the goodly transformation of Jupiter there, his brother, the bull,—the primitive statue, and oblique memorial of cuckolds; a thrifty shoeing-horn in a chain, hanging at his brother's leg,—to what form, but that he is, should wit larded with malice, and malice forced with wit, turn him to? To an ass, were no-

thing; he is both ass and ox: to an ox, were nothing; he is both ox and ass. To be a dog, a mule, a cat, a fitchew, a toad, a lizard, an owl, a puttock, or a herring without a roe, I would not care; but to be Menelaus,—I would conspire against destiny. Ask me not what I would be, if I were not Thersites; for I care not to be the louse of a leazar, so I were not Menelaus.—Hoy-day! spirits and fires!

*Enter* HECTOR, TROILUS, AJAX, AGAMEMNON, ULYSSES, NESTOR, MENELAUS, *and* DIOMEDES, *with lights.*

*Agam.* We go wrong, we go wrong.

*Ajax.*

No, yonder 'tis;

There, where we see the lights.

*Hect.*

I trouble you.

*Ajax.* No, not a whit.

*Ulyss.*

Here comes himself to guide you.

*Re-enter* ACHILLES.

*Achil.* Welcome, brave Hector; welcome, princes all.

*Agam.* So now, fair Prince of Troy, I bid good night.

Ajax commands the guard to tend on you.

*Hect.* Thanks and good night to the Greeks' general.

*Men.* Good night, my lord.

*Hect.*

Good night, sweet Lord Menelaus.

*Ther.* Sweet draught: sweet, quoth 'a! sweet sink, sweet sewer.

*Achil.* Good night and welcome, both at once, to those That go or tarry.

*Agam.* Good night. [*Exeunt Agamemnon and Menelaus.*]

*Achil.* Old Nestor tarries; and you too, Diomed, Keep Hector company an hour or two.

*Dio.* I cannot, lord; I have important business, The tide whereof is now.—Good night, great Hector.

*Hect.* Give me your hand.

*Ulyss.* Follow his torch; he goes to Culehas' tent:

I'll keep you company. [*Aside to Troilus.*]

*Tro.*

Sweet sir, you honour me.

*Hect.* And so, good night.

[*Exit Diomedes; Ulysses and Troilus following.*]

*Achil.*

Come, come, enter my tent.

[*Exeunt Achilles, Hector, Ajax, and Nestor.*]

*Ther.* That same Diomed's a false-hearted rogue, a most unjust knave; I will no more trust him when he leers, than I will a serpent when he hisses: he will spend his mouth, and promise, like Brabblers the hound; but when he performs, astronomers foretell it; it is prodigious, there will come some change; the sun borrows of the moon, when Diomed keeps his word. I will rather leave to see Hector, than not to dog him: they say he keeps a Trojan drab, and uses the traitor Calchas' tent: I'll after.—Nothing but lechery! all incontinent varlets! [*Exit.*]

SCENE II. *The same. Before CALCHAS' tent.*

*Enter DIOMEDES.*

*Dio.* What, are you up here, ho? speak.

*Cal.* [*within*] Who calls?

*Dio.* Diomed.—Calchas, I think. Where's your daughter?

*Cal.* [*within*] She comes to you.

*Enter TROILUS and ULYSSES, at a distance, after them, THERSITES.*

*Ulyss.* Stand where the torch may not discover us.

*Enter CRESSIDA.*

*Tro.* Cressid comes forth to him.

*Dio.* How now, my charge!

*Cres.* Now, my sweet guardian!—Hark, a word with you. [*Whispers.*]

*Tro.* Yea, so familiar!

*Ulyss.* She will sing any man at first sight.

*Ther.* And any man may sing her, if he can take her cliff; she's noted.

*Dio.* Will you remember?

*Cres.* Remember! yes.

*Dio.* Nay, but do, then;

And let your mind be coupled with your words.

*Tro.* What should she remember?



*Ulyss.* List.

*Cres.* Sweet honey Greek, tempt me no more to folly.

*Ther.* Roguery!

*Dio.* Nay, then,—

*Cres.* I'll tell you what,—

*Dio.* Foh, foh! come, tell a pin: you are forsworn.

*Cres.* In faith, I cannot: what would you have me do?

*Ther.* A juggling trick,—to be secretly open.

*Dio.* What did you swear you would bestow on me?

*Cres.* I prithee, do not hold me to mine oath;

Bid me do any thing but that, sweet Greek.

*Dio.* Good night.

*Tro.* Hold, patience!

*Ulyss.* How now, 'Trojan!

*Cres.* Diomed,—

*Dio.* No, no, good night: I'll be your fool no more.

*Tro.* Thy better must.

*Cres.* Hark, one word in your ear.

*Tro.* O plague and madness!

*Ulyss.* You are mov'd, prince; let us depart, I pray you,  
Lest your displeasure should enlarge itself  
To wrathful terms: this place is dangerous;  
The time right deadly; I beseech you, go.

*Tro.* Behold, I pray you!

*Ulyss.* Nay, good my lord, go off:

*You flow to great distraction; come, my lord.*

*Tro.* I pray thee, stay.

*Ulyss.* You have not patience; come.

*Tro.* I pray you, stay; by hell and all hell's torments,  
I will not speak a word.

*Dio.* And so, good night.

*Cres.* Nay, but you part in anger.

*Tro.* Doth that grieve thee?

O wither'd truth!

*Ulyss.* Why, how now, lord!

*Tro.* By Jove,

I will be patient.

*Cres.* Guardian!—why, Greek!

*Dio.* Foh, foh! adieu; you palter.

*Cres.* In faith, I do not: come hither once again.

*Ulyss.* You shake, my lord, at something: will you go?  
You will break out.

*Tro.* She strokes his cheek!

*Ulyss.* Come, come.

*Tho.* Nay, stay; by Jove, I will not speak a word:  
There is between my will and all offences  
A guard of patience:—stay a little while.

*Ther.* How the devil luxury, with his fat rump and  
potato-finger, tickles these together! Fry, lechery, fry!

*Dio.* But will you, then?

*Cres.* In faith, I will, la; never trust me else.

*Dio.* Give me some token for the surety of it.

*Cres.* I'll fetch you one. [Exit.

*Ulyss.* You have sworn patience.

*Tro.* Fear me not, sweet lord;  
I will not be myself, nor have cognition  
Of what I feel: I am all patience.

*Re-enter CRESSIDA.*

*Ther.* Now the pledge; now, now, now!

*Cres.* Here, Diomed, keep this sleeve.

*Tro.* O beauty! where is thy faith?

*Ulyss.* My lord,—

*Tro.* I will be patient; outwardly I will.

*Cres.* You look upon that sleeve; behold it well.—

He lov'd me—O false wench!—Give't me again.

*Dio.* Whose was't?

*Cres.* It is no matter, now I have't again.

I will not meet with you to-morrow night:

I prithee, Diomed, visit me no more.

*Ther.* Now she sharpens:—well said, whetstone!

*Dio.* I shall have it.

*Cres.* What, this?

*Dio.* Ay, that.

*Cres.* O, all you gods!—O pretty, pretty pledge!  
Thy master now lies thinking in his bed  
Of thee and me; and sighs, and takes my glove,  
And gives memorial dainty kisses to it,

As I kiss thee.—Nay, do not snatch it from me; (<sup>60</sup>)  
He that takes that doth take my heart withal.

*Dio.* I had your heart before, this follows it.

*Tho.* I did swear patience.

*Cres.* You shall not have it, Diomed; faith, you shall not;  
I'll give you something else.

*Dio.* I will have this: whose was it?

*Cres.* It is no matter.

*Dio.* Come, tell me whose it was.

*Cres.* 'Twas one's that lov'd me better than you will.

But, now you have it, take it.

*Dio.* Whose was it?

*Cres.* By all Diana's waiting-women yond,  
And by herself, I will not tell you whose.

*Dio.* To-morrow will I wear it on my helm;  
And grieve his spirit that dares not challenge it.

*Tho.* Wert thou the devil, and wor'st it on thy horn,  
It should be challeng'd.

*Cres.* Well, well, 'tis done, 'tis past,—and yet it is not;  
I will not keep my word.

*Dio.* Why, then, farewell;  
Thou never shalt mock Diomed again.

*Cres.* You shall not go:—one cannot speak a word,  
But it straight starts you.

*Dio.* I do not like this fooling.

*Ther.* Nor I, by Pluto: but that that likes not you  
pleases me best.

*Dio.* What, shall I come? the hour?

*Cres.* Ay, come.—O Jove!—do come:—I shall be plagu'd.

*Dio.* Farewell till then.

*Cres.* Good night: I prithee, come.

[*Exit Diomedes.*]

Troilus, farewell! one eye yet looks on thee;

But with my heart the other eye doth see.

Ah, poor our sex! this fault in us I find,

The error of our eye directs our mind:

What error leads must err; O, then conclude

Minds sway'd by eyes are full of turpitude. [*Exit.*]

*Ther.* A proof of strength she could not publish more,

Unless she said, My mind is now turn'd whore.

*Ulyss.* All's done, my lord.

*Tro.* It is.

*Ulyss.* Why stay we, then?

*Tro.* To make a recordation to my soul

Of every syllable that here was spoke.

But if I tell how these two did co-act,

Shall I not lie in publishing a truth?

Sith yet there is a credence in my heart,

An esperance so obstinately strong,

That doth invert the attest of eyes and ears;

As if those organs had deceptions functions,

Created only to calumniate.

Was Cressid here?

*Ulyss.* I cannot conjure, Trojan.

*Tro.* She was not, sure.

*Ulyss.* Most sure she was.

*Tro.* Why, my negation hath no taste of madness.

*Ulyss.* Nor mine, my lord: Cressid was here but now.

*Tro.* Let it not be believ'd for womanhood!

Think, we had mothers; do not give advantage

To stubborn critics,—apt, without a theme,

For depravation,—to square the general sex

By Cressid's rule: rather think this not Cressid.

*Ulyss.* What hath she done, prince, that can soil our  
mothers?

*Tro.* Nothing at all, unless that this were she.

*Ther.* Will he swagger himself out on's own eyes?

*Tro.* Thus she? no, this is Diomed's Cressida:

If beauty have a soul, this is not she;

If souls guide vows, if vows be sanctimonies,

If sanctimony be the gods' delight,

If there be rule in unity itself,

This is not she. O madness of discourse,

That cause sets up with and against itself!

Bi-fold authority! where reason can revolt

Without perdition, and loss assume all reason

Without revolt: this is, and is not, Cressid!

Within my soul there doth conduce a fight

Of this strange nature, that a thing inseparate  
 Divides more wider than the sky and earth;  
 And yet the spacious breadth of this division  
 Admits no orifex for a point, as subtle  
 As Ariadne's<sup>(67)</sup> broken woof, to enter.  
 Instance, O instance! strong as Pluto's gates;  
 Cressid is mine, tied with the bonds of heaven:  
 Instance, O instance! strong as heaven itself;  
 The bonds of heaven are slipp'd, dissolv'd, and loos'd;  
 And with another knot, five-finger-tied,  
 The fractions of her faith, orts of her love,  
 The fragments, scraps, the bits, and greasy relics  
 Of her o'er-eaten faith, are bound to Diomed.

*Ulyss.* May worthy Troilus be half attach'd<sup>(68)</sup>  
 With that which here his passion doth express?

*Tro.* Ay, Greek; and that shall be divulgèd well  
 In characters as red as Mars his heart  
 Inflamm'd with Venus: never did young man fancy  
 With so eternal and so fix'd a soul.  
 Hark, Greek:—as much as I do Cressid love,<sup>(69)</sup>  
 So much by weight hate I her Diomed:  
 That sleeve is mine that he'll bear on his helm;  
 Were it a casque compos'd by Vulcan's skill,  
 My sword should bite it: not the dreadful spout,  
 Which shipmen do the hurricano call,  
 Constring'd in mass by the almighty sun,  
 Shall dizzy with more clamour Neptune's ear  
 In his descent, than shall my prompted sword  
 Falling on Diomed.

*Ther.* He'll tickle it for his concupy.

*Tro.* O Cressid! O false Cressid! false, false, false!  
 Let all untruths stand by thy stain'd name,  
 And they'll seem glorious.

*Ulyss.* O, contain yourself;  
 Your passion draws ears hither.

*Enter AENEAS.*

*Aene.* I have been seeking you this hour, my lord:  
 Hector, by this, is arming him in Troy;

Ajax, your guard, stays to conduct you home.

*Tro.* Have with you, prince.—My courteous lord, adieu.—  
Farewell, revolted fair!—and, Diomed,  
Stand fast, and wear a castle on thy head!

*Ulyss.* I'll bring you to the gates.

*Tro.* Accept distracted thanks.

[*Exeunt Troilus, Aeneas, and Ulysses.*]

*Ther.* Would I could meet that rogue Diomed! I would  
croak like a raven; I would bode, I would bode. Patroclus  
will give me any thing for the intelligence of this whore: the  
parrot will not do more for an almond than he for a commo-  
dious drab. Lechery, lechery; still, wars and lechery; no-  
thing else holds fashion: a burning devil take them! [*Exit.*]

SCENE III. *Troy. Before PRIAM's palace.*

*Enter HECTOR and ANDROMACHE*

*And.* When was my lord so much ungently temper'd,  
To stop his ears against admonishment?  
Unarm, unarm, and do not fight to-day.

*Hect.* You train me to offend you; get you in:  
By all the everlasting gods, I'll go!

*And.* My dreams will, sure, prove ominous to the day.<sup>(70)</sup>

*Hect.* No more, I say.

*Enter CASSANDRA.*

*Cas.* Where is my brother Hector?

*And.* Here, sister; arm'd, and bloody in intent.  
Consort with me in loud and dear petition,  
Pursue we him on knees; for I have dream'd  
Of bloody turbulence, and this whole night  
Hath nothing been but shapes and forms of slaughter.

*Cas.* O, 'tis true.

*Hect.* Ho! bid my trumpet sound!

*Cas.* No notes of sally, for the heavens, sweet brother.

*Hect.* Be gone, I say: the gods have heard me swear.

*Cas.* The gods are deaf to hot and peevish vows:  
They are polluted offerings, more abhor'd  
Than spotted livers in the sacrifice.

*And.* O, be persuaded! do not count it holy  
To hurt by being just: it is as lawful,<sup>(71)</sup>  
For we would give much, to use violent thefts,  
And rob in the behalf of charity.

*Cas.* It is the purpose that makes strong the vow;  
But vows to every purpose must not hold:  
Unarm, sweet Hector.

*Hect.* Hold you still, I say;  
Mine honour keeps the weather of my fate:  
Life every man holds dear; but the dear man  
Holds honour far more precious-dear than life.

*Enter TROILUS.*

How now, young man! mean'st thou to fight to-day?

*And.* Cassandra, call my father to persuade.

*[Exit Cassandra.]*

*Hect.* No, faith, young Troilus; doff thy harness, youth;  
I am to-day i' the vein of chivalry:  
Let grow thy sinews till their knots be strong,  
And tempt not yet the brushes of the war.  
Unarm thee, go; and doubt thou not, brave boy,  
I'll stand to-day for thee, and me, and Troy.

*Tro.* Brother, you have a vice of mercy in you,  
Which better fits a lion than a man.

*Hect.* What vice is that, good Troilus? chide me for it.

*Tro.* When many times the captive Grecian falls,<sup>(72)</sup>  
Even in the fan and wind of your fair sword,  
You bid them rise, and live.

*Hect.* O, 'tis fair play.

*Tro.* Fool's play, by heaven, Hector.

*Hect.* How now! how now!

*Tro.* For the love of all the gods,  
Let's leave the hermit pity with our mothers;  
And when we have our armours buckled on,  
The venom'd vengeance ride upon our swords;  
Spur them to ruthless work, rein them from ruth.

*Hect.* Fie, savage, fie!

*Tro.* Hector, then 'tis wars.

*Hect.* Troilus, I would not have you fight to-day.

*Tro.* Who should withhold me?  
 Not fate, obedience, nor the hand of Mars  
 Beckoning with fiery truncheon my retire;  
 Not Priamus and Hecuba on knees,  
 Their eyes o'ergall'd with recourse of tears;  
 Nor you, my brother, with your true sword drawn,  
 Oppos'd to hinder me, should stop my way,  
 But by my ruin.

*Re-enter CASSANDRA, with PRIAM*

*Cas.* Lay hold upon him, Priam, hold him fast:  
 He is thy crutch; now if thou lose thy stay,  
 Thou on him leaning, and all Troy on thee,  
 Fall all together.

*Pri.* Come, Hector, come, go back:  
 Thy wife hath dream'd; thy mother hath had visions;  
 Cassandra doth foresee; and I myself  
 Am like a prophet suddenly enrapt,  
 To tell thee that this day is ominous:  
 Therefore, come back.

*Hect.* Æneas is a-field;  
 And I do stand engag'd to many Greeks,  
 Even in the faith of valour, to appear  
 This morning to them.

*Pri.* Ay, but thou shalt not go.

*Hect.* I must not break my faith.  
 You know me dutiful; therefore, dear sir,  
 Let me not shame respect; but give me leave  
 To take that course by your consent and voice,  
 Which you do here forbid me, royal Priam.

*Cas.* O Priam, yield not to him!

*And.* Do not, dear father.

*Hect.* Andromache, I am offended with you:  
 Upon the love you bear me, get you in. [*Exit Andromache.*]

*Tro.* This foolish, dreaming, superstitious girl  
 Makes all these bodements.

*Cas.* O, farewell, dear Hector!  
 Look, how thou diest! look, how thy eye turns pale!  
 Look, how thy wounds do bleed at many vents!



Hark, how Troy roars! how Hecuba cries out!  
 How poor Andromache shrills her dolours forth!  
 Behold, distraction, frenzy, and amazement,  
 Like witless antics, one another meet,  
 And all cry, Hector! Hector's dead! O Hector!

*Tro.* Away! away!

*Cas.* Farewell:—yet, soft!—Hector, I take my leave:  
 Thou dost thyself and all our Troy deceive. [Exit.]

*Hect.* You are amaz'd, my liege, at her exclaim:  
 Go in, and cheer the town: we'll forth, and fight;  
 Do deeds worth praise, and tell you them at night.

*Pri.* Farewell: the gods with safety stand about thee!

[*Exeunt severally Priam and Hector.* Alarums.]

*Tro.* They are at it, hark!—Proud Diomed, believe,  
 I come to lose my arm, or win my sleeve.

*As TROILUS is going out, enter from the other side PANDARUS.*

*Pan.* Do you hear, my lord? do you hear?

*Tro.* What now?

*Pan.* Here's a letter come from yond poor girl.

*Tro.* Let me read.

*Pan.* A whoreson tisick, a whoreson rascally tisick so troubles me, and the foolish fortune of this girl; and what one thing, what another, that I shall leave you one o' th's days: and I have a rheum in mine eyes too; and such an ache in my bones, that, unless a man were cursed, I cannot tell what to think on't.—What says she there?

*Tro.* Words, words, mere words, no matter from the heart;

The effect doth operate another way.— [Tearing the letter.]

Go, wind, to wind, there turn and change together.—

My love with words and errors still she feeds;

But edifies another with her deeds. [Exeunt severally.]

#### SCENE IV. Plains between Troy and the Grecian camp.

*Alarums excursions. Enter 'THERSITES.*

*Ther.* Now they are clapper-clawing one another; I'll go look on. That dissembling abominable varlet, Diomed, has

got that same scurvy doting foolish young knave's sleeve of Troy there in his helm: I would fain see them meet; that that same young Trojan ass, that loves the whore there, might send that Greekish whoremasterly villain, with the sleeve, back to the dissembling luxurious drab, of a sleeveless errand. O' the t'other side, the policy of those crafty swearing rascals,—that stale old mouse-eaten dry cheese, Nestor, and that same dog-fox, Ulysses,—is not proved worth a blackberry:—they set me up, in policy, that mongrel cur, Ajax, against that dog of as bad a kind, Achilles: and now is the cur Ajax prouder than the cur Achilles, and will not arm to-day; whereupon the Grecians begin<sup>(73)</sup> to proclaim barbarism, and policy grows into an ill opinion.—Soft! here comes sleeve, and t'other.

*Enter DIOMEDES, TROILUS following*

*Tro.* Fly not; for shouldst thou take the river Styx,  
I would swim after.

*Dio.* Thou dost miscall retire:  
I do not fly; but advantageous care  
Withdrew me from the odds of multitude:  
Have at thee!

*Ther.* Hold thy whore, Grecian!—now for thy whore,  
Trojan!—now the sleeve, now the sleeve!

*[Exeunt Troilus and Diomedes, fighting.]*

*Enter HECTOR*

*Hect.* What art thou, Greek? art thou for Hector's  
match?  
Art thou of blood and honour?

*Ther.* No, no,—I am a rascal; a scurvy railing knave; a  
very filthy rogue.

*Hect.* I do believe thee;—live. *[Exit.]*

*Ther.* God-a-merey, that thou wilt believe me; but a  
plague break thy neck for frightening me!—What's become of  
the wenching rogues? I think they have swallowed one ano-  
ther: I would laugh at that miracle:—yet, in a sort, lechery  
eats itself. I'll seek them. *[Exit.]*

SCENE V. *Another part of the plains.**Enter DIOMEDES and a Servant.*

*Dio.* Go, go, my servant, take thou 'Troilus' horse ;  
Present the fair steed to my lady Cressid :  
Fellow, commend my service to her beauty ;  
Tell her I have chastis'd the amorous 'Trojan,  
And am her knight by proof.

*Serv.* I go, my lord. *[Exit.*

*Enter AGAMEMNON.*

*Agam.* Renew, renew ! The fierce Polydamas  
Hath beat down Menon : bastard Margarelon  
Hath Doreus prisoner,  
And stands colossus-wise, waving his beam,  
Upon the pash'd corpses of the kings  
Epistrophus and Cediüs : Polyxenes is slain ;  
Amphimachus and Thoas deadly hurt ;  
Patroclus ta'en or slain ; and Palamedes  
Sore hurt and bruised : the dreadful Sagittary  
Appals our numbers :—haste we, Diomed,  
To reinforcement, or we perish all.

*Enter NESTOR.*

*Nest.* Go, bear Patroclus' body to Achilles ;  
And bid the snail-paced Ajax arm for shame.—  
There is a thousand Hectors in the field :  
Now here he fights on Galathö his horse,  
And there lacks work ; anon he's there afoot,  
And there they fly or die, like scal'd sculls  
Before the belching whale ; then is he yonder,  
And there the strawy Greeks, ripe for his edge,  
Fall down before him, like the mower's swath :  
Here, there, and every where, he leaves and takes ;  
Dexterity so obeying appetite,  
That what he will he does ; and does so much,  
That proof is call'd impossibility.

*Enter ULYSSES.*

*Ulyss.* O, courage, courage, princes! great Achilles  
Is arming, weeping, cursing, vowing vengeance:  
Patroclus' wounds have rous'd his drowsy blood,  
Together with his mangled Myrmidons,  
That noseless, handless, hack'd and chipp'd, come to him,  
Crying on Hector. Ajax hath lost a friend,  
And foams at mouth, and he is am'd, and at it,  
Roaring for Troilus; who hath done to-day  
Mad and fantastic execution;  
Engaging and redeeming of himself,  
With such a careless force and forceless care,  
As if that luck, in very spite of cunning,  
Bade him win all.

*Enter AJAX.*

*Ajax.* Troilus! thou coward Troilus! [Exit.

*Dio.* Ay, there, there.

*Nest.* So, so, we draw together.

*Enter ACHILLES.*

*Achil.* Where is this Hector?—  
Come, come, thou boy-queller, show thy face;  
Know what it is to meet Achilles angry:—  
Hector! where's Hector? I will none but Hector. [Exeunt.

---

SCENE VI. *Another part of the plains.*

*Enter AJAX.*

*Ajax.* Troilus, thou coward Troilus, show thy head!

*Enter DIOMEDES.*

*Dio.* Troilus, I say! where's Troilus?

*Ajax.* What wouldst thou?

*Dio.* I would correct him.

*Ajax.* Were I the general, thou shouldst have my office  
Ere that correction.—Troilus, I say! what, Troilus!

*Enter TROILUS*

*Tro.* O traitor Diomed!—turn thy false face, thou traitor,  
And pay thy life thou ow'st me for my horse!

*Dio.* Ha, art thou there?

*Ajax.* I'll fight with him alone: stand, Diomed.

*Dio.* He is my prize; I will not look upon.

*Tro.* Come, both you coggng Greeks; have at you both!  
[*Exeunt, fighting.*

*Enter HECTOR.*

*Hect.* Yea, Troilus? O, well fought, my youngest brother!

*Enter ACHILLES.*

*Achil.* Now do I see thee, ha!—have at thee, Hector!

*Hect.* Pause, if thou wilt.

*Achil.* I do disdain thy courtesy, proud Trojan:  
Be happy that my arms are out of use:  
My rest and negligence befriends thee now,  
But thou anon shalt hear of me again;  
Till when, go seek thy fortune.

[*Exit.*

*Hect.* Fare thee well:—

I would have been much more a fresher man,  
Had I expected thee.—How now, my brother!

*Re-enter TROILUS.*

*Tro.* Ajax hath ta'en Æneas; shall it be?  
No, by the flame of yonder glorious heaven,  
He shall not carry him; I'll be ta'en too,  
Or bring him off:—fate, hear me what I say!  
I reckon not though I end my life to-day.

[*Exit.*

*Enter one in sumptuous armour.*

*Hect.* Stand, stand, thou Greek; thou art a goodly mark:—

No? wilt thou not?—I like thy armour well;  
I'll frush it, and unlock the rivets all,  
But I'll be master of it:—wilt thou not, beast, abide?  
Why, then fly on, I'll hunt thee for thy hide.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE VII. *Another part of the plains.**Enter* ACHILLES, *with* Myrmidons.

*Achl.* Come here about me, you my Myrmidons;  
Mark what I say. Attend me where I wheel:  
Strike not a stroke, but keep yourselves in breath:  
And when I have the bloody Hector found,  
Empale him with your weapons round about;  
In fellest manner execute your aims.  
Follow me, sirs, and my proceedings eye:—  
It is decreed Hector the great must die. [*Exeunt.*

*Enter* MENELAUS *and* PARIS, *fighting.* *then* THIERSITES.

*Ther.* The cuckold and the cuckold-maker are at it.  
—Now, bull! now, dog! 'Loo, Paris, 'loo! now my double-  
henned sparrow! 'loo, Paris, 'loo!—The bull has the game:—  
ware horns, ho! [*Exeunt* Paris *and* Menelaus.

*Enter* MARGARELON.*Mar.* Turn, slave, and fight.*Ther.* What art thou?*Mar.* A bastard son of Priam's.

*Ther.* I am a bastard too; I love bastards: I am a bastard begot, bastard instructed, bastard in mind, bastard in valour, in every thing illegitimate. One bear will not bite another, and wherefore should one bastard? Take heed, the quarrel's most ominous to us: if the son of a whore fight for a whore, he tempts judgment: farewell, bastard. [*Exit.*

*Mar.* The devil take thee, coward! [*Exit.*SCENE VIII. *Another part of the plains.**Enter* HECTOR.

*Hect.* Most putrefied core, so fair without,  
Thy goodly armour thus hath cost thy life.  
Now is my day's work done; I'll take good breath:  
Rest, sword; thou hast thy fill of blood and death.

[*Puts off his helmet and hangs his shield behind him.*

*Enter* **ACHILLES** *and* **Myrmidons**.

*Achil.* Look, Hector, how the sun begins to set;  
How ugly night comes breathing at his heels:  
Even with the vail and darkening of the sun,  
To close the day up, Hector's life is done.

*Hect.* I am unarm'd; forego this vantage, Greek.

*Achil.* Strike, fellows, strike; this is the man I seek.

[*Hector falls.*]

So, Ilium, fall thou next! now, Troy, sink down!  
Here lies thy heart, thy sinews, and thy bone.—  
On, Myrmidons; and cry you all amain,  
"Achilles hath the mighty Hector slain."— [*A retreat sounded.*  
Hark! a retire upon our Grecian part.

*Myr.* The Trojan trumpets sound the like, my lord.

*Achil.* The dragon wing of night o'erspreads the earth,  
And, stickler-like, the armies separates.

My half-suppl'd sword, that frankly would have fed,  
Pleas'd with this dainty bait,<sup>(74)</sup> thus goes to bed.

[*Sheathes his sword.*]

Come, tie his body to my horse's tail;

Along the field I will the Trojan trail.

[*Exeunt.*]

— — —

#### SCENE IX. *Another part of the plains.*

*Enter* **AGAMEMNON**, **AJAX**, **MENELAUS**, **NESTOR**, **DIOMEDES**, *and*  
*others, marching. Shouts within.*

*Agam.* Hark! hark! what shout is that?

*Nest.* Peace, drums!

[*Within.*] Achilles! Achilles! Hector's slain! Achilles!

*Dio.* The bruit is, Hector's slain, and by Achilles.

*Ajax.* If it be so, yet bragless let it be;

Great Hector was a man as good as he.

*Agam.* March patiently along;—let one be sent

To pray Achilles see us at our tent.—

If in his death the gods have us befriended,

Great Troy is ours, and our sharp wars are ended.

[*Exeunt, marching.*]

SCENE X. *Another part of the plains.**Enter ÆNEAS and Trojans.*

*Æne.* Stand, ho! yet are we masters of the field;  
Never go home; here starve we out the night.

*Enter TROILUS.*

*Tro.* Hector is slain.

*All.* Hector!—the gods forbid!

*Tro.* He's dead; and at the murderer's horse's tail,  
In beastly sort, dragg'd through the shameful field.—  
Frown on, you heavens, effect your rage with speed!  
Sit, gods, upon your thrones, and smile<sup>(75)</sup> at 'Troy!  
I say, at once let your brief plagues be mercy,  
And linger not our sure destructions on!

*Æne.* My lord, you do discomfort all the host.

*Tro.* You understand me not that tell me so:  
I do not speak of flight, of fear, of death;  
But dare all imminence that gods and men  
Address their dangers in. Hector is gone:  
Who shall tell Priam so, or Hecuba?  
Let him that will a screech-owl eye be call'd,  
Go in to Troy, and say there, Hector's dead:  
There is a word will Priam turn to stone;  
Make wells and Niobes of the maids and wives,  
Cold statues of the youth; and, in a word,  
Scare Troy out of itself. But, march away:  
Hector is dead; there is no more to say.  
Stay yet.—You vile abominable tents,  
Thus proudly pight upon our Phrygian plains,  
Let Titan rise as early as he dare,  
I'll through and through you!—and, thou great-siz'd coward,  
No space of earth shall sunder our two hates:  
I'll haunt thee like a wicked conscience still,  
That mouldeth goblins swift as frenzy's thoughts.—  
Strike a free march to Troy!—with comfort go:  
Hope of revenge shall hide our inward woe.

*[Exeunt Æneas and Trojans.]*



*As TROILUS is going out, enter, from the other side, PANDARUS.*

*Pan.* But hear you, hear you!

*Tro.* Hence, broker-lackey! ignomy and shame  
Pursue thy life, and live aye with thy name! *[Exit.*

*Pan.* A goodly medicine for my aching bones!—  
O world! world! world! thus is the poor agent despised! O  
traitors and bawds, how earnestly are you set a-work, and  
how ill requited! why should our endeavour be so loved,  
and the performance so loathed? what verse for it? what  
instance for it?—Let me see:—

Full merrily the humble-bee doth sing,  
Till he hath lost his honey and his sting;  
And being once subdu'd in arm'd tail,  
Sweet honey and sweet notes together fail.—

Good traders in the flesh, set this in your painted cloths.

As many as be here of pander's hall,  
Your eyes, half out, weep out at Pandar's fall;  
Or if you cannot weep, yet give some groans,  
Though not for me, yet for your aching bones. .  
Brethren and sisters of the hold-door trade,  
Some two months hence my will shall here be made:  
It should be now, but that my fear is this,—  
Some gall'd goose of Winchester would hiss:  
Till then I'll sweat, and seek about for eases;  
And at that time bequeath you my diseases. *[Exit.*

P. 537. (1) "*Dardan, and Tymbria, Helias, Chetas, Troien,  
And Antenorides,*" &c.

I leave these names as they stand in the folio (this Prologue is not in the 4to),—except that I have substituted "*Antenorides*" for "*Antenoridus*,"—and even that alteration is doubtful—According to Dares Phrygius, cap. 4, "*Iho portas fecit [Priamus], quarum nomina hæc sunt, Antenoridae, Dardaniae, Iliae, Scææ, Thymbrae, Trojanæ [or Antenoria, Dardania, Iliæ, Scææ, Thymbrae, Trojanæ];*" and Theobald made the names in the present passage agree with that list. But Shakespeare, we may be sure, did not consult Dares Phrygius.—Caxton, in his prose *Recuyell of the histories of Troye*, &c., under the heading "How the kynges Priam reedified the cyto of troye," writes thus, "In this Cyte were sixe pynceipall gates, of whome that one was named *dardane*, the seconde *tymbria*, the thirde *helyas*, the fourthe *cheias*, the fifthe *troyenne*, and the sixthe *antenorides*." ed. 1471 (which has neither paging nor signatures). Lydgate, in his poem entitled *The hystorye, Sege and dystyceyon of Troye*, says;

"The fiste of all and strengest eke withall

Was by the kyng called *Dardanydes*;  
And in storye lyke as it is founde,  
*Tymbria* was named the seconde;  
And the thirde called *Helias*;  
The fourthe gate hyghte also *Cetheas*;  
The fyfte *Troiana*, the syxth *Anthonydes*," &c.

B. II. sig. F 1, ed. 1513.

In the last of these lines ed. 1555 reads,—

"— the syxth *Antinoydes*."

P. 537. (2) "*Sperr up the sons of Troy.*"

So Theobald.—The folio has "*Stirre up*," &c.

P. 539. (2) "*when she comes!—When is she thence?*"

Rowe's correction (made partly in his first, partly in his sec. ed.).—The old eds. have "*then she comes, when she is thence.*"

P. 539. (1) "*light a storm*," &c.

The old eds. have "*light a scome*," &c.

P. 543. (2) "*Hector shall not have his wit*," &c.

Rowe's correction.—The old eds. "*— his will*," &c.

P. 545. (6) "Here's but one and fifty," &c.

The old eds. have, both in the present and in the next speech of Pandarus, "*— two and fifty,*" &c.,—which Theobald altered as above, observing, "How else can the number make out Priam and his fifty sons?" and this rectification of an error, which probably arose from the Ms. having had the numbers in figures, was adopted by all subsequent editors till Mr. Knight and Mr. Collier brought back into the text the corrupted reading.—It is not to be doubted that Shakespeare knew the exact number of sons which from the earliest times had been assigned to Priam,—even supposing that the following passage was by another dramatist,

"Romans, of five-and-twenty valiant sons,  
Half of the number that King Priam had,  
Behold the poor remains, alive, and dead!"

*Titus Andronicus*, act i. sc. 2;—

and it is utterly improbable that here he would needlessly deviate from the Homeric tradition.—Mr. Knight, in defending "*two and fifty,*" remarks that "The Margerelon of the romance-writers, who makes his appearance in Act V., is one of the additions to the old classical family." But Margerelon is not to be considered as an *addition* to the family (which, in all consequence, was large enough already), the romance-writers merely bestowed that name on one of the fifty sons whom antiquity had left unnamed.

P. 548. (7) "Pan. *I'll be with you, niece, by and by.*  
Cres. *To bring, uncle.*  
Pan. *Ay, a token from Troilus*"

After "*To bring, uncle,*" the quarto has a colon; the folio, a full point,—and rightly.—When Pandarus says, "*I'll be with you, niece, by and by,*" Cressida catches at the words "*I'll be with you,*" and subjoins "*to bring,*"—just as Pandarus catches at "*to bring,*" and adds "*Ay, a token,*" &c. Of the expression, *to be with a person to bring*, I have given several examples in my *Remarks on Mr. Collier's and Mr. Knight's eds. of Shakespeare*, &c. p. 149

P. 549. (8) "*Achievement is command, ungain'd, beseech.*"

Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector substitutes "*Achiev'd men still command,*" &c. but if the text requires alteration (of which I have yet to be convinced), Mr. Hainnes's reading, "*Achiev'd men us command,*" &c., is far preferable.

P. 549. (9) "*behold our works,*" &c.

Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector gives, speciously enough, "*behold our wrecks,*" &c.

P. 550. (10) "*Retorts to chiding fortune.*"

The quarto has "*Retires to,*" &c.; the folio, "*Retyres to,*" &c.—Pope printed "*Returns to,*" &c.; Hammer "*Replies to,*" &c.,—which is the reading of Mr.

Collier's Ms. Corrector.—In my *Few Notes*, &c. p. 107, I queried "Did not Shakespeare write '*Retorts* to chiding fortune?'" On which Mr. Grant White remarks, "Unquestionably, in my judgment. . . . 'Returns' is tame and mengre as applied to 'the thing of courage, roused with rage,' especially after the vigorous preceding lines. About four years ago it occurred to me that *retorts* was the only word in the language, which would at once worthily fill the place and correct with probability the typographical error," &c. *Shakespeare's Scholar*, &c. p. 352. (Afterwards in this play, p. 589, we find,—

"and they *retort* that heat again  
To the first giver.")

P. 551. (11) "his *mastiff jaws*."

The folio has "*his Masticka iawes*."—Thus speech is not in the quarto

P. 551. (12) "*Amidst the other*."

Mr. Singer (*Shakespeare Vindicated*, &c. p. 192) would read "*Amidst the ether*" but, as Mr. Grant White observes, "It is not Sol's place in the *ether*, but his supremacy '*amidst the other*' heavenly bodies, which Ulysses wishes to impress upon his hearers" *Shakespeare's Scholar*, &c. p. 354

P. 552. (13) "*The enterprize is sick*," &c.

Qy. (as Hamner printed) "*Then enterprise*," &c.?

P. 552. (14) "*The primogenitive and due of birth*," &c.

So the folio.—The quarto has "*The primogenitie and due*," &c.—Several editors have given "*The primogeniture and due*," &c.

P. 554. (15) "and bears his head  
*In such a rein, in full as proud a place*  
*As broad Achilles*," &c.

When Mr. Singer (*Shakespeare Vindicated*, &c. p. 193) proposed, as the right reading, "*in full as proud a pace*," &c., he was not aware that the same alteration had been made by Hamner.—See note (18).

P. 555. (16) "*That breath fame blows, that praise, sole pure, transcends*."

Here Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector (in his fondness for compound epithets,—see vol. ii. p. 78, note (18), and vol. iii. p. 265, note (12)) alters "*sole pure*" to "*soul-pure*,"—which seems to convey no meaning at all.

P. 558. (17) "*limbs are his instruments,*" &c

So the second folio.—The first folio has "*limbs are in his,*" &c.—This is not in the quarto

P. 558. (18) "*Ulyss. Give pardon to my speech,—  
Therefore 'tis meet Achilles meet not Hector.  
Let us, like merchants, show our fondest wares,  
And think, perchance, they'll sell; if not,  
The lustre of the better shall exceed,  
By showing the worse first. Do not consent,*" &c.

In the fourth line something seems to be wanting.—The passage stands thus in the quarto;

"*Ulyss Give pardon to my speech? therefore tis meete,  
Achilles meete not Hector, let vs like Marchants  
First shew foule wares, and thinke perchance thede sell;  
If not, the luster of the better shall exceed,  
By shewing the worse first do not consent,*" &c.

In the folio thus;

"*Ulys. Give pardon to my speech:  
Therefore 'tis meet, Achilles meet not Hector.  
Let vs (like Merchants) shew our fondest Wares,  
And thinke perchance they'l sell: If not,  
The luster of the better yet to shew,  
Shall shew the better. Do not consent,*" &c.

P. 559. (19)

"*Nest. Now, Ulysses, I begin to relish thy advice,*" &c.

Steevens reads,—

"*Nest Ulysses,  
Now I begin to relish thy advice,*" &c.

P. 560. (20) "*thou vinewedst leaven,*" &c.

The quarto has "*thou vnsalted leauen,*" &c; the folio, "*you whind't leauen,*" &c.

P. 562 (21) "*ere your grandsires,*" &c.

The old eds have "*ere their grandsires,*" &c

P. 563 (22) "*when Achilles' bruch,*" &c.

Rowe's correction —The old eds. have "*when Achilles brooch,*" &c.

P. 563. (23) "*That Hector, by the fifth hour of the sun,*" &c.

So the folio.—The quarto has "*by the first houre,*" &c.: but, as Mr Collier

observes, it would seem by what Thersites says afterwards (p. 594),—"If to-morrow be a fair day, by eleven o'clock it will go one way or other,"—that "*fifth* hour" is right.

P. 565. <sup>(21)</sup>

"whose youth and freshness  
Wrinkles Apollo's, and makes stale the morning."

So the folio.—The quarto has "— and makes pale the morning." but the reading of the folio (though Mr. Collier declares that it "cannot be right") seems preferable, "*stale*" is more properly opposed to "freshness" than "pale." Compare,—

"Pallas for all her panting than,  
Her face would seeme but pale,  
Then Juno would haue blisht for shame,  
And Venus looked *stale*."

Lyly's *Maydes Metamorphosis*, 1600, sig. D 2.

"Fair Iris would haue lookt but *stale* and dimme  
In her best colours, had she there appear'd."

Wither's *Epithalamia*, sig. D 2, ed. 1620.

P. 566. <sup>(22)</sup>

"*wrinkled old*," &c.

So the folio.—The quarto has "*wrinkled elders*," &c. (Mr. Collier adopts Ritson's reading, "*wrinkled eld*," &c.)

P. 569 <sup>(23)</sup>

"*which short-armed ignorance*," &c.

Here the old eds. have "*short-armed*" and "*short-arm'd*."—The correction, "*short-aimed*," was made in my *Remarks on Mr. Collier's and Mr. Knight's eds. of Shakespeare*, &c. p. 152. Compare our author's *Coriolanus*, act i. sc. 2;

"By the discovery  
We shall be *shorten'd* in our aim."

P. 571. <sup>(24)</sup>

"*He sent our messengers*," &c.

The quarto has "*He sate our messengers*," &c.; the folio, "*He sent our messengers*," &c.—I adopt the emendation of Theobald: the word "*sent*" is several times used by our author; and Stevens, *ad l.*, has aptly cited from the romance of *The Sowdon of Babylogne*, "All messengers he doth *shende*" moreover, if the reading of the quarto, "*He sate our messengers*," &c. be, as I suspect it is, a mistake for "*He rates our messengers*," &c., Theobald's alteration of the folio's "*sent*" to "*shent*" is still further strengthened.—Mr. Collier (at the suggestion of a friend) gave in his ed. of *Shakespeare*, "*We sent our messengers*," &c.; and so reads his MS. Corrector. But, "*We sent our messengers*,"—a simple declaration that Agamemnon had sent messengers to Achilles, without any mention of the treatment which those messengers had received from the latter,—by no means suits with what immediately follows in the sentence. The objection which Mr. Collier brings against Theobald's emen-

dation, viz. that "Achilles had not rebuked any messengers" (meaning, I presume, that the said rebuking is not previously mentioned in the play), forms really no objection at all; for neither is there previously the slightest hint of messengers having been sent by Agamemnon to Achilles; yet from the present passage (whichever reading be adopted) it is clear that they had been sent, and, as we are expressly told (act i. sc. 3) that Achilles used to take pleasure in seeing Patroclus "pageant" Agamemnon, we surely may suppose that he would treat his messengers with any thing but respect.

P. 572. (28) "*His pettish limes, his ebbs, his flows, as if,*" &c.

The folio has "*His pettish limes, hrs,*" &c.; the quarto, "*His course, and lime, his ebbs and flows, as if,*" &c.

P. 575. (29) "*He's not yet though warm.*"

Both the quarto and the folio give these words to *Ajia*.

P. 575. (30) "*Thrice-fam'd, beyond all erudition.*"

The quarto has "*Thrice fam'd beyond all thy crudition,*" the folio, "*Thrice fam'd beyond, beyond all erudition.*"

P. 576. (31) "*Nest! Ay, my good son.*"

The folio gives these words to *Ulysses*.—The quarto prefixes to them (and rightly, as the context shows) "*Nest*".—yet Mr. Knight says; "Because Nestor was an old man, THE MODERN EDITORS make him reply to the question of *Ajia*," &c.

P. 578. (32) "*And, my lord, he desires you,*" &c.

"Here I think the speech of Pandarus should begin, and the rest of it should be added to that of *Helen*; but I have followed the copies." JOHNSON.—The arrangement which suggested itself to Johnson had been previously made by Rowe.

P. 579. (33) "*You must not know where he sups.*"

Both the quarto and the folio assign these words to "*Helen*."

P. 579. (34) "*Par. I'll lay my life, with my disposer Cressida,*"

Steevens proposed giving this speech to *Helen*; and Mr. Singer (*Shakespeare Indicated*, &c. p. 195) says that "it undoubtedly belongs" to her. But does not the context show most distinctly that she is *not* the speaker? "It is observable that through the whole of the dialogue *Helen* steadily perseveres in soliciting Pandarus to sing,—'My lord Pandarus'—'Nay, but, my lord,'—&c. I do not therefore believe that Shakespeare intended she should join in the

present inquiry. Mr. M. Mason's objection also to such an arrangement is very weighty. 'Pandarus,' he observes, 'in his next speech but one clearly addresses *Paris*, and in that speech he calls Cressida his *disposer*.'" MALONE

P. 581. (27) "Troilus' Boy," &c

Here in the old eds. he is called "*Troilus Man*," but this is evidently the attendant whom they have previously (see p. 548) designated "*Troilus' Boy*."

P. 584. (28) "Cunning in dumbness," &c.

Popo's correction.—The old eds. have "Comming in," &c.

P. 586. (29) "let all constant men be Troiluses," &c

Mr. Grant White (*Shakespeare's Scholar*, &c. p. 356) says that here "certainly 'constant' should be 'inconstant' [Hammer's reading]"; but see the notes of Tyrwhitt, Malone, and Heath, *ad l.*

P. 586. (30)

"Whereupon I will show you a chamber and a bed; which bed," &c

The old eds. have only "*Whereupon I will shew you a Chamber, which bed,*" &c (This has been variously amended,—"*— a bed-chamber, which bed,*" &c; and "*— a chamber with a bed; which bed,*" &c.—Qy. "*— a chamber, whose bed,*" &c.?)

P. 586. (30) "*That, through the sight I bear in things to Jove,*  
*I have abandon'd Troy,*" &c.

A much-controverted passage:—in which it is doubtful whether the reading of the old eds. be "*to love*" or "*to Jove*." (Elsewhere in this play the word "*Jove*" occurs twelve times; in the quarto always in *Italic*,—in the folio three times in *Roman*, and nine times in *Italic*.)—According to Stevens, if we read "*to love*," and alter the punctuation thus,—

"*That, through the sight I bear in things, to love*  
*I have abandon'd Troy,*" &c.,—

the meaning may be, "No longer assisting Troy with my advice, I have left it to the dominion of love, to the consequences of the amour of Paris and Helen;" which, though ridiculous enough, is plausible when compared to Mr Knight's,—

"*That, through the sight I bear in things to love,*" &c.,—

i. e. "through my prescience in knowing what things I should love," &c.—Rowe printed,—

"*That, through the sight I bear in things to come,*" &c.,—

a violent alteration,—"*made*," as Johnson observes, "to obtain some meaning"—Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector gives,—



"*That, though the sight I bear in things above,*" &c.

(a reading which, before the Corrector's emendations were discovered, had been suggested by Mr. Collier himself in his note *ad l.*, and perhaps by others) —Johnson and Malone preferred,—

"*That, through the sight I bear in things, to fore  
I have abandon'd Tray,*" &c.,—

to which the strong objections are obvious.

P. 587. (10)

"*Why such unplausive eyes are bent, why turn'd on him.*"

"If the eyes were *bent* on him, they were *turn'd* on him. This tautology, therefore, together with the redundancy of the line, plainly show that we ought to read, with Sir Thomas Hanmer [Pope];

'*Why such unplausive eyes are bent on him.*'"

STEVENS.

P. 588. (11)

"*riches, and favour,*" &c.

The editor of the second folio omits "*and.*"

P. 589. (12)

"*and is mirror'd there,*" &c.

The certain emendation of both the Ms. Correctors,—Mr. Collier's and Mr. Singer's,—The old eds. have "*and is married there,*" &c.

P. 590. (13)

"*Nor doth he of himself know them for aught  
Till he behold them form'd in the applause  
Where they're extended; who, like an arch, reverberates  
The voice again; or, like a gate of steel  
Fronting the sun, receives and renders back  
His figure and his heat.*"

Both the quarto and the folio have,—

"*Where th'are* [the folio *they are*] *extended who like an arch  
reverberate  
The voice again,*" &c.,—

"i.e.," says Baswell, "They who applaud reverberate. This elliptic mode of expression is in our author's manner." But, if we retain "reverberate," we must also change "*receives and renders back*" to "*receive and render back*,"—I have merely (with the editor of the second folio) altered "reverberate" to "reverberates,"—understanding "*who*" as equivalent to *which*. Compare, in p. 592,

"*There is a mystery (with whom relation  
Durst never meddle),*" &c.,—

The modern reading is, "*which, like an arch, reverberates,*" &c.

P. 591. (11) "to the abject rear," &c.

Hammer's correction.—The folio has "*to the abject, nere,*" &c.—This simile is not in the quarto

P. 591. (48) "welcome ever," &c

The old eds. have "the welcome ever," &c

P. 591. (46) "And give to dust, that is a little gilt,  
More laud than gilt o'er-dusted.  
The present eye praises the present object," &c.

The old eds. have "And goe to dust," &c.: Pope made the correction.—Sydney Walker (*Shakespeare's Versification*, &c. p. 102) would print,—

"And give to dust, that is a little gilt,  
More laud than gold o'er-dusted. The present eye  
Praises the present object,"—

and his arrangement is perhaps the preferable one: but he is no doubt wrong in adopting Thulby's conjecture, "gold."—the repetition of word, as numerous passages prove, was affected by Shakespeare and his contemporaries.

P. 592. (12) "Knows almost every grain of Plutus' gold,  
Finds bottom," &c.

The quarto has only,

"Knowes almost every thing,  
Finds bottom," &c.

The folio has "— every graine of Plutoes gold," &c., as it again has in *Julius Cæsar*, act iv. sc. 3, "Dearer than *Pluto's* Mine," &c; and in both places "*Pluto's*" might stand, for even the ancients themselves frequently confounded Πλουτών, the god of the lower world, with Πλούτος, the god of riches. But since the folio has in *Timon of Athens*, act i. sc. 1, "*Plutus* the God of Gold," &c., and in *All's well that ends well*, act v. sc. 3,

"*Plutus* [a mistake for *Plutus*] himselfe,  
That knowes the tinct and multiplying medicine," &c.,—

the variation of the name in the present passage and in that of *Julius Cæsar* may perhaps be attributed, not to Shakespeare, but to transcribers or printers

P. 592. (13)  
"Keeps place with thought, and almost, like the gods,  
Does thoughts uncoil in their dumb ceadles."

Here "*place*" has been altered to "*paces*;" but questionably. (The same alteration has been proposed in *The Merry Wives of Windsor*, act ii. sc. 1, "do no more adhere and *keep place* together than," &c.; and in a previous passage of this play, p. 554, "in full as proud a *place*," &c.)—In the second line Pope printed "*Does even our thoughts*," &c.—Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector changes

"cradles" to "crudities,"—which, as Mr. W. N. Lettson observes, "is irreconcilable with *unveil* and *dumb*,"—Sydney Walker (*Shakespeare's Versification*, &c. p. 29) says, "My ear seems to dictate the arrangement,—

‘Keeps pace with thought,  
And almost, like the gods, does thoughts unveil  
In their dumb cradles.’”

P. 592. (49) “*Be shook to air,*  
Achil. *Shall Ajax fight with Hector?*”

So the quarto.—The folio has “*Be shook to ayrie aye*,”—which Mr. Knight deliberately adopts; “the quarto,” he says, “has *air*, without the Shakespearian superlative”!

P. 594. (50) “*Agamemnon.*”

After this word the folio has “&c.”,—which is not unusual in old plays printed from the prompter's book: it seems to mean that the actor of the part might, if he chose, “speak more than was set down for him.”

P. 596. (51) “*This is the most despiteful gent's greeting,*  
*The noblest hateful love,*” &c.

The folio has “*This is the most despiteful'st gentle,*” &c.—which Mr. Knight adopts, observing, “This is the common construction of the age of Shakespeare: the MODERN reading is *despiteful*.” Now, it is true enough that Shakespeare, like other early writers, frequently joins “*most*” with a superlative: but what Mr. Knight calls the *modern* reading happens to be that of the quarto,—and the better one, as the context shows.

P. 596. (52)  
“*Both merits pay'd, each weighs nor less nor more;*  
*But he as he, each heavier for a whore.*”

The quarto has,

“*Both merits payzd, each weighs nor lesse nor more,*  
*But he as he, the heavier for a whore.*”

The folio,

“*Both merits payz'd, each weighs no lesse nor more,*  
*But he as he, which heavier for a whore,*”—

where nothing can be plainer than that “*which*” is a mistake, either of the transcriber or printer, for “*each*.”

P. 597. (53) “*We'll not commend what we intend to sell.*”

“I believe the meaning is only this: ‘though you practise the buyer's art, we will not practise the seller's. We intend to sell Helen dear, yet will not com-

mend her." JOHNSON,—to whose note Malone, in further explanation, adds, "We'll not commend what we intend to make you *pay* very dear for, *if you have her*. So Ajax says, in a former scene, 'however, he shall pay for me ere he has me.'"—Warburton would read "*We'll not commend what we intend not sell;*" an alteration which forms a good antithesis to the preceding, "Dispraise the thing that you desire to buy," and which is favoured by a line in our author's 21st Sonnet,—

"I will not *praise*, that purpose *not* to *sell*"

P. 598. (61)

"*ah, poor capocchio!*"

The old eds have "*a poor clupochin*,"—"a" being put, as it frequently is, for "*ah*." (Several editors print "*capocchia*,"—but wrongly, if the term is to be considered as Italian, and as meaning *simpleton* (though an ed. of Barotti's *Ital. Dict.* is now before me, in which "*capocchio*" is given as an *adjective*). The word "*capocchia*" signifies *the knob of a stick*, and—something else.)—In the next speech, "*knock'd t' the head*" (the reading both of the quarto and the folio), has been altered to "*knock'd o' the head*," by editors who forgot that formerly *in* was often used for *on*.

P. 599. (63) "*Good, good, my lord; the secrets of nature  
Have not more gift in taciturnity.*"

So the folio.—The quarto has

"*Good, good, my lord, the secrets of neighbor Pandar  
Have not,*" &c.

The reading of the folio (though Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector and others have tampered with it) is doubtless right,—"*secrets*" being used here as a trisyllable: see *Shakespeare's Versification*, &c. p. 10, by Sydney Walker, who cites the following among other passages,—

"Whether thou wilt be *secret* in this."

Marlowe's *Edward II.*—*Works*, ii. 285, ed. Dyce.

"Tush, that's a *secret*, we cast all waters."

Middleton's *Fair Quarrel*,—*Works*, iii. 499, ed. Dyce.

"But you must swear to keep it *secret*."

Jonson's *Sylvanus*,—*Works*, iii. 134, ed. Gifford.

P. 601. (65)

"*Ah, sweet ducks!*"

So the quarto ("a [*i.e.* ah] *sweete ducks*").—The folio has "*a sweet ducke;*" and Mr. Knight and Mr. Collier adopt that reading. But the plural is right: Pandarus, seeing the lovers embrace (which, from his next speech, it is evident they do), calls them "*sweet ducks*,"—as, presently, he calls them "*jambes*."

P. 601. (67) "*Because thou canst not ease thy smart  
By friendship nor by speaking.*"

This, it must be confessed, reads oddly.—Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector substitutes "*By silence nor by speaking.*"

P. 603. (58)

*"The Grecian youths are full of quality;  
They're loving, well compos'd, with gifts of nature flowing,  
And swelling o'er with arts and exercise."*

The 4to has only;

*"The Grecian youths are full of quality,  
And swelling o'er with arts and exercise"*

The folio,

*"The Grecian youths are full of qualitie,  
Their loving well compos'd, with gifts of nature,  
Flowing and swelling o'er with Arts and exercise."*—

I give the passage as it is usually given.—Mr. Grant White (*Shakespeare's Scholar*, &c. p. 357) suggests that it ought to stand thus;

*"The Grecian youths are full of quality;  
They're loving, well compos'd with gifts of nature,  
Flowing and swelling o'er with arts and exercise."*—

Mr. Knight and Mr. Collier print;

*"Their loving well compos'd with gift of nature,  
Flowing and swelling o'er with arts and exercise."*

i.e., says Mr. Knight, "this love [—what love?] is well composed with the gift of nature, which gift (natural quality) is flowing," &c.—That the "Their" of the folio must here be understood as "*They're*," has never been doubted by any of the modern editors except Mr. Knight and Mr. Collier. (The quarto of this play has (see p. 580) "*Their* come from the field let vs to Priames Hall," &c.)

P. 604. (59)

*"To shame the zeal," &c.*

The old eds. have "*To shame the seals,*" &c.,—which is defended by Heath (who altogether misunderstands the passage); and is retained by Mr. Collier and Mr. Knight,—by the former, without any remark,—by the latter with a note which, to me at least, is unintelligible.

P. 605. (60)

"Dei"

Here the folio has the prefix "Dio,"—This is not in the quarto.

P. 605. (61)

*"Here art thou in appointment fiash and fair,  
Anticipating time with starting courage.  
Give with thy trumpet a loud note to Troy," &c.*

In the old eds. the passage stands thus;

"*Here art thou in appointment fresh and faire,  
Anticipating time. With startling courage,  
Give with thy Trumpet a loud note to Tey,*" &c.,—

and so it stands in the eds. of Mr. Knight and Mr. Collier,—the former observing on it. "Perhaps, all things considered, there never was a book so correctly printed as the first folio of Shakspeare. If it had been reprinted, with a literal attention to the *punctuation* even, up to the present hour, we should have a better copy than England possesses in a hundred shapes. WE HAVE AN INSTANCE BEFORE US." Several other instances exactly parallel of the *correct punctuation of the first folio* might be easily adduced. I shall only cite two;

"*Hot. Revolted Mortimer?  
He neuer did fall off, my Soueraigne Liege,  
But by the chance of Waite: to proue that true,  
Needs no more but one tongue. For all those Wounds,  
Those mouthed Wounds, which valiantly he tooke,*" &c.  
*First Part of Henry IV. act 1. sc. 3.*

"*Grif. This Cardnoll,  
Though from an humble Stocke, vndoubtedly  
Was fashion'd to much Honor From his Cradle  
He was a Scholler, and a ripe, and good one,*"  
*Henry VIII act 14. sc. 2.*

P. 607. <sup>(62)</sup> "Cres. *You may.*  
Ulyss. *I do desire it.*  
Cres. *Why, beg, then."*

"For the sake of rhyme," says Johnson, "we should read, 'Why, beg *too*.'"  
—A rhyme was surely intended: qy.—

"*Ulyss. I do desire't.*  
*Cres. Why, beg, then, do."*

P. 607. <sup>(63)</sup> "*That give a coasting welcome,*" &c.

Mason would read "*That give accosting welcome,*" &c.; and Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector substitutes "*That give occasion welcome,*" &c.—Let me observe, that this passage, with the reading "*a coasting welcome,*" is cited by the acutest of modern critics, Gifford, in a note on his translation of the VI. *Sat.* of Juvenal.

P. 607. <sup>(64)</sup> "*Achil,*"

The old eds. have "Aga."

P. 608. <sup>(65)</sup> "*No! dignifies an impure thought with breath*"

The quarto has "— an impare thought," &c.; the folio "— an impaire thought," &c.—On the strange mistake of Steevens, who, in support of the

reading of the old copies here, quotes from Chapman an example of the word "impair" as an *adjective*, when, in fact, that writer uses it as a *SUBSTANTIVE*,—see my *Remarks on Mr. Collier's and Mr. Knight's eds. of Shakespeare*, &c. p. 156. (Compare,—

"Nor suffer impure thoughts to staine his minde"

Lord Stirling's *Tragedie of Darius*, sig. G, ed. 1604.)

P. 620. (66) "Nay, do not snatch it from me."

In the old eds. this is given, by mistake, to "Dio."

P. 622. (67) "As Ariachne's," &c.

See notes *ad l.* in the *Vulior. Shakespeare*.

P. 622. (68) "May worthy Troilus be half attack'd," &c.

Sydney Walker would read "— be but half attack'd," &c., see *Shakespeare's Versification*, &c. p. 165.

P. 622. (69) "as much as I do Cressid love," &c.

The quarto has "as much I doe Cressid love," &c.; the folio, "as much I doe Cressida love," &c.; the second folio, "as much as I doe Cressida love," &c.

P. 623 (70)

"My dreams will, sure, prove ominous to the day."

Rowe (in his sec. ed.) printed "— ominous to-day."—For a defence of the old reading, see Malone's note: but qy.?

P. 624. (71) "And. O, be persuaded! do not count it holy  
To hurt by being just: it is as lawful,  
For we would give much, to use violent thefts,  
And rob in the behalf of charity," &c.

The last three lines are not in the quarto, "the compositor's eye," as Malone observes, "having probably passed over them; in consequence of which, the next speech of Cassandra is in that copy given to Andromache, and joined with the first line of this."—The folio has,—

"And. O be persuaded, doe not count it holy,  
To hurt by being iust; it is as lawfull;  
For we would count give much to as violent thefts,  
And rob in the behalfe of charitie."

In the third line I adopt the emendation of Tyrwhitt, who no doubt is right in saying that the word "count" crept in from the preceding line but one.

—The more recent attempts to mend the passage are not worth considering.—Mr. Knight and Mr. Collier, who give each a new alteration, object to the expression introduced by Tyrwhitt, "*use thefts*," calling it "clearly not Shakesperian" and "awkward." It certainly does not occur elsewhere in Shakespeare; but Middleton (no mean master of language) has,—

"Is it enough to *USE* adulterous *TREIFTS*," &c.

*Women beware Women*,—*Works*, iv. 621, ed. Dyce.

P. 624. (72) "*When many times the captive Grecian falls,*

*You bid them rise, and live*"

So both the quarto and the folio (so, too, the later folios)—The modern alteration is "*— the captive Grecians fall,*" &c. (Mr. Robson compares; "And God said, Let us make *man* in our image, after our likeness. and let *them* have dominion over the fish," &c. *Gen.* i. 26.)

P. 627. (73) "*the Grecians begin,*" &c.

The old eds. have "*the Grecians began,*" &c.

P. 632. (71)

*"My half-suppl'd sword, that frankly would have fed,  
Pleas'd with this dainty bait, thus goes to bed."*

So the quarto ("*bait*" meaning, of course, refreshment).—The folio has "*— this dainty bod,*" &c.; for which nonsense the editor of the second folio (who most probably never looked into the quarto) substituted "*— this dainty butt,*" &c.; the two later folios have "*— this dainty bit,*" &c.; and so the modern editors.

P. 633. (76) "*and smile at Troy!*" &c.

Here Hammer (with a change of punctuation) altered "*smile*" to "*smite*,"—quite erroneously, I think.





CORIOLOANUS.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

---

CAIUS MARCIUS CORIOLANUS, a noble Roman.

TITUS LARTIUS, }  
COMINIUS, } generals against the Volscians

MENENIUS AGRIPPA, friend to Coriolanus.

SICINIUS VELUTUS, }  
JUNIUS BRUTUS, } tribunes of the people.

YOUNG MARCIUS, son to Coriolanus.

A Roman Herald.

TULLUS AUFIDIUS, general of the Volscians.

Lieutenant to Aufidius.

Conspirators with Aufidius.

A Citizen of Antium.

Two Volscian Guards.

VOLUMNIA, mother to Coriolanus.

VIRGILIA, wife to Coriolanus.

VALENTIA, friend to Virgilia.

Gentlewoman attending on Virgilia.

Roman and Volscian Senators, Patricians, Ædiles, Lictors, Soldiers, Citizens,  
Messengers, Servants to Aufidius, and other Attendants.

SCENE—*Partly in Rome, and partly in the territories of the Volscians  
and Antiates.*

# CORIOLANUS.

---

## ACT I.

### SCENE I. *Rome. A street.*

*Enter a company of mutinous Citizens, with staves, clubs, and other weapons.*

*First Cit.* Before we proceed any further, hear me speak.

*Citizens.* Speak, speak.

*First Cit.* You are all resolved rather to die than to famish?

*Citizens.* Resolved, resolved.

*First Cit.* First, you know Caius Marcius is chief enemy to the people.

*Citizens.* We know't, we know't.

*First Cit.* Let us kill him, and we'll have corn at our own price. Is't a verdict?

*Citizens.* No more talking on't; let it be done: away, away!

*Sec. Cit.* One word, good citizens.

*First Cit.* We are accounted poor citizens; the patricians, good. What authority surfeits on would relieve us: if they would yield us but the superfluity, while it were wholesome, we might guess they relieved us humanely; but they think we are too dear: the leanness that afflicts us, the object of our misery, is as an inventory to particularize their abundance; our sufferance is a gain to them.—Let us revenge this with our pikes, ere we become rakes: for the gods know I speak this in hunger for bread, not in thirst for revenge.

*Sec. Cit.* Would you proceed especially against Caius Marcius?

*Citizens.*<sup>(1)</sup> Against him first: he's a very dog to the commonalty.

*Sec. Cit.* Consider you what services he has done for his country?

*First Cit.* Very well; and could be content to give him good report for't, but that he pays himself with being proud.

*Sec. Cit.*<sup>(2)</sup> Nay, but speak not maliciously.

*First Cit.* I say unto you, what he hath done famously, he did it to that end; though soft-conscienced men can be content to say it was for his country, he did it to please his mother, and to be partly proud; which he is, even to the altitude of his virtue.

*Sec. Cit.* What he cannot help in his nature, you account a vice in him. You must in no way say he is covetous.

*First Cit.* If I must not, I need not be barren of accusations; he hath faults, with surplus, to tire in repetition. [*Shouts within.*] What shouts are these? The other side o' the city is risen: why stay we prating here? to the Capitol!

*Citizens.* Come, come.

*First Cit.* Soft! who comes here?

*Sec. Cit.* Worthy Menenius Agrippa; one that hath always loved the people.

*First Cit.* He's one honest enough: would all the rest were so!

*Enter MENENIUS AGRIPPA.*

*Men.* What work's, my countrymen, in hand? where go you With bats and clubs? the matter? speak, I pray you.

*First Cit.* Our business<sup>(3)</sup> is not unknown to the senate; they have had inkling, this fortnight, what we intend to do, which now we'll show 'em in deeds. They say poor suitors have strong breaths: they shall know we have strong arms too.

*Men.* Why, masters, my good friends, mine honest neighbours,  
Will you undo yourselves?

*First Cit.* We cannot, sir, we are undone already.

*Men.* I tell you, friends, most charitable care  
Have the patricians of you. For your wants,  
Your suffering in this dearth, you may as well

Strike at the heaven with your staves as lift them  
Against the Roman state; whose course will on  
The way it takes, cracking ten thousand curbs  
Of more strong link asunder than can ever  
Appear in your impediment: for the dearth,  
The gods, not the patricians, make it; and  
Your knees to them, not arms, must help. Alack,  
You are transported by calamity  
Thither where more attends you; and you slander  
The helms o' the state, who care for you like fathers,  
When you curse them as enemies.

*First Cit.* Care for us! True, indeed! They ne'er cared  
for us yet:—suffer us to famish, and their store-houses cram-  
med with grain; make edicts for usury, to support usurers;  
repeal daily any wholesome act established against the rich;  
and provide more piercing statutes daily, to chain up and  
restrain the poor. If the wars eat us not up, they will; and  
there's all the love they bear us.

*Men.* Either you must  
Confess yourselves wondrous malicious,  
Or be accus'd of folly. I shall tell you  
A pretty tale: it may be you have heard it;  
But, since it serves my purpose, I will venture  
To stale 't<sup>(4)</sup> a little more.

*First Cit.* Well, I'll hear it, sir: yet you must not think  
to fob-off our disgrace with a tale: but, an't please you, de-  
liver.

*Men.* There was a time when all the body's members  
Rebell'd against the belly; thus accus'd it:—  
That only like a gulf it did remain  
I' the midst o' the body, idle and unactive,  
Still cupboarding the viand, never bearing  
Like labour with the rest; where the other instruments  
Did see and hear, devise, instruct, walk, feel,  
And, mutually participate, did minister  
Unto the appetite and affection common  
Of the whole body. The belly answer'd,—

*First Cit.* Well, sir, what answer made the belly?

*Men.* Sir, I shall tell you.—With a kind of smile,

Which ne'er came from the lungs, but even thus  
 (For, look you, I may make the belly smile  
 As well as speak,) it tauntingly<sup>(5)</sup> replied  
 To the discontented members, the mutinous parts  
 That envied his receipt; even so most fitly  
 As you malign our senators for that  
 They are not such as you.

*First Cit.* Your belly's answer? What!  
 The kingly-crownèd head,<sup>(6)</sup> the vigilant eye,  
 The counsellor heart, the arm our soldier,  
 Our steed the leg, the tongue our trumpeter,  
 With other muniments and petty helps  
 In this our fabric, if that they,—

*Men.* What then?—  
 'Fore me, this fellow speaks!—what then? what then?  
*First Cit.* Should by the cormorant belly be restrain'd,  
 Who is the sink o' the body,—

*Men.* Well, what then?  
*First Cit.* The former agents, if they did complain,  
 What could the belly answer?

*Men.* I will tell you;  
 If you'll bestow a small (of what you have little)  
 Patience awhile, you'll hear the belly's answer.

*First Cit.* You're long about it.

*Men.* Note me this, good friend;  
 Your most grave belly was deliberate,  
 Not rash like his accusers, and thus answer'd:  
 "True is it, my incorporate friends," quoth he,  
 "That I receive the general food at first,  
 Which you do live upon; and fit it is,  
 Because I am the store-house and the shop  
 Of the whole body: but, if you do remember,  
 I send it through the rivers of your blood,  
 Even to the court, the heart,—to the seat o' the brain;  
 And, through the cranks and offices of man,  
 The strongest nerves and small inferior veins  
 From me receive that natural competency  
 Whereby they live: and though that all at once,  
 You, my good friends,—this says the belly, mark me,—

*First Cit.* Ay, sir; well, well.

*Men.* "Though all at once cannot  
See what I do deliver out to each,  
Yet I can make my audit up, that all  
From me do back receive the flour of all,  
And leave me but the bran."—What say you to't?

*First Cit.* It was an answer: how apply you this?

*Men.* The senators of Rome are this good belly,  
And you the mutinous members: for, examine  
Their counsels and their cares; digest(?) things rightly  
Touching the weal o' the common; you shall find,  
No public benefit which you receive  
But it proceeds or comes from them to you,  
And no way from yourselves.—What do you think,—  
You, the great toe of this assembly?

*First Cit.* I the great toe! why the great toe?

*Men.* For that, being one o' the lowest, basest, poorest,  
Of this most wise rebellion, thou go'st foremost:  
Thou rascal, that art worst in blood to run,  
Lead'st first to win some vantage.—  
But make you ready your stiff bats and clubs:  
Rome and her rats are at the point of battle;  
The one side must have bale.

*Enter CAIUS MARCIUS.*

Hail, noble Marcius!

*Mar.* Thanks.—What's the matter, you dissentious  
rogues,

That, rubbing the poor itch of your opinion,  
Make yourselves scabs?

*First Cit.* We have ever your good word.

*Mar.* He that will give good words to ye<sup>(8)</sup> will flatter  
Beneath abhorring. What would you have, you curs,  
That like nor peace nor war? the one affrights you,  
The other makes you proud. He that trusts to you,  
Where he should find you lions, finds you hares;  
Where foxes, geese: you are no surer, no,  
Than is the coal of fire upon the ice,  
Or hailstone in the sun. Your virtue is,



'To make him worthy whose offence subdues him,  
And curse that justice did it. Who deserves greatness  
Deserves your hate; and your affections are  
A sick man's appetite, who desires most that  
Which would increase his evil. He that depends  
Upon your favours swims with fins of lead,  
And hews down oaks with rushes. Hang ye! Trust ye!  
With every minute you do change a mind;  
And call him noble that was now your hate,  
Him vile that was your garland. What's the matter,  
That in these several places of the city  
You cry against the noble senate, who,  
Under the gods, keep you in awe, which else  
Would feed on one another?—What's their seeking?

*Men.* For corn at their own rates; whereof, they say,  
The city is well stor'd.

*Mar.* Hang 'em! They say!  
They'll sit by the fire, and presume to know  
What's done i' the Capitol; who's like to rise,  
Who thrives, and who declines; side factions, and give out  
Conjectural marriages; making parties strong,  
And feebling such as stand not in their liking  
Below their cobbled shoes. They say there's grain enough!  
Would the nobility lay aside their ruth,  
And let me use my sword, I'd make a quarry  
With thousands of these quarter'd slaves, as high  
As I could pick my lance.

*Men.* Nay, these are almost<sup>(9)</sup> thoroughly persuaded;  
For though abundantly they lack discretion,  
Yet are they passing cowardly. But, I beseech you,  
What says the other troop?

*Mar.* They are dissolv'd: hang 'em!  
They said they were an-hungry; sigh'd forth proverbs,—  
That hunger broke stone walls, that dogs must eat,  
That meat was made for mouths, that the gods sent not  
Corn for the rich men only:—with these shreds  
They vented their complainings; which being answer'd,  
And a petition granted them, a strange one  
(To break the heart of generosity,

And make bold power look pale), they threw their caps  
As they would hang them on the horns o' the moon,  
Shouting<sup>(10)</sup> their emulation.

*Men.* What is granted them?

*Mar.* Five tribunes to defend their vulgar wisdoms,  
Of their own choice: one's Junius Brutus,  
Sicinius Velutus, and I know not—'Sdeath!  
The rabble should have first unroof'd<sup>(11)</sup> the city,  
Ere so prevail'd with me: it will in time  
Win upon power, and throw forth greater themes  
For insurrection's arguing.

*Men.* This is strange.

*Mar.* Go, get you home, you fragments!

*Enter a Messenger, hastily.*

*Mess.* Where's Caius Marcius?

*Mar.* Here: what's the matter?

*Mess.* The news is, sir, the Volsces are in arms.

*Mar.* I am glad on 't: then we shall ha' means to vent  
Our musty superfluity.—Sec, our best elders.

*Enter COMINIUS, TITUS LARTIUS, and other Senators; JUNIUS  
BRUTUS and SICINIUS VELUTUS.*

*First Sen.* Marcius, 'tis true that you have lately told us,—  
The Volsces are in arms.

*Mar.* They have a leader,  
Tullus Aufidius, that will put you to 't.  
I sin in envying his nobility;  
And were I any thing but what I am,  
I would wish me only he.

*Com.* You have fought together.

*Mar.* Were half to half the world by the ears, and he  
Upon my party, I'd revolt, to make  
Only my wars with him: he is a lion  
That I am proud to hunt.

*First Sen.* Then, worthy Marcius,  
Attend upon Cominius to these wars.

*Com.* It is your former promise.

*Mar.* Sir, it is;  
And I am constant.—Titus Lartius, thou

Shalt see me once more strike at Tullus' face.

What, art thou stiff? stand'st out?

*Tit.* No, Caius Marcius;

I'll lean upon one crutch, and fight with t'other,

Ere stay behind this business.

*Men.* O, true-bred!

*First Sen.* Your company to the Capitol; where, I know,  
Our greatest friends attend us.

*Tit.* Lead you on:—

Follow, Cominius; we must follow you;

Right worthy you priority.

*Com.* Noble Marcius! (13)

*First Sen.* Hence to your homes; be gone!

[To the Citizens.

*Mar.* Nay, let them follow:

The Volsees have much corn; take these rats thither

To gnaw their garners.—Worshipful mutineers, (13)

Your valour puts well forth: pray, follow.

[Exeunt Senators, Cominius, Marcius, Titus, and  
Menenius. Citizens steal away.

*Sic.* Was ever man so proud as is this Marcius?

*Bru.* He has no equal.

*Sic.* When we were chosen tribunes for the people,—

*Bru.* Mark'd you his lip and eyes?

*Sic.* Nay, but his taunts.

*Bru.* Being mov'd, he will not spare to gird the gods.

*Sic.* Be-mock the modest moon.

*Bru.* The present wars devour him: he is grown  
Too proud to be so valiant.

*Sic.* Such a nature,

Tickled with good success, disdains the shadow

Which he treads on at noon: but I do wonder

His insolence can brook to be commanded

Under Cominius.

*Bru.* Fame, at the which he aims,—

In whom already he's well grac'd,—can not

Better be held, nor more attain'd, than by

A place below the first: for what miseries

Shall be the general's fault, though he perform

To the utmost of a man ; and giddy censure  
Will then cry out of Marcius, "O, if he  
Had borne the business !"

*Sic.* Besides, if things go well,  
Opinion, that so sticks on Marcius, shall  
Of his demerits rob Cominius.

*Bru.* Come :  
Half all Cominius' honours are to Marcius,  
Though Marcius earn'd them not ; and all his faults  
To Marcius shall be honours, though, indeed,  
In aught he merit not.

*Sic.* Let's hence, and hear  
How the dispatch is made ; and in what fashion,  
More than his singularity, he goes  
Upon this present action.

*Bru.* Let's along. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II. *Corioli. The Senate-house.*

*Enter TULLUS AUFIDIUS and certain Senators.*

*First Sen.* So, your opinion is, Aufidius,  
That they of Rome are enter'd in our counsels,  
And know how we proceed.

*Auf.* Is it not yours ?  
What ever have been thought on in this state,  
That could be brought to bodily act ere Rome  
Had circumvention ? 'Tis not four days gone  
Since I heard thence ; these are the words : I think  
I have the letter here ; yes, here it is : [*Reads.*  
"They have press'd a power, but it is not known  
Whether for east or west : the dearth is great ;  
The people mutinous : and it is rumour'd,  
Cominius, Marcius your old enemy  
(Who is of Rome worse hated than of you),  
And Titus Lartius, a most valiant Roman,  
These three lead on this preparation  
Whither 'tis bent : most likely 'tis for you :  
Consider of it."

*First Sen.* Our army's in the field :  
We never yet made doubt but Rome was ready  
To answer us.

*Auf.* Nor did you think it folly  
To keep your great pretences veil'd till when  
They needs must show themselves ; which in the hatching,  
It seem'd, appear'd to Rome. By the discovery,  
We shall be shorten'd in our aim ; which was,  
'To take in many towns, ere, almost, Rome  
Should know we were afoot.

*Sec. Sen.* Noble Aufidius,  
Take your commission ; bid you to your bands :  
Let us alone to guard Corioli : (11)  
If they set down before 's, for the remove  
Bring up your army ; but, I think, you'll find  
They've not prepar'd for us.

*Auf.* O, doubt not that ;  
I speak from certainties. Nay, more,  
Some parcels of their power are forth already,  
And only hitherward. I leave your honours.  
If we and Caius Marcius chance to meet,  
'Tis sworn between us, we shall ever strike  
Till one can do no more.

*All.* The gods assist you !

*Auf.* And keep your honours safe !

*First Sen.* Farewell.

*Sec. Sen.*

Farewell.

*All.* Farewell.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE III. *Rome. A room in MARCIUS' house.*

*Enter VOLUMNIA and VIRGILIA : they sit down on two low stools,  
and sew*

*Vol.* I pray you, daughter, sing ; or express yourself in a  
more comfortable sort : if my son were my husband, I should  
freelier rejoice in that absence wherein he won honour than  
in the embracements of his bed where he would show most  
love. When yet he was but tender-bodied, and the only son

of my womb; when youth with comeliness plucked all gaze his way; when, for a day of kings' entreaties, a mother should not sell him an hour from her beholding; I,—considering how honour would become such a person; that it was no better than picture-like to hang by the wall, if renown made it not stir,—was pleased to let him seek danger where he was like to find fame. To a cruel war I sent him; from whence he returned, his brows bound with oak. I tell thee, daughter,—I sprang not more in joy at first hearing he was a man-child than now in first seeing he had proved himself a man.

*Vir.* But had he died in the business, madam,—how then?

*Vol.* Then his good report should have been my son; I therein would have found issue. Hear me profess sincerely,—had I a dozen sons, each in my love alike, and none less dear than thine and my good Marcius, I had rather had eleven die nobly for their country than one voluptuously surfeit out of action.

*Enter a Gentlewoman.*

*Gent.* Madam, the Lady Valeria is come to visit you.

*Vir.* Beseech you, give me leave to retire myself.

*Vol.* Indeed, you shall not.

Methinks I hear hither your husband's drum;  
See him pluck Aufidius down by the hair;  
As children from a bear, the Volscies shunning him:  
Methinks I see him stamp thus, and call thus,—  
"Come on, you cowards! you were got in fear,  
Though you were born in Rome:" his bloody brow  
With his mail'd hand then wiping, forth he goes;  
Like to a harvest-man, that's task'd to mow  
Or all, or lose his hire.

*Vir.* His bloody brow! O Jupiter, no blood!

*Vol.* Away, you fool! it more becomes a man  
Than gilt his trophy: the breasts of Hecuba,  
When she did suckle Hector, look'd not lovelier  
Than Hector's forehead when it spit forth blood  
At Grecian swords contending.<sup>(15)</sup>—Tell Valeria,  
We are fit to bid her welcome. [*Exit Gent.*

*Vir.* Heavens bless my lord from fell Aufidius!

*Vol.* He'll beat Aufidius' head below his knee,  
And tread upon his neck.

*Re-enter Gentlewoman, with VALERIA and her Usher.*

*Val.* My ladies both, good day to you.

*Vol.* Sweet madam.

*Vir.* I am glad to see your ladyship.

*Val.* How do you both? you are manifest house-keepers.  
What are you sewing here? A fine spot, <sup>(16)</sup> in good faith.  
—How does your little son?

*Vir.* I thank your ladyship; well, good madam.

*Vol.* He had rather see the swords, and hear a drum,  
than look upon his schoolmaster.

*Val.* O' my word, the father's son: I'll swear, 'tis a very  
pretty boy. O' my troth, I looked upon him o' Wednesday  
half an hour together: has <sup>(17)</sup> such a confirmed countenance.  
I saw him run after a gilded butterfly; and when he caught  
it, he let it go again; and after it again; and over and over  
he comes, and up again; caught it again: or whether his  
fall enraged him, or how 'twas, he did so set his teeth, and  
tear it; O, I warrant, how he mammoocked it!

*Vol.* One on's father's moods.

*Val.* Indeed, la, 'tis a noble child.

*Vir.* A crack, madam.

*Val.* Come, lay aside your stitchery; I must have you  
play the idle huswife with me this afternoon.

*Vir.* No, good madam; I will not out of doors.

*Val.* Not out of doors!

*Vol.* She shall, she shall.

*Vir.* Indeed, no, by your patience; I'll not over the  
threshold till my lord return from the wars.

*Val.* Fie, you confine yourself most unreasonably: come,  
you must go visit the good lady that lies in.

*Vir.* I will wish her speedy strength, and visit her with  
my prayers; but I cannot go thither.

*Vol.* Why, I pray you?

*Vir.* 'Tis not to save labour, nor that I want love.

*Val.* You would be another Penelope: yet, they say, all

the yarn she spun in Ulysses' absence did but fill Ithaca full of moths. Come; I would your cambric were sensible as your finger, that you might leave pricking it for pity. Come, you shall go with us.

*Vir.* No, good madam, pardon me; indeed, I will not forth.

*Val.* In truth, la, go with me; and I'll tell you excellent news of your husband.

*Vir.* O, good madam, there can be none yet.

*Val.* Verily, I do not jest with you; there came news from him last night.

*Vir.* Indeed, madam?

*Val.* In earnest, it's true; I heard a senator speak it. Thus it is:—The Volsces have an army forth; against whom Cominius the general is gone, with one part of our Roman power: your lord and Titus Lartius are set down before their city Corioli; they nothing doubt prevailing, and to make it brief wars. This is true, on mine honour; and so, I pray, go with us.

*Vir.* Give me excuse, good madam; I will obey you in every thing hereafter.

*Vol.* Let her alone, lady: as she is now, she will but dis-ease our better mirth.

*Val.* In troth, I think she would.—Fare you well, then.—Come, good sweet lady.—Prithee, Virgilia, turn thy solemnness out o' door, and go along with us.

*Vir.* No, at a word, madam; indeed, I must not. I wish you much mirth.

*Val.* Well, then, farewell. [*Exeunt.*

---

SCENE IV. *Before Corioli.*

*Enter, with drum and colours, MARCIUS, TITUS LARTIUS, Officers, and Soldiers.*

*Mar.* Yonder comes news:—a wager they have met.

*Lart.* My horse to yours, no.

*Mar.* 'Tis done.

*Lart.* Agreed.



*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mar.* Say, has our general met the enemy?

*Mess.* They lie in view; but have not spoke as yet.

*Lart.* So, the good horse is mine.

*Mar.* I'll buy him of you.

*Lart.* No, I'll nor sell nor give him: lend you him I will

For half a hundred years.—Summon the town.

*Mar.* How far off lie these armies?

*Mess.* Within this mile and half.

*Mar.* Then shall we hear their 'larum, and they ours.—  
Now, Mars, I prithee, make us quick in work,  
That we with smoking swords may march from hence,  
To help our fielded friends!—Come, blow thy blast.

*They sound a parley. Enter, on the walls, some Senators and others.*

Tullus Aufidius, is he within your walls?

*First Sen.* No, nor a man that fears you less than he,  
That's lesser than a little. Hark, our drums

*[Drums afar off.]*

Are bringing forth our youth! we'll break our walls,  
Rather than they shall pound us up: our gates,  
Which yet seem shut, we have but pinn'd with rushes;  
They'll open of themselves. Hark you, far off!

*[Alarum afar off.]*

There is Aufidius; list, what work he makes  
Amongst your cloven army.

*Mar.* O, they are at it!

*Lart.* Their noise be our instruction.—Ladders, ho!

*The Volscs enter and pass over.*

*Mar.* They fear us not, but issue forth their city.  
Now put your shields before your hearts, and fight  
With hearts more proof than shields.—Advance, brave Titus:  
They do disdain us much beyond our thoughts,  
Which makes me sweat with wrath.—Come on, my fellows:  
He that retires, I'll take him for a Volscé,  
And he shall feel mine edge.

*Alarum; and exeunt Romans and Volscies, fighting. The Romans are beaten back to their trenches. Re-enter MARCIUS.*

*Mar.* All the contagion of the south light on you,  
 You shames of Rome! you herd of<sup>(18)</sup>—Boils and plagues  
 Plaster you o'er; that you may be abhorr'd  
 Further than seen, and one infect another  
 Against the wind a mile! You souls of geese,  
 That bear the shapes of men, how have you run  
 From slaves that apes would beat! Pluto and hell!  
 All hurt behind; backs red, and faces pale  
 With flight and ague'd fear! Mend, and charge home,  
 Or, by the fires of heaven, I'll leave the foe,  
 And make my wars on you: look to't: come on;  
 If you'll stand fast, we'll beat them to their wives,  
 As they us to our trenches follow'd.<sup>(19)</sup>

*Another alarum. The Volscies and Romans re-enter, and the fight is renewed. The Volscies retire into Corioli, and MARCIUS follows them to the gates.*

So, now the gates are ope:—now prove good seconds:  
 'Tis for the followers fortune widens them,  
 Not for the fliers: mark me, and do the like.

*[Marcius enters the gates.*

*First Sol.* Fool-hardiness; not I.

*Sec. Sol.*

Nor I.

*[Marcius is shut in.*

*First Sol.* See, they have shut him in.

*All.*

To the pot, I warrant him.

*[Alarum continues.*

*Re-enter TITUS LARTIUS.*

*Lart.* What is become of Marcius?

*All.*

Slain, sir, doubtless.

*First Sol.* Following the fliers at the very heels,  
 With them he enters; who, upon the sudden,  
 Clapp'd-to their gates: he is himself alone,  
 To answer all the city.

*Lart.*

O noble fellow!

Who, sensible,<sup>(20)</sup> outdares his senseless sword,

And, when it bows, stands up! Thou art left, Marcius:  
 A carbuncle entire, as big as thou art,  
 Were not so rich a jewel. Thou wast a soldier  
 Even to Cato's<sup>(21)</sup> wish, not fierce and terrible  
 Only in strokes; but, with thy grim looks and  
 The thunder-like percussion of thy sounds,  
 Thou mad'st thine enemies shake, as if the world  
 Were feverous and did tremble.

*Re-enter MARCIUS, bleeding, assaulted by the enemy.*

*First Sol.*

Look, sir.

*Lart.*

O, 'tis Marcius!

Let's fetch him off, or make remain alike.

*[They fight, and all enter the city.]*

SCENE V. *Within Corioli. A street.*

*Enter certain Romans, with spoils*

*First Rom.* This will I carry to Rome.

*Sec. Rom.* And I this.

*Third Rom.* A murrain on't! I took this for silver.

*[Alarum continues still afar off.]*

*Enter MARCIUS and TITUS LARTIUS with a trumpet.*

*Mar.* See here these movers that do prize their hours  
 At a crack'd drachm! Cushions, leaden spoons,  
 Irons of a doit, doublets that hangmen would  
 Bury with those that wore them, these base slaves,  
 Ere yet the fight be done, pack up:—down with them!—  
 And hark, what noise the general makes!—To him!  
 There is the man of my soul's hate, Aufidius,  
 Piercing our Romans: then, valiant Titus, take  
 Convenient numbers to make good the city;  
 Whilst I, with those that have the spirit, will haste  
 To help Cominius.

*Lart.*

Worthy sir, thou bleed'st;

Thy exercise hath been too violent for

A second course of fight.

*Mar.* Sir, praise me not;  
My work hath yet not warm'd me: fare you well:  
The blood I drop is rather physical  
Than dangerous to me: to Aufidius thus  
I will appear, and fight.

*Lart.* Now the fair goddess, Fortune,  
Fall deep in love with thee; and her great charms  
Misguide thy opposers' swords! Bold gentleman,  
Prosperity be thy page!

*Mar.* Thy friend no less  
Than those she placeth highest! So, farewell.

*Lart.* Thou worthiest Marcius! — [*Exit Marcius,*  
Go, sound thy trumpet in the market-place;  
Call thither all the officers o' the town,  
Where they shall know our mind: away! [*Exeunt.*

SCENE VI. *Near the camp of COMINIUS.*

*Enter COMINIUS and forces, retreating.*

*Com.* Breathe you, my friends: well fought; we are  
come off

Like Romans, neither foolish in our stands,  
Nor cowardly in retire: believe me, sirs,  
We shall be charg'd again. Whiles we have struck,  
By interims and conveying gusts we have heard  
The charges of our friends.—Ye<sup>(22)</sup> Roman gods,  
Lead their successes as we wish our own,  
That both our powers, with smiling fronts encountering,  
May give you thankful sacrifice!

*Enter a Messenger.*

Thy news?

*Mess.* The citizens of Corioli have issu'd,  
And given to Lartius and to Marcius battle:  
I saw our party to their trenches driven,  
And then I came away.

*Com.* Though thou speak'st truth,  
Methinks thou speak'st not well. How long is't since?

*Mess.* Above an hour, my lord.

*Com.* 'Tis not a mile; briefly we heard their drums:  
How couldst thou in a mile confound an hour,  
And bring thy news so late?

*Mess.* Spies of the Volscies  
Held me in chase, that I was forc'd to wheel  
Three or four miles about; else had I, sir,  
Half an hour since brought my report.

*Com.* Who's yonder,  
That does appear as he were flay'd? O gods!  
He has the stamp of Marcius; and I have  
Before-time seen him thus.

*Mar.* [*within*] Come I too late?

*Com.* The shepherd knows not thunder from a tabor,  
More than I know the sound of Marcius' tongue  
From every meaner man.

*Enter MARCIUS.*

*Mar.* Come I too late?

*Com.* Ay, if you come not in the blood of others,  
But mantled in your own.

*Mar.* O, let me clip ye  
In arms as sound as when I woo'd; in heart  
As merry as when our nuptial day was done,  
And tapeis burn'd to bedward!

*Com.* Flower of warriors,  
How is't with Titus Lartius?

*Mar.* As with a man busied about decrees:  
Condemning some to death, and some to exile;  
Ransoming him or pitying, threatening the other;  
Holding Corioli in the name of Rome,  
Even like a fawning greyhound in the leash,  
To let him slip at will.

*Com.* Where is that slave  
Which told me they had beat you to your trenches?  
Where is he? call him hither.

*Mar.* Let him alone;  
He did inform the truth: but for our gentlemen,  
The common file (a plague!—tribunes for them!),  
The mouse ne'er shunn'd the cat as they did budge

From rascals worse than they.

*Com.* But how prevail'd you ?

*Mar.* Will the time serve to tell ? I do not think.  
Where is the enemy ? are you lords o' the field ?  
If not, why cease you till you are so ?

*Com.* Marcus,  
We have at disadvantage fought, and did  
Retire, to win our purpose.

*Mar.* How lies their battle ? know you on which side  
They have plac'd their men of trust ?

*Com.* As I guess, Marcus,  
Their hands i' the vaward are the Antiates,<sup>(23)</sup>  
Of their best trust ; o'er them Aufidius,  
Their very heart of hope.

*Mar.* I do beseech you,  
By all the battles wherein we have fought,  
By the blood we have shed together, by the vows  
We have made to endure friends, that you directly  
Set me against Aufidius and his Antiates ;  
And that you not delay the present, but,  
Filling the air with swords advanc'd and darts,  
We prove this very hour.

*Com.* Though I could wish  
You were conducted to a gentle bath,  
And balms applied to you, yet dare I never  
Deny your asking : take your choice of those  
That best can aid your action.

*Mar.* Those are they  
That most are willing.—If any such be here  
(As it were sin to doubt) that love this painting  
Wherein you see me smear'd ; if any fear  
Lesser<sup>(24)</sup> his person than an ill report ;  
If any think brave death outweighs bad life,  
And that his country's dearer than himself ;  
Let him alone, or so many so minded,  
Wave thus, to express his disposition,  
And follow Marcus.

*[They all shout, and wave their swords ; take him  
up in their arms, and cast up their caps.]*

O, me alone ! make you a sword of me !  
 If these shows be not outward, which of you  
 But is four Volscies ? none of you but is  
 Able to bear against the great Aufidius  
 A shield as hard as his. A certain number,  
 Though thanks to all, must I select from all : the rest  
 Shall bear the business in some other fight,  
 As cause will be obey'd. Please you to march ;  
 And four<sup>(25)</sup> shall quickly draw out my command,  
 Which men are best inclin'd.

*Com.* March on, my fellows :  
 Make good this ostentation, and you shall  
 Divide in all with us.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VII. *The gates of Corioli.*

TITUS LARTIUS, *having set a guard upon Corioli, going with drum  
 and trumpet toward COMINIUS and CAIUS MARCIUS, enters with  
 a Lieutenant, a party of Soldiers, and a Scout.*

*Lart.* So, let the ports be guarded : keep your duties,  
 As I have set them down. If I do send, dispatch  
 Those centuries to our aid ; the rest will serve  
 For a short holding : if we lose the field,  
 We cannot keep the town.

*Lieu.* Fear not our care, sir.

*Lart.* Hence, and shut your gates upon 's.—  
 Our guider, come ; to the Roman camp conduct us. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VIII. *A field of battle between the Roman and the  
 Volscian camps.*

*Alarum.* Enter, from opposite sides, MARCIUS and AUFIDIUS.

*Mar.* I'll fight with none but thee ; for I do hate thee  
 Worse than a promise-breaker.

*Auf.* We hate alike :  
 Not Afric owns a serpent I abhor  
 More than thy fame and envy. Fix thy foot.

*Mar.* Let the first budger die the other's slave,  
And the gods doom him after!

*Auf.* If I fly, Marcius,  
Holla me like a hare.

*Mar.* Within these three hours, Tullus,  
Alone I fought in your Corioli walls,  
And made what work I pleas'd: 'tis not my blood  
Wherewith thou seest me mask'd; for thy revenge  
Wrench up thy power to the highest.

*Auf.* Wert thou the Hector  
That was the whip of your bragg'd progeny,  
Thou shouldst not scape me here.

[*They fight, and certain Volscres come to the aid of Aufidius.*]

Officious, and not valiant,—you have sham'd me  
In your condemn'd seconds.

[*Exeunt fighting, driven in by Marcius.*]

SCENE IX. *The Roman camp.*

*Alarm.* A retreat is sounded. *Flourish.* Enter, from one side,  
COMINIUS and Romans; from the other side, MARCIUS, with his  
arm in a scarf, and other Romans.

*Com.* If I should tell thee o'er this thy day's work,  
Thou'lt not believe thy deeds: but I'll report it,  
Where senators shall mingle tears with smiles;  
Where great patricians shall attend, and shrug,  
I' the end admire; where ladies shall be frighted,  
And, gladly quak'd, hear more; where the dull tribunes,  
That, with the fusty plebeians,<sup>(26)</sup> hate thine honours,  
Shall say, against their hearts, "We thank the gods  
Our Rome hath such a soldier!"  
Yet cam'st thou to a morsel of this feast,  
Having fully din'd before.

*Enter TITUS LARTIUS, with his power, from the pursuit.*

*Lart.* O general,



Here is the steed, we the caparison :  
Hadst thou beheld,—

*Mar.* Pray now, no more : my mother,  
Who has a charter to extol her blood,  
When she does praise me grieves me. I have done  
As you have done,—that's what I can ; induc'd  
As you have been,—that's for my country :  
He that has but effected his good will  
Hath overta'en mine act.

*Com.* You shall not be  
The grave of your deserving ; Rome must know  
The value of her own : 'twere a concealment  
Worse than a theft, no less than a traducement,  
To hide your doings ; and to silence that,  
Which, to the spire and top of praises vouch'd,  
Would seem but modest : therefore, I beseech you,  
(In sign of what you are, not to reward  
What you have done,) before our army hear me.

*Mar.* I have some wounds upon me, and they smart  
To hear themselves remember'd.

*Com.* Should they not,  
Well might they fester 'gainst ingratitude,  
And tent themselves with death. Of all the horses  
(Whereof we have ta'en good, and good store), of all  
The treasure in this field achiev'd and city,  
We render you the tenth ; to be ta'en forth,  
Before the common distribution, at  
Your only choice.

*Mar.* I thank you, general ;  
But cannot make my heart consent to take  
A bribe to pay my sword : I do refuse it ;  
And stand upon my common part with those  
That have beheld the doing.

*[A long flourish. They all cry, " Marcus ! Marcus !"  
cast up their caps and lances : Cominius  
and Lartius stand bare.]*

*Mar.* May these same instruments, which you profane,  
Never sound more ! when drums and trumpets shall  
I' the field prove flatterers, let courts and cities be

Made all of false-fac'd scotching !  
 When steel grows soft as the parasite's silk,  
 Let him be made a coverture<sup>(27)</sup> for the wars !  
 No more, I say ! For that I have not wash'd  
 My nose that bled, or foil'd some debile wretch,—  
 Which, without note, here's many else have done,—  
 You shout<sup>(28)</sup> me forth  
 In acclamations hyperbolical ;  
 As if I lov'd my little should be dieted  
 In praises sauc'd with lies.

*Com.* Too modest are you ;  
 More cruel to your good report than grateful  
 To us that give you truly . by your patience,  
 If 'gainst yourself you be incens'd, we'll put you  
 (Like one that means his proper harm) in manacles,  
 Then reason safely with you.—Therefore, be it known,  
 As to us, to all the world, that Caius Marcius  
 Wears this war's garland : in token of the which,  
 My noble steed, known to the camp, I give him,  
 With all his trim belonging ; and from this time,  
 For what he did before Corioli, call him,  
 With all the applause and clamour of the host,  
 CAIUS MARCIUS<sup>(29)</sup> CORIOLANUS.—Bear  
 The addition nobly ever !

[*Flourish. Trumpets sound, and drums.*]

*All.* Caius Marcius Coriolanus !

*Cor.* I will go wash ;  
 And when my face is fair, you shall perceive  
 Whether I blush, or no : howbeit, I thank you :—  
 I mean to stride your steed ; and at all times,  
 To undercrest your good addition  
 To the fairness of my power.

*Com.* So, to our tent ;  
 Where, ere we do repose us, we will write  
 To Rome of our success.—You, Titus Lartius,  
 Must to Corioli back : send us to Rome  
 The best, with whom we may articulate,  
 For their own good and ours.

*Lart.* I shall, my lord.

*Cor.* The gods begin to mock me. I, that now  
Refus'd most princely gifts, am bound to beg  
Of my lord general.

*Com.* Take't; 'tis yours. What is't?

*Cor.* I sometime lay here in Corioli  
At a poor man's house; he us'd me kindly:  
He cried to me; I saw him prisoner;  
But then Aufidius was within my view,  
And wrath o'erwhelm'd my pity: I request you  
To give my poor host freedom.

*Com.* O, well begg'd!  
Were he the butcher of my son, he should  
Be free as is the wind.—Deliver him, Titus.

*Lart.* Marcius, his name?

*Cor.* By Jupiter, forgot:—  
I am weary; yea, my memory is tir'd.—  
Have we no wine here?

*Com.* Go we to our tent:  
The blood upon your visage dries; 'tis time  
It should be look'd to: come. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE X. *The camp of the Volsces.*

*A flourish. Cornets. Enter TULLUS AUFIDIUS, bloody with two  
or three Soldiers.*

*Auf.* The town is ta'en!

*First Sol.* 'Twill be deliver'd back on good condition.

*Auf.* Condition!—

I would I were a Roman; for I cannot,  
Being a Volsce, be that I am.—Condition!  
What good condition can a treaty find  
I' the part that is at mercy?—Five times, Marcius,  
I have fought with thee; so often hast thou beat me;  
And wouldst do so, I think, should we encounter  
As often as we eat.—By the elements,  
If e'er again I meet him beard to beard,  
He's mine, or I am his: mine emulation  
Hath not that honour in't it had; for where  
I thought to crush him in an equal force

(True sword to sword), I'll potch at him some way,  
Or wrath or craft may get him.

*First Sol.* He's the devil.

*Auf.* Bolder, though not so subtle. My valour's poison'd  
With only suffering stain by him; for him  
Shall fly out of itself: nor sleep nor sanctuary,  
Being naked, sick; nor fane nor Capitol,  
The prayers of priests nor times of sacrifice,  
Embarquements<sup>(30)</sup> all of fury, shall lift up  
Their rotten privilege and custom 'gainst  
My hate to Marcius: where I find him, were it  
At home, upon my brother's guard, even there,  
Against the hospitable canon, would I  
Wash my fierce hand in's heart. Go you to the city;  
Learn how 'tis held; and what they are that must  
Be hostages for Rome.

*First Sol.* Will not you go?

*Auf.* I am attended at the cypress grove: I pray you  
(Tis south the city mills), bring me word thither  
How the world goes, that to the pace of it  
I may spur on my journey.

*First Sol.* I shall, sir.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

SCENE I. *Rome. A public place.*

*Enter MENENIUS, SIOINIUS, and BRUTUS.*

*Men.* The augurer tells me we shall have news to-night.

*Bru.* Good or bad?

*Men.* Not according to the prayer of the people, for they  
love not Marcius.

*Sic.* Nature teaches beasts to know their friends.

*Men.* Pray you, who does the wolf love?

*Sic.* The lamb.

*Men.* Ay, to devour him; as the hungry plebeians would  
the noble Marcius.

*Bru.* He's a lamb indeed, that baes like a bear.

*Men.* He's a bear indeed, that lives like a lamb. You two are old men: tell me one thing that I shall ask you.

*Both Trib.* Well, sir.

*Men.* In what enormity is Marcius poor in, that you two have not in abundance?

*Bru.* He's poor in no one fault, but stored with all.

*Sic.* Especially in pride.

*Bru.* And topping all others in boasting.

*Men.* This is strange now: do you two know how you are censured here in the city, I mean of us o' the right-hand file? do you?

*Both Trib.* Why, how are we censured?

*Men.* Because you talk of pride now,—will you not be angry?

*Both Trib.* Well, well, sir, well.

*Men.* Why, 'tis no great matter; for a very little thief of occasion will rob you of a great deal of patience: give your dispositions the reins, and be angry at your pleasures; at the least, if you take it as a pleasure to you in being so. You blame Marcius for being proud?

*Bru.* We do it not alone, sir.

*Men.* I know you can do very little alone; for your helps are many, or else your actions would grow wondrous single: your abilities are too infant-like for doing much alone. You talk of pride: O that you could turn your eyes toward the napes of your necks, and make but an interior survey of your good selves! O that you could!

*Bru.* What then, sir?

*Men.* Why, then you should discover a brace of unmeriting, proud, violent, testy magistrates (alias fools), as any in Rome.

*Sic.* Menenius, you are known well enough too.

*Men.* I am known to be a humorous patrician, and one that loves a cup of hot wine with not a drop of allaying 'Tiber in't; said to be something imperfect in favouring the first<sup>(31)</sup> complaint, hasty and tinder-like upon too trivial motion; one that converses more with the buttoek of the night than with the forehead of the morning: what I think I utter, and spend my malice in my breath. Meeting two such weals-

men as you are (I cannot call you Lyncurguses), if the drink you give me touch my palate adversely, I make a crooked face at it. I cannot<sup>(33)</sup> say your worships have delivered the matter well, when I find the ass in compound with the major part of your syllables: and though I must be content to bear with those that say you are reverend grave men, yet they lie deadly that tell you<sup>(33)</sup> have good faces. If you see this in the map of my microcosm, follows it that I am known well enough too? what harm can your bisson<sup>(34)</sup> conspectuities glean out of this character, if I be known well enough too?

*Bru.* Come, sir, come, we know you well enough.

*Men.* You know neither me, yourselves, nor any thing. You are ambitious for poor knaves' caps and legs: you wear out a good wholesome forenoon in hearing a cause between an orange-wife and a fosset-seller; and then rejourn the controversy of three-pence to a second day of audience. When you are hearing a matter between party and party, if you chance to be pinched with the colic, you make faces like mummers; set up the bloody flag against all patience; and, in roaring for a chamber-pot, disaniss the controversy bleeding, the more entangled by your hearing: all the peace you make in their cause is, calling both the parties knaves. You are a pair of strange ones.

*Bru.* Come, come, you are well understood to be a perfecter giber for the table than a necessary benchner in the Capitol.

*Men.* Our very priests must become mockers, if they shall encounter such ridiculous subjects as you are. When you speak best unto the purpose, it is not worth the wagging of your beards; and your beards deserve not so honourable a grave as to stuff a botcher's cushion, or to be entombed in an ass's pack-saddle. Yet you must be saying, Marcius is proud; who, in a cheap estimation, is worth all your predecessors since Deucalion; though peradventure some of the best of 'em were hereditary hangmen. God-den to your worships; more of your conversation would infect my brain, being the herdsmen of the beastly plebeians: I will be bold to take my leave of you.

[*Brutus and Sicinius retire.*]

*Enter VOLUMNIA, VIRGILIA, and VALERIA, &c.*

How now, my as fair as noble ladies,—and the moon, were she earthly, no nobler,—whither do you follow your eyes so fast?

*Vol.* Honourable Menenius, my boy Marcius approaches; for the love of Juno, let's go.

*Men.* Ha! Marcius coming home!

*Vol.* Ay, worthy Menenius; and with most prosperous approbation.

*Men.* Take my cap, Jupiter, and I thank thee.—Hoo! Marcius coming home!

*Vol. Fir.*<sup>(35)</sup> Nay, 'tis true.

*Vol.* Look, here's a letter from him: the state hath another, his wife another; and, I think, there's one at home for you.

*Men.* I will make my very house reel to-night:—a letter for me!

*Fir.* Yes, certain, there's a letter for you; I saw 't.

*Men.* A letter for me! it gives me an estate of seven years' health; in which time I will make a lip at the physician: the most sovereign prescription in Galen is but empiricute,<sup>(36)</sup> and, to this preservative, of no better report than a horse-drench.—Is he not wounded? he was wont to come home wounded.

*Fir.* O, no, no, no.

*Vol.* O, he is wounded,—I thank the gods for't.

*Men.* So do I too, if it be not too much:—brings 'a victory in his pocket?—the wounds become him.

*Vol.* On's brows: Menenius, he comes the third time home with the oaken garland.

*Men.* Has he disciplined Aufidius soundly?

*Vol.* Titus Lartius writes,—they fought together, but Aufidius got off.

*Men.* And 'twas time for him too, I'll warrant him that: an he had stayed by him, I would not have been so fidiused for all the chests in Corioli, and the gold that's in them. Is the senate possessed of this?

*Vol.* Good ladies, let's go.—Ycs, yes, yes; the senate has

letters from the general, wherein he gives my son the whole name of the war: he hath in this action outdone his former deeds doubly.

*Vol.* In troth, there's wondrous things spoke of him.

*Men.* Wondrous! ay, I warrant you, and not without his true purchasing.

*Vir.* The gods grant them true!

*Vol.* True! pow, wow.

*Men.* True! I'll be sworn they are true.—Where is he wounded?—*[To the Tribunes]* God save your good worships! Marcius is coming home: he has more cause to be proud.—Where is he wounded?

*Vol.* I' the shoulder and i' the left arm: there will be large cicatrices to show the people, when he shall stand for his place. He received in the repulse of Tarquin seven hurts i' the body.

*Men.* One i' the neck, and two i' the thigh,—there's mine that I know.

*Vol.* He had, before this last expedition, twenty-five wounds upon him.

*Men.* Now it's twenty-seven: every gash was an enemy's grave. *[A shout and flourish.]* Hark! the trumpets.

*Vol.* These are the ushers of Marcius: before him he carries noise, and behind him he leaves tears: Death, that dark spirit, in's nervy arm doth lie; Which, being advanc'd, declines, and then men die.

*A scanel. Trumpets sound. Enter COMINIUS and TITUS LARTIUS; between them, CORIOLANUS, crowned with an oak leaf garter; with Captains, Soldiers, and a Herald.*

*Her.* Know, Rome, that all alone Marcius did fight  
Within Corioli gates: where he hath won,  
With fame, a name to Caius Marcius; these  
In honour follows Coriolanus:—<sup>(37)</sup>

Welcome to Rome, renown'd Coriolanus! *[Flourish.]*

*All.* Welcome to Rome, renown'd Coriolanus!

*Cor.* No more of this, it does offend my heart;  
Pray now, no more.

*Com.* Look, sir, your mother!



*Cor.* O,  
 You have, I know, petition'd all the gods  
 For my prosperity! [*Kneels.*]

*Vol.* Nay, my good soldier, up;  
 My gentle Marcius, worthy Caius, and  
 By deed-achieving honour newly nam'd,—  
 What is it?—Coriolanus must I call thee?—  
 But, O, thy wife!

*Cor.* My gracious silence, hail!  
 Wouldst thou have laugh'd had I come coffin'd home,  
 That weep'st to see me triumph? Ah, my dear,  
 Such eyes the widows in Corioli wear,  
 And mothers that lack sons.

*Men.* Now, the gods crown thee!

*Cor.* And live you yet?—O my sweet lady, pardon.

[*To Valeria.*]

*Vol.* I know not where to turn:—O, welcome home;—  
 And welcome, general;—and ye're welcome all.

*Men.* A hundred thousand welcomes:—I could weep,  
 And I could laugh; I am light and heavy:—welcome:  
 A curse begin at very root on's heart,  
 That is not glad to see thee!—You are three  
 That Rome should dote on: yet, by the faith of men,  
 We have some old crab-trees here at home that will not  
 Be grafted to your relish. Yet welcome, warriors:  
 We call a nettle but a nettle, and  
 The fruits of fools but folly.

*Com.* Ever right.

*Cor.* Menenius ever, ever.

*Her.* Give way there, and go on!

*Cor.* Your hand, and yours:

[*To his Wife and Mother.*]

Ere in our own house I do shade my head,  
 The good patricians must be visited;  
 From whom I have receiv'd not only greetings,  
 But with them change<sup>(38)</sup> of honours.

*Vol.* I have liv'd

To see inherited my very wishes,  
 And the buildings of my fancy: only

There's one thing wanting, which I doubt not but  
Our Rome will cast upon thee.

*Cor.* Know, good mother,  
I had rather be their servant in my way  
Than sway with them in theirs.

*Com.* On, to the Capitol!

*[Flourish. Cornets. Exeunt in state, as before.*

*The Tribunes remain.*

*Bru.* All tongues speak of him, and the blearèd sights  
Are spectaclèd to see him: your prattling nurse  
Into a rapture lets her baby cry  
While she chats<sup>(39)</sup> him: the kitchen malkin pins  
Her richest lockram 'bout her reechy neck,  
Clambering the walls to eye him: stalls, bulks, windows,  
Are smother'd up, leads fill'd, and ridges hors'd  
With variable complexions; all agreeing  
In earnestness to see him: seld-shown flamens  
Do press among the popular throngs, and puff  
To win a vulgar station: our veil'd dames  
Commit the war of white and damask, in  
Their nicely-gawdèd cheeks, to the wanton spout  
Of Phœbus' burning kisses: such a pothèr,  
As if that whatsoever god who leads him  
Were sliely crept into his human powers,  
And gavè him graceful posture.

*Sic.* On the sudden,  
I warrant him consul.

*Bru.* Then our office may,  
During his power, go sleep.

*Sic.* He cannot temperately transport his honours  
From where he should begin and end; but will  
Lose those he hath won.

*Bru.* In that there's comfort.

*Sic.* Doubt not

The commoners, for whom we stand, but they,  
Upon their ancient malice, will forget,  
With the least cause, these his new honours; which  
That he will give them make I as little question  
As he is proud to do't.

*Bru.* I heard him swear,  
Were he to stand for consul, never would he  
Appear i' the market-place, nor on him put  
The napless vesture of humility;  
Nor, showing (as the manner is) his wounds  
To the people, beg their stinking breaths.

*Sic.* 'Tis right.

*Bru.* It was his word: O, he would miss it, rather  
'Than carry it but by the suit of the gentry to him,  
And the desire of the nobles.

*Sic.* I wish no better  
Than have him hold that purpose, and to put it  
In execution.

*Bru.* 'Tis most like he will.

*Sic.* It shall be to him, then, as our good wills,  
A sure destruction.

*Bru.* So it must fall out  
To him or our authorities. For an end,  
We must suggest the people in what hatred  
He still hath held them; that to's power he would  
Have made them mules, silenc'd their pleaders, and  
Disproportioned their freedoms: holding them,  
In human action and capacity,  
Of no more soul nor fitness for the world  
'Than camels in their<sup>(10)</sup> war; who have their provand  
Only for bearing burdens, and sore blows  
For sinking under them.

*Sic.* This, as you say, suggested  
At some time when his soaring insolence  
Shall touch<sup>(11)</sup> the people (which time shall not want,  
If he be put upon't; and that's as easy  
As to set dogs on sheep), will be his fire  
To kindle their dry stubble; and their blaze  
Shall darken him for ever.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Bru.* What's the matter?

*Mess.* You are sent for to the Capitol. 'Tis thought  
That Marcius shall be consul:

I have seen the dumb men throng to see him, and  
The blind to hear him speak: matrons flung gloves,  
Ladies and maids their scarfs and handkerchers,  
Upon him as he pass'd: the nobles bended,  
As to Jove's statue; and the commons made  
A shower and thunder with their caps and shouts:  
I never saw the like.

*Bru.* Let's to the Capitol,  
And carry with us ears and eyes for the time,  
But hearts for the event.

*Sic.* Have with you. [*Exeunt.*]

---

SCENE II. *The same. The Capitol.*

*Enter two Officers, to lay cushions.*

*First Off.* Come, come, they are almost here. How many  
stand for consulships?

*Sec. Off.* Three, they say: but 'tis thought of every one  
Coriolanus will carry it.

*First Off.* That's a brave fellow; but he's vengeance  
proud, and loves not the common people.

*Sec. Off.* Faith, there have been many great men that  
have flattered the people, who ne'er loved them; and there  
be many that they have loved, they know not wherefore: so  
that, if they love they know not why, they hate upon no  
better a ground: therefore, for Coriolanus neither to care  
whether they love or hate him manifests the true knowledge  
he has in their disposition; and, out of his noble carelessness,  
lets them plainly see't.

*First Off.* If he did not care whether he had their love or  
no, he waded indifferently 'twixt doing them neither good  
nor harm: but he seeks their hate with greater devotion than  
they can render it him; and leaves nothing undone that may  
fully discover him their opposite. Now, to seem to affect  
the malice and displeasure of the people is as bad as that  
which he dislikes,—to flatter them for their love.

*Sec. Off.* He hath deserved worthily of his country: and

his ascent is not by such easy degrees as those who, having been supple and courteous to the people, bonneted, without any further deed to have them at all into their estimation and report: but he hath so planted his honours in their eyes, and his actions in their hearts, that for their tongues to be silent, and not confess so much, were a kind of ingrateful injury; to report otherwise, were a malice, that, giving itself the lie, would pluck reproof and rebuke from every ear that heard it.

*First Off.* No more of him; he's a worthy man: make way, they are coming.

*A sennet. Enter, with Lictors before them, COMINIUS, MENENIUS, CORIOLANUS, Senators, SICINIUS and BRUTUS. The Senators take their places, the Tribunes take theirs also by themselves.*

*Men.* Having determin'd of the Volsces, and  
To send for Titus Lartius, it remains,  
As the main point of this our after-meeting,  
To gratify his noble service that  
Hath thus stood for his country: therefore, please you,  
Most reverend and grave elders, to desire  
The present consul, and last general  
In our well-found successes, to report  
A little of that worthy work perform'd  
By Caius Marcius Coriolanus; whom  
We meet<sup>(42)</sup> here, both to thank, and to remember  
With honours like himself.

*First Sen.* Speak, good Cominius:  
Leave nothing out for length, and make us think  
Rather our state's defective for requital  
Than we to stretch it out.—Masters o' the people,  
We do request your kindest cars; and, after,  
Your loving motion toward the common body,  
To yield what passes here.

*Sic.* We are convened  
Upon a pleasing treaty; and have hearts  
Inclinable to honour and advance  
The theme of our assembly.

*Br u.* Which the rather

We shall be bless'd<sup>(43)</sup> to do, if he remember  
A kinder value of the people than  
He hath hereto priz'd them at.

*Men.* That's off, that's off;  
I would you rather had been silent. Please you  
To hear Cominius speak?

*Bru.* Most willingly:  
But yet my caution was more pertinent  
Than the rebuke you give it.

*Men.* He loves your people;  
But tie him not to be their bedfellow.—  
Worthy Cominius, speak.—[*Coriolanus rises, and offers to go*  
*away.*] Nay, keep your place.

*First Sen.* Sit, Coriolanus; never shame to hear  
What you have nobly done.

*Cor.* Your honours' pardon:  
I had rather have my wounds to heal again  
Than hear say how I got them.

*Bru.* Sir, I hope  
My words disbench'd you not.

*Cor.* No, sir: yet oft,  
When blows have made me stay, I fled from words.  
You sooth'd not, therefore hurt not: but your people,  
I love them as they weigh.

*Men.* Pray now, sit down.

*Cor.* I had rather have one scratch my head i' the sun,  
When the claxum were struck, than idly sit  
To hear my nothings monster'd. [Exit.]

*Men.* Masters of the people,  
Your multiplying spawn how can he flatter  
(That's thousand to one good one), when you now see  
He had rather venture all his limbs for honour  
Than one on's ears to hear it?—Proceed, Cominius.

*Com.* I shall lack voice: the deeds of Coriolanus  
Should not be utter'd feebly.—It is held  
That valour is the chiefest virtue, and  
Most dignifies the haver: if it be,  
The man I speak of cannot in the world  
Be singly counterpois'd. At sixteen years,

When Tarquin made a head for Rome, he fought  
 Beyond the mark of others: our then dictator,  
 Whom with all praise I point at, saw him fight,  
 When with his Amazonian chin he drove  
 The bristled lips before him: he bestrid  
 An o'er-press'd Roman, and i' the consul's view  
 Slew three opposers: 'Tarquin's self he met,  
 And struck him on his knee: in that day's feats,  
 When he might act the woman in the scene,  
 He prov'd best man i' the field, and for his meed  
 Was brow-bound with the oak. His pupil-age  
 Man-enter'd thus, he wax'd like a sea;  
 And, in the brunt of seventeen battles since,  
 He lurch'd all swords of the garland. For this last,  
 Before and in Corioli, let me say,  
 I cannot speak him home: he stopp'd the fliers;  
 And by his rare example made the coward  
 Turn terror into sport: as weeds before  
 A vessel under sail, so men obey'd,  
 And fell below his stem: his sword (death's stamp)  
 Where it did mark, it took; from face to foot  
 He was a thing of blood, whose every motion  
 Was tim'd with dying cries: alone he enter'd  
 The mortal gate of the city, which he painted  
 With shunless destiny; aidless came off,  
 And with a sudden re-enforcement struck  
 Corioli like a planet: now all's his.  
 When, by and by, the din of war gan pierce  
 His ready sense; then straight his doubled spirit  
 Re-quick'n'd what in flesh was fatigate,  
 And to the battle came he; where he did  
 Run reeking o'er the lives of men, as if  
 'Twere a perpetual spoil: and till we call'd  
 Both field and city ours, he never stood  
 To ease his breast with panting.

*Men.*

Worthy man!

*First Sen.* He cannot but with measure fit the honours  
 Which we devise him.

*Com.*

Our spoils he kick'd at;

And look'd upon things precious, as they were  
The common muck of the world: he covets less  
Than misery itself would give; rewards  
His deeds with doing them; and is content  
To spend the time to end it.

*Men.* He's right noble:

Let him be call'd for.

*First Sen.* Call Coriolanus.

*Off.* He doth appear.

*Re-enter CORIOLANUS.*

*Men.* The senate, Coriolanus, are well pleas'd  
To make thee consul.

*Cor.* I do owe them still  
My life and services.

*Men.* It then remains  
That you do speak to the people.

*Cor.* I do beseech you,  
Let me o'erleap that custom; for I cannot  
Put on the gown, stand naked, and entreat them,  
For my wounds' sake, to give their suffrage: please you  
That I may pass this doing.

*Sic.* Sir, the people  
Must have their voices; neither will they bate  
One jot of ceremony.

*Men.* Put them not to't:—  
Pray you, go fit you to the custom; and  
Take to you, as your predecessors have,  
Your honour with your form.

*Cor.* It is a part  
That I shall blush in acting, and might well  
Be taken from the people.

*Bru.* Mark you that?

*Cor.* To brag unto them,—thus I did, and thus;—  
Show them the unaching scars which I should hide,  
As if I had receiv'd them for the hire  
Of their breath only!—

*Men.* Do not stand upon't.—  
We recommend to you, tribunes of the people,



Our purpose to them ;(<sup>44</sup>)—and to our noble consul  
Wish we all joy and honour.

*Senators.* To Coriolanus come all joy and honour !

[*Flourish. Exeunt all except Sicinius and Brutus.*]

*Bru.* You see how he intends to use the people.

*Sic.* May they perceive 's intent ! He will require them,  
As if he did condemn what he requested  
Should be in them to give.

*Bru.* Come, we'll inform them  
Of our proceedings here : on the market-place,  
I know, they do attend us.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. *The same. The Forum.*

*Enter several Citizens*

*First Cit.* Once, if he do require our voices, we ought not  
to deny him.

*Sec. Cit.* We may, sir, if we will.

*Third Cit.* We have power in ourselves to do it, but it is  
a power that we have no power to do : for if he show us his  
wounds, and tell us his deeds, we are to put our tongues into  
those wounds, and speak for them ; so, if he tell us his noble  
deeds, we must also tell him our noble acceptance of them.  
Ingratitude is monstrous : and for the multitude to be in-  
grateful, were to make a monster of the multitude ; of the  
which we being members, should bring ourselves to be mon-  
strous members.

*First Cit.* And to make us no better thought of, a little  
help will serve ; for once we stood up about the corn, he him-  
self stuck not to call us the many-headed multitude.

*Third Cit.* We have been called so of many ; not that  
our heads are some brown, some black, some auburn,<sup>(45)</sup> some  
bald, but that our wits are so diversely coloured : and truly  
I think, if all our wits were to issue out of one skull, they  
would fly east, west, north, south ; and their consent of one  
direct way should be at once to all the points o' the compass.

*Sec. Cit.* Think you so ? Which way do you judge my  
wit would fly ?

*Third Cit.* Nay, your wit will not so soon out as another man's will,—'tis strongly wedged up in a block-head; but if it were at liberty, 'twould, sure, southward.

*Sec. Cit.* Why that way?

*Third Cit.* To lose itself in a fog; where being three parts melted away with rotten dews, the fourth would return for conscience sake, to help to get thee a wife.

*Sec. Cit.* You are never without your tricks:—you may, you may.

*Third Cit.* Are you all resolved to give your voices? But that's no matter, the greater part carries it. I say, if he would incline to the people, there was never a worthier man.—Here he comes, and in the gown of humility: mark his behaviour. We are not to stay all together, but to come by him where he stands, by ones, by twos, and by threes. He's to make his requests by particulars; wherein every one of us has a single honour, in giving him our own voices with our own tongues: therefore follow me, and I'll direct you how you shall go by him.

*All.* Content, content.

[*Exeunt.*]

*Enter CORIOLANUS and MENENIUS.*

*Men.* O sir, you are not right: have you not known  
The worthiest men have done 't?

*Cor.* What must I say?—  
“I pray, sir,”—Plague upon't! I cannot bring  
My tongue to such a pace:—“Look, sir;—my wounds;—  
I got them in my country's service, when  
Some certain of your brethren roar'd, and ran  
From the noise of our own drums.”

*Men.* O me, the gods!  
You must not speak of that: you must desire them  
To think upon you.

*Cor.* Think upon me! hang 'em!  
I would they would forget me, like the virtues  
Which our divines lose by 'em.

*Men.* You'll mar all:  
I'll leave you: pray you, speak to 'em, I pray you,  
In wholesome manner.

*Cor.* Bid them wash their faces,  
And keep their teeth clean. [*Exit Menenius.*]—So, here  
comes a brace.

*Re-enter two Citizens* (<sup>16</sup>)

You know the cause, sir, of my standing here.

*First Cit.* We do, sir; tell us what hath brought you  
to't.

*Cor.* Mine own desert.

*Sec. Cit.* Your own desert!

*Cor.* Ay, not (<sup>47</sup>) mine own desire.

*First Cit.* How! not your own desire!

*Cor.* No, sir, 'twas never my desire yet to trouble the  
poor with begging.

*First Cit.* You must think, if we give you any thing, we  
hope to gain by you.

*Cor.* Well then, I pray, your price o' the consulship?

*First Cit.* The price is, to ask it kindly.

*Cor.* Kindly! Sir, I pray, let me ha't: I have wounds  
to show you, which shall be yours in private.—Your good  
voice, sir; what say you?

*Sec. Cit.* You shall ha' it, worthy sir.

*Cor.* A match, sir.—There's in all two worthy voices  
begged.—I have your alms: adieu.

*First Cit.* But this is something odd.

*Sec. Cit.* An 'twere to give again,—but 'tis no matter.

[*Exeunt the two Citizens.*]

*Re-enter two other Citizens.*

*Cor.* Pray you now, if it may stand with the time of your  
voices that I may be consul, I have here the customary  
gown.

*Third Cit.* You have deserved nobly of your country, and  
you have not deserved nobly.

*Cor.* Your enigma?

*Third Cit.* You have been a scourge to her enemies, you  
have been a rod to her friends; you have not, indeed, loved  
the common people.

*Cor.* You should account me the more virtuous, that I have not been common in my love. I will, sir, flatter my sworn brother, the people, to earn a dearer estimation of them; 'tis a condition they account gentle: and since the wisdom of their choice is rather to have my hat than my heart, I will practise the insinuating nod, and be off to them most counterfeitly; that is, sir, I will counterfeit the bewitchment of some popular man, and give it bountiful to the desirers. Therefore, beseech you, I may be consul.

*Fourth Cit.* We hope to find you our friend; and therefore give you our voices heartily.

*Third Cit.* You have received many wounds for your country.

*Cor.* I will not seal your knowledge with showing them. I will make much of your voices, and so trouble you no further.

*Both Cit.* The gods give you joy, sir, heartily! [*Exeunt.*]

*Cor.* Most sweet voices!—

Better it is to die, better to starve,  
Than crave the hire which first we do deserve.  
Why in this woolvish toge<sup>(48)</sup> should I stand here,  
To beg of Hob and Dick, that do appear,  
Their needless vouches? Custom calls me to't;—  
What custom wills, in all things should we do't,  
The dust on antique time would lie unswept,  
And mountainous error be too highly heapt  
For truth to ex-peer. Rather than fool it so,  
Let the high office and the honour go  
To one that would do thus.—I am half through;  
The one part suffer'd, the other will I do,—  
Here come more voices.

*Re-enter three other Citizens.*

Your voices: for your voices I have fought;  
Watch'd for your voices; for your voices bear  
Of wounds two dozen odd; battles thrice six  
I have seen, and heard of; for your voices have  
Done many things, some less, some more: your voices:  
Indeed, I would be consul.

*Fifth Cit.* He has done nobly, and cannot go without any honest man's voice.

*Sixth Cit.* Therefore let him be consul: the gods give him joy, and make him good friend to the people!

*All three Citizens.* Amen, amen.—God save thee, noble consul!  
[*Exeunt.*]

*Cor.* Worthy voices!

*Re-enter MENENIUS, with BRUTUS and SICINIUS.*

*Men.* You have stood your limitation; and the tribunes Endue you with the people's voice: remains That, in the official marks invested, you Anon do meet the senate.

*Cor.* Is this done?

*Sic.* The custom of request you have discharg'd:  
The people do admit you; and are summon'd  
To meet anon, upon your approbation.

*Cor.* Where? at the senate-house?

*Sic.* There, Coriolanus.

*Cor.* May I change these garments?

*Sic.* You may, sir.

*Cor.* That I'll straight do; and, knowing myself again,  
Repair to the senate-house.

*Men.* I'll keep you company.—Will you along?

*Bru.* We stay here for the people.

*Sic.* Fare you well.

[*Exeunt Coriolanus and Menenius.*]

He has it now; and, by his looks, methinks  
'Tis warm at 's heart.

*Bru.* With a proud heart he wore his humble weeds.—  
Will you dismiss the people?

*Re-enter Citizens.*

*Sic.* How now, my masters! have you chose this man?

*First Cit.* He has our voices, sir.

*Bru.* We pray the gods he may deserve your loves.

*Sec. Cit.* Amen, sir:—to my poor unworthy notice,  
He mock'd us when he begg'd our voices.

*Third Cit.*

Certainly

He flouted us downright.

*First Cit.* No, 'tis his kind of speech,—he did not mock  
us.*Sec. Cit.* Not one amongst us, save yourself, but says  
He us'd us scornfully: he should have show'd us  
His marks of merit, wounds receiv'd for's country.*Sic.* Why, so he did, I am sure.*Citizens,*

No, no; no man saw 'em.

*Third Cit.* He said he had wounds, which he could show  
in private;And with his hat, thus waving it in scorn,  
"I would be consul," says he: "aged custom,  
But by your voices, will not so permit me;  
Your voices therefore:" when we granted that,  
Here was, "I thank you for your voices,—thank you,—  
Your most sweet voices:—now you have left your  
voices,

I have no further with you:"—was not this mockery?

*Sic.* Why, either were you ignorant to see't?Or, seeing it, of such childish friendliness  
To yield your voices?*Bru.*

Could you not have told him,

As you were lesson'd,—when he had no power,  
But was a petty servant to the state,  
He was your enemy; ever spake against  
Your liberties, and the charters that you bear  
I' the body of the weal: and now, arriving  
A place of potency, and sway o' the state,  
If he should still malignantly remain  
Fast foe to the plebeii, your voices might  
Be curses to yourselves? You should have said,  
That as his worthy deeds did claim no less  
Than what he stood for, so his gracious nature  
Would think upon you for your voices, and  
Translate his malice towards you into love,  
Standing your friendly lord.*Sic.*

Thus to have said,

As you were fore-advis'd, had touch'd his spirit

And tried his inclination; from him pluck'd  
Either his gracious promise, which you might,  
As cause had call'd you up, have held him to;  
Or else it would have gall'd his surly nature,  
Which easily endures not article  
Tying him to aught; so, putting him to rage,  
You should have ta'en the advantage of his choler,  
And pass'd him unelected.

*Bru.* Did you perceive  
He did solicit you in free contempt,  
When he did need your loves; and do you think  
That his contempt shall not be bruising to you,  
When he hath power to crush? Why, had your bodies  
No heart among you? or had you tongues to cry  
Against the rectorship of judgment?

*Sic.* Have you,  
Ere now, denied the asker? and now again,  
Of<sup>(49)</sup> him that did not ask, but mock, bestow  
Your su'd-for tongues?

*Third Cit.* He's not confirm'd; we may deny him yet.

*Sec. Cit.* And will deny him:

I'll have five hundred voices of that sound.

*First Cit.* I twice five hundred, and their friends to piece  
'em.

*Bru.* Get you hence instantly; and tell those friends,  
They have chose a consul that will from them take  
Their liberties; make them of no more voice  
Than dogs, that are as often beat for barking,  
As therefore kept to do so.

*Sic.* Let them assemble;  
And, on a safer judgment, all revoke  
Your ignorant election: enforce his pride,  
And his old hate unto you: besides, forget not  
With what contempt he wore the humble weed;  
How in his suit he scorn'd you: but your loves,  
Thinking upon his services, took from you  
The apprehension of his present portance,  
Which most gibingly, ungravely, he did fashion  
After the inveterate hate he bears you.

*Bru.* *Lay*  
A fault on us, your tribunes; that we labour'd  
(No impediment between) but that you must  
Cast your election on him.

*Sic.* Say, you chose him  
More after our commandment than as guided  
By your own true affections; and that, your minds,  
Pre-occupied with what you rather must do  
Than what you should, made you against the grain  
To voice him consul: lay the fault on us:

*Bru.* Ay, spare us not. Say we read lectures to  
you,  
How youngly he began to serve his country,  
How long continu'd: and what stock he springs of,—  
The noble house o' the Marcians; from whence came  
That Ancus Marcius, Numa's daughter's son,  
Who, after great Hostilius, here was king;  
Of the same house Publius and Quintus were,  
That our best water brought by conduits hither;  
And Censorinus, darling of the people,<sup>(60)</sup>  
And nobly nam'd so, twice being censor,  
Was his great ancestor.

*Sic.* One thus descended,  
That hath beside well in his person wrought  
To be set high in place, we did commend  
To your remembrances: but you have found,  
Scaling his present bearing with his past,  
That he's your fixèd enemy, and revoke  
Your sudden approbation.

*Bru.* Say, you ne'er had done't  
(Harp on that still) but by our putting on:  
And presently, when you have drawn your number,  
Repair to the Capitol.

*Citizens.* We will so: almost all  
Repent in their election.

[*Exeunt.*

*Bru.* Let them go on;  
This mutiny were better put in hazard,  
Than stay, past doubt, for greater:  
If, as his nature is, he fall in rage



With their refusal, both observe and answer  
The vantage of his anger.

*Sic.* To the Capitol, come :  
We will be there before the stream o' the people ;  
And this shall seem, as partly 'tis, their own,  
Which we have goaded onward.

[*Exeunt.*]

### ACT III.

#### SCENE I. *Rome. A street.*

*Cornets. Enter CORIOLANUS, MENENIUS, COMINIUS, TITUS  
LARTIUS, Senators, and Patricians.*

*Cor.* Tullus Aufidius, then, had made new head ?

*Lart.* He had, my lord ; and that it was which caus'd  
Our swifter composition.

*Cor.* So, then, the Volscies stand but as at first ;  
Ready, when time shall prompt them, to make road  
Upon's again.

*Com.* They are worn, lord consul, so,  
That we shall hardly in our ages see  
Their banners wave again.

*Cor.* Saw you Aufidius ?

*Lart.* On safe-guard he came to me ; and did curse  
Against the Volscies, for they had so vilely  
Yielded the town : he is retir'd to Antium.

*Cor.* Spoke he of me ?

*Lart.* He did, my lord.

*Cor.* How ? what ?

*Lart.* How often he had met you, sword to sword ;  
That of all things upon the earth he hated  
Your person most ; that he would pawn his fortunes  
To hopeless restitution, so he might  
Be call'd your vanquisher.

*Cor.* At Antium lives he ?

*Lart.* At Antium.

*Cor.* I wish I had a cause to seek him there,  
To oppose his hatred fully.—Welcome home. [*To Lartius.*

*Enter SIGINIUS and BRUTUS.*

Behold, these are the tribunes of the people,  
The tongues o' the common mouth: I do despise them;  
For they do prank them in authority,  
Against all noble sufferance.

*Sic.* Pass no further.

*Cor.* Ha! what is that?

*Bru.* It will be dangerous to go on: no further.

*Cor.* What makes this change?

*Men.* The matter?

*Com.* Hath he not pass'd the nobles and the commons?<sup>(51)</sup>

*Bru.* Cominius, no.

*Cor.* Have I had children's voices?

*First Sen.* Tribunes, give way; he shall to the market-place.

*Bru.* The people are incens'd against him.

*Sic.* Stop,

Or all will fall in broil.

*Cor.* Are these your herd?—

Must these have voices, that can yield them now,  
And straight disclaim their tongues?—What are your offices?  
You being their mouths, why rule you not their teeth?  
Have you not set them on?

*Men.* Be calm, be calm.

*Cor.* It is a purpos'd thing, and grows by plot,  
To curb the will of the nobility:  
Suffer't, and live with such as cannot rule,  
Nor ever will be rul'd.

*Bru.* Call't not a plot:

The people cry you mock'd them; and of late,  
When corn was given them gratis, you repin'd;  
Scandal'd the suppliants for the people,—call'd them  
Time-pleasers, flatterers, foes to nobleness.

*Cor.* Why, this was known before.

*Bru.* Not to them all.

*Cor.* Have you inform'd them sithence?

*Bru.* How! I inform them!

*Cor.*<sup>(52)</sup> You are like to do such business.

*Bru.* Not unlike,

Each way, to better yours.

*Cor.* Why, then, should I be consul? By yond clouds,  
Let me deserve so ill as you, and make me  
Your fellow tribune.

*Sic.* You show too much of that  
For which the people stir: if you will pass  
To where you are bound, you must inquire your way,  
Which you are out of, with a gentler spirit;  
Or never be so noble as a consul,  
Nor yoke with him for tribune.

*Men.* Let's be calm.

*Com.* The people are abus'd; set on. This paltering  
Becomes not Rome; nor has Coriolanus  
Deserv'd this so dishonour'd rub, laid falsely  
I' the plain way of his merit.

*Cor.* Tell me of corn!  
This was my speech, and I will speak't again,—

*Men.* Not now, not now.

*First Sen.* Not in this heat, sir, now.

*Cor.* Now, as I live, I will.—My nobler friends,  
I crave their pardons:—  
For the mutable, rank-scented many, let them  
Regard me as I do not flatter, and  
Therein behold themselves: I say again,  
In soothing them, we nourish 'gainst our senate  
The cockle of rebellion, insolence, sedition,  
Which we ourselves have plough'd for, sow'd, and scatter'd,  
By mingling them with us, the honour'd number;  
Who lack not virtue, no, nor power, but that  
Which they have given to beggars.

*Men.* Well, no more.

*First Sen.* No more words, we beseech you.

*Cor.* How! no more!  
As for my country I have shed my blood,

Not fearing outward force, so shall my lungs  
Coin words till their decay against those measles,  
Which we disdain should tetter us, yet sought  
The very way to catch them.

*Bru.* You speak o' the people,  
As if you were a god to punish, not  
A man of their infirmity.

*Sic.* 'Twere well  
We let the people know't.

*Men.* What, what? his choler?

*Cor.* Choler!  
Were I as patient as the midnight sleep,  
By Jove, 'twould be my mind!

*Sic.* It is a mind  
That shall remain a poison where it is,  
Not poison any further.

*Cor.* Shall remain!—  
Hear you this Triton of the minnows? mark you  
His absolute "shall"?

*Com.* 'Twas from the canon.

*Cor.* "Shall"!

O good,<sup>(59)</sup> but most unwise patricians! why,  
You grave, but reckless senators, have you thus  
Given Hydra here<sup>(51)</sup> to choose an officer,  
That with his peremptory "shall," being but  
The horn and noise o' the monster,<sup>(55)</sup> wants not spirit  
To say he'll turn your current in a ditch,  
And make your channel his? If he have power,  
Then veil your ignorance; if none, awake<sup>(58)</sup>  
Your dangerous lenity. If you are learn'd,  
Be not as common fools; if you are not,  
Let them have cushions by you. You are plebeians,  
If they be senators: and they are no less,  
When, both your voices blended, the great'st taste  
Most palates theirs. They choose their magistrate;  
And such a one as he, who puts his "shall,"  
His popular "shall," against a graver bench  
Than ever frown'd in Greece. By Jove himself,  
It makes the consuls base! and my soul aches

To know, when two authorities are up,  
Neither supreme, how soon confusion  
May enter 'twixt the gap of both, and take  
The one by the other.

*Com.* Well,—on to the market-place.

*Cor.* Whoever gave that counsel, to give forth  
The corn o' the storehouse gratis, as 'twas us'd  
Sometime in Greece,—

*Men.* Well, well, no more of that.

*Cor.* Though there the people had more absolute  
power,—

I say, they nourish'd disobedience, fed  
The ruin of the state.

*Bru.* Why, shall the people give  
One that speaks thus their voice?

*Cor.* I'll give my reasons,  
More worthier than their voices. They know the corn  
Was not our<sup>(57)</sup> recompense, resting well assur'd  
They ne'er did service for't: being press'd to the war,  
Even when the navel of the state was touch'd,  
They would not thread the gates,—this kind of service  
Did not deserve corn gratis: being i' the war,  
Their mutinies and revolts, wherein they show'd  
Most valour, spoke not for them: the accusation  
Which they have often made against the senate,  
All cause unborn, could never be the motive<sup>(58)</sup>  
Of our so frank donation. Well, what then?  
How shall this bisson multitude<sup>(59)</sup> digest  
The senate's courtesy? Let deeds express  
What's like to be their words:—"We did request it;  
We are the greater poll, and in true fear  
They gave us our demands:"—thus we debase  
The nature of our seats, and make the rabble  
Call our cares fears; which will in time<sup>(60)</sup>  
Break ope the locks o' the senate, and bring in  
The crows to peck the eagles.

*Men.* Come, enough.

*Bru.* Enough, with over-measure.

*Cor.* No, take more.

What may be sworn by, both divine and human,  
 Seal what I end withal!—This double worship,—  
 Where one part does disdain with cause, the other  
 Insult without all reason; where gentry, title, wisdom,  
 Cannot conclude but by the yea and no  
 Of general ignorance,—it must omit  
 Real necessities, and give way the while  
 To unstable slightness: purpose so barr'd, it follows,  
 Nothing is done to purpose. Therefore, beseech you,—  
 You that will be less fearful than discreet;  
 That love the fundamental part of state  
 More than you doubt the change on 't; that prefer  
 A noble life before a long, and wish  
 To vamp<sup>(61)</sup> a body with a dangerous physic  
 That's sure of death without it,—at once pluck out  
 The multitudinous tongue; let them not lick  
 The sweet which is their poison: your dishonour  
 Mangles true judgment, and bereaves the state  
 Of that integrity which should become 't;  
 Not having the power to do the good it would,  
 For the ill which doth control 't.

*Bru.* *Has<sup>(62)</sup> said enough.*

*Sic.* Has spoken like a traitor, and shall answer  
 As traitors do.

*Cor.* Thou wretch, despite o'erwhelm thee!—  
 What should the people do with these bald tribunes?  
 On whom depending, their obedience fails  
 To the greater bench: in a rebellion,  
 When what's not meet, but what must be, was law,  
 Then were they chosen: in a better hour,  
 Let what is meet be said it must be meet,  
 And throw their power i' the dust.

*Bru.* Manifest treason!

*Sic.* This a consul? no.

*Bru.* The ædiles, ho!—Let him be apprehended.

*Sic.* Go, call the people [*exit Brutus*];—in whose name  
 myself

Attach thee as a traitorous innovator,  
 A foe to the public weal: obey, I charge thee,

And follow to thine answer.

*Cor.* Hence, old goat!

*Sen. and Pat.* We'll surety him.

*Com.* Aged sir, hands off.

*Cor.* Hence, rotten thing! or I shall shake thy bones  
Out of thy garments.

*Sic.* Help, ye citizens!

*Re-enter BRUTUS, with the Aediles, and a rabble of Citizens.*

*Men.* On both sides more respect.

*Sic.* Here's he that would take from you all your power.

*Bru.* Seize him, aediles!

*Citizens.* Down with him! down with him!

*Sec. Sen.* Weapons, weapons, weapons!--

*[They all bustle about Coriolanus.]*

Tribunes, patricians, citizens!--what, ho!--

Sicinius, Brutus, Coriolanus, citizens!

*Citizens.* Peace, peace, peace; stay, hold, peace!

*Men.* What is about to be?—I am out of breath;  
Confusion's near; I cannot speak.—You, tribunes  
To the people,—Coriolanus, patience:—  
Speak, good Sicinius.

*Sic.* Hear me, people; peace!

*Citizens.* Let's hear our tribune: peace!--Speak, speak,  
speak.

*Sic.* You are at point to lose your liberties:  
Marcius would have all from you; Marcius,  
Whom late you have nam'd for consul.

*Men.* Fie, fie, fie!

This is the way to kindle, not to quench.

*First Sen.* To unbuild the city, and to lay all flat.

*Sic.* What is the city but the people?

*Citizens.* True,

The people are the city.

*Bru.* By the consent of all, we were establish'd  
The people's magistrates.

*Citizens.* You so remain.

*Men.* And so are like to do.

*Cor.*<sup>(63)</sup> That is the way to lay the city flat;

To bring the roof to the foundation,  
And bury all, which yet distinctly ranges,  
In heaps and piles of ruin.

*Sic.* This deserves death.

*Bru.* Or let us stand to our authority,  
Or let us lose it.—We do here pronounce,  
Upon the part o' the people, in whose power  
We were elected theirs, Marcius is worthy  
Of present death.

*Sic.* Therefore lay hold of him;  
Bear him to the rock Tarpeian, and from thence  
Into destruction cast him.

*Bru.* Ædiles, seize him!

*Citizens.* Yield, Marcius, yield!

*Men.* Hear me one word;  
Beseech you, tribunes, hear me but a word.

*Æd.* Peace, peace!

*Men.* Be that you seem, truly your country's friends,<sup>(61)</sup>  
And temperately proceed to what you would  
Thus violently redress.

*Bru.* Sir, those cold ways,  
That seem like prudent helps, are very poisonous  
Where the disease is violent.—Lay hands upon him,  
And bear him to the rock.

*Cor.* No, I'll die here. [*Drawing his sword.*  
There's some among you have beheld me fighting:  
Come, try upon yourselves what you have seen me.

*Men.* Down with that sword!—Tribunes, withdraw awhile.

*Bru.* Lay hands upon him.

*Men.* Help Marcius, help,  
You that be noble; help him, young and old!

*Citizens.* Down with him, down with him!

[*In this mutiny, the Tribunes, the Ædiles,  
and the People, are beat in.*

*Men.* Go, get you to your<sup>(65)</sup> house; be gone, away!  
All will be naught else.

*Sec. Sen.* Get you gone.

*Cor.*<sup>(66)</sup> Stand fast;

We have as many friends as enemies.



*Men.* Shall it be put to that?

*First Sen.* The gods forbid!—

I prithee, noble friend, home to thy house;  
Leave us to cure this cause.

*Men.* For 'tis a sore upon us,  
You cannot tent yourself: be gone, beseech you.

*Com.*<sup>(67)</sup> Come, sir, along with us.

*Cor.* I would they were barbarians (as they are,  
Though in Rome litter'd), not Romans (as they are not,  
Though calv'd i' the porch o' the Capitol),—

*Men.* Be gone;  
Put not your worthy rage into your tongue;  
One time will owe another.

*Cor.* On fair ground  
I could beat forty of them.

*Men.* I could myself  
Take up a brace o' the best of them; yea, the two tri-  
bunes.

*Com.* But now 'tis odds beyond arithmetic;  
And manhood is call'd foolery, when it stands  
Against a falling fabric.—Will you hence,  
Before the tag return? whose rage doth rend  
Like interrupted waters, and o'erbear  
What they are us'd to bear.

*Men.* Pray you, be gone:  
I'll try whether my old wit be in request  
With those that have but little: this must be patch'd  
With cloth of any colour.

*Com.* Nay, come away.

[*Exeunt Coriolanus, Cominius, and others.*]

*First Pat.* This man has marr'd his fortune.

*Men.* His nature is too noble for the world:  
He would not flatter Neptune for his trident,  
Or Jove for's power to thunder. His heart's his mouth:  
What his breast forges, that his tongue must vent;  
And, being angry, does forget that ever  
He heard the name of death.— [A noise within.  
Here's goodly work!

*Sec. Pat.* I would they were a-bed!

*Men.* I would they were in Tiber! What, the vengeance,  
Could he not speak 'em fair?

*Re-enter BRUTUS and SICIPIUS, with the rabble.*

*Sic.* Where is this viper,  
That would depopulate the city, and  
Be every man himself?

*Men.* You worthy tribunes,—

*Sic.* He shall be thrown down the Tarpeian rock  
With rigorous hands: he hath resisted law,  
And therefore law shall scorn him further trial  
Than the severity of the public power,  
Which he so sets at naught.

*First Cit.* He shall well know  
The noble tribunes are the people's mouths,  
And we their hands.

*Citizens.* He shall, sure on't.

*Men.* Sir, sir,—

*Sic.* Peace!

*Men.* Do not cry havoc, where you should but hunt  
With modest warrant.

*Sic.* Sir, how comes 't that you  
Have help to make this rescue?

*Men.* Hear me speak:—  
As I do know the consul's worthiness,  
So can I name his faults,—

*Sic.* Consul!—what consul?

*Men.* The consul Coriolanus.

*Bru.* He consul!

*Citizens.* No, no, no, no, no.

*Men.* If, by the tribunes' leave, and yours, good people,  
I may be heard, I would crave a word or two;  
The which shall turn you to no further harm  
Than so much loss of time.

*Sic.* Speak briefly, then;  
For we are peremptory to dispatch  
This viperous traitor: to eject him hence  
Were but one<sup>(28)</sup> danger; and to keep him here

Our certain death: therefore it is decreed  
He dies to-night.

*Men.* Now the good gods forbid  
That our renownèd Rome, whose gratitude  
Towards her deservèd children is emoll'd  
In Jove's own book, like an unnatural dam  
Should now eat up her own!

*Sic.* He's a disease that must be cut away.

*Men.* O, he's a limb that has but a disease;  
Mortal, to cut it off; to cure it, easy.  
What has he done to Rome that's worthy death?  
Killing our enemies, the blood he hath lost  
(Which, I dare vouch, is more than that he hath,  
By many an ounce), he dropp'd it for his country;  
And what is left, to lose it by his country,  
Were to us all, that do't and suffer it,  
A brand to the end o' the world.

*Sic.* This is clean kam.

*Bru.* Merely awry: when he did love his country,  
It honour'd him.

*Men.* The service of the foot  
Being once gangren'd, is not then respected  
For what before it was.

*Bru.* We'll hear no more.—  
Pursue him to his house, and pluck him thence;  
Lest his infection, being of catching nature,  
Spread further.

*Men.* One word more, one word.  
This tiger-footed rage, when it shall find  
The harm of unscann'd swiftness, will, too late,  
Tie leaden pounds to's heels. Proceed by process;  
Lest parties (as he is belov'd) break out,  
And sack great Rome with Romans.

*Bru.* If it were so,—

*Sic.* What do ye talk?  
Have we not had a taste of his obedience?  
Our ædiles smote? ourselves resisted?—come,—

*Men.* Consider this:—he has been bred i' the wars  
Since he could draw a sword, and is ill school'd

In bolted language; meal and bran together  
 He throws without distinction. Give me leave,  
 I'll go to him, and undertake to bring him<sup>(69)</sup>  
 Where he shall answer, by a lawful form,  
 (In peace) to his utmost peril.

*First Sen.* Noble tribunes,  
 It is the humane way: the other course  
 Will prove too bloody; and the end of it  
 Unknown to the beginning.

*Sic.* Noble Menenius,  
 Be you, then, as the people's officer.—  
 Masters, lay down your weapons.

*Bru.* Go not home.

*Siv.* Meet on the market-place.—We'll attend you there:  
 Where, if you bring not Marcius, we'll proceed  
 In our first way.

*Men.* I'll bring him to you.—  
 [*To the Senators*] Let me desire your company: he must come,  
 Or what is worst will follow.

*First Sen.* Pray you, let's to him.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. *A room in CORIOLANUS's house.*

*Enter CORIOLANUS and Patricians.*

*Cor.* Let them pull all about mine ears; present me  
 Death on the wheel, or at wild horses' heels;  
 Or pile ten hills on the Tarpeian rock,  
 That the precipitation might down stretch  
 Below the beam of sight; yet will I still  
 Be thus to them.

*First Pat.* You do the nobler.

*Cor.* I muse my mother  
 Does not approve me further, who was wont  
 To call them woollen vassals, things created  
 To buy and sell with groats; to show bare heads  
 In congregations, to yawn, be still, and wonder,  
 When one but of my ordinance stood up  
 To speak of peace or war.

*Enter VOLUMNIA.*

I talk of you :

Why did you wish me milder ? would you have me  
False to my nature ? Rather say, I play  
The man I am.

*Vol.* O, sir, sir, sir,

I would have had you put your power well on,  
Before you had worn it out.

*Cor.* Let go.

*Vol.* You might have been enough the man you are,  
With striving less to be so : lesser had been  
The thwartings<sup>(70)</sup> of your dispositions, if  
You had not show'd them how ye were dispos'd  
Ere they lack'd power to cross you.

*Cor.* Let them hang.

*Vol.* Ay, and burn too.

*Enter MENENIUS and Senators.*

*Men.* Come, come, you have been too rough, something  
too rough ;

You must return and mend it.

*First Sen.* There's no remedy ;

Unless, by not so doing, our good city  
Cleave in the midst, and perish.

*Vol.* Pray, be counsell'd :

I have a heart as little apt as yours,<sup>(71)</sup>  
But yet a brain that leads my use of anger  
To better vantage.

*Men.* Well said, noble woman !

Before he should thus stoop to the herd,<sup>(72)</sup> but that  
The violent fit o' the time craves it as physic  
For the whole state, I would put mine armour on,  
Which I can scarcely bear.

*Cor.* What must I do ?

*Men.* Return to the tribunes.

*Cor.* Well, what then ? what then ?

*Men.* Repent what you have spoke.

*Cor.* For them ?—I cannot do it to the gods ;  
Must I, then, do't to them ?

*Vol.* You are too absolute ;  
Though therein you can never be too noble,  
But when extremities speak. I have heard you say,  
Honour and policy, like unsever'd friends,  
I' the war do grow together : grant that, and tell me,  
In peace what each of them by the other lose,  
That they combine not there.

*Cor.* Tush, tush !

*Men.* A good demand.

*Vol.* If it be honour in your wars to seem  
The same you are not (which, for your best ends,  
You adopt your policy), how is it less or worse,  
That it shall hold companionship in peace  
With honour, as in war ; since that to both  
It stands in like request ?

*Cor.* Why force you this ?

*Vol.* Because that now it lies you on to speak  
'To the people ; not by your own instruction,  
Nor by the matter which your heart prompts you,<sup>(74)</sup>  
But with such words that are but rooted in<sup>(74)</sup>  
Your tongue, though but bastards, and syllables  
Of no allowance, to your bosom's truth.  
Now, this no more dishonours you at all  
Than to take in a town with gentle words,  
Which else would put you to your fortune, and  
The hazard of much blood.  
I would dissemble with my nature, where  
My fortunes and my friends at stake requir'd  
I should do so in honour : I am, in this,  
Your wife, your son, these senators, the nobles ;  
And you will rather show our general louts  
How you can frown, than spend a fawn upon 'em,  
For the inheritance of their loves, and safeguard  
Of what that want might ruin.

*Men.* Noble lady !—

Come, go with us ; speak fair : you may salve so,  
Not what is dangerous present, but the loss  
Of what is past.

*Vol.* I prithee now, my son,

Go to them, with this bonnet in thy hand ;  
 And thus far having stretch'd it (here be with them),  
 Thy knee bussing the stones (for in such business  
 Action is eloquence, and the eyes of the ignorant  
 More learnèd than the ears), waving thy head,  
 Which<sup>(75)</sup> often, thus, correcting thy stout heart,  
 Now humble as the ripest mulberry  
 That will not hold the handling: or say to them,  
 Thou art their soldier, and, being bred in broils,  
 Hast not the soft way, which, thou dost confess,  
 Were fit for thee to use, as they to claim,  
 In asking their good loves; but thou wilt frame  
 Thyself, forsooth, hereafter theirs, so far  
 As thou hast power and person.

*Men.*

This but done,

Even as she speaks, why, their hearts were yours;  
 For they have pardons, being ask'd, as free  
 As words to little purpose.

*Vol.*

Prithce now,

Go, and be rul'd: although I know thou hadst rather  
 Follow thine enemy in a fiery gulf  
 Than flatter him in a bower.—Here is Cominius.

*Enter COMINIUS.*

*Com.* I have been i' the market-place; and, sir, 'tis fit  
 You make strong party, or defend yourself  
 By calmness or by absence: all's in anger.

*Men.* Only fair speech.

*Com.*

I think 'twill serve, if he

Can thereto frame his spirit.

*Vol.*

He must, and will.—

Prithce now, say you will, and go about it.

*Cor.* Must I go show them my unbarb'd sence? must I,  
 With my base tongue, give to my noble heart  
 A lie, that it must bear? Well, I will do't:  
 Yet, were there but this single plot to lose,  
 'This mould of Marcius, they to dust should grind it,  
 And throw't against the wind.—To the market-place:—  
 You have put me now to such a part, which never

I shall discharge to the life.

*Com.* Come, come, we'll prompt you.

*Vol.* I prithee now, sweet son,—as thou hast said  
My praises made thee first a soldier, so,  
To have my praise for this, perform a part  
Thou hast not done before.

*Cor.* Well, I must do't:  
Away, my disposition, and possess me  
Some harlot's spirit! my throat of war be turn'd,  
Which quired<sup>(70)</sup> with my drum, into a pipe  
Small as an eunuch, or the virgin voice  
That babies lulls asleep! the smiles of knaves  
Tent in my cheeks; and schoolboys' tears take up  
The glasses of my sight! a beggar's tongue  
Make motion through my lips; and my arm'd knees,  
Who bow'd but in my stirrup, bend like his  
That hath receiv'd an alms!—I will not do't;  
Lest I surcease to honour mine own truth,  
And, by my body's action, teach my mind  
A most inherent baseness.

*Vol.* At thy choice, then:  
To beg of thee, it is my more dishonour  
Than thou of them. Come all to ruin: let  
Thy mother rather feel thy pride than fear  
Thy dangerous stoutness; for I mock at death  
With as big heart as thou. Do as thou list.  
Thy valiantness was mine, thou suck'dst it from me;  
But owe thy pride thyself.

*Cor.* Pray, be content:  
Mother, I am going to the market-place;  
Chide me no more. I'll mountebank their loves,  
Cog their hearts from them, and come home belov'd  
Of all the trades in Rome. Look, I am going:  
Commend me to my wife. I'll return consul;  
Or never trust to what my tongue can do  
I' the way of flattery further.

*Vol.* Do your will. [Exit.]

*Com.* Away! the tribunes do attend you: arm yourself  
To answer mildly; for they are prepar'd



With accusations, as I hear, more strong  
Than are upon you yet.

*Cor.* The word is, mildly :—pray you, let us go :  
Let them accuse me by invention, I  
Will answer in mine honour.

*Men.* Ay, but mildly.

*Cor.* Well, mildly be it, then ; mildly. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. *The same. The Forum.*

*Enter SICINIUS and BRUTUS.*

*Bru.* In this point charge him home,—that he affects  
Tyrannical power : if he evade us there,  
Enforce him with his envy to the people ;  
And that the spoil got on the Antiates  
Was ne'er distributed.

*Enter an Edile.*

What, will he come ?

*Ed.* He's coming.

*Bru.* How accompanied ?

*Ed.* With old Menenius, and those senators  
That always favour'd him.

*Sic.* Have you a catalogue  
Of all the voices that we have procur'd,  
Set down by the poll ?

*Ed.* I have ; 'tis ready.

*Sic.* Have you collected them by tribes ?

*Ed.* I have.

*Sic.* Assemble presently the people hither :  
And when they hear me say, " It shall be so  
I' the right and strength o' the commons," be it either  
For death, for fine, or banishment, then let them,  
If I say fine, cry " Fine,"—if death, cry " Death ;"  
Insisting on the old prerogative  
And power i' the truth o' the cause.

*Ed.* I shall inform them.

*Bru.* And when such time they have begun to cry,

Let them not cease, but with a din confus'd  
Enforce the present execution  
Of what we chance to sentence.

*Æd.* Very well.

*Sic.* Make them be strong, and ready for this hint,  
When we shall hap to give't them.

*Bru.* Go about it.— [*Exit Ædile.*]

Put him to choler straight: he hath been us'd  
Ever to conquer, and to have his worth<sup>(77)</sup>  
Of contradiction: being once chaf'd, he cannot  
Be rein'd again to temperance; then he speaks  
What's in his heart; and that is there which looks  
With us to break his neck.

*Sic.* Well, here he comes.

*Enter CORIOLANUS, MENENIUS, COMINIUS, Senators, and Patricians*

*Men.* Calmly, I do beseech you.

*Cor.* Ay, as an ostler, that for the poorest piece  
Will bear the knave by the volume.—The honour'd gods  
Keep Rome in safety, and the chairs of justice  
Supplied with worthy men! plant love among's!  
Throng<sup>(78)</sup> our large temples with the shows of peace,  
And not our streets with war!

*First Sen.* Amen, amen.

*Men.* A noble wish.

*Re-enter Ædile, with Citizens.*

*Sic.* Draw near, ye people.

*Æd.* List to your tribunes; audience: peace, I say!

*Cor.* First, hear me speak.

*Both Tri.* Well, say.—Peace, ho!

*Cor.* Shall I be charg'd no further than this present?  
Must all determine here?

*Sic.* I do demand,

If you submit you to the people's voices,  
Allow their officers, and are content  
To suffer lawful censure for such faults  
As shall be prov'd upon you?

*Cor.* I am content.

*Men.* Lo, citizens, he says he is content :  
The warlike service he has done, consider ; think  
Upon the wounds his body bears, which show  
Like graves i' the holy churchyard.

*Cor.* Scratches with briers,  
Scars to move laughter only.

*Men.* Consider further,  
That when he speaks not like a citizen,  
You find him like a soldier : do not take  
His rougher accents<sup>(70)</sup> for malicious sounds,  
But, as I say, such as become a soldier,  
Rather than envy you.

*Com.* Well, well, no more.

*Cor.* What is the matter,  
That being pass'd for consul with full voice,  
I am so dishonour'd, that the very hour  
You take it off again ?

*Sic.* Answer to us.

*Cor.* Say, then : 'tis true, I ought so.

*Sic.* We charge you, that you have contriv'd to take  
From Rome all season'd office, and to wind  
Yourself into a power tyrannical ;  
For which you are a traitor to the people.

*Com.* How ! traitor !

*Men.* Nay, temperately ; your promise.

*Cor.* The fires i' the lowest hell fold-in the people !  
Call me their traitor !—Thou injurious tribune !  
Within thine eyes sat twenty thousand deaths,  
In thy hands clutch'd as many millions, in  
Thy lying tongue both numbers, I would say,  
Thou liest, unto thee, with a voice as free  
As I do pray the gods.

*Sic.* Mark you this, people ?

*Citizens.* To the rock, to the rock with him !

*Sic.* Peace !

We need not put new matter to his charge :  
What you have seen him do, and heard him speak,  
Beating your officers, cursing yourselves,  
Opposing laws with strokes, and here defying

Those whose great power must try him ; even this,  
So criminal, and in such capital kind,  
Deserves the extremest death.

*Bru.* But since he hath  
Serv'd well for Rome,—

*Cor.* What do you prate of service ?

*Bru.* I talk of that, that know it.

*Cor.* You ?

*Men.* Is this the promise that you made your mother ?

*Com.* Know, I pray you,—

*Cor.* I'll know no further :

Let them pronounce the steep Tarpeian death,  
Vagabond exile, flaying, pent to linger  
But with a grain a day,—I would not buy  
Their mercy at the price of one fair word ;  
Nor check my courage<sup>(80)</sup> for what they can give,  
To have't with saying, Good morrow.

*Sic.* For that he has  
(As much as in him lies) from time to time  
Envied against the people, seeking means  
To pluck away their power ; as now at last  
Given hostile strokes, and that not in the presence  
Of dreaded justice, but on the ministers  
That do distribute it ;—in the name o' the people,  
And in the power of us the tribunes, we,  
Even from this instant, banish him our city ;  
In peril of precipitation  
From off the rock Tarpeian, never more  
To enter our Rome gates : i' the people's name,  
I say it shall be so.

*Citizens.* It shall be so, it shall be so ; let him away :  
He's banish'd, and it shall be so.

*Com.* Hear me, my masters, and my common friends,—

*Sic.* He's sentenc'd ; no more hearing.

*Com.* Let me speak :

I have been consul, and can show for<sup>(81)</sup> Rome  
Her enemies' marks upon me. I do love  
My country's good with a respect more tender,  
More holy, and profound, than mine own life,

My dear wife's estimate, her womb's increase,  
And treasure of my loins; then if I would  
Speak that,—

*Sic.* We know your drift:—speak what?

*Bru.* There's no more to be said, but he is banish'd,  
As enemy to the people and his country:  
It shall be so.

*Citizens.* It shall be so, it shall be so.

*Cor.* You common cry of curs! whose breath I hate  
As reek o' the rotten fens, whose loves I prize  
As the dead carcasses of unburied men  
That do corrupt my air,—I banish you;  
And here remain with your uncertainty!  
Let every feeble rumour shake your hearts!  
Your enemies, with nodding of their plumes,  
Fan you into despair! Have the power still  
To banish your defenders; till at length  
Your ignorance (which finds not till it feels),  
Making not<sup>(82)</sup> reservation of yourselves  
(Still your own foes), deliver you, as most  
Abated captives, to some nation  
That won you without blows! Despising,  
For you, the city, thus I turn my back:  
There is a world elsewhere.

*[Exeunt Coriolanus, Cominius, Menenius, Senators, and Patricians.]*

*Æd.* The people's enemy is gone, is gone!

*Citizens.* Our enemy is banish'd! he is gone! Hoo! hoo!

*[Shouting, and throwing up their caps.]*

*Sic.* Go, see him out at gates, and follow him,  
As he hath follow'd you, with all despite;  
Give him deserv'd vexation. Let a guard  
Attend us through the city.

*Citizens.* Come, come, let's see him out at gates; come:—  
The gods preserve our noble tribunes!—come. *[Exeunt.]*

## ACT IV.

SCENE I. *Rome. Before a gate of the city.*

*Enter CORIOLANUS, VOLUMNIA, VIRGILIA, MENENIUS, COMINIUS,  
and several young Patricians.*

*Cor.* Come, leave your tears; a brief farewell:—the beast  
With many heads butts me away.—Nay, mother,  
Where is your ancient courage? you were us'd  
To say extremity<sup>(83)</sup> was the trier of spirits;  
That common chances common men could bear;  
That, when the sea was calm, all boats alike  
Show'd mastership in floating; fortune's blows,  
When most struck home, being gentle wounded,<sup>(84)</sup> craves  
A noble cunning: you were us'd to load me  
With precepts that would make invincible  
The heart that conn'd them.

*Vir.* O heavens! O heavens!

*Cor.* Nay, I prithee, woman,—

*Vol.* Now the red pestilence strike all trades in Rome,  
And occupations perish!

*Cor.* What, what, what!

I shall be lov'd when I am lack'd. Nay, mother,  
Resume that spirit, when you were wont to say,  
If you had been the wife of Hercules,  
Six of his labours you'd have done, and sav'd  
Your husband so much sweat.—Cominius,  
Droop not; adieu.—Farewell, my wife,—my mother:  
I'll do well yet.—Thou old and true Menenius,  
Thy tears are saltier than a younger man's,  
And venomous to thine eyes.—My sometime general,  
I have seen thee stern, and thou hast oft beheld  
Heart-hardening spectacles; tell these sad women,  
'Tis fond to wail inevitable strokes,  
As 'tis to laugh at 'em.—My mother, you wot well  
My hazards still have been your solace: and  
Believe't not lightly (though I go alone,  
Like to a lonely dragon, that his fen

Makes fear'd and talk'd of more than seen), your son  
Will or exceed the common, or be caught  
With cautelous baits and practice.

*Vol.* My first son,  
Whither wilt thou go? Take good Cominius  
With thee awhile: determine on some course,  
More than a wild exposure<sup>(35)</sup> to each chance  
That starts i' the way before thee.

*Cor.* O the gods!

*Com.* I'll follow thee a month, devise with thee  
Where thou shalt rest, that thou mayst hear of us,  
And we of thee: so, if the time thrust forth  
A cause for thy repeal, we shall not send  
O'er the vast world to seek a single man;  
And lose advantage, which doth ever cool  
I' the absence of the needer.

*Cor.* Fare ye well:  
Thou hast years upon thee; and thou art too full  
Of the wars' surfeits, to go rove with one  
That's yet unbruised: bring me but out at gate.—  
Come, my sweet wife, my dearest mother, and  
My friends of noble touch; when I am forth,  
Bid me farewell, and smile. I pray you, come.  
While I remain above the ground, you shall  
Hear from me still; and never of me aught  
But what is like me formerly.

*Men.* That's worthily  
As any ear can hear.—Come, let's not weep.—  
If I could shake off but one seven years  
From these old arms and legs, by the good gods,  
I'd with thee every foot.

*Cor.* Give me thy hand:—  
Come.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE II. *The same. A street near the gate.*

*Enter SICINIUS, BRUTUS, and an Ædile.*

*Sic.* Bid them all home; he's gone, and we'll no further.—

The nobility are vex'd, whom we see have sided  
In his behalf.

*Bru.* Now we have shown our power,  
Let us seem humbler after it is done  
Than when it was a-doing.

*Sic.* Bid them home :  
Say their great enemy is gone, and they  
Stand in their ancient strength.

*Bru.* Dismiss them home. [*Exit Ædile.*]  
Here comes his mother.

*Sic.* Let's not meet her.

*Bru.* Why ?

*Sic.* They say she's mad.

*Bru.* They have ta'en note of us : keep on your way.

*Enter VOLUMNIA, VIRGILIA, and MENENIUS.*

*Vol.* O, ye're well met : the hoarded plague o' the gods  
Requite your love !

*Men.* Peace, peace ; be not so loud.

*Vol.* If that I could for weeping, you should hear,—  
Nay, and you shall hear some.—Will you be gone ?

[*To Brutus.*]

*Vir.* You shall stay too [*to Sicinius*] : I would I had the  
power  
To say so to my husband.

*Sic.* Are you mankind ?

*Vol.* Ay, fool ; is that a shame ?—Note but this fool.—  
Was not a man my father ? Hadst thou foxship  
To banish him that struck more blows for Rome  
Than thou hast spoken words ?—

*Sic.* O blessèd heavens !

*Vol.* More noble blows than ever thou wise words ;  
And for Rome's good.—I'll tell thee what ;—yet go :—  
Nay, but thou shalt stay too :—I would my son  
Were in Arabia, and thy tribe before him,  
His good sword in his hand.

*Sic.* What then ?

*Vir.* What then !

He'd make an end of thy posterity.



*Vol.* Bastards and all.—

Good man, the wounds that he does bear for Rome!

*Men.* Come, come, peace.

*Sic.* I would he had continu'd to his country  
As he began, and not unknit himself  
The noble knot he made.

*Bru.* I would he had.

*Vol.* I would he had! 'Twas you incens'd the rabble;—  
Cats,<sup>(86)</sup> that can judge as fitly of his worth  
As I can of those mysteries which heaven  
Will not have earth to know.

*Bru.* Pray, let us go.

*Vol.* Now, pray, sir, get you gone:  
You have done a brave deed. Ere you go, hear this:—  
As far as doth the Capitol exceed  
The meanest house in Rome, so far my son  
(This lady's husband here, this, do you see),  
Whom you have banish'd, does exceed you all.

*Bru.* Well, well, we'll leave you.

*Sic.* Why stay we to be baited  
With one that wants her wits?

*Vol.* Take my prayers with you.—  
I would the gods had nothing else to do [*Exeunt Tribunes.*]  
But to confirm my curses! Could I meet 'em  
But once a-day, it would unclog my heart  
Of what lies heavy to't.

*Men.* You have told them home;  
And, by my troth, you have cause. You'll sup with me?

*Vol.* Anger's my meat; I sup upon myself,  
And so shall starve with feeding.—Come, let's go:  
Leave this faint puling, and lament as I do,  
In anger, Juno-like. Come, come, come.

*Men.* Fie, fie, fie! [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. *A highway between Rome and Antium.*

*Enter a Roman and a Volsc, meeting*

*Rom.* I know you well, sir, and you know me: your name,  
I think, is Adrian.

*Vols.* It is so, sir: truly, I have forgot you.

*Rom.* I am a Roman; and my services are, as you are, against 'em: know you me yet?

*Vols.* Nicanor? no.

*Rom.* The same, sir.

*Vols.* You had more beard when I last saw you; but your favour is well appeared<sup>(87)</sup> by your tongue. What's the news in Rome? I have a note from the Volscian state, to find you out there: you have well saved me a day's journey.

*Rom.* There hath been in Rome strange insurrections; the people against the senators, patricians, and nobles.

*Vols.* Hath been! is it ended, then? Our state thinks not so; they are in a most warlike preparation, and hope to come upon them in the heat of their division.

*Rom.* The main blaze of it is past, but a small thing would make it flame again; for the nobles receive so to heart the banishment of that worthy Coriolanus, that they are in a ripe aptness to take all power from the people, and to pluck from them their tribunes for ever. This lies glowing, I can tell you, and is almost mature for the violent breaking out.

*Vols.* Coriolanus banished!

*Rom.* Banished, sir.

*Vols.* You will be welcome with this intelligence, Nicanor.

*Rom.* The day serves well for them now. I have heard it said, the fittest time to corrupt a man's wife is when she's fallen out with her husband. Your noble Tullus Aufidius will appear well in these wars, his great opposer, Coriolanus, being now in no request of his country.

*Vols.* He cannot choose. I am most fortunate, thus accidentally to encounter you: you have ended my business, and I will merrily accompany you home.

*Rom.* I shall, between this and supper, tell you most strange things from Rome; all tending to the good of their adversaries. Have you an army ready, say you?

*Vols.* A most royal one; the centurions and their charges, distinctly billeted, already in the entertainment, and to be on foot at an hour's warning.

*Rom.* I am joyful to hear of their readiness, and am the

man, I think, that shall set them in present action. So, sir, heartily well met, and most glad of your company.

*Fols.* You take my part from me, sir; I have the most cause to be glad of yours.

*Rom.* Well, let us go together.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV. *Antium. Before Aufidius's house.*

*Enter CORIOLANUS in mean apparel, disguised and muffled.*

*Cor.* A goodly city is this Antium.—City,  
'Tis I that made thy widows: many an heir  
Of these fair edifices 'fore my wars  
Have I heard groan and drop: then know me not;  
Lest that thy wives with spits, and boys with stones,  
In puny battle slay me.

*Enter a Citizen.*

Save you, sir.

*Cit.* And you.

*Cor.* Direct me, if it be your will,  
Where great Aufidius lies: is he in Antium?

*Cit.* He is, and feasts the nobles of the state  
At his house this night.

*Cor.* Which is his house, beseech you?

*Cit.* This, here, before you.

*Cor.* Thank you, sir: farewell.

[*Exit Citizen.*]

O world, thy slippery turns! Friends now fast sworn,  
Whose double bosoms seem to wear one heart,  
Whose house,<sup>(68)</sup> whose bed, whose meal, and exercise,  
Are still together, who twin, as 'twere, in love  
Unseparable, shall within this hour,  
On a dissension of a doit, break out  
To bitterest enmity: so, fellest foes,  
Whose passions and whose plots have broke their sleep  
To take the one the other, by some chance,  
Some trick not worth an egg, shall grow dear friends  
And interjoin their issues. So with me:  
My birth-place hate<sup>(69)</sup> I, and my love's upon

This enemy town.—I'll enter: if he slay me,  
He does fair justice; if he give me way,  
I'll do his country service.

[*Exit.*

SCENE V. *The same. A hall in AUFIDIUS'S house.*

*Music within. Enter a Servant.*

*First Serv.* Wine, wine, wine!—What service is here! I  
think our fellows are asleep. [Exit.

*Enter a second Servant.*

*Sec. Serv.* Where's Cötus? my master calls for him.—  
Cötus! [Exit.

*Enter CORIOLANUS.*

*Cor.* A goodly house: the feast smells well; but I  
Appear not like a guest.

*Re-enter the first Servant.*

*First Serv.* What would you have, friend? whence are  
you? Here's no place for you: pray, go to the door. [Exit.

*Cor.* I have deserv'd no better entertainment,  
In being Coriolanus.

*Re-enter second Servant.*

*Sec. Serv.* Whence are you, sir? Has the porter his  
eyes in his head, that he gives entrance to such companions?  
Pray, get you out.

*Cor.* Away!

*Sec. Serv.* Away! get you away.

*Cor.* Now thou'rt troublesome.

*Sec. Serv.* Are you so brave? I'll have you talked with  
anon.

*Enter a third Servant. The first meets him.*<sup>(90)</sup>

*Third Serv.* What fellow's this?

*First Serv.* A strange one as ever I looked on: I cannot  
get him out o' the house: prithee, call my master to him.

*Third Serv.* What have you to do here, fellow? Pray  
you, avoid the house.

*Cor.* Let me but stand; I will not hurt your hearth.

*Third Serv.* What are you?

*Cor.* A gentleman.

*Third Serv.* A marvellous poor one.

*Cor.* True, so I am.

*Third Serv.* Pray you, poor gentleman, take up some other station; here's no place for you; pray you, avoid: come.

*Cor.* Follow your function, go,  
And batten on cold bits. [Pushes him away.]

*Third Serv.* What, you will not?—Prithee, tell my master what a strange guest he has here.

*Sec. Serv.* And I shall. [Exit.]

*Third Serv.* Where dwellest thou?

*Cor.* Under the canopy.

*Third Serv.* Under the canopy!

*Cor.* Ay.

*Third Serv.* Where's that?

*Cor.* I' the city of kites and crows.

*Third Serv.* I' the city of kites and crows!—What an ass it is!—Then thou dwellest with daws too?

*Cor.* No, I serve not thy master.

*Third Serv.* How, sir! do you meddle with my master?

*Cor.* Ay; 'tis an honest service than to meddle with thy mistress:

Thou prat'st, and prat'st; serve with thy trencher, hence!  
[Beats him in.]

*Enter Aufidius and the second Servant.*

*Auf.* Where is this fellow?

*Sec. Serv.* Here, sir: I'd have beaten him like a dog, but for disturbing the lords within.

*Auf.* Whence com'st thou? what wouldst thou? thy name?

Why speak'st not? speak, man: what's thy name?

*Cor.* If, Tullus,<sup>(1)</sup> [Unmuffling.]  
Not yet thou know'st me, and, seeing me, dost not  
Think me for the man I am, necessity  
Commands me name myself.

*Auf.* What is thy name?

*[Servants retire.]*

*Cor.* A name unmusical to the Volscians' ears,  
And harsh in sound to thine.

*Auf.* Say, what's thy name?

Thou hast a grim appearance, and thy face  
Bears a command in 't; though thy tackle's torn,  
Thou show'st a noble vessel: what's thy name?

*Cor.* Prepare thy brow to frown:—know'st thou me yet?

*Auf.* I know thee not:—thy name?

*Cor.* My name is Caius Marcius, who hath done  
To thee particularly, and to all the Volscies,  
Great hurt and mischief; thereto witness may  
My surname, Coriolanus: the painful service,  
The extreme dangers, and the drops of blood  
Shed for my thankless country, are requited  
But with that surname; a good memory,  
And witness of the malice and displeasure  
Which thou shouldst bear me: only that name remains;  
The cruelty and envy of the people,  
Permitted by our dastard nobles, who  
Have all forsook me, hath devour'd the rest;  
And suffer'd me by the voice of slaves to be  
Whoop'd out of Rome. Now, this extremity  
Hath brought me to thy hearth: not out of hope,  
Mistake me not, to save my life; for if  
I had fear'd death, of all the men i' the world  
I would have voided thee; but in mere spite,  
To be full quit of those my banishers,  
Stand I before thee here. Then if thou hast  
A heart of wreak in thee, that wilt<sup>(92)</sup> revenge  
Thine own particular wrongs, and stop those mains  
Of shame seen through thy country, speed thee straight,  
And make my misery serve thy turn: so use it,  
That my revengeful services may prove  
As benefits to thee; for I will fight  
Against my canker'd country with the spleen  
Of all the under fiends. But if so be  
Thou dar'st not this, and that to prove more fortunes

Thou'rt tir'd, then, in a word, I also am  
Longér to live most weary, and present  
My throat to thee and to thy ancient malice ;  
Which not to cut would show thee but a fool,  
Since I have ever follow'd thee with hate,  
Drawn tuns of blood out of thy country's breast,  
And cannot live but to thy shame, unless  
It be to do thee service.

*Auf.* O Marcus, Marcus !

Each word thou hast spoke hath weeded from my heart  
A root of ancient envy. If Jupiter<sup>(93)</sup>  
Should from yond cloud speak divine things,  
And say, " 'Tis true," I'd not believe them more  
Than thee, all noble Marcus.—Let me twine  
Mine arms about that body, where against  
My grainèd ash an hundred times hath broke,  
And scar'd<sup>(94)</sup> the moon with splinters: here I clasp  
The anvil of my sword; and do contest  
As hotly and as nobly with thy love  
As ever in ambitious strength I did  
Contend against thy valour. Know thou first,  
I lov'd the maid I married; never man  
Sigh'd truer breath; but that I see thee here,  
Thou noble thing! more dances my rapt heart  
Than when I first my wedded mistress saw  
Bestride my threshold. Why, thou Mars! I tell thee,  
We have a power on foot; and I had purpose  
Once more to hew thy target from thy brawn,  
Or lose mine arm for't: thou hast beat me out  
Twelve several times, and I have nightly since  
Dreamt of encounters 'twixt thyself and me;  
We have been down together in my sleep,  
Unbuckling helms, fisting each other's throat,  
And wak'd half dead with nothing. Worthy Marcus,  
Had we no other<sup>(95)</sup> quarrel else to Rome, but that  
Thou art thence banish'd, we would muster all  
From twelve to seventy; and, pouring war  
Into the bowels of ungrateful Rome,  
Like a bold flood o'er-bear.<sup>(96)</sup> O, come, go in,

And take our friendly senators by the hands;  
 Who now are here, taking their leaves of me,  
 Who am prepar'd against your territories,  
 Though not for Rome itself.

*Cor.* You bless me, gods!

*Auf.* Therefore, most absolute sir, if thou wilt have  
 The leading of thine own revenges, take  
 The one half of my commission; and set down,—  
 As best thou art experienc'd, since thou know'st  
 Thy country's strength and weakness,—thine own ways;  
 Whether to knock against the gates of Rome,  
 Or rudely visit them in parts remote,  
 To fright them, ere destroy. But come in:  
 Let me commend thee first to those that shall  
 Say yea to thy desires. A thousand welcomes!  
 And more a friend than e'er an enemy;  
 Yet, Marcius, that was much. Your hand: most welcome!

[*Exeunt Coriolanus and Aufidius.*]

*First Serv.* [*advancing*] Here's a strange alteration!

*Sec. Serv.* By my hand, I had thought to have stricken  
 him with a cudgel; and yet my mind gave me his clothes  
 made a false report of him.

*First Serv.* What an arm he has! he turned me about  
 with his finger and his thumb, as one would set up a top.

*Sec. Serv.* Nay, I knew by his face that there was some-  
 thing in him: he had, sir, a kind of face, methought,—I  
 cannot tell how to term it.

*First Serv.* He had so; looking as it were,—Would I  
 were hanged, but I thought there was more in him than I  
 could think.

*Sec. Serv.* So did I, I'll be sworn: he is simply the rarest  
 man i' the world.

*First Serv.* I think he is: but a greater soldier than he,  
 you wot on.<sup>(97)</sup>

*Sec. Serv.* Who, my master?

*First Serv.* Nay, it's no matter for that.

*Sec. Serv.* Worth six on him.

*First Serv.* Nay, not so neither: but I take him to be  
 the greater soldier.



*Sec. Serv.* Faith, look you, one cannot tell how to say that: for the defence of a town, our general is excellent.

*First Serv.* Ay, and for an assault too.

*Re-enter third Servant.*

*Third Serv.* O slaves, I can tell you news,—news, you rascals!

*First and Sec. Serv.* What, what, what? let's partake.

*Third Serv.* I would not be a Roman, of all nations; I had as lieve be a condemned man.

*First and Sec. Serv.* Wherefore? wherefore?

*Third Serv.* Why, here's he that was wont to thwack our general,—Caius Marcius.

*First Serv.* Why do you say, thwack our general?

*Third Serv.* I do not say, thwack our general; but he was always good enough for him.

*Sec. Serv.* Come, we are fellows and friends: he was ever too hard for him; I have heard him say so himself.

*First Serv.* He was too hard for him directly, to say the troth on't: before Corioli he scotched him and notched him like a carbonado.

*Sec. Serv.* An he had been cannibally given, he might have broiled (<sup>98</sup>) and eaten him too.

*First Serv.* But, more of thy news?

*Third Serv.* Why, he is so made on here within, as if he were son and heir to Mars; set at upper end o' the table; no question asked him by any of the senators, but they stand bald before him: our general himself makes a mistress of him; sanctifies himself with's hand, and turns up the white o' the eye to his discourse. But the bottom of the news is, our general is cut i' the middle, and but one half of what he was yesterday; for the other has half, by the entreaty and grant of the whole table. He'll go, he says, and sowl the porter of Rome gates by the ears: he will mow all down before him, and leave his passage polled.

*Sec. Serv.* And he's as like to do't as any man I can imagine.

*Third Serv.* Do't! he will do't; for, look you, sir, he has as many friends as enemies; which friends, sir, as it were,

durst not, look you, sir, show themselves, as we term it, his friends whilst he's in directitude.<sup>(99)</sup>

*First Serv.* Directitude! what's that?

*Third Serv.* But when they shall see, sir, his crest up again, and the man in blood, they will out of their burrows, like conies after rain, and revel all with him.

*First Serv.* But when goes this forward?

*Third Serv.* To-morrow; to-day; presently; you shall have the drum struck up this afternoon: 'tis, as it were, a parcel of their feast, and to be executed ere they wipe their lips.

*Sec. Serv.* Why, then we shall have a stirring world again. 'This peace is<sup>(100)</sup> nothing, but to rust iron, increase tailors, and breed ballad-makers.

*First Serv.* Let me have war, say I; it exceeds peace as far as day does night; it's spritely, waking,<sup>(101)</sup> audible, and full of vent. Peace is a very apoplexy, lethargy; mulled, deaf, sleepy, insensible; a getter of more bastard children than wars<sup>(102)</sup> a destroyer of men.

*Sec. Serv.* 'Tis so: and as wars, in some sort, may be said to be a ravisher, so it cannot be denied but peace is a great maker of cuckolds.

*First Serv.* Ay, and it makes men hate one another.

*Third Serv.* Reason; because they then less need one another. The wars for my money. I hope to see Romans as cheap as Volscians.—They are rising, they are rising.

*All.* In, in, in, in!

[*Exeunt.*]

---

SCENE VI. *Rome. A public place.*

*Enter SICINIUS and BRUTUS.*

*Sic.* We hear not of him, neither need we fear him;  
His remedies are tame i'<sup>(103)</sup> the present peace  
And quietness of the people, which before  
Were in wild hurry. Here do we make his friends  
Blush that the world goes well; who rather had,  
'Though they themselves did suffer by't, behold  
Dissentious numbers pestering streets, than see

Our tradesmen singing in their shops, and going  
About their functions friendly.

*Bru.* We stood to't in good time.—Is this Menenius?

*Sic.* 'Tis he, 'tis he: O, he is grown most kind  
Of late.

*Enter MENENIUS.*

Hail, sir! <sup>(101)</sup>

*Men.* Hail to you both!

*Sic.* Your Coriolanus is not much miss'd,  
But with his friends: the commonwealth doth stand;  
And so would do, were he more angry at it.

*Men.* All's well; and might have been much better, if  
He could have temporiz'd.

*Sic.* Where is he, hear you?

*Men.* Nay, I hear nothing: his mother and his wife  
Hear nothing from him.

*Enter three or four Citizens.*

*Citizens.* The gods preserve you both!

*Sic.* God-den, <sup>(102)</sup> our neighbours.

*Bru.* God-den to you all, god-den to you all.

*First Cit.* Ourselves, our wives, and children, on our  
knees,  
Are bound to pray for you both.

*Sic.* Live, and thrive!

*Bru.* Farewell, kind neighbours: we wish'd Coriolanus  
Had lov'd you as we did.

*Citizens.* Now the gods keep you!

*Both Tri.* Farewell, farewell. *[Exeunt Citizens.]*

*Sic.* This is a happier and more comely time  
Than when these fellows ran about the streets,  
Crying confusion.

*Bru.* Caius Marcius was  
A worthy officer i' the war; but insolent,  
O'ercome with pride, ambitious past all thinking,  
Self-loving,—

*Sic.* And affecting one sole throne,  
Without assistance.

*Men.* I think not so.

*Sic.* We should by this, to all our lamentation,  
If he had gone forth consul, found it so.

*Bru.* The gods have well prevented it, and Rome  
Sits safe and still without him.

*Enter an Ædile.*

*Æd.* Worthy tribunes,  
There is a slave, whom we have put in prison,  
Reports,—the Volscs with two several powers  
Are enter'd in the Roman territories;  
And with the deepest malice of the war  
Destroy what lies before 'em.

*Men.* 'Tis Aufidius,  
Who, hearing of our Marcius' banishment,  
Thrusts forth his horns again into the world;  
Which were inshell'd when Marcius stood for Rome,  
And durst not once peep out.

*Sic.* Come, what talk you  
Of Marcius?

*Bru.* Go see this rumourer whipp'd.—It cannot be  
The Volscs dare break with us.

*Men.* Cannot be!  
We have record that very well it can;  
And three examples of the like have been  
Within my age. But reason with the fellow,  
Before you punish him, where he heard this;  
Lest you shall chance to whip your information,  
And beat the messenger who bids beware  
Of what is to be dreaded.

*Sic.* Tell not me:  
I know this cannot be.

*Bru.* Not possible.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* The nobles in great earnestness are going  
All to the senate-house: some news is come<sup>(100)</sup>  
That turns their countenances.

*Sic.* 'Tis this slave;—  
Go whip him 'fore the people's eyes:—his raising;  
Nothing but his report.

*Mess.* Yes, worthy sir,  
The slave's report is seconded; and more,  
More fearful, is deliver'd.

*Sic.* What more fearful?

*Mess.* It is spoke freely out of many mouths  
(How probable I do not know), that Marcius,  
Join'd with Aufidius, leads a power 'gainst Rome,  
And vows revenge as spacious as between  
The young'st and oldest thing.

*Sic.* This is most likely!

*Bru.* Rais'd only, that the weaker sort may wish  
God<sup>(107)</sup> Marcius home again.

*Sic.* The very trick on't.

*Men.* 'This is unlikely:  
He and Aufidius can no more atone  
Than violentest contrariety.

*Enter a second Messenger.*

*Sec. Mess.* You are sent for to the senate:  
A fearful army, led by Caius Marcius  
Associated with Aufidius, rages  
Upon our territories; and have already  
O'erborne their way, consum'd with fire, and took  
What lay before them.

*Enter COMINTUS.*

*Com.* O, you have made good work!

*Men.* What news? what news?

*Com.* You have help to ravish your own daughters, and  
To melt the city leads upon your pates;  
To see your wives dishonour'd to your noses,—

*Men.* What's the news? what's the news?

*Com.* Your temples burn'd in their cement; and  
Your franchises, whereon you stood, confin'd  
Into an auger's bore.

*Men.* Pray now, your news?—  
You have made fair work, I fear me.—Pray, your news?—  
If Marcius should be join'd with Volscians,—

*Com.* If!  
He is their god: he leads them like a thing

Made by some other deity than nature,  
That shapen man better; and they follow him,  
Against us brats, with no less confidence  
Than boys pursuing summer butterflies,  
Or butchers killing flies.

*Men.* You have made good work,  
You and your apron-men; you that stood so much  
Upon the voice of occupation and  
The breath of garlic-eaters!

*Com.* He will shake  
Your Rome about your ears.

*Men.* As Hercules  
Did shake down mellow fruit.—You have made fair work!

*Bru.* But is this true, sir?

*Com.* Ay; and you'll look pale  
Before you find it other. All the regions<sup>(108)</sup>  
Do smilingly revolt; and who resist  
Are mock'd for valiant ignorance,  
And perish constant fools. Who is't can blame him?  
Your enemies and his find something in him.

*Men.* We are all undone, unless  
The noble man have mercy.

*Com.* Who shall ask it?  
The tribunes cannot do't for shame; the people  
Deserve such pity of him as the wolf  
Does of the shepherds: for his best friends, if they  
Should say, "Be good to Rome," they charg'd him even  
As those should do that had deserv'd his hate,  
And therein show'd like enemies.

*Men.* 'Tis true:  
If he were putting to my house the brand  
That should consume it, I have not the face  
To say, "Beseech you, cease."—You have made fair hands,  
You and your crafts!<sup>(109)</sup> you have crafted fair!

*Com.* You have brought  
A trembling upon Rome, such as was never  
So incapable of help.

*Both Tri.* Say not, we brought it.

*Men.* How! Was it we? we lov'd him; but, like beasts

And cowardly nobles, gave way unto your clusters,  
Who did hoot him out o' the city.

*Com.* But I fear  
They'll roar him in again. Tullus Aufidius,  
The second name of men, obeys his points  
As if he were his officer :—desperation  
Is all the policy, strength, and defence,  
That Rome can make against them.

*Enter a troop of Citizens.*

*Men.* Here come the clusters.—  
And is Aufidius with him?—You are they  
That made the air unwholesome, when you cast  
Your stinking greasy caps in hooting at  
Coriolanus' exile. Now he's coming;  
And not a hair upon a soldier's head  
Which will not prove a whip: as many coxcombs  
As you threw caps up will he tumble down,  
And pay you for your voices. 'Tis no matter;  
If he could burn us all into one coal,  
We have deserv'd it.

*Citizens.* Faith, we hear fearful news.

*First Cit.* For mine own part,  
When I said, banish him, I said, 'twas pity.

*Sec. Cit.* And so did I.

*Third Cit.* And so did I; and, to say the truth, so did  
very many of us: that we did, we did for the best; and  
though we willingly consented to his banishment, yet it was  
against our will.

*Com.* Ye're goodly things, you voices!

*Men.* You have made  
Good work, you and your cry!—Shall's to the Capitol?

*Com.* O, ay, what else?

*[Exeunt Cominius and Menenius.]*

*Sec.* Go, masters, get you home; be not dismay'd:  
These are a side that would be glad to have  
This true which they so seem to fear. Go home,  
And show no sign of fear.

*First Cit.* The gods be good to us!—Come, masters, let's

home. I ever said we were i' the wrong when we banished him.

*Sec. Cit.* So did we all. But, come, let's home.

[*Exeunt Citizens.*]

*Bru.* I do not like this news.

*Sic.* Nor I.

*Bru.* Let's to the Capitol;—would half my wealth  
Would buy this for a lie!

*Sic.* Pray, let us go. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VII. *A camp, at a small distance from Rome.*

*Enter AUFIDIUS and his Lieutenant.*

*Auf.* Do they still fly to the Roman?

*Lieu.* I do not know what witchcraft's in him, but  
Your soldiers use him as the grace 'fore meat,  
Their talk at table, and their thanks at end;  
And you are darken'd in this action, sir,  
Even by your own.

*Auf.* I cannot help it now,  
Unless, by using means, I lame the foot  
Of our design. He bears himself more proudlier,  
Even to my person, than I thought he would  
When first I did embrace him: yet his nature  
In that's no changeling; and I must excuse  
What cannot be amended.

*Lieu.* Yet I wish, sir  
(I mean for your particular), you had not  
Join'd in commission with him; but either  
Had<sup>(110)</sup> borne the action of yourself, or else  
To him had left it solely.

*Auf.* I understand thee well; and be thou sure,  
When he shall come to his account, he knows not  
What I can urge against him. Although it seems,  
And so he thinks, and is no less apparent  
To the vulgar eye, that he bears all things fairly,  
And shows good husbandry for the Volscian state,  
Fights dragon-like, and does achieve as soon



As draw his sword; yet he hath left undone  
That which shall break his neck or hazard mine,  
Whene'er we come to our account.

*Lieu.* Sir, I beseech you, think you he'll carry Rome?

*Auf.* All places yield to him ere he sits down;  
And the nobility of Rome are his;  
The senators and patricians love him too:  
The tribunes are no soldiers; and their people  
Will be as rash in the repeal, as hasty  
To expel him thence. I think he'll be to Rome  
As is the osprey to the fish, who takes it  
By sovereignty of nature. First he was  
A noble servant to them; but he could not  
Carry his honours even: whether 'twas pride,  
Which out of daily fortune ever taints  
The happy man; whether defect of judgment,  
To fail in the disposing of those chances  
Which he was lord of; or whether nature,  
Not to be other than one thing, not moving  
From the casque to the cushion, but commanding peace  
Even with the same austerity and garb  
As he controll'd the war; but *one of these*  
(As he hath spices of them all, not all,  
For I dare so far free him,) made him fear'd,  
So hated, and so banish'd: but he has a merit,  
To choke it in the utterance. So our virtues<sup>(111)</sup>  
Lie in the interpretation of the time:  
And power, unto itself most commendable,  
Hath not a tomb so evident as a chair<sup>(112)</sup>  
To extol what it hath done.  
One fire drives out one fire; one nail, one nail;  
Rights by rights falter,<sup>(113)</sup> strengths by strengths do fail.  
Come, let's away. When, Caius, Rome is thine,  
Thou art poor'st of all; then shortly art thou mine.

[*Exeunt.*

## ACT V.

SCENE I. *Rome. A public place.*

*Enter MENINIUS, COMINIUS, SICINIUS, BRUTUS, and others.*

*Men.* No, I'll not go : you hear what he hath said  
Which was sometime his general ; who lov'd him  
In a most dear particular. He call'd me father :  
But what o' that ? Go, you that banish'd him ;  
A mile before his tent fall down, and knee  
The way into his mercy : nay, if he coy'd  
To hear Cominius speak, I'll keep at home.

*Com.* He would not seem to know me.

*Men.* Do you hear ?

*Com.* Yet one time he did call me by my name :

I urg'd our old acquaintance, and the drops  
'That we have bled together. Coriolanus  
He would not answer to : forbad all names ;  
He was a kind of nothing, titleless,  
Till he had forg'd himself a name o' the fire  
Of burning Rome.

*Men.* Why, so,—you have made good work !  
A pair of tribunes that have rack'd for Rome,  
To make coals cheap,—a noble memory !

*Com.* I minded him how royal 'twas to pardon  
When it was less expected : he replied,  
It was a bare<sup>(14)</sup> petition of a state  
To one whom they had punish'd.

*Men.* Very well :  
Could he say less ?

*Com.* I offer'd to awaken his regard  
For's private friends : his answer to me was,  
He could not stay to pick them in a pile  
Of noisome musty chaff : he said 'twas folly,  
For one poor grain or two, to leave unburnt,  
And still to nose the offence.

*Men.* For one poor grain or two !  
I am one of those ; his mother, wife, his child,

And this brave fellow too, we are the grains :  
 You are the musty chaff; and you are smelt  
 Above the moon : we must be burnt for you.

*Sic.* Nay, pray, be patient : if you refuse your aid  
 In this so never-needed help, yet do not  
 Upbraid's with our distress. But, sure, if you  
 Would be your country's pleader, your good tongue,  
 More than the instant army we can make,  
 Might stop our countryman.

*Men.* No, I'll not meddle.

*Sic.* Pray you, go to him.

*Men.* What should I do ?

*Bru.* Only make trial what your love can do  
 For Rome, towards Marcius.

*Men.* Well, and say that Marcius  
 Return'd, as Cominius is return'd,  
 Unheard ; what then ?  
 But as a discontented friend, grief-shot  
 With his unkindness ? say't be so ?

*Sic.* Yet your good will  
 Must have that thanks from Rome, after the measure  
 As you intended well.

*Men.* I'll undertake't :  
 I think he'll hear me. Yet, to bite his lip  
 And hum at good Cominius, much unharts me.  
 He was not taken well ; he had not din'd :  
 The veins unfill'd, our blood is cold, and then  
 We pout upon the morning, are unapt  
 To give or to forgive ; but when we have stuff'd  
 These pipes and these conveyances of our blood  
 With wine and feeding, we have suppler souls  
 Than in our priest-like fasts : therefore I'll watch him  
 Till he be dieted to my request,  
 And then I'll set upon him.

*Bru.* You know the very road into his kindness,  
 And cannot lose your way.

*Men.* Good faith, I'll prove him,  
 Speed how it will. I<sup>(115)</sup> shall ere long have knowledge  
 Of my success.

[*Exit.*]

*Com.* He'll never hear him.

*Sic.* Not?

*Com.* I tell you, he does sit in gold, his eye  
 Red as 'twould burn Rome; and his injury  
 The gaoler to his pity. I kneel'd before him;  
 'Twas very faintly he said "Rise;" dismiss'd me  
 Thus, with his speechless hand: what he would do,  
 He sent in writing after me; what he would not,  
 Bound with an oath to yield to his conditions:<sup>(176)</sup>  
 So that all hope is vain,  
 Unless his<sup>(177)</sup> noble mother, and his wife;  
 Who, as I hear, mean to solicit him  
 For mercy to his country. Therefore, let's hence,  
 And with our fair entreaties haste them on. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. *An advanced post of the Volscian camp before  
 Rome. The Guard at their stations.*

*Enter to them, MENENIUS.*

*First G.* Stay: whence are you?

*Sec. G.* Stand, and go back.

*Men.* You guard like men; 'tis well: but, by your leave,  
 I am an officer of state, and come  
 To speak with Coriolanus.

*First G.* From whence?

*Men.* From Rome.

*First G.* You may not pass, you must return: our general  
 Will no more hear from thence.

*Sec. G.* You'll see your Rome embrac'd with fire, before  
 You'll speak with Coriolanus.

*Men.* Good my friends,  
 If you have heard your general talk of Rome,  
 And of his friends there, it is lots to blanks,  
 My name hath touch'd your ears: it is Menenius.

*First G.* Be it so; go back: the virtue of your name  
 Is not here passable.

*Men.* I tell thee, fellow,

Thy general is my lover : I have been  
 The book of his good acts, whence men have read  
 His fame unparallel'd, haply amplified ;  
 For I have ever verified<sup>(118)</sup> my friends  
 (Of whom he's chief) with all the size that verity  
 Would without lapsing suffer : nay, sometimes,  
 Like to a bowl upon a subtle ground,  
 I have tumbled past the throw ; and in his praise  
 Have almost stamp'd the leasing : therefore, fellow,  
 I must have leave to pass.

*First G.* Faith, sir, if you had told as many lies in his  
 behalf as you have uttered words in your own, you should  
 not pass here ; no, though it were as virtuous to lie as to live  
 chastely. Therefore, go back.

*Men.* Prithee, fellow, remember my name is Menenius,  
 always factionary on the party of your general.

*Sec. G.* Howsoever you have been his liar (as you say you  
 have), I am one that, telling true under him, must say, you  
 cannot pass. Therefore, go back.

*Men.* Has he dined, canst thou tell ? for I would not  
 speak with him till after dinner.

*First G.* You are a Roman, are you ?

*Men.* I am as thy general is.

*First G.* Then you should hate Rome, as he does. Can  
 you, when you have pushed out your gates the very defender  
 of them, and, in a violent popular ignorance, given your  
 enemy your shield, think to front his revenges with the easy  
 groans of old women, the virginal palms of your daughters,  
 or with the palsied intercession of such a decayed dotant as  
 you seem to be ? Can you think to blow out the intended fire  
 your city is ready to flame in, with such weak breath as this ?  
 No, you are deceived ; therefore, back to Rome, and prepare  
 for your execution : you are condemned, our general has  
 sworn you out of reprieve and pardon.

*Men.* Sirrah, if thy captain knew I were here, he would  
 use me with estimation.

*Sec. G.* Come, my captain knows you not.

*Men.* I mean, thy general.

*First G.* My general cares not for you. Back, I say, go ;

lest I let forth your half-pint of blood;—back,—that's the utmost of your having:—back.

*Men.* Nay, but, fellow, fellow,—

*Enter CORIOLANUS and AUFIDIUS.*

*Cor.* What's the matter?

*Men.* Now, you companion, I'll say an errand for you: you shall know now that I am in estimation; you shall perceive that a Jack guardant cannot office me from my son Coriolanus: guess, but by<sup>(119)</sup> my entertainment with him, if thou standest not i' the state of hanging, or of some death more long in spectatorship, and crueller in suffering; behold now presently, and swoon for what's to come upon thee.—The glorious gods sit in hourly synod about thy particular prosperity, and love thee no worse than thy old father Menenius does! O my son, my son! thou art preparing fire for us; look thee, here's water to quench it. I was hardly moved to come to thee; but being assured none but myself could move thee, I have been blown out of your gates with sighs; and conjure thee to pardon Rome, and thy petitionary countrymen. The good gods assuage thy wrath, and turn the dregs of it upon this varlet here,—this, who, like a block, hath denied my access to thee.

*Cor.* Away!

*Men.* How! away!

*Cor.* Wife, mother, child, I know not. My affairs  
Are servanted to others: though I owe  
My revenge properly, my remission lies  
In Volscian breasts. That we have been familiar,  
Ingrate forgetfulness shall poison,<sup>(120)</sup> rather  
Than pity note how much. Therefore, be gone.  
Mine ears against your suits are stronger than  
Your gates against my force. Yet, for I lov'd thee,  
Take this along; I writ it for thy sake, [Gives a letter.  
And would have sent it. Another word, Menenius,  
I will not hear thee speak.—This man, Aufidius,  
Was my belov'd in Rome: yet thou behold'st!

*Auf.* You keep a constant temper.

[*Exeunt Coriolanus and Aufidius.*

*First G.* Now, sir, is your name Menenius?

*Sec. G.* 'Tis a spell, you see, of much power: you know the way home again.

*First G.* Do you hear how we are shent for keeping your greatness back?

*Sec. G.* What cause, do you think, I have to swoon?

*Men.* I neither care for the world nor your general: for such things as you, I can scarce think there's any, ye're so slight. He that hath a will to die by himself fears it not from another: let your general do his worst. For you, be that you are, long; and your misery increase with your age! I say to you, as I was said to, Away! [Exit.]

*First G.* A noble fellow, I warrant him.

*Sec. G.* The worthy fellow is our general: he's the rock, the oak not to be wind-shaken. [Exit.]

### SCENE III. *The tent of CORIOLANUS.*

*Enter CORIOLANUS, AUFIDIUS, and others.*

*Cor.* We will before the walls of Rome to-morrow  
Set down our host.—My partner in this action,  
You must report to the Volscian lords, how plainly  
I have borne this business.

*Auf.* Only their ends  
You have respected; stopp'd your ears against  
The general suit of Rome; never admitted  
A private whisper, no, not with such friends  
That thought them sure of you.

*Cor.* This last old man,  
Whom with a crack'd heart I have sent to Rome,  
Lov'd me above the measure of a father;  
Nay, godded me, indeed. Their latest refuge  
Was to send him; for whose old love I have  
(Though I show'd scurly to him) once more offer'd  
The first conditions, which they did refuse,  
And cannot now accept; to grace him only  
That thought he could do more, a very little  
I have yielded to: fresh embassies and suits,  
Nor from the state nor private friends, hereafter

Will I lend ear to.—Ha! what shout is this? [*Shout within.*]  
Shall I be tempted to infringe my vow  
In the same time 'tis made? I will not.

*Enter, in mourning habits, VIRGILIA, VOLUMNIA, leading young  
MARCUS, VALERIA, and Attendants.*

My wife comes foremost; then the honour'd mould  
Wherein this trunk was fram'd, and in her hand  
The grandchild to her blood. But, out, affection!  
All bond and privilege of nature, break!  
Let it be virtuous to be obstinate.—  
What is that curt'sy worth? or those doves' eyes,  
Which can make gods forsworn?—I melt, and am not  
Of stronger earth than others.—My mother bows;  
As if Olympus to a molehill should  
In supplication nod: and my young boy  
Hath an aspect of intercession, which  
Great nature cries, "Deny not."—Let the Volscies  
Plough Rome, and harrow Italy: I'll never  
Be such a gosling to obey instinct; but stand,  
As if a man were author of himself,  
And knew no other kin.

*Vir.* My lord and husband!

*Cor.* These eyes are not the same I wore in Rome.

*Vir.* The sorrow that delivers us thus chang'd  
Makes you think so.

*Cor.* Like a dull actor now,  
I have forgot my part, and I am out,  
Even to a full disgrace.—Best of my flesh,  
Forgive my tyranny; but do not say,  
For that, "Forgive our Romans." O, a kiss  
Long as my exile, sweet as my revenge!  
Now, by the jealous queen of heaven, that kiss  
I carried from thee, dear; and my true lip  
Hath virgin'd it e'er since.—You gods! I prate,<sup>(121)</sup>  
And the most noble mother of the world  
Leave unsaluted: sink, my knee, i' the earth; [*Kneels.*]  
Of thy deep duty more impression show  
Than that of common sons.



*Vol.* O, stand up bless'd!  
 Whilst, with no softer cushion than the flint,  
 I kneel before thee; and unproperly  
 Show duty, as mistaken all this while  
 Between the child and parent.

[*Kneels.*]

*Cor.* What is this?  
 Your knees to me? to your corrected son?  
 Then let the pebbles on the hungry beach  
 Fillip the stars; then let the mutinous winds  
 Strike the proud cedars 'gainst the fiery sun;  
 Murdering impossibility, to make  
 What cannot be, slight work.

*Vol.* Thou art my warrior;  
 I help<sup>(122)</sup> to frame thee.—Do you know this lady?

*Cor.* The noble sister of Publicola,  
 The moon of Rome; chaste as the icicle,  
 That's curdied by the frost from purest snow,  
 And hangs on Dian's temple:—dear Valeria!

*Vol.* This is a poor epitome of yours,  
 Which by the interpretation of full time  
 May show like all yourself.

*Cor.* The god of soldiers,  
 With the consent of supreme Jove, inform  
 Thy thoughts with nobleness; that thou mayst prove  
 To shame invulnerable, and stick i' the wars  
 Like a great sea-mark, standing every flaw,  
 And saving those that eye thee!

*Vol.* Your knee, sirrah.

*Cor.* That's my brave boy!

*Vol.* Even he, your wife, this lady, and myself,  
 Are suitors to you.

*Cor.* I beseech you, peace:  
 O, if you'd ask, remember this before,—  
 The things<sup>(123)</sup> I have forsworn to grant may never  
 Be held by you denials. Do not bid me  
 Dismiss my soldiers, or capitulate  
 Again with Rome's mechanics:—tell me not  
 Wherein I seem unnatural: desire not  
 To allay my rages and revenges with

Your colder reasons.

*Vol.* O, no more, no more !  
You have said you will not grant us any thing ;  
For we have nothing else to ask, but that  
Which you deny already : yet we will ask ;  
That, if you<sup>(121)</sup> fail in our request, the blame  
May hang upon your hardness : therefore hear us.

*Cor.* Aufidius, and you Volscies, mark ; for we'll  
Hear naught from Rome in private.—Your request ?

*Vol.* Should we be silent and not speak, our raiment  
And state of bodies would bewray what life  
We have led since thy exile. Think with thyself  
How more unfortunate than all living women  
Are we come hither : since that thy sight, which should  
Make our eyes flow with joy, hearts dance with comforts,  
Constrains them weep, and shake with fear and sorrow ;  
Making the mother, wife, and child, to see  
The son, the husband, and the father, tearing  
His country's bowels out. And to poor we  
Thine enmity's most capital : thou barr'st us  
Our prayers to the gods, which is a comfort  
That all but we enjoy ; for how can we,  
Alas, how can we for our country pray,  
Whereto we are bound,—together with thy victory,  
Whereto we are bound ? alack, or we must lose  
The country, our dear nurse ; or else thy person,  
Our comfort in the country. We must find  
An evident calamity, though we had  
Our wish, which side should win ; for either thou  
Must, as a foreign recreant, be led  
With manacles thorough our streets, or else  
Triumphantly tread on thy country's ruin,  
And bear the palm for having bravely shed  
Thy wife and children's blood. For myself, son,  
I purpose not to wait on fortune till  
These wars determine : if I cannot persuade thee  
Rather to show a noble grace to both parts  
Than seek the end of one, thou shalt no sooner  
March to assault thy country than to tread

(Trust to't, thou shalt not,) on thy mother's womb,  
That brought thee to this world.

*Vir.* Ay, and mine,  
That brought you forth this boy, to keep your name  
Living to time.

*Boy.* 'A shall not tread on me ;  
I'll run away till I am bigger, but then I'll fight.

*Cor.* Not of a woman's tenderness to be,  
Requires nor child nor woman's face to see.  
I have sat too long. [Rising.

*Vol.* Nay, go not from us thus.  
If it were so that our request did tend  
To save the Romans, thereby to destroy  
The Volscies whom you serve, you might condemn us,  
As poisonous of your honour : no ; our suit  
Is, that you reconcile them : while the Volscies  
May say, " This mercy we have show'd " ; the Romans,  
" This we receiv'd " ; and each in either side  
Give the all-hail to thee, and cry, " Be bless'd  
For making up this peace " ! Thou know'st, great son,  
The end of war's uncertain ; but this certain,  
That, if thou conquer Rome, the benefit  
Which thou shalt thereby reap is such a name,  
Whose repetition will be dogg'd with curses ;  
Whose chronicle thus writ,—" The man was noble,  
But with his last attempt he wip'd it out ;  
Destroy'd his country ; and his name remains  
To the ensuing age abhorr'd." Speak to me, son :  
Thou hast affected the fine strains of honour,  
To imitate the graces of the gods ;  
To tear with thunder the wide cheeks o' the air,  
And yet to charge<sup>(125)</sup> thy sulphur with a bolt  
That should but rive an oak. Why dost not speak ?  
Think'st thou it honourable for a noble man  
Still to remember wrongs ?—Daughter, speak you :  
He cares not for your weeping.—Speak thou, boy :  
Perhaps thy childishness will move him more  
Than can our reasons.—There's no man in the world  
More bound to 's mother ; yet here he lets me prate

Like one i' the stocks.—Thou hast never in thy life  
 Show'd thy dear mother any courtesy;  
 When she (poor hen), fond of no second brood,  
 Has cluck'd thee to the wars, and safely home,  
 Loaden with honour. Say my request's unjust,  
 And spurn me back: but if it be not so,  
 Thou art not honest; and the gods will plague thee,  
 That thou restrain'st from me the duty which  
 To a mother's part belongs.—He turns away:  
 Down, ladies; let us shame him with our knees.<sup>(126)</sup>  
 To his surname Coriolanus longs more pride  
 Than pity to our prayers. Down: an end;  
 This is the last:—so we will home to Rome,  
 And die among our neighbours.—Nay, behold's:  
 This boy, that cannot tell what he would have,  
 But kneels and holds up hands for fellowship,  
 Does reason our petition with more strength  
 Than thou hast to deny't.—Come, let us go:  
 This fellow had a Volscian to his mother;  
 His wife is in Corioli, and his child  
 Like him by chance.—Yet give us our dispatch:  
 I am hush'd until our city be a-fire,  
 And then I'll speak a little.

*Cor.* [*after holding Volumnia by the hand in silence*] O  
 mother, mother!

What have you done? Behold, the heavens do ope,  
 The gods look down, and this unnatural scene  
 They laugh at. O my mother, mother! O!  
 You have won a happy victory to Rome;  
 But, for your son,—believe it, O, believe it,  
 Most dangerously you have with him prevail'd,  
 If not most mortal to him. But, let it come.—  
 Aufidius, though I cannot make true wars,  
 I'll frame convenient peace. Now, good Aufidius,  
 Were you in my stead, would you have heard<sup>(127)</sup>  
 A mother less? or granted less, Aufidius?

*Auf.* I was mov'd withal.

*Cor.* I dare be sworn you were:  
 And, sir, it is no little thing to make

Mine eyes to sweat compassion. But, good sir,  
 What peace you'll make, advise me: for my part,  
 I'll not to Rome, I'll back with you; and pray you,  
 Stand to me in this cause.—O mother! wife!

*Auf.* I am glad thou hast set thy mercy and thy honour  
 At difference in thee: out of that I'll work  
 Myself a former fortune. [*Aside.*

[*The Ladies make signs to Coriolanus.*

*Cor.* Ay, by and by;

[*To Volumnia, Virgilia, &c.*

But we will drink together; and you shall bear  
 A better witness back than words, which we,  
 On like conditions, will have counter-seal'd.  
 Come, enter with us. Ladies, you deserve  
 To have a temple built you: all the swords  
 In Italy, and her confederate arms,  
 Could not have made this peace.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV. *Rome. A public place.*

*Enter MENENIUS and SICIINIUS.*

*Men.* See you yond coign o' the Capitol,—yond corner-stone?

*Sic.* Why, what of that?

*Men.* If it be possible for you to displace it with your little finger, there is some hope the ladies of Rome, especially his mother, may prevail with him. But I say there is no hope in't: our throats are sentenced, and stay upon execution.

*Sic.* Is't possible that so short a time can alter the condition of a man?

*Men.* There is differencey between a grub and a butterfly; yet your butterfly was a grub. This Marcius is grown from man to dragon: he has wings; he's more than a creeping thing.

*Sic.* He loved his mother dearly.

*Men.* So did he me; and he no more remembers his mother now than an eight-year-old horse. The tartness of

his face sours ripe grapes: when he walks, he moves like an engine, and the ground shrinks before his treading: he is able to pierce a corslet with his eye; talks like a knell, and his hum is a battery. He sits in his state, as a thing made for Alexander. What he bids be done, is finished with his bidding. He wants nothing of a god but eternity, and a heaven to throne in.

*Sic.* Yes, mercy, if you report him truly.

*Men.* I paint him in the character. Mark what mercy his mother shall bring from him: there is no more mercy in him than there is milk in a male tiger; that shall our poor city find: and all this is long of you.

*Sic.* The gods be good unto us!

*Men.* No, in such a case the gods will not be good unto us. When we banished him, we respected not them; and, he returning to break our necks, they respect not us.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* Sir, if you'd save your life, fly to your house: The plebeians have got your fellow-tribune, And hale him up and down; all swearing, if The Roman ladies bring not comfort home, They'll give him death by inches.

*Enter a second Messenger.*

*Sic.* What's the news?

*Sec. Mess.* Good news, good news;—the ladies have prevail'd,

The Volscians are dislodg'd, and Marcius gone:  
A merrier day did never yet greet Rome,  
No, not the expulsion of the Tarquins.

*Sic.* Friend,

Art thou certain this is true? is it most certain?<sup>(123)</sup>

*Sec. Mess.* As certain as I know the sun is fire:  
Where have you lurk'd, that you make doubt of it?  
Ne'er through an arch so hurried the blown tide,  
As the recomforted through the gates. Why, hark you!

[*Trumpets and hautboys sounded, and drums beaten,  
all together. Shouting also within.*

The trumpets, sackbuts, psalteries, and fifes, .

Tabors, and cymbals, and the shouting Romans,  
Make the sun dance. Hark you! [*Shouting again.*]

*Men.* This is good news:

I will go meet the ladies. This Volumnia  
Is worth of consuls, senators, patricians,  
A city full; of tribunes, such as you,  
A sea and land full. You have pray'd well to-day:  
'This morning for ten thousand of your throats  
I'd not have given a doit.—Hark, how they joy!

[*Shouting and music.*]

*Sic.* First, thè gods bless you for your tidings; next,  
Accept my thankfulness.

*Sec. Mess.* Sir, we have all  
Great cause to give great thanks.

*Sic.* They are near the city?

*Sec. Mess.* Almost at point to enter.

*Sic.* We will meet them,  
And help the joy. [*Exeunt.*(<sup>120</sup>)]

SCENE V. *The same. A street near the gate.*

*Enter VOLUMNIA, VIRGILIA, VALERIA, &c. accompanied by Senators, Patricians, and Citizens.*

*First Sen.* Behold our patroness, the life of Rome!  
Call all your tribes together, praise the gods,  
And make triumphant fires; strew flowers before them;  
Unshout the noise that banish'd Marcius,  
Repeal him with the welcome of his mother;  
Cry, "Welcome, ladies, welcome!"

*All.* Welcome, ladies,  
Welcome! [*A flourish with drums and trumpets. Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI. *Antium. A public place.*

*Enter TULLUS AUFIDIUS, with Attendants.*

*Auf.* Go tell the lords o' the city I am here:  
Deliver them this paper: having read it,  
Bid them repair to the market-place; where I,

Even in theirs and in the commons' ears,  
Will vouch the truth of it. Ilim I accuse  
The city ports by this hath enter'd, and  
Intends to appear before the people, hoping  
To purge himself with words: dispatch.

[*Exeunt Attendants.*]

*Enter three or four Conspirators of AURIDIUS' faction.*

Most welcome!

*First Con.* How is it with our general?

*Auf.* Even so

As with a man by his own alms empoison'd,  
And with his charity slain.

*Sec. Con.* Most noble sir,

If you do hold the same intent wherein  
You wish'd us parties, we'll deliver you  
Of your great danger.

*Auf.* Sir, I cannot tell:

We must proceed as we do find the people.

*Third Con.* The people will remain uncertain whilst  
'Twixt you there's difference; but the fall of either  
Makes the survivor heir of all.

*Auf.* I know it;

And my pretext to strike at him admits  
A good construction. I rais'd him, and I pawn'd  
Mine honour for his truth: who being so heighten'd,  
He water'd his new plants with dews of flattery,  
Seducing so my friends; and, to this end,  
He bow'd his nature, never known before  
But to be rough, unswayable, and free.

*Third Con.* Sir, his stoutness

When he did stand for consul, which he lost  
By lack of stooping,—

*Auf.* That I would have spoke of:

Being banish'd for't, he came unto my hearth;  
Presented to my knife his throat: I took him;  
Made him joint-servant with me; gave him way  
In all his own desires; nay, let him choose  
Out of my files, his projects to accomplish,



My best and freshest men ; serv'd his designments  
 In mine own person ; help to reap the fame  
 Which he did end<sup>(130)</sup> all his ; and took some pride  
 To do myself this wrong : till, at the last,  
 I seem'd his follower, not partner ; and  
 He wag'd me with his countenance, as if  
 I had been mercenary.

*First Con.* So he did, my lord,—  
 The army marvell'd at it ; and, in the last,  
 When he had carried Rome, and that we look'd  
 For no less spoil than glory,—

*Auf.* There was it ;—  
 For which my sinews shall be stretch'd upon him.  
 At a few drops of women's rheum, which are  
 As cheap as lies, he sold the blood and labour  
 Of our great action : therefore shall he die,  
 And I'll renew me in his fall.—But, hark !

*[Drums and trumpets sound, with great shouts of  
 the People.]*

*First Con.* Your native town you enter'd like a post,  
 And had no welcomes home ; but he returns,  
 Splitting the air with noise.

*Sec. Con.* And patient fools,  
 Whose children he hath slain, their base throats tear  
 With giving him glory.

*Third Con.* Therefore, at your vantage,  
 Ere he express himself, or move the people  
 With what he would say, let him feel your sword,  
 Which we will second. When he lies along,  
 After your way his tale pronounc'd shall bury  
 His reasons with his body.

*Auf.* Say no more :  
 Here come the lords.

*Enter the Lords of the city.*

*Lords.* You are most welcome home.

*Auf.* I have not deserv'd it.  
 But, worthy lords, have you with heed perus'd  
 What I have written to you ?

*Lords.*

We have.

*First Lord.*

And grieve to hear 't.

What faults he made before the last, I think  
Might have found easy fines: but there to end  
Where he was to begin, and give away  
The benefit of our levies, answering us  
With our own charge, making a treaty where  
There was a yielding,—this admits no excuse.  
*Auf.* He approaches: you shall hear him.

*Enter CORIOLANUS, with drum and colours; a crowd of Citizens  
with him.*

*Cor.* Hail, lords! I am return'd your soldier;  
No more infected with my country's love  
Than when I parted hence, but still subsisting  
Under your great command. You are to know,  
That prosperously I have attempted, and,  
With bloody passage, led your wars even to  
The gates of Rome. Our spoils we have brought home  
Do more than counterpoise a full third part  
The charges of the action. We have made peace,  
With no less honour to the Antiates  
Than shame to the Romans: and we here deliver,  
Subscrib'd by the consuls and patricians,  
Together with the seal o' the senate, what  
We have compounded on.

*Auf.*

Read it not, noble lords;

But tell the traitor, in the highest degree  
He hath abus'd your powers.

*Cor.* Traitor!—how now!

*Auf.*

Ay, traitor, Marcius!

*Cor.*

Marcius!

*Auf.* Ay, Marcius, Caius Marcius: dost thou think  
I'll grace thee with that robbery, thy stol'n name  
Coriolanus in Corioli?—  
You lords and heads o' the state, perfidiously  
He has betray'd your business, and given up,  
For certain drops of salt, your city Rome  
(I say, your city) to his wife and mother;

Breaking his oath and resolution, like  
 A twist of rotten silk; never admitting  
 Counsel o' the war; but at his nurse's tears  
 He whin'd and roar'd away your victory;  
 That pages blush'd at him, and men of heart  
 Look'd wondering each at other.

*Cor.* Hear'st thou, Mars?

*Auf.* Name not the god, thou boy of tears!

*Cor.* Ha!

*Auf.* No more.

*Cor.* Measureless liar, thou hast made my heart  
 Too great for what contains it. Boy! O slave!—  
 Pardon me, lords, 'tis the first time that ever  
 I was forc'd to scold. Your judgments, my grave lords,  
 Must give this cur the lie: and his own notion  
 (Who wears my stripes impress'd upon him; that  
 Must bear my beating to his grave) shall join  
 To thrust the lie unto him.

*First Lord.* Peace, both, and hear me speak.

*Cor.* Cut me to pieces, Volscies; men and lads,  
 Stain all your edges on me.—Boy! false hound!  
 If you have writ your annals true, 'tis there,  
 That, like an eagle in a dove-cote, I  
 Flutter'd<sup>(181)</sup> your Volscians in Corioli:  
 Alone I did it.—Boy!

*Auf.* Why; noble lords,  
 Will you be put in mind of his blind fortune,  
 Which was your shame, by this unholy braggart,  
 'Fore your own eyes and ears?

*Conspirators.* Let him die for't.

*Citizens.* Tear him to pieces, do it presently;—he killed  
 my son;—my daughter;—he killed my cousin Marcus;—he  
 killed my father,—

*Sec. Lord.* Peace, ho!—no outrage;—peace!  
 The man is noble, and his fame folds-in  
 This orb o' the earth. His last offences to us  
 Shall have judicious hearing.—Stand, Aufidius,  
 And trouble not the peace.

*Cor.* O that I had him,

With six Aufidiuses, or more, his tribe,  
To use my lawful sword!

*Auf.* Insolent villain!

*Conspirators.* Kill, kill, kill, kill, kill him!

*[Aufidius and the Conspirators draw, and kill Coriolanus, who falls: Aufidius stands on him.]*

*Lords.* Hold, hold, hold, hold!

*Auf.* My noble masters, hear me speak.

*First Lord.* O Tullus,—

*Sec. Lord.* Thou hast done a deed whereat valour will weep.

*Third Lord.* Tread not upon him.—Masters all, be quiet;  
Put up your swords.

*Auf.* My lords, when you shall know (as in this rage,  
Provok'd by him, you cannot,) the great danger  
Which this man's life did owe you, you'll rejoice  
That he is thus cut off. Please it your honours  
To call me to your senate, I'll deliver  
Myself your loyal servant, or endure  
Your heaviest censure.

*First Lord.* Bear from hence his body,—  
And mourn you for him:—let him be regarded  
As the most noble corse that ever herald  
Did follow to his urn.

*Sec. Lord.* His own impatience  
Takes from Aufidius a great part of blame.  
Let's make the best of it.

*Auf.* My rage is gone;  
And I am struck with sorrow.—Take him up:—  
Help, three o' the chiefest soldiers; I'll be one.—  
Beat thou the drum, that it speak mournfully:  
Trail your steel pikes.—Though in this city he  
Hath widow'd and unchilded many a one,  
Which to this hour bewail the injury,  
Yet he shall have a noble memory.—

*Assist.* *[Exeunt, bearing the body of Coriolanus.]*  
*A dead march sounded.*



P. 654. (1) "Citizens. *Against him first,*" &c.

Malone thinks that this speech (which in the folio has the prefix "*All*") ought to be assigned to the *First Citizen*, and the context seems to favour that alteration.

P. 654. (2) "Sec. Cit. *Nay, but speak not maliciously*"

The folio gives this speech to "*All*,"—which Mr. Knight, regardless of its absurdity, retains.

P. 654. (3) "First Cit. *Our business,*" &c.

"This and all the subsequent plebeian speeches in this scene are given in the old copy to the second Citizen. But the dialogue at the opening of the play shows that it must have been a mistake, and that they ought to be attributed to the *first Citizen*. The second is rather friendly to Coriolanus." MALONE. —Mr. Knight,—who "adheres to the original copy for the precise reason which Malone gives for departing from it,"—declares that "This speaker is of a *higher cast* than he who says, 'Let us kill him, and we'll have corn at our own price',"—a view of the Citizen's character quite at variance with the description of it which, according to Mr. Knight's own text, Menenius presently gives,—

"What do you think?

You, the great toe of this assembly?

Sec. Cit. I the great toe? Why the great toe?

Men. For that, being one o' the lowest, basest, poorest,

Of this most wise rebellion, thou go'st foremost.

Thou rascal, that art worst in blood to run,

Lead'st first, to win some vantage."

In fact, the passage just cited serves to prove that Malone was well warranted in altering the prefix here and subsequently. (In act ii. sc. 3, where Coriolanus, about to solicit the voices of the people, says, "here comes a *man*," the folio has "*Enter THREE of the Citizens,*" and prefixes to their respective speeches "3 *Cit.*," "2 *Cit.*," "1 *Cit.*")

P. 655. (1) "I will venture

*To stale't a little more.*"

The folio has "*To scald't,*" &c.—See my *Remarks on Mr. Collier's and Mr. Knight's eds. of Shakespeare*, &c. p. 158.

P. 656 (2) "*it tauntingly replied,*" &c.

The folio has "*it taintingly replied,*" &c.

P. 656. (3) "*The kingly-crowned head,*" &c.

Mr. Singer (*Shakespeare Vindicated*, &c. p. 208) says that this passage "evi-

dently belongs to Menenius." I think, on the contrary, that it evidently belongs to the Citizen, who assumes the part and language of the rebellious members. If it be taken from the Citizen, what propriety is there in the subsequent exclamation of Menenius, "'Fore me, *this fellow speaks!*"? (In Mr. Singer's *Shakespeare*, 1826, I find not only that this is given to Menenius, but that, among other changes in the distribution of the present dialogue, the words,—

"Should by the cormorant belly be restrain'd,  
Who is the sink o' the body,"—

are transferred to Menenius,—with great unfitness.)

P. 657. (7) "digest," &c.

I may notice that here the folio has "disgest," &c. (which spelling was formerly not unusual); but that afterwards in this play (see p 702) it has, "The Senates Courtisie *digest*."—A writer in *Notes and Queries*, vol. vi. 27, defending the gross corruption of the folio in act iii. sc. 1, "Bosome-multiplied" (see note (<sup>59</sup>)), rests a portion of his very weak argument on the present passage, which he does not scruple to maintain ought henceforth to be pointed thus,—

"The senators of Rome are this good belly,  
And you the mutinous members!—For examine—  
Their counsels and their eares digest things rightly  
'Touching the weal o' the common!—you shall find," &c.!

L<sup>o</sup> 657. (8) "What's the matter, you dissensionous rogues,  
That, rubbing the poor itch of your opinion,  
Make yourselves scabs?  
First Cit. We have ever your good word.  
Mar. He that will give good words to ye will flatter  
Beneath abhorring. What would you have, you euns," &c.

The folio has "Mar. He that will give good words to thee, will flatter," &c.,—the transcriber or compositor, it would seem, having mistaken "ye" for "y" [i. e. thee]—that the author could not possibly have written "thee" here, is manifest.

P. 658. (9) "are almost thoroughly," &c.

Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector reads "are all most thoroughly," &c.

P. 659. (10) "Shouting their exclamation,"

The folio has "Shooting their," &c.

P. 659. (11) "have first unroof'd the city," &c.

The folio has "have first unroofst the city," &c.

P. 660. (12) "Noble *Marcus*!"

Here Theobald altered "*Marcus*" to "*Lartius*;" but, as Malone observes, the alteration is questionable.

P. 660. (13) "*mutineers*," &c.

Here the folio has "mutiners," &c.,—a form which I have not retained, only because in *The Tempest*, act iii. sc. 2, the folio has "if you proue a mutineere," &c.

P. 602. (14) "*Coriol.*"

The folio throughout has "*Corioles*" (and "*Carloles*"), nor is it quite certain that Shakespeare wrote the name correctly.

P. 663. (15)

"*At Grecian swords contending.—Tell Valeria,*" &c.

So the second folio.—The first folio has,

"*At Grecian sword. Contemning, tell Valeria,*" &c.—

Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector reads "*At Grecian swords contemning,*" &c., i.e., says Mr. Collier (who, in his ed. of *Shakespeare*, had himself suggested that reading), "contemning at Grecian swords, despising them." But qy. is "*contemning* at" legitimate phraseology?—A critic in *Blackwood's Magazine* for Sept. 1853, p. 320, observes; "Unless we can obtain a better substitute than '*contemning*,' we are not disposed to alter the received reading." (Since this note was written, Mr. W. N. Lettsom has proposed to me, "*As Grecian swords contemning.*")

P. 664. (16)

"*What are you sewing here? A fine spot, in good faith.*"

A various reading, sufficiently obvious, occurred to Zachary Jackson ὁ κριτικώτατος,—"*What, are* [the usual modern punctuation] *you sewing here? A fine sport, in good faith?*" but Valeria would hardly call sewing a *sport*.

P. 664. (17) "*has such a confirmed countenance.*"

Here, because the folio gives "*ha's*," the modern editors print "*h'as*" and "*he has*;" but see note (23) p. 525. (Afterwards in this play, p. 694, we find, according to the folio, "*He ha's* done Nobly," &c., "*He ha's* it now," &c., and "*Ho ha's* our Voyce, Sir.")

P. 667. (18)

"*You shames of Rome! you herd of—Boils and plagues  
Plaster you o'er,*" &c.

In the folio thus,—

"*You shames of Rome: you Heard of Boyles and Playgues  
Plaister you o're,*" &c.



"This passage, like almost every other abrupt sentence in these plays, was rendered unintelligible in the old copy by inaccurate punctuation. For the present regulation I am answerable. 'You herd of cowards!' Marcus would say, but his rage prevents him." MALONE.—(Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector reads,—

*"You shames of Rome! Unheard of boils and plagues  
Plaster you o'er," &c.,—*

nor do I think the alteration so "very improbable" as it appears to Mr. Singer (*Shakespeare Vindicated*, &c. p. 210), who asks "why unheard of?" Surely, the "boils and plagues" might be termed "unheard of," if those on whom they fell were consequently to

"be abhorr'd  
Further than seen, and one infect another  
Against the wind a rule.")

P. 667. (19) "followed."

So the second folio.—The first folio has "followes."

P. 667. (20) "Who, sensible, outdares his senseless sword,  
And, when it bows, stands up!"

The folio has,—

*"Who sensibly out-dares his senselesse Sword,  
And when it bowes, stand'st up."*

P. 668. (21) "Even to Cato's wish," &c.

The correction of Theobald: see his note, and Malone's, *ad l.*—The folio has "*Even to Calp's wish*," &c.

P. 669. (22) "Ye Roman gods," &c.

The folio has "The Roman," &c.

P. 671. (23) "the Antients," &c.

Here the folio has "the Antients," &c.; but in the next speech it has "*Antients*".

P. 671. (24) "Lesser his person," &c.

The folio has "*Lessen his person*," &c.

P. 672. (25) "Please you to march;  
And four shall quickly draw out my command,  
Which men are best inclin'd"

In the second line various alterations of the word "*four*" have been proposed but see the attempts of Steevens and Mason to explain the old text, which are perhaps as satisfactory as any of the conjectural readings.—Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector makes a violent change here.

P. 673. (26)

"That, with the fusty plebeians, hate thine honours," &c.

Here, as Sydney Walker observes (*Shakespeare's Versification*, &c. p 161), "*plebeians*" is to be pronounced "*plebeians*." (Indeed, the spelling of the folio hero is "*Plebeians*:" but in act iii. sc. 1, the folio has

"Let them have Cushions by you. You are *Plebeians*," &c.

and in act v. sc. 5,

"The *Plebeians* have got your Fellow Tribune," &c.,

while in a prose speech, act ii. sc. 1, it has "the Heardsmen of the Donsily *Plebeians*."

P. 675. (27) "When steel grows soft as the parasite's silk,  
Let him be made a coverture for the wars."

The folio has "*Let him be made an Overture for th' Warres*."—I read, with Tyrwhitt and Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector, "*a coverture*;" for I cannot but think that the commentators have most signally failed in their endeavours to support the old lection; and nothing can be more ridiculous than Malone's adducing, in its defence, from *Twelfth Night*, "no overture of war,"—as if that expression were parallel to "an overture for the wars"! (Shakespeare has the word "*coverture*" elsewhere).—Tyrwhitt and Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector make another alteration here,—the former reading "*Let this be made*," &c., the latter "*Let it be made*," &c. but, as Stevens observes, "the personal *him* is not unfrequently used by our author, and other writers of his age, instead of *it*, the neuter."—Various changes have been tried in the pointing of this passage: I give what I conceive to be the true punctuation.

P. 675. (28)

"You shoot me," &c.

The folio has "*You shoot me*," &c.

P. 675. (29)

"CAIUS MARCIUS COMOLANUS"

The folio has "*Marcus Caius Coriolanus*" both here and in the next speech.

P. 677. (30)

"Embarquements all of fury," &c

Here "*Embarquements*" has been altered to "*Imbankments*;" but the old reading is doubtless right, see the notes of Stevens and Malone *ad l.*

P. 678. (31) "I am known to be a humorous patrician, and one that loves a cup of hot wine with not a drop of allaying Tiber in't; said to be something imperfect in favouring the first complaint, hasty and under-like upon too trivial motion," &c.

Here Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector makes an emendation on which several

critics have bestowed great applause: he substitutes "*the thirst complaint*;" and Mr. Collier, who pronounces the reading of the folio to be "merely an error from mishearing on the part of the copyist," asks "What is 'the first complaint' in connexion with Menenius's love for 'a cup of hot wine'?" But is it quite certain that any "CONNEXION" was intended between "*the first complaint*" and "*a cup of hot wine*"? at least, if the folio faithfully represents the author's punctuation, none was intended; for in the folio we find a colon after "*Tiber m't*," while "*the first complaint*" is disjoined only by a comma from "*hasty and tinder-like upon too trivial motion*,"—words which assuredly do not in any way allude to Menenius's fondness for drinking. Again, is "*the thirst complaint*" a probable expression?—In short, I consider the Ms. Corrector's alteration as a very doubtful one; and I have the satisfaction of knowing that Mr. John Forster concurs with me in that opinion.—I must add, that Mr. Singer's explanation of "*first*" appears to me even more unlikely than the Ms. Corrector's new reading,—by which indeed it was evidently suggested; "it seems," he says, "that *thirst* was sometimes provincially pronounced and spelt *first* and *furst*. Menenius uses it jocularly." *Shakespeare Vindicated*, &c. p. 213.

P. 679. (22) "I cannot say," &c.

The folio has "I can say," &c.

P. 679. (23) "that tell you have," &c.

Pope printed "that tell you you have," &c.

P. 679. (24) "bisson," &c.

Here the spelling of the folio is "beesome," &c.; but in *Hamlet*, act ii. sc. 2, it has "*Bisson Rhoume*"

P. 680. (25) "Vol. Vir. Nay, 'tis true."

The prefix in the folio is "2 Ladies," which is kept by Malone and others, but it can only mean Voluptua and Virgilia. (In the preceding stage-direction I have let the modern addition "&c." remain, because we are hardly to suppose that the three ladies enter unaccompanied.)

P. 680. (26) "empiricitic."

Spelt in the folio "*Emperiektique*," which in the third folio was altered to "*Emperiektique*;" and so Rowe—Pope printed "*empirie*."—Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector substitutes "*empirie physie*."

P. 681. (27) "a name to Caius Marcius; these  
In honour follows Coriolanus."

The folio has

"a Name to Martius Caius:  
These in honor followes Martius Caius Coriolanus."

P. 682. (38) "But with them change of honours"

The commentators defend the text by the scriptural expression, "change of raiment."—Here Theobald altered "*change*" to "charge;"—and afterwards in this play (see p. 748) the folio has, by an undoubted misprint, "And yet to change thy Sulphure," &c.

P. 683. (39) "While she chats him."

Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector substitutes "— cheers him," and Mr. Singer (*Shakespeare Vindicated*, &c. p. 214) is confident we ought to read "— claps him." but it certainly would seem that the nurse in question has not yet seen Coriolanus, and therefore (as is observed by a critic in *Blackwood's Magazine* for Sept. 1853, p. 321) "both *cheering* and *clapping* would be premature."

P. 684. (40) "their war."

Steevens would read "the war;"—and rightly, I suspect.

P. 684. (41) "Shall touch the people," &c.

The folio has "*Shall touch the*," &c.—Mr. Knight suggested (but did not adopt) what is evidently the true reading, "*Shall touch thee*," &c.;—and so Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector.

P. 686. (42) "By Caius Marcius Coriolanus; whom  
We meet here," &c.

The folio has

"By Martius Caius Coriolanus whom  
We met here," &c.

P. 687. (43) "We shall be bless'd to do," &c.

Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector substitutes "*We shall be prest to do*," &c.; and Mr. Singer's Ms. Corrector makes the same change,—Mr. Singer terming it "a good and legitimate emendation." (*Shakespeare Vindicated*, &c. p. 215.)—That "*prest*" (i.e. ready) suits the present speech very well, there is no denying; but "*bless'd*" (i.e. most happy) is supported by a passage in *King John*, act iii. sc. 1,—

"and then we shall be *bless'd*  
To do your pleasure, and continue friends."

Again, we have in *The Two Gentlemen of Verona*, act v. sc. 4,—

"Let me be *bless'd* to make this happy close."

P. 690. (41)

*"We recommend to you, tribunes of the people,  
Our purpose to them;—and to our noble consul  
Wish we all joy and honour."*

Mason's proposed alteration of the pointing,—

*"Our purpose;—to them and to our noble consul  
Wish we all joy and honour,"*

has been adopted by Mr. Collier, though it is distinctly proved to be wrong by the very next speech,

*"Senators. To Coriolanus come all joy and honour!"*

P. 690 (45)

*"some auburn, some," &c.*

Here the folio has "*some Abram, some,*" &c., but in *The Two Gentlemen of Verona*, act iv. sc. 2, it has "*Her hair is Aburne, mine is perfect Yellow*"—and in the present passage the editor of the fourth folio altered the old corrupt spelling "*Abram*" to "*auburn*."

P. 692. (46)

*"So, here comes a brace.*

*Re-enter two Citizens.*

*You know the cause, sir, of my standing here.*

*First Cit We do, sir," &c.*

See note (3).—Rowe printed "*You know the cause, sirs, of my,*" &c., and the alteration is perhaps right, for Coriolanus may now be speaking to the "brace," though he presently asks them for their voices one by one.

In the more recent editions (Mr. Knight's excepted) the dialogue between Coriolanus and these two Citizens is arranged in a sort of verse; but the folio gives it as prose; nor does it seem to have been intended by the author for verse, any more than the dialogue between Coriolanus and the "two other Citizens,"—of which no editor has attempted to make verse.

P. 692. (47)

*"Ay, not mine own desire," &c.*

The folio has "*I, but mine,*" &c.—The correction was made in the third folio

P. 693. (49)

*"Why in this woolvish toge should I," &c.*

The folio has "*Why in this Woolvish tongue should I,*" &c.—The editor of the second folio altered "tongue" to "gowne"—In this very doubtful passage I have thought it better to retain the "*woolvish*" of the old copy.—Mr. Collier's Mr. Corrozet substitutes "woolless;"—see the notes *ad l.* in the *Varior. Shakespeare*, Mr. Singer's *Shakespeare Vindicated*, &c. p. 215, *Blackwood's Magazine* for Sept. 1853, p. 322, and Mr. Grant White's *Shakespeare's Scholar*, &c. p. 360.—Mason suggested that we ought to read "foolish," comparing what Coriolanus says subsequently in this speech, "Rather than fool it so," &c.; and

it is remarkable that Mr. Grant White (*ubi supra*), quite unconscious of having been anticipated by Mason (whose conjecture is not mentioned in the *Varior. Shakespeare*), has been at some pains to prove that "foolish" is the genuine reading.

P. 696. (49) "Of him," &c

i.e. On him.—The modern editors (Howe and Mr. Collier excepted) print "On him," &c.

P. 697. (50) "And Censorinus, darling of the people,  
And nobly nam'd so, twice being censor," &c

The first line was added by Pope (from Plutarch), and, though far from a happy one, it seems to have now acquired a sort of prescriptive right to a place in the text.—Mr W. N. Lottson (Preface to Walker's *Shakespeare's Versification*, &c. p. 221.) remarks; "However the lost verse may have begun, it must have ended with the words 'nam'd Censorinus,' as is clear from what immediately follows,—

'And nobly nam'd so, twice being [chosen] censor.'

Compare North's Plutarch,—'The people had *chosen* him censor twice.'

P. 699. (51) "Hath he not pass'd the nobles and the commons?"

The folio has "— the Noble and the Common?"—The editor of the second folio altered "Common" to "Commons," but overlooked the as necessary correction of "Noble" to "nobles,"—which was made by Rowe.

P. 700. (52) "Cor. You are like to do such business."

To this speech the folio prefixes "Com.," which Mr. Knight keeps, remarking that "the words are not characteristic of Coriolanus"!

P. 701. (53) "O good, but most unwise," &c.

Theobald's correction.—The folio has "O God! but," &c.

P. 704. (54) "Given Hydra here to choose," &c.

Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector reads "Given Hydra leave to choose," &c; and rightly perhaps (—the folio has "Given Hydra heere to choose," &c); for in this passage there is a harshness in understanding "Giv e;" as equivalent to *permitted*.

P. 704. (55) "The horn and noise o' the monster," &c.

So Capell; and so Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector.—The folio has "— noise

o' th' Monsters," &c.,—another instance of the final *s* being improperly added; see notes <sup>(25)</sup> and <sup>(26)</sup>, p. 419.—Mr. Singer, indeed (*Shakespeare Vindicated*, &c. p. 218), tells us that, "To chango 'monsters' to *monster*, destroys the meaning, the plural refers to the many heads of the hydra; the reference is to Sicinius as the mouth-piece of the plebs." But would any writer, after applying to the people collectively the term "*Hydra*," proceed, in the very same sentence, to speak of the so symbolised plebs as "*monsters*"? Certainly not. Sicinius is "*The horn and noise o' the [many-headed] monster*."—Bavller in the present scene we have had, p. 690, "for the multitude to be ingrateful, were to make a *monster of the multitude*," &c., and "he himself [*i.e.* Coriolanus] stuck not to call us the *many-headed multitude*;" afterwards in act iv. sc. 1, p. 719, Coriolanus says,

"the beast  
With many heads butts me away."

P. 701. <sup>(27)</sup>

"awake

Your dangerous lenity. If you are learn'd," &c

This, to confess the truth, I hardly understand.—Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector changes "*awake*" to "*revoke*," and "*lenity*" to "*bounty*,"—of which alterations the latter at least cannot be right. (In printing "*learn'd*" (not "*learnèd*") I adhere to the folio. so in *Henry VIII.* act i. sc. 2, we have,—

"The gentleman is *learn'd*, and a most rare speaker," &c.

"My *learn'd* lord cardinal,

Deliver all with charity;"

P. 702. <sup>(28)</sup>

"They know the corn

Was not our recompense."

Southern (in a note on his copy of the fourth folio) and Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector read "*Was not their recompense*;" but the old text is right, meaning—was not given by us as a recompense. (The corn *had been given*. see p. 699, "When corn was given them gratis," &c.)

P. 702 <sup>(29)</sup>

"could never be the motive

Of our so frank donation."

So Mason and Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector.—The folio has "*could never be the nature*," &c.

P. 702. <sup>(30)</sup>

"How shall this bisson multitude digest

The senate's courtesy?"

The excellent emendation of Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector.—The folio has "*How shall this Bosome-multiplied, digest*," &c.,—which a writer in *Notes and Queries*, vol. vi. 27, gravely and elaborately defends! (In a previous passage of this play, the spelling of the folio is "*your besome Conspectuities*," see note <sup>(31)</sup>.)

P. 702. <sup>(60)</sup> "Call our cares fears; which will in time  
Break ope the locks o' the senate, and bring in  
The crows to peck the eagles.

Men,

Come, enough."

Such is the metrical arrangement of this passage in the folio; and it would certainly seem to be that which the author intended,—though perhaps something has dropped out from the first line.

P. 703. <sup>(61)</sup>

"To vamp a body with a dangerous phisic," &c.

Pope's emendation.—The folio has "To iumpe a Body," &c.; which is retained by Malone (whose explanation of this rank corruption has, I am sorry to see, misled Dr. Richardson to cite the passage in his *Diet* under "Jump;" just as a comment of Steevens has misled him to suppose that in the preceding play (see note <sup>(55)</sup>, p. 647) "impar" was used as an adjective); and, of course, by Mr. Knight and Mr. Collier.—Mr. Singer (*Shakespeare Vindicated*, &c. p. 219) would read "To imp a body," &c. But I have no doubt that "vamp" was Shakespeare's word.—"vamp," in fact, comes nearer to the *ductus literarum* of the old lection than "imp" does "va" was more likely to have been mistaken for "u" than "i" for "u." (The proneness of printers to blunder in words beginning with *v* is very remarkable. In our author's *Measure for Measure*, act ii. sc. 1, the folio has,

"Some ran from brakes of Ice [instead of "vice"], and  
answered none," &c ;

and in his *Comedy of Errors*, act ii. sc. 2,

"I line distain'd [instead of "vntstain'd"], thou vndishonoured;"

at the commencement of Marlowe's *Faustus*, the quarto of 1604 has,

"Nor in the pompe of proud audacious deedes  
Intends our Muse to daunt [the later quartos "vaunt"]  
his heauenly verse:"

in Fletcher's *Fair Maid of the Inn*, act i. sc. 1, both folios have,

"If that the least puffe of the rough Northwinde  
Blast our *tunes* [read "vines"] burthen," &c ;

in Beaumont and Fletcher's *Coxcomb*, act ii. sc. 4,

"And run like molten gold through every *sin* [read "vein"]," &c.;

in their *Honest Man's Fortune*, act iv. sc. 1,

"But 'tis a *due* [the Ms. in my possession "vico"] in him  
that to that end  
Extends his loue or duty,"

and in their *Little French Lawyer*, act i. sc. 2, the first folio has,

"Would she make *rise* [instead of "vse;"] the second folio has  
"use"] of't so, I were most happy."

when Weber published,—from a Ms. which is now mine,—*The Faithful*



*Friends*, a drama attributed to Beaumont and Fletcher, he gave, in act iii. sc. 3,

"The chief part I must play, and till my bones  
And sinews crack," &c.,—

the reading of the Ms. "vaines" (where the tall *v* looks, at the first glance, very like a *b*) having been mistaken for "*bones*," and, to conclude, in Lewis's *Monk*, vol. ii. 72, first ed., we find; "Thus saying, she continued her course to the street-door, which she opened, and without allowing herself time to throw on her *ail* [read "*veil*"], she made the best of her way to the Capuchin abbey.")

P. 703. (63) "*For the ill which doth control't.*

Bru. *Has said enough.*

Sic. *Has spoken like a traitor,*" &c.

The last two speeches (in both which the modern editors print, some "I'lls," others "He has") stand *literatim* thus in the folio,

"Bru *Has said enough.*

Sicm. *Ha's spoken like a Traitor,*" &c.

See note (17).

P. 704. (63) "*Cor.*"

The folio has "*Com.*"

P. 705 (84) "*your country's friends,*" &c.

The folio has "*your Countines friend,*" &c. but see Menenius's preceding speech; of which, in fact, this is only a continuation.

P. 705. (63) "*to your house,*"

The folio has "*to our House,*"

P. 705. (66) "*Cor.*"

The folio has "*Com*"

P. 706. (67)

"Com. *Come, sir, along with us.*

Cor. *I would they were barbarians (as they are,  
Though in Rome litter'd), not Romans (as they are not,  
Though calv'd i' the porch o' the Capitol),—*

Men,

*Be gone;*

*Put not your wrath into your tongue;*

*One time will owe another."*

This distribution of the speeches (unquestionably the right one) was proposed

by Tyrwhitt, with whom Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector here agrees.—The folio has,

"Corio. Come Sir, along with vs.  
Mene, *I would they were Barbarians, as they are,  
Though in Rome litter'd: not Romans, as they are not,  
Though calu'd i' th' Porch o' th' Capitoll.  
Be gone, put not your worthy Rage into your Tongue,  
One time will owe another.*"

P. 707. (68) "Were but one danger," &c.  
Theobald printed "Were but our danger," &c.

P. 709. (69) "I'll go to him, and undertake to bring him  
Where he shall answer, by a lawful form,  
(In peace) to his utmost peril."  
The folio, by an evident mistake, either of the transcriber or the printer, has,  
"He go to him, and undertake to bring him in peace,  
Where he shall answer by a lawfull Forme  
(In peace) to his utmost peril!"

P. 710. (70) "The thwartings of your dispositions," &c.  
Theobald's correction.—The folio has "The things of," &c.

P. 710. (71) "I have a heart as little apt as yours,  
But yet a brain that leads my use of anger  
To better vantage."

Here Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector makes an interpolation,—  
"I have a heart as little apt as yours  
To brook control without the use of anger,  
But yet a brain," &c.

and Mr. Singer (*Shakespeare Vindicated*, &c. p. 220) proposes to substitute  
"soft" for "apt"

P. 710. (72) "to the head," &c.  
Theobald's correction,—and obvious enough.—The folio has "to' th' heart,"  
&c.

P. 711. (73) "which your heart prompts you," &c.  
The second folio reads "— prompts you to," &c.—We can scarcely doubt  
that the earlier part of this speech has suffered from the transcriber or the  
printer: with the present text, whatever arrangement of the lines be adopted,  
the verse halts miserably.

P. 711. (71) "that are but rooted in," &c.

The folio has "*that are but roated in*," &c. (Though Dr. Richardson in his *Dict.* cites the present passage under "Rote," he observes, "*Rooted*, in Shakespeare, is, perhaps, rooted, fixed, infixed, impressed,—no deeper than your tongue." That it is so, I make no question.)

4

P. 712. (72) "Which often, thus," &c.

Several attempts have been made to amend this passage: I agree with Malone in thinking that it now stands as the author wrote it.

P. 713. (73) "Which quired with my drum," &c.

If the folio is to be trusted in such matters, here its spelling, "*quier'd*," shows how the word was formerly pronounced.—In the next line but one the folio has "That *Babies* lull *a-sleepe*."

P. 715. (77) "his worth  
Of contradiction "

Rowe printed "*his word of*," &c., and Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector gives "*his mouth of*," &c.—but is not the old reading right?

P. 715. (78) "Throng our large temples," &c.

Theobald's correction.—The folio has "Through our," &c.

P. 716. (79) "His rougher accents for," &c.

Corrected by Theobald.—The folio has "*His rougher Actions for*," &c.

P. 717. (80) "Nor check my courage," &c.

Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector reads "*Nor check my carriage*," &c.; and Mr. Collier adds, "It is most inconsistent with the noble character of the hero to represent him in this way vaunting his own '*courage*.' . . . *Carriage* is, of course, deportment, and the very same misprint has been pointed out, and remedied in the same way, in *Henry VI. Part III.*" Mr. Singer, too (*Shakespeare Variorum*, &c. p. 221), commends this alteration, which is countenanced by his own Ms. Corrector.—But they all forget that "*courage*" was formerly often used in the sense of—heart, spirit, mind (see note (20), p. 295)

P. 717. (81) "and can show for Rome  
Her enemies' marks upon me "

The folio has "*and can shew from Rome*," &c.; which has been defended most strangely: see my *Remarks on Mr. Collier's and Mr. Knight's eds. of Shakespeare*, &c. p. 162.

P. 718. (<sup>62</sup>) "*Making not reservation of yourselves,*" &c.  
Capell's correction.—The folio has "*Making but reservation,*" &c.

P. 719. (<sup>63</sup>)  
"To say extremity was the trier of spirits," &c.  
So the second folio.—The first folio has "*To say, Extremities was,*" &c.; to which reading Malone adhered,—perhaps too obstinately: in defence of the plural here, he cited from an earlier scene, p. 711, "But when *extremities* speak;" to which, however, we may oppose what afterwards occurs, p. 727,

"Now, this extremity  
Hath brought me to thy hearth."

P. 719. (<sup>64</sup>) "*being gentle wounded, craves,*" &c.  
Pope printed "*being gently warded, craves,*" &c.; Hammer "*being greatly warded, crave,*" &c.; and Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector substitutes "*being gentle-minded, craves,*" &c.; but the old text (see Johnson's note *ad l*) is not to be disturbed.

P. 720. (<sup>65</sup>) "*a wild exposure,*" &c.  
So all the folios; but qy. ?—Rowe printed "*a wild exposure,*" &c.

P. 722. (<sup>66</sup>) "*Cats, that can judge,*" &c.  
Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector alters "*Cats*" to "*Curs,*"—"consistently," says Mr. Collier, "with the term *Coriolanus* had previously applied to the *rabble*;" but it is quite evident that here *Volumnia* is speaking, not of the *rabble*, but of the two *tribunes*.

P. 723. (<sup>67</sup>) "*but your favour is well appeared by your tongue.*"  
Steevens would alter "*appeared*" to "*approved*;" and so Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector; while Mr. Singer would substitute "*appaid*,"—giving a very forced sense to the passage.

P. 724. (<sup>68</sup>)  
"Whose house, whose bed, whose meal, and exercise,  
Are still together, who twin, as 'twere, in love  
Unseparable, shall within this hour," &c.  
So Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector.—The folio has "*Whose Houres, whose Bed,*" &c.,—which no one, with the context full before him, need attempt to defend by the passage in *Midsummer Night's Dream*, act vi. sc. 2,

"the hours that we have spent,  
When we have chid the hasty-footed time  
For parting us,"

Here the error of the folio was an easy one; but perhaps it may be partly attributed to the occurrence of the word "*hour*" at the end of the third line.

P. 724. (81) "My birth-place hate I," &c.

Steevens's correction.—The folio has "*My Birth-place haue I,*" &c.

P. 725 (80) "Enter a third *Servant* 'The first meets him,'"

So the folio; meaning, I presume, that a Third *Servant* enters from one side, while the First *Servant* re-enters from the other,—Capell over-boldly made several alterations in the prefixes, &c. of this scene.

P. 726. (81) "If, *Tullus,*  
*Not yet thou know'st me,*" &c.

This speech (which differs only slightly from that in North's *Plutarch*) is printed as prose in the folio; but it does not read as if intended for prose by the author: there would seem to be some corruption. (It has been quietly altered thus,—

"If, *Tullus,* yet thou know'st me not, and, seeing me,  
*Dost not yet take me for the man I am,*  
*Necessity commands me name myself.*"

and thus,—

"If, *Tullus,*  
*Not yet thou know'st me, and, seeing me, dost not take me*  
*To be the man I am, necessity*  
*Commands me name myself*"

P. 727. (82) "Then if thou hast  
*A heart of wreak in thee, that wilt revenge,*" &c.

Here "*wilt*" is usually changed to "*will*." but the expression is elliptical,—*that wilt*, i.e. that thou wilt.

P. 728. (83) "If *Jupiter*  
*Should from yond cloud speak divine things,*  
*And say, 'Tis true,' I'd not believe them more*  
*Than thee, all noble Marcius.—Let me twine,*" &c.

So the passage is arranged in the folio, and no doubt rightly, though something appears to have dropped out from the second line (which Pope unscrupulously altered to "*Should from yon cloud speak to me things divine*"). In most of the recent editions the lines are divided differently, and "O" is thrust in before "*Let me twine,*" to prop the metre

P. 729. (84) "And scar'd the moon with splinters."

The folio (with its old spelling) has "*And scarr'd the Moone,*" &c.; which is retained by Malone and Mr. Collier (the former innocently remarking that a line in *Richard III.*,

"Amaze the welkin with your broken staves,"—

"certainly adds *some support*" to the reading "*scar'd*"?).

P. 728. (85)

"*Had we no other quarrel else to Rome, but that,*" &c.

The third folio omits "*ether,*"—which is most probably the transcriber's or printer's addition.

P. 728. (86)

"*Like a bold flood o'er-bear,*"

So some copies of the folio; other copies have erroneously "*—flood o're-beate,*"—Mr. Grant White (*Shakespeare's Scholar*, &c. p. 364) recommends Jackson's reading, "*o'er-beat'i;*" but here "*it*" is quite unnecessary.

P. 729. (87)

"*but a greater soldier than he, you wot on.*"

The folio has "*—then he, You wot one,*" and so the modern editors.

P. 730. (88)

"*have broiled and,*" &c.

The folio has "*have boyled and,*" &c.

P. 731. (89)

"*whilst he's in directitude,*"

Malone suspects that "the author wrote '*whilst he's in discredit*;' a single word instead of *discredit*"—Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector changes "*directitude*" to "*dejectitude,*"—which agrees very well with what follows,—"*But when they shall see his crest up again,*" &c.—Mr. Singer (*Shakespeare Vindicated*, &c. p. 223) says, rather too confidently, "*There can be no doubt that the Servant is intended to blunder in the use of 'directitude,' which he mistakes for discredit.*"

P. 731. (100)

"*This peace is nothing,*" &c.

"Shakespeare probably wrote '*This peace is good for nothing,*' &c. Sir Thomas Hammer [Rowe] reads—'*is worth nothing,*' &c." STEEVENS.

P. 731. (101)

"*waking,*" &c.

The folio has "*walking,*" &c.

P. 731. (102)

"*than wars a destroyer of men.*"

It has been altered to "*than war's a destroyer,*" &c.; but the next speech determines that here the plural is right.

P. 731. (103)

"*His remedies are tame i' the present peace,*" &c.

So Theobald.—The folio has "*—tame the present peace,*" &c.—Mason would read "*—are lame i' the,*" &c.

P. 732. (161)

"*Hail, sir!*"

The reply of Menenius (as Steevens observes) renders it probable that here the old copy has accidentally omitted "*Bru. Hail, sir!*"

P. 732. (163)

"*God-den,*" &c.

Here, and in the next speech, the folio has "Gooden:" but earlier in the play (see p. 679) it has "*God-den,*"

P. 733. (166)

"*The nobles in great earnestness are going  
All to the senate-house: some news is come  
That turns their countenances.*"

The folio has "— *some newes is comming,*" &c., which Mr. Knight retains (because "the reader will remember Mr. Campbell's fine image,—

'Coming events throw [cast] then shadows before,'"—

the Roman nobles, of course, being gifted, like Campbell's wizard, with the second sight!); and which in most of the recent editions is altered to "— *some news is come in,*" &c. (Boswell defending that alteration in a note about "redundant terminations," &c.)—Now, it is quite evident that the mistake of "comming" for "come" was occasioned by the transcriber's or compositor's eye having caught the word immediately above, "*going.*" (So in *The Tempest*, act ii. sc. 2, the folio has,—

"No more dams I'll make for fish,  
Nor fetch in firing, at requiring,  
Nor scrape *trenchering*, nor wash dish," &c.,—

where the error "*trenchering*" originated in the preceding "*firing*" and "*requiring.*")

P. 734. (167)

"*God Marcius,*" &c.

So Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector.—The folio has "Good *Marcus,*" &c. (Mr. Collier remarks, "Cominius, soon afterwards, talking of Coriolanus, says, 'Hic is their *god,*'" &c.: but I wonder that he did not adduce from *Troilus and Cressida* (see p. 553), "Yet *god* Achilles still cries, 'Excellent!' " &c.)

P. 735. (168)

"*All the regions,*" &c.

Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector substitutes "*All the legions,*" &c.,—and very plausibly; for it is doubtful if the old text is to be explained by what Aufidius says at p. 738, "All places yield to him ere he sits down,"—here Cominius, eager to mortify the tribunes, may be exaggerating the successes of Coriolanus: and elsewhere the folio has "*legions*" misprinted "*regions,*" see note (72), p. 93.

P. 735. (169)

"*You have made fair hands,  
You and your crafts! you have crafted fair!*"

Com.

*You have brought**A trembling upon Rome," &c.*

"We ought unquestionably," says Mr. Collier, "to read [with the Ms. Corrector] *handycrafts* for 'crafts,' and to print the lines as follows, both on account of the sense and the metre,—

'You have made fair hands;

You and your *handycrafts* have crafted fair.'

This change completes the defective line, and shows that Menenius uses the introductory expression, 'You have made fair hands,' in order that he may follow it up by the contemptuous mention of *handycrafts*." No; the old text is quite right. To "*make fair hands*" (or "*a fine hand*") is a common enough expression (so in *Henry VIII* p. 517, "*Ye've made a fine hand, fellows*"); and the change of "*crafts*" to "*handycrafts*" is unnecessary for the sense, because *manual* labour is sufficiently implied in the former word. As to "the metre,"—the Corrector's alteration deranges it entirely: the words, "You and your crafts! *you've crafted fair!*" make up a perfect line with "*You've brought.*"

P. 737. (110)

"*Had borne the action,*" &c.

The folio has "*Have borne,*" &c.

P. 738. (111)

"*So our virtues,*" &c.

So the second folio.—The first folio has "*So our Vertue,*" &c.

P. 738. (112)

"*Hath not a tomb so evident as a chair*  
*To eatol what it hath done.*"

A dark passage; on which see the comments in the *Varior, Shakespeare*.—Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector (having previously made two alterations in this speech) substitutes "*cheer*" for "*chair*;" Mr. Singer (*Shakespeare Vindicated*, &c. p. 225) would read "*hair*;" and Mr. Grant White (*Shakespeare's Scholar*, &c. p. 386) is well persuaded that the genuine text is,—"*Hath not a tomb so eloquent as a cheer,*" &c.

P. 738. (113)

"*One fire drives out one fire; one nail, one nail;*  
*Rights by rights foulter, strengths by strengths do fail.*"

The folio has "*Rights by rights fouler, strengths,*" &c.; which editors and critics have thus variously altered,—"*Right's by right fouler,*" &c., "*Right's by right foiled,*" &c., "*Rights by rights foul are,*" &c., "*Rights by rights founder,*" &c., "*Rights by rights suffer,*" &c., and "*Rights by rights foild are,*" &c.—That a verb lies concealed under the corruption "*fouler*" is indubitable: as to the word which I have introduced,—it was frequently spelt "*faulter*" (so in Shelton's *Don Quixote*, Part First, p. 372, ed. 4to, "who when they porceino their Ladies to *faulter,*" &c.), and therefore might easily have been mistaken for "*fouler*."



P. 739. (114) "It was a bare petition," &c.

Mason would read "It was a base petition," &c.

P. 740. (115) "I shall ere long have knowledge  
Of my success."

"All Menenius designs to say, may be—'I shall not be kept long in suspense as to the result of my embassy.'" STEEVENS.—But this is a very unlikely remark for Menenius to make, and I strongly suspect that we ought to read, with Mason, "You shall ere long," &c.

P. 741. (116) "what he would not,  
Bound with an oath to yield to his conditions."

On this passage see the notes of the commentators in the *Varior. Shakespeare*. I have adhered to the punctuation of the folio.

P. 741. (117) "So that all hope is vain,  
Unless his noble mother, and his wife;  
Who, as I hear, mean," &c.

i.e., says Malone, "So that we have now no other hope, nothing to rely upon, but his mother and his wife, who, as I am told, mean, &c. Unless is here used for *except*." Mason, too, has a note to the same purpose. But to me such an explanation is far from satisfactory and I think it very probable that (as some one suggested to Steevens) our author wrote "*Unless* in's noble mother," &c.:—in the present play contractions of that kind are frequent.

P. 742. (118) "For I have ever verified my friends  
(Of whom he's chief) with all the size that verity," &c.

Here "*verified*" is a most suspicious reading;—and perhaps crept into the text in consequence of the transcriber's or compositor's eye having rested on the word "verity" in the next line. Hamner printed "magnified;" which is given by Mr. Collier's Ms. Corrector also.

P. 743. (119) "guess, but by my," &c.

The folio omits "by."

P. 743. (120) "Ingrate forgetfulness shall poison, rather  
Than pity note how much."

Theobald printed "*Ingrate forgetfulness shall prison, rather*," &c.;—"which," he says, "adds an antithesis, by which the sense seems clearer and more natural: viz. that *forgetfulness* shall rather *keep it a secret*," &c. It is at least certain that elsewhere,—see p. 95, note (81),—the folio has by mistake "poy-

sons" for "*prisons*" and "poyson'd" for "*prison'd*," but there is something forced in Theobald's reading here.

P. 745. (121) "You gods! I prate," &c.

Theobald's correction.—The folio has "—— I prny," &c.

P. 746. (122) "I holp to frame thee."

The folio has "I hopo to," &c.

P. 746. (123) "The things I have," &c.

The folio has "The thing I haue," &c.

P. 747. (124) "Which you deny already . yet we will ask ;

That, if you fail in our request," &c.

"Mr. Pope, who altered every phrase that was not conformable to modern phraseology, changed '*that if you fail*,' &c. to '*that if we fail*,' &c." MALONE. —It was Rowe who (in his sec. ed.) made the alteration; and it is perhaps right; for in this play the folio swarms with errors; and "*you*" might have been repeated by mistake from the preceding line.

P. 748. (125) "And yet to charge thy," &c.

The folio has "And yet to change thy," &c.

P. 749. (126)

"Down, ladies; let us shame him with our knees"

So the second folio.—The first folio has "*Down Ladies . let us shame him with him with our knees.*"

P. 749. (127)

"Were you in my stead, would you have heard," &c.

This line has been amended to "*Were you in my stead, say, would*," &c., and to "*If you were in my stead, would*," &c.

P. 751. (128)

"Sic,  
Friend,  
Art thou certain this is true? is it most certain?  
Sec. Mess. As certain as I know the sun is fire," &c.

The first of these speeches stands thus in the folio,—

"Sicin. Friend, art thou certaine this is true?  
I'st most certaine."

and Sydney Walker says, "'*Is't*' is a misprint for *I sir*, i.e. *Ay, sir*, and here the Messenger begins his answer to Sicinius. The note of interrogation after *certain* first appeared in the third folio. *Thou*, moreover, seems to have been inserted *ob metrum*, as in the old copies the verso begins with *Friend*" *Shakespeare's Versification*, &c. p. 285. But the absence of the interrogation-point here in the folio proves nothing; for the folio frequently has a full point at the end of an interrogative speech: so, a little after in the present dialogue, it gives the question of Sicinius thus, "They are near the City." Nor, considering how often the lines are wrongly divided in the folio, is any stress to be laid on its arrangement here.

P. 752 (129) "And help the joy.

[Exeunt.

SCENE V., &c

Here the more recent editors substitute "Gong" for "Exeunt," and mark no new scene: but it is quite plain that Menenius, Sicinius, &c. were intended by the author to quit the stage, and that, on their "*Exeunt*," a change of scene, — to a street near the gate of the city, — was to be supposed by the spectators. Menenius and his companions go out to meet the ladies as they proceed through the city homewards: but their meeting is not brought before the eyes of the audience; nor was it necessary that it should be.

P. 754 (130)

"help to reap the fame

Which he did end all his," &c.

Here Rowe altered "*end*" to "*make*." Mr. Collier's *Ms. Corrector* substitutes "*can*," and Mr. Singer (*Shakespeare Vindicated*, &c. p. 227) approves of the reading proposed by a correspondent in *Notes and Queries*,

"help to ear the fame

Which he did reap all his"—

Mr. Grant White (*Shakespeare's Scholar*, &c. p. 367) observes, "There is not the least necessity for this violence to the original text. *Aufidius* helped to reap the fame which *Coriolanus* made, in the end, all his."

P. 756. (131)

"Flutter'd your *Volscians*," &c.

The folio has "Flatter'd *your*," &c.

END OF VOL. IV.

LONDON:

PRINTED BY ROBINSON, LEVY, AND FRANKLIN,  
Great New Street and Fetter Lane.

